WE COUSINS

Volume II

Florence Sutherland Hudson

Gc
929.2
Su83705h
v.2
1622190

M. L

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 01433 4558

WE COUSINS

VOLUME II

"He who careth not from whence he came,
careth not whither he goeth."
- Daniel Webster

by

Florence Sutherland Hudson

Copyrighted 1970

by Mrs. Chas. E. Hudson
787 North Sam Houston Blvd.
San Benito, Texas 78586
Also, 521 Hillcrest Drive Scottsbluff, Neb. 69361

Printed in the United States of America
by
Valprint, Incorporated
Harlingen, Texas

1622190

To my husband,

Charles Edward Hudson II

With love and affection,

"We Cousins" Vol. II is dedicated

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019

https://archive.org/details/wecousinsvirgini00huds

There's none
righteous,
no not one.
Romans 3:12
For all have
sinned and
come short
of the glory
of God. *†*†
Romans 3:23

The wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord. Romans 6:23. For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten son that whosoever believeth in Him, should not perish; should not perish, but have everlasting life. — John 3:16*†*†

For all who
receive him,
who believe
on his name,
to them gave
he power to
become sons
of God. *†*†
John 1:12
And if sons,
then heirs,
heirs of God,
joint heirs
with Christ.
Romans 8:17
To him that
overcometh
will I grant to
sit with me in
my throne.*†
Rev. 3:20
And I give
unto them
eternal life
and they shall
never perish,
neither shall
any man pluck
them out of the
Father's hand.
John 10:28

Nos Nostraque Deo
(We and ours to God)

According to the "Hornbook of Virginia History," English colonization of America was inspired by Patriotism, Piety and Profit.

The peoples of "We Cousins," Vol. II exemplify all three of these motives, but in this sketch we are concerned with only one - Piety.

The beginning of Christianity in Europe transpired when St. Paul heeded the voice of the man of Macedonia to come over into Greece and help them, and the thrust of the gospel was directed westward. Greece and Rome became the cradles of Christianity, as well as of civilization, for Europe and the next big step in the Christianization of the world was across the Atlantic to America.

In this volume we find stalwart Christians in ever generation.

JOHN ROGERS, first Protestant Martyr of England, burning at the stake in 1555, rather than recant his new found faith and two generations later, his grandson and name-sake JOHN ROGERS, the famous preacher of Dedham, who was progenitor of JOHN ROGERS, the fifth president of Harvard College in Massachusetts.

In 1607, we find, at the later site of Jamestown in Virginia, on the first Sunday after their landing the good Parson ROBERT HUNT, under a small "sayle" stretched between trees, leading the passengers of the "Sarah Constant," "The Goodspeed" and the "Discovery" in the first Protestant worship service of the New World.

MARY RICHARDSON, before her marriage and migration to North Carolina, inscribing in her recently purchased Bible, "O Lord of Heaven and Earth, this is the night I give myself to Thee and unreservedly. I am no longer my own but Thine, Lord," December 1751;

Then shortly before the American Revolution, which guaranteed Religious Freedom, we see DAVID TINSLEY, pioneer Baptist evangelist, confined to the Chesterfield Co. Va. jail for his nonconformist beliefs, "But the Word of God was not bound; from those prison walls, resounded the glorious gospel, in strains so melting, so powerful, that scores were brought to salvation by faith in Jesus Christ."

A generation later we are introduced to his niece TALITHA TINSLEY MORTON, who, converted at thirteen, thereafter, read her Bible completely through each year of her life, and who became the mother of four ministers of the gospel, including QUIN MORTON;

DAVID HODGES, JOHN MENEFEE, JR., FELIX EARNEST and his four brothers-in-law, including JOSEPH EVANS and finally SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, descendant of the Martyr, said to have been "Father of Methodism in Jackson Co. Texas."

These and innumerable devout fathers and mothers who diligently conveyed the message of salvation to their children and children's children, all had a part in the molding of this nation, under God, and fulfilled, in their generation the objective set forth in Matt. 28:19-20 and implied in the Rogers Family Motto, "Nos Nostraque Deo," (We and Ours to God).

FOREWORD

"We Cousins" - Vol. II, is herewith presented by the author and compiler, as promised thirteen years ago when Vol. I was published, although its content is not exactly as envisioned then. Some of the proposed lines have not been included because of lack of conclusive documentation. Others have been added. The Menefee chapter was deleted at the last moment, when it was learned that it was soon to be published by others with much duplicate material.

No further volumes of this series is contemplated. If material in hand is later published, it will be in one family booklets.

The index to "We Cousins," Vol. II, is in two parts, the first part being a listing of Heads of Families and the second part Names of Brides.

No initials are given in the index and each family name appearing on any given page is indexed only once. However, all names of persons are completely capitalized, throughout the book and may be found at a glance on any given page.

References will be found in parenthesis in the content itself, and in notes following records of families, generations, or chapters.

In general the abbreviations used are those used by most genealogists - b. = born; m. = married; d. = died; dau. = daughter; Eliz. = Elizabeth; Co. = County; Va. = Virginia. Some of these are generally used abbreviations and of course there are others of that nature employed.

One of the most important items that the reader must note is the various spellings of the surnames of the families included here.

It is difficult, today, for us to turn back the pages of history 300 or 350 years and to realize that in that day phonics was unheard of and there was no set pattern for spelling. Furthermore there was no general public education and on the frontier in Colonial America, as well as in Europe, many did not have the opportunity of an education. Since they could not write and spell their own names they were spelled by clerks of church and state in whichever way it sounded to them or that they fancied to spell it.

Even in families where most wrote their own names we find the names spelled in an amazing number of ways. An example of this is the name which we spell properly, Adenstone.

In the documents which are available concerning one, John Adenstone, decd. 1677, and his Rogers descendants, we find it variously misspelled as Adelstone, Adeustone, Adonstone, Addustone, Aduston, Adustine but it is correctly spelled Adenstone as given in the signature of John Adenstone in his will.

In this book, the spelling many times has been preserved in the various forms found in the old documents, but all are one name and one family.

Chapters I, IV and VIII have been reworked and brought up to date from Volume I, but all contain much new material, in some instances new lines of as many as five generations.

The style of organization in various chapters varies with the amount and character of the material available in the different lines or families. It was not possible to organize all in the generation to generation pattern.

TABLE OF CONTENT

Dedication III
The Spiritual Genealogy of Man V
"We and Ours to God" VI
Foreword VII
Table of Content IX

Chapter I - SUTHERLAND 11
Sutherland - Menefee 22

Chapter II - HODGES 51
Early Hodges of Norfolk Co. Va. 52
Manning 55
White 56
Portlock - Mathias 70
Etheredge 71
Hodges of Isle of Wight Co. Va. 73
Hodges of Tenn., Ala., and Miss. 77
John W. Hodges and Descendants of Texas 88

Chapter III - WARD
Part A – Wards of Halifax Co. N.C. and Smith Co. Tenn. 99
John Ward of Terrell Co. N.C. 106
Part B - Other Wards of Early N.C. 113
Part C - Pioneer Wards of Southeastern Va. 122
Ward - Murray 142
Wards of Isle of Wight Co. Va. 150
Wards of Princess Ann Co. Va. 152
Ward - Smith - Loyd 156

Chapter IV - ADENSTONE-ROGERS 164
Rogers - Bernard 199

Chapter V - EVANS
Part A - Texas Evans Generations 207
Part B - Evans Brothers of Morgan Co. Ala. 214
Part C - Joseph Evans, of Tenn., Ala., Ky. 218
Part D - Mark Evans of Va. 222

Chapter VI - EARNEST-STEPHENS 227

Chapter VII - PRIDE
Part A - Prides of Va. and N.C. 234
Part B - Pride Neighbors - The Burtons 242
Part C - Early Prides of Tenn. and Ala. 244

Chapter VIII - MORTON - WOODSON - MICHEAUX 252

Chapter IX - TINSLEY 278
(Of Va. S.C. and Ky.)

Chapter X - CROCKETT 291
Comparative data relating to Davy Crockett of the Alamo 291
Extracted documents of Ireland, Pa., Md. and Va. concerning Crockett . . . 297
Genealogy of descendants of Robert Crockett of the Calfpasture 303

Acknowledgments 323
Errors and Omissions 325
Index 327

Page 340 - Additional notes on Bernard and Pride

CHAPTER I

SUTHERLAND GENERATIONS

I GEORGE SOUTHERLAND d. before 1698 and wife, probably ELIZABETH NORMENT.

II GEORGE SOUTHERLAND and his wife, JUDITH SANDERS.

III GEORGE SUTHERLIN and his wife, MARY DEPRIEST dau. of WILLIAM.

IV JOHN SUTHERLAND and his wife, AGNES SHELTON.
The other children of GEORGE III

V GEORGE SUTHERLAND V) and his wife, FRANCES MENEFEE and brothers and sisters: JOHN JR., LUCY MENEFEE, AGNES MENEFEE.
The descendants of THOMAS SUTHERLIN of Virginia.

VI THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND and his wife, MARY ELIZ. HODGES.
His sister FRANCES AGNES and her husband, ALEXANDER T. GAYLE.
Other descendants of JOHN and AGNES SUTHERLAND

VII to XII The Texas Generations

The descendants of GEORGE and FRANCES SUTHERLAND

The descendants of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR.

The descendants of THOMAS and LUCY MENEFEE

The descendants of WILLIAM and AGNES MENEFEE.

CHAPTER I

SUTHERLAND

There is little doubt as to where the SUTHERLAND who came to Virginia originated. They bear the name of the northernmost County of Scotland and also of one of its most illustrious Clans. So we are safe in assuming that the Virginia SUTHERLANDS were from that county and members of that Clan.

In Virginia, we find the name spelled SOUTHERLAND, SUTHERLIN, and finally SUTHERLAND. In Scotland, too, the name had gone through an evolution of spelling before it finally arrived at the form, SUTHERLAND, which is the accepted spelling today.

Perhaps, to obtain the full history of those who came to America in the period prior to the eighteenth century, it would be necessary to make a study of the Clan at that time in Scotland. This, the compiler has not had the opportunity to do.

However, so great was their loyalty to each other and their dependence on one another that the destiny of the individual was closely tied up with the Chief and the Clan.

A brief history then, of the Clan and its leaders will give some idea of the background of this Virginia family.

"Clann an Chattaubh; No an Cenneadh; SUTHERLANICH - The SUTHERLAND."

"The northern part of Scotland, comprising the present Counties of SUTHERLAND and CAITHNESS received its name from the great Clan Chatten.

"Cattaobh is now applied to the latter division only, for at a very early period in Scottish History the district south of the Ords Mountains became distinguished by the Norwegian appellation SUDRLAND.

"According to the genealogies, the founder of the illustrious house of SUTHERLAND was FRESKIN, a Fleming, who is said to have come into Scotland in the reign of King WILLIAM, the Lion 1154-1214.

"ALIEN, the Thane (chief) who lived in the time of McBeth 1040-'56 is placed by Sir ROBERT GORDON, in his elaborate "History of the SUTHERLAND FAMILY" as the first in its long and illustrious pedigree and the title of Earl whether conferred by MALCOMB CAENN MOR who reigned 1052-92 or by ALEXANDER II in 1228, is undoubtedly the oldest in the Kingdom."

"The Thanes of SUTHERLAND strenuously opposed the Danes and Norwegians in their invasion of the north defeating them at Drumlea about the year 1031 and at Enbo in 1259 where rude obelisks were raised to commemorate the events.

"WILLIAM, Earl, who succeeded to his honours and estate in 1275 married the eldest daughter of ROBERT the BRUCE whom he actively assisted with his Clan, making several incursions on the English borders."

"The Earls of SUTHERLAND fought with characteristic bravery in the battles which were so frequently taking place between the Scots and the English and many of them fell in the fields of their fame." (Costumes of the Clans of Scotland, - McIAN page 254-258 publication 1825.)

The SUTHERLAND Clan was made up of refugees of the island, who went into the mountain fastness of the northern highlands rather than surrender themselves to the invading Norsemen.

This rugged country developed rugged men who clung tenaciously to their independence and freedom and who followed their leaders into every battle where they were threatened. They, and the other Clans, continued to harass foe and each other until the English finally succeeded in abolishing the Clan system.

The Motto of SUTHERLANDS of Fors is "Sans Peur," in English, "Without Fear."

The ancient family had its own arms which is used today on an antique shield in the Crest of the Duke of SUTHERLAND.

Of the first thirty-five leaders of this Clan, Earls and later Dukes, eleven went by the name of WILLIAM, including King WILLIAM, who married MARGARET, eldest daughter of ROBERT BRUCE; twelve were named JOHN, three ALEXANDER; and four, GEORGE.

Two women succeeded to the title and lands; but as Clan law made it impossible for them to become Chief, that title remained with the oldes male heir of a former Earl.

The principle seat of the Clan and Chiefs was "Dunrobin," a strong baronial edifice, beautifully situated on a cliff overlooking the sea, built by EARL ROBERT about 1097. (BURKES PEERAGE - Baronetage)

Late in the seventeenth century, there began a great migration from Scotland to the New World. This exodus was prompted by three different causes which were:

(1) The English Navigation Act of 1660 which specified that all goods must be shipped in English boats thus depriving the Scottish people of their main source of income, for they were great seamen.

(2) The Massacre of Gencoe in 1692 which was ordered by King WILLIAM and executed by Capt. ROBERT CAMPBELL. This cruel order aimed at breaking the backbone of Scottish resistance and the Clan System, required that Scottish males, boys as well as men, be shot down like animals. Hundreds perished.

(3) The third reason for heavy migration at this time was the Darien Scheme, a plan of Colonization copied

after the Virginia Company of London, and while it was unsuccessful, it did much to promote the idea of migration to the new world.

The introduction to the SUTHERLAND Clan in America is to be found in "English Duplicates of Lost Virginia Records" under "Titles upon Indian Land." It is dated June 1699 and is recorded on page 62 of the volume named above as follows:

"This committee conceived that the following claims and titles to lands in Pamunkey Neck, having their grounds and foundations upon Indian leases are null and void. But because it conduces much to the advancement of His Majestic's Colony that the said land should be held as of the King as others are; and because the several persons claiming thereby have their immediate dependence thereupon and have made several improvements and have a long continued and uninterrupted possession, this committee therefore conceives that with the exception of His Majestic's grant to his royal college of William and Mary ——— , a favorable grant may be made to them, viz: JOSHUA NORMAND (JOSEPH NORMENT) in behalf of JOSEPH SOUTHERLAND, PHILIP SOUTHERLAND and GEORGE SOUTHERLAND orphans of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND, decd., 300 acres."

These are the SUTHERLAND with whom we are concerned and the land which GEORGE SOUTHERLAND had previously bought from the Indian and no doubt improved, later fell in King William Co. The implication of the above document is certainly that he had had possession for several years, perhaps before his marriage.

"The Journal of the House of Burgesses of Virginia" furnishes additional information of this land and the SOUTHERLAND orphans and while its members refused the patent to JOSEPH NORMENT in behalf of them in September, 1701, this opinion was reversed on October 28, 1702, when PHILIP and GEORGE SOUTHERLAND were granted 212 acres in Pamunkey Neck in King William Co., on Southerland Creek, Queens Creek and Nicatgwance Creek.

On January 20, 1705/6 SAMUEL NORMENT with THOMAS CLAIBORNE as surety, gave bond for due payment to be made to PHILIP and GEORGE SOUTHERLAND, orphans of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND, deceased.

Because of the responsibility, which first JOSEPH and then SAMUEL NORMENT assumed, in caring for the orphans and because the eldest of the three, JOSEPH SOUTHERLAND, had the given name of the elder NORMENT, there is a good reason to believe that GEORGE SOUTHERLAND'S wife could have been the daughter of JOSEPH NORMENT and the sister of SAMUEL who evidently assumed guardianship of the children in 1705, perhaps following his father's death. SAMUEL is a common name in later SOUTHERLAND generations.

Since SOUTHERLAND, SR. died before June, 1699, both PHILIP and GEORGE were of age in 1720 when the 212 acres which they owned jointly was sold to NATHANIEL WEST, JR., according to JAMES TAYLOR surveyor and recorder of King William Co. However, when this conveyance to WEST was confirmed July 20, 1721, it seems only PHILIP signed the second instrument.

JOSEPH SOUTHERLAND, the oldest of the three brothers and orphans did not claim his inheritance, but on July 14, 1739 his son FENDALL SOUTHERLAND was granted a patent for 200 acres in King William Co., "being part of the land laid off for the Pamunkey Indians which was formerly purchased of the Indians by GEORGE SOUTHERLAND, grandfather of the said FENDALL SOUTHERLAND."

From these deeds we find that there was a mistake of 100 acres in the original patent to JOSEPH NORMENT, there being a total of 412 not 312 acres in the plantation.

The patent to FENDALL, son of JOSEPH, dated July, 1739, at which time he would have been at least twenty-one years of age, fixes his birth at not later than 1718 and that of his father at about 1690-1695.

Because of the name of his son, FENDALL, and many others of the same name in succeeding generations, it is believed that JOSEPH'S wife was a MISS FENDALL.

FENDALL had a brother JOHN SOUTHERLAND, who lived in Dinwiddie Co., Virginia, but who made his will and died in North Carolina in 1777. He had wife ANN and children: FENDALL, ELIZABETH, SARAH, MARY and ANN, and he made his brother FENDALL, executor.

He may also have had a brother JOSEPH, JR., for in 1773, JOSEPH SOUTHERLAND of King William Co. purchased of THOMAS WHITWORTH of Mecklinberg Co., Virginia, 4 negroes and FENDALL SOUTHERLAND witnessed this deed.

WOOD'S History of Albermarle Co. is authority for the statement that JOSEPH SOUTHERLAND, SR. and JR. both lived in Goochland and the elder may have been this JOSEPH formerly of King William because the residence in Goochland was 10 years later.

We believe that these three sons of JOSEPH SOUTHERLAND(I) had a sister Elizabeth who was the wife of THOMAS WHITWORTH. Mr. W. B. DERBY of Chicago, Illinois has furnished the following family genealogy:
ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND b. Feb. 2, 1726; d. 1818 - 20 married.
THOMAS WHITWORTH who was b. June 26, 1726; d. July 4, 1802 and had the following children:
SAMUEL b. Dec. 14, 1745; THOMAS b. June 29, 1748; ANN b. Oct. 30, 1750 d. Mar. 13, 1802; m. Nov. 25, 1776 DAVID WALKER PETTUS - ELIZABETH WHITWORTH b. Oct. 29, 1752; MARY b. July 30, 1755; FENDAL b. Oct. 17, 1757; JOHN b. Oct. 17, 1759; LOVINEY b. Mar. 9, 1762; WILLIAM b. May 8, 1764; SARAH b. Sept. 1, 1766; SUTHERLAND b. Dec. 24, 1769; REBECAH b. Jan. 17, 1774.

We have already seen that there was an exchange of Negroes between JOSEPH SOUTHERLAND King William and THOMAS WHITWORTH in 1773.

A deed, FENDALL SOUTHERLAND of St. John's parish King William Co. to THOMAS WHITWORTH of Raleigh Parish, Amelia Co. for 222 acres for 120 pounds dated Mar. 27, 1761, is recorded in Bk. 7, page 438 of that county. Two years before, FENDALL had purchased this tract from WALTER CHILDS of Raleigh Parish for the same sum.

In 1761 or 1762, FENDALL SOUTHERLAND acted as administrator of the estate of WALTER CHILDS and on Sept. 26, 1763, he was granted a new deed by MARY STARKE and her sons ROBERT and WILLIAM because he was dissatisfied with the title of an 800 acre tract called Horse Pen which had been sold to WALTER CHILDS in his lifetime.

MR. W. C. SUTHERLAND of Sutherland, Virginia, in Dinwiddie, states that they of that county are descended from FENDALL CHILDS SUTHERLAND, b. Aug. 31, 1770 and d. Aug. 15, 1833 whose father was JOSEPH, probably son of FENDALL b. 1718. Because of the recurrence of the name CHILDS and the association of FENDALL with WALTER CHILDS of Amelia, it is thought that FENDALL SUTHERLAND (I) married a MISS CHILDS, daughter or sister of WALTER CHILDS.

JOSEPH, son of FENDALL, married GRIZELLE, daughter of PHILLIP MALLORY, and had FENDALL CHILDS SUTHERLAND and JOHN MALLORY SUTHERLAND of Dinwiddie, and no doubt others.

Either, FENDALL SOUTHERLAND (I) by a second marriage or his son FENDALL, JR., had a wife, MARY, by whom he had two daughters.

1. ANN SOUTHERLAND b. Oct. 21, 1769, d. after 1842, m. Oct. 27, 1785, WILLIAM GREGORY of Elsing Green, King William County.
2. ELIZABETH SOUTHERLAND, m. ISAAC QUARRELS of the same county.

The date of FENDALL'S death was between 1785 when his name appears on the tax list of King William County and 1790 when the name of his wife, MARY, appears showing ownership of the same land.

We see then that JOSEPH SOUTHERLAND (I) had before his death, probably in or before 1739; FENDALL, JOHN, JOSEPH, JR., and ELIZABETH, who married THOMAS WHITWORTH.

There were WILLIAM SUTHERLIN, SR. and JR. in Pittsylvania County in 1791 at which date WILLIAM, JR. was deeded land by his father indicating that he was born not later than 1770. If the latter was the WILLIAM SUTHERLIN later of Russellville, Indiana and husband of MARY buried there, she was at least 26 years his junior for her tombstone gives the date of her birth as August 31, 1794 and her age as 88. Her husband was probably WILLIAM III. He could not have been son of GEORGE SUTHERLAND m. about 1750-1755.

An earlier WILLIAM, no doubt WILLIAM SUTHERLIN, SR., and his wife, MARY, had issue: (1) WILLIAM, JR. m. MARY (POLLY) FRANKLIN; (2) FENDAL SUTHERLAND b. December 25, 1767, d. February 19, 1834, had 9 children. His wife was LYDIA, the sister of POLLY FRANKLIN.

Because WILLIAM SOUTHERLAND or SUTHERLIN (I) b. about 1745 - 50 had a son FENDAL, we believe that he also was a son of FENDALL (I), who was of age in 1739 and the grandson of JOSEPH (I), who is thought to have married a MISS FENDALL.

If WILLIAM, SR. was the child of FENDALL, then he was the brother of JOSEPH, fore-parent of the Dinwiddie group. If FENDALL, who died 1785 - 90, was FENDALL, JR., then we can count only three children of FENDALL, SR.

An earlier WILLIAM SOUTHERLAND was a member of the quorum of King and Queen Co. in 1714 and was sheriff of the same adjoining county in 1720. King William County was made from King and Queen in 1701/2 and this WILLIAM may have been a brother of his contemporary, GEORGE SOUTHERLAND (I).

In Bagleys "History of King and Qucen Co." on page 177, the statement is madc that "across the river in King William County is Huntington, the seat of the SOUTHERLAND family and that it had been abandoned for many years as a dwelling. We know that this was the home of FENDALL SR., or JR., and MARY and that it was given by the latter to the GREGORY family. We do not know if this was the land or the home that had formerly belonged first to GEORGE SOUTHERLAND (I) and then to his son, JOSEPH, father of FENDALL.

The records of King William and many of its neighboring counties were destroyed in the War between the States. For this reason we have no further definite information of PHILIP SOUTHERLAND after he signed the dced for the 212 acres which was a joint possession of his brother GEORGE and himself in July 1721.

A PHILIP SOUTHERLAND of King William County b. 1761 and died 1831 served as a private in the Rev. War, enlisting in Captain JAMES BURTONS Company in January 1777. He was at thc surrender at Yorktown and was discharged in 1781.

On Sept. 15, 1790, he married a widow, MRS. MARY TWINEE, who was the daughter of THOMAS WARE, and who had married THOMAS TWINEE in 1780.

Therc was a PHILIP SUTHERLIN, who lived in Stokes Co., North Carolina, who seemed to be relatcd to the SUTHERLINS of Pittsylvania Co., Virginia, who were descendants of GEORGE SUTHERLAND II of Goochland,

brother of Philip (I). PHILIP of Stokes Co., married a MISS VEST and they had issue: WILLIAM SUTHERLIN, ASHLEY, PHILIP, JR., ISHAM, SAMUEL, CHARLES, SARAH, POLLY and DAVID. A PHILIP SOUTHERLAND was early mentioned in Pitts, Co., Va.

GEORGE SOUTHERLAND II, b. 1690-1700

GEORGE SOUTHERLAND, JR., the youngest of the three orphan sons of GEORGE SR., who died before 1700, fortunately did not remain in King William County. We pick up his trail in Virginia, Patent Bk. No. 13, on page 493 where it is recorded that one GEORGE SOUTHERLAND, patented 400 acres of land - - - in Virginia. Book 13 covers the years 1725-1730 and the page number indicates that would be perhaps in the latter half of that five year period.

The county in which this tract was located is not readable if given at all, but we presume that this land was in either Henrico or Goochland Cos., the latter of which was made from Henrico in 1727/8.

On January 12, 1732, GEORGE SOUTHERLAND and his wife, JUDITH, sold to WILLIAM SPURLOCK 100 acres of land in Goochland (Deed Bk. No. 1 p. 369). All were of Goochland.

On June 12, 1740, GEORGE and JUDITH sold to ROBERT CHOWNING 150 acres in Goochland joining on one side a parcel of land retained by Southerland. (Bk. No. 3 p. 313)

In 1763, GEORGE SOUTHERLAND II of Goochland County deeded to JOHN PAYNE the land on which he, the said SOUTHERLAND, was then residing. (Bk. No. 8 p. 349) A wife does not sign this deed and the number of acres is not given but we suppose it would be 150 acres, he having already sold a total of 250 acres of the 400 acre patent.

We also presume that his wife, JUDITH, was deceased before this latter date and that he moved from Goochland to Fluvanna County, Va., which unfortunately has lost nearly all of its records. His later holdings there was sold with consent of SANDERS, SAMUEL and GEORGE SOUTHERLAND.

SANDERS SOUTHERLAND of Fluvanna County married MARTHA DAVIS, daughter of SAMUEL DAVIS of the same County. Sanders owned land in 1767 in Pitts Co., Virginia, as did GEORGE and SAMUEL, JR., who died in 1804 in Henry County made from Pitts. SAMUEL SOUTHERLAND, SR. had preceeded GEORGE SOUTHERLAND III to Prince Edward County. Actually, he was there in 1747 while it was still a part of Amelia.

A deed recorded in Fluvanna County, January 2, 1783, states that SANDERS SOUTHERLAND and wife, MARTHA, with the consent of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND and SAMUEL SOUTHERLAND sell to JAMES CRUDSEN a certain parcel of land.

SANDERS had at least two sons, SAMUEL II and GEORGE, b. 1761, who served in the Rev. Army.

Because of this joint deed and association by proximity we believe that SANDERS (I), SAMUEL (I) and GEORGE (III) were the sons of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND (II) and his wife, JUDITH, who probably was JUDITH SANDERS. The Quaker Records of Henrico County, Virginia, recorded in Valentine Papers Vol. II, p. 1196, quote the entries of June 8, 1735, on which date is stated that RICHARD PLEASANT, JAMES BULLER, ELIZABETH BULLER (BULLOCK) and JUDITH SANDERS have unadvisedly married those not professing with us. This date if correct, is probably 10 years after GEORGE SOUTHERLAND (II) and JUDITH, his wife, were married and for that reason may not refer to them but the name JUDITH is found several times in Sanders birth records of Parishes near by Henrico County, and the fact that a son is called SANDERS, strengthens the belief that the wife of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND (II) was a SANDERS.

A descendant of GEORGE III and his son, THOMAS SUTHERLIN , was named GEORGE SANDERS SUTHERLIN and in Christs Parish Middlesex County, Virginia, the birth of JUDITH SANDERS, daughter of GEORGE and ANNE SANDERS (SAUNDERS) is recorded Oct. 27, 1720.

This JUDITH SANDERS was too young to have been the wife of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND (II), but she may have been the neice of his wife, JUDITH.

THIRD GENERATION - GEORGE SOUTHERLAND III (SUTHERLIN)

In Goochland Co., there is a document which refers to GEORGE SOUTHERLAND III, which in Vol. I, "We Cousins" was mistakenly attributed to GEORGE II, who owned and sold his 400 acre tract there between 1728-1764.

This was the division in 1755 of the estate of WILLIAM DEPRIEST whose widow, JUDITH, after his death, married JOHN HODGES. GEORGE SOUTHERLAND was married to one of the daughters of DEPRIEST when his estate was settled in 1755 and since the wife of GEORGE II was JUDITH and the widow of DEPRIEST had the same name, it was natural to suppose that they were mother and daughter.

A closer look at the document in question seems to indicate that it was GEORGE SOUTHERLAND III who married the daughter of WILLIAM DEPRIEST of Goochland County.

A bond recorded in that county, 19 April, 1755, between RANDOLPH DEPRIEST, WILLIAM DEPRIEST,

GEORGE SOUTHERLAND and JOHN SALMON on the one part and JOHN HODGES on the other part, states that WILLIAM DEPRIEST died in 1738 and that his widow, JUDITH, is now married to JOHN HODGES. "The consideration of the above obligation is such that whereas, the above bound RANDOLPH DEPRIEST, WILLIAM DEPRIEST, GEORGE SOUTHERLAND and JOHN SALMON have this day agreed with the said JOHN HODGES, who intermarried with the widow of WILLIAM DEPRIEST, deceased, the mother of the above bound RANDOLPH DEPRIEST, WILLIAM DEPRIEST, and the wives of the above bound GEORGE SOUTHERLAND and JOHN SALMON; that the wife of the said JOHN HODGES is to have one feather bed and the furniture thereunto belonging and one iron pot, part of the estate of WILLIAM DEPRIEST, deceased, and that the above named RANDOLPH DEPRIEST, WILLIAM DEPRIEST, GEORGE SOUTHERLAND and JOHN SALMON and ROBERT DEPRIEST and JOHN DEPRIEST, infants, being under the age of 21 years, shall have the remainder." (D. Bk. 7 to p. 13)

This document was dated 1755 at which time two of the sons of WILLIAM DEPRIEST, SR. who died in 1738, seventeen years previous, were still minors. This indicates that he was a man with a young family when he died in 1738 and we therefore believe that his daughter would not have been the wife of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND II who was born before 1699, but of his son, GEORGE III, born about 1725-30. In fact, JOHN SUTHERLAND, eldest son of GEORGE III, was born July 1752.

This document is loaded with significance for his descendants in Texas since in that SUTHERLAND branch there are five generations of WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLANDS beginning with the son of MAJOR GEORGE SUTHERLAND and his wife, FRANCES MENEFEE, who died in the Alamo, March 6, 1836, one of its 183 immortal heroes, and at present ending with a youngster nicknamed "Cinco."

WILLIAM DEPRIEST, deceased 1738, was either son or grandson of ROBERT DEPRIEST of New Kent Co., in which county the birth of WILLIAM DEPRIEST, son of ROBERT, was recorded in St. Peter's Parish, Oct. 24, 1689. ROBERT'S wife, ELIZABETH, died two days later, so it is possible that WILLIAM DEPRIEST, SR. was the only child of ROBERT'S first marriage.

The fact that WILLIAM named his first son RANDOLPH, certainly indicates that either his mother, ELIZABETH or his wife, JUDITH, was a RANDOLPH. The fact that Goochland County was adjacent to Henrico, the seat of the early RANDOLPHS strengthens this theory.

If ELIZABETH was a RANDOLPH, it's possible that JUDITH, the wife of WILLIAM DEPRIEST, was JUDITH AUSTIN. In August 1768, GEORGE SUTHERLIN and his wife, MARY, entered suit against WILLIAM AUSTIN in Pitts.Co. The compiler's eldest brother, stated that SUTHERLANDS were related to STEPHEN AUSTIN who was related to the AUSTINS of Virginia. The will of JOHN DEPRIEST brother-in-law of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND was filed October 14, 1799 and names his sons, NATHANIEL, CHARLES, SAMUEL and AUSTIN DEPRIEST.

The Douglas Register of Marriages of Goochland County, records the marriages of RANDOLPH DEPRIEST to MARY MIMS, both of that county in 1751; WILLIAM DEPRIEST and TABITHA TONY, both of Goochland April 6, 1758; JOHN DEPRIEST and ELIZABETH RICE, 6 June, 1759, both of said parish and county; ROBERT DEPRIEST and MARTHA BAILY, Oct. 15, 1766. It also records the births of the children of JOHN SALMON and NAOMI DEPRIEST, beginning with JACOB b. June 6, 1759; MOLLY b. 6 February, 1762; JOHN and SALLY b. Sept. 28, 1764; JOEL b. 17 Mar. 1767; and ROBERT b. August 19, 1770.

The wife of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND III is the only one of the heirs of WILLIAM DEPRIEST not mentioned in the Douglas Register, but the dates of the marriages of her brothers and the dates of births of her sister's children further confirms that the date of her own marriage would have been in the mid 1750's and that her husband was GEORGE SOUTHERLAND III, not his father. We know that in 1768, his wife was MARY, so unless he had married a second time before that date, her name was MARY DEPRIEST and they married about 1755.

We also know, whatever her given name, that she was the great-grandmother of WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND of the Alamo and the foreparent of all the others of that name in Texas.

The following moving letter, written by FRANCES MENEFEE SUTHERLAND, wife of MAJOR GEORGE SUTHERLAND, to her sister, SARAH NORMENT, in Tennessee, describes for us today a dramatic chapter in the History of Texas and her grief over the loss of her son, WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND (I).

June 6, 1836

Dear Sister:

I received your kind letter sometime in March, but never had it been my power to answer it, 'til now, and now what I must say (Oh, God support me). Yes, sister, I must say it to you, I have lost my William. Oh, yes, he is gone, my poor boy is gone, gone from me. The sixth day of March in the morning, he was slain in the Alamo in San Antonio. Then his poor body committed to the flames. Oh, Sally, can you sympathize with and pray for me that I may have grace to help in this great time of trouble. He was there a volunteer, when the Mexican army came there. At the approach of thousands of enemies they had to retreat in the Alamo where they were quickly surrounded by the enemy. Poor fellows. The Mexicans kept nearly continual firing on them for thirteen days. Then scaled the walls and killed every man in the fort but two black men.

Dear Sister, I think the situation a sufficient excuse for not answering your letter sooner. Since I received your letter I had been away from home with a distracted mind and had got back to our house where we found nothing in the world worth speaking of - - not one mouthful of anything to eat, but a little we brought home with us. God only knows how we will make out.

I will try to compose my mind while I give you a short history of a few months back:

The American army was on our frontier. We thought prudent to stay at home and did so until the General thought proper to retreat. We, being on the frontier, were compelled to go (I speak for all). We went to the Colorado, forty miles, but after some time, the General thought proper to retreat farther and of course we had to go, too. We proceeded to the Brazos River. There stopped a few days, but dread and fear caused another start; there Mr. Sutherland quit us and joined the army. William Heard was in, also, with a good many more of our citizens, however, we went on for several miles and again stopped, hoping we would not have to go farther, but someone over there that week brought in the early news the Mexican army was crossing the Brazos not more than forty miles behind us. Again we started and traveled two days then heard the army was twenty miles behind. (I wish you could know how the people did as they kept going about trying to get somewhere, but no person knew where they were trying to get to.) Several weeks passed on without any certain account from the army. All this time you could hardly guess my feelings. My poor William gone, Sutherland in the army, me with my three little daughters and my poor Thomas wandering about, not knowing what to do or where to go. You will guess my feelings were dreadful, but ever the Lord supported me, and was on our side for I think I may boldly say the Lord fought our battles. Only to think how many thousands of musket and cannon balls were flying there over our army and so few touched. I think seven was all that died of their wounds. Some say our army fought double their number and who dares say that the Lord was not on our side. Mr. Sutherland's horse was killed under him, but the Lord Preserved his life and brought him back to his family. He found us at the mouth of the Sabine from thence we all returned home. I pray that God will still continue our friend and bless us with peace again.

I will now say that our relations are only in tolerable health, tho' none very sick. Poor mother went the rounds not very well all the time. I was afraid she would not hold out to get back again, but she is much better. She stopped at Brother William's, and I expect she will stay there all summer. Sister Martha lives there. We are still trying to raise something to eat, but I fear we will miss it. Brother Thomas' house was burnt with stable and corn crib. Mr. Sutherland's warehouse was burnt, also his houses on the Bay. But if we can have peace and can have preaching, I won't care for the loss of what property is gone.

Your Sister,
Fannie,
(Frances Menefee Sutherland)

NOTE:

1. FRANCES MENEFEE SUTHERLAND was the great grandmother of the compiler of "We Cousins," and a copy of this letter was given her (the compiler) in 1936 by her Aunt, MRS. BELL SUTHERLAND FAIRES.
2. Students of Texas History will recognize that FRANCES MENEFEE SUTHERLAND has given here not only a family account, but indirectly a fine description of the Battle of the Alamo; the Runaway Scrape, where the people on the Mexican frontier fled to keep from being caught between the two Mexican Armies, one from Matamoros, the other from San Antonio; and lastly, of the Battle of San Jacinto, where Texas Independence was won. History records that the Texas defeated that day, a force almost four times its number.

GEORGE SOUTHERLAND III lived or visited in Prince Edward Co., briefly. The only record of him there states that he was not of that county.

But when he bought land in Halifax Co. on 10 April, 1759 of GEORGE WALTON of Lunenburg Co., Va., he was spoken of as of Prince Edward Co., Virginia.

This conveyance was for a tract of land, 177 acres, on the north side of the Dan River adjoining the mouth of Sandy River for which SOUTHERLAND paid 75 pounds (Halifax Co., Va. - Deed Bk. 2, p. 47). At the time of his death in 1804, he owned land which fitted this description.

In 1760, GEORGE SOUTHERLAND III was appointed surveyor from Sandy River to Wynn's Road, (Halifax Co. Plea Bk. No. 3, p. 164) and in 1765 he was surveyor from Sandy River to Samuel Harris: Years later when Harris, the great Baptist organizer's will was made, SOUTHERLAND was one of the witnesses. (Clement's "History of Pitts Co.")

In 1767, Pittsylvania Co. was cut off from Halifax Co. In the first list of tithables of the new county, the names of GEORGE SOUTHERLAND and his eldest son, JOHN, appear. The latter was now in his 16th year, at which age a male became tithable.

In the census of 1782 - 87, GEORGE and four of his sons, JOHN, GEORGE, JR., THOMAS and WILLIAM are listed.

This GEORGE SOUTHERLAND III successively of Goochland, Prince Edward, Halifax and Pittsylvania Cos., Va., died in the latter county in 1804 and names his children in his will proven there that year.

The writer of the will spells the name, which up to this time has been spelled SOUTHERLAND, SUTHERLIN and those branches of the family who have remained in Virginia spell it that way to this day.

The 1804 will of GEORGE SUTHERLIN (III) names his fourth generation children. Though he names no wife, he had probably been married twice, his first wife being ————————DEPRIEST.

The will follows:

"In the name of God, Amen. I, GEORGE SUTHERLIN, SR. of the county of Pittsylvania, being weak in body but in perfect senses and memory, thank God for it, and do make this my last Will and Testament abolishing all other wills. Firstly, I commend my soul to God my Maker in hopes of a sound and perfect resurrection and my body to the grave to be buried in a Christian manner at the direction of my Executors hereafter mentioned and my worldly goods which it has pleased God to lend me, I dispose of in manner following after all my just debts are paid.

Firstly, I give unto my son, JOHN SUTHERLIN, my negro WILL and my negro SAMPSON.

Item: I give unto my son, GEORGE SUTHERLIN, my negro CUFF and negro PRICE and increase and bed and furniture.

Item: I give unto my son, THOMAS SUTHERLIN, my negro SAM and negro JONAS and negro JENEY and increase.

Item: I give unto my son, WILLIAM SUTHERLIN, my negro IKE and negro DORCAS and increase.

Item: I give unto my son, ADAM SUTHERLIN, my negro JACK and negro girl, FRANK, and increase and one hundred acres of land to be sold off to him joining his land where he lives on the south side of Sandy Creek.

Item: I give unto my son, JAMES SUTHERLIN, my negro ARCHA and negro woman YARDO and increase, also one feather bed and furniture, also all my lands on Dan River, Sandy River and Sandy Creek excepting one hundred acres to be sold off to my son ADAM SUTHERLIN of the upper end of the land I now live on.

Item: I give unto my daughter, MILLIA GWIN, my negro JAMES and negro woman PHILLAS known by but PHILLAS and increase with my land on Sandy River bought of JOHN STONE, JR.

Item: I give unto my daughter, ELIZABETH MICKELBORROUGH, my negro Squire and negro wench, SABRA and increase.

Item: I give unto my daughter, NANCY McDANIEL, my negro woman SHARLOT and her child and fifty dollars over her portion of effects to be sold

Item: I give unto my daughter, SALLY SMITH, my negro MANVIL and negro woman SARAH and increase.

Lastly, I desire that all my property not already given may be sold and equally divided among all my children and I do appoint my trusty sons, THOMAS SUTHERLIN and ADAM SUTHERLIN to be my Executors to see that this my last Will and Testament be fully executed as witness my hand and seal this 17th day of January, 1803."

Signed, sealed and delivered
in the presence of
THOMAS DIENES
MATTHEW [X] INKS (His mark)
BROOKS [X] INKS (His mark)

The words 'increase' and
'daughter' inserted before
signed.

GEORGE [X] SUTHERLIN (his mark)

Seal

Below is all data known to the compiler concerning the descendants of the fourth generation beginning with JOHN.

We know from court records of Pittsylvania County, Virginia that this will of GEORGE SUTHERLIN, SR. was presented in court by the executors, THOMAS SUTHERLIN and ADAM SUTHERLIN, in both June and July of 1804. It was not recorded because JOHN SUTHERLIN, ROBERT MICHAELBOROUGH, WILLIAM SMITH and JOHN GWIN, the husbands of three of his sisters, appeared in court to protest that it was not the will of GEORGE SUTHERLIN, SR. They appealed to the District Court at Frnaklin, but finally dropped the case and the will was recorded in Pittyslvania County, Va., October 13, 1804.

FOURTH AND FIFTH GENERATION

I. JOHN SUTHERLAND, first named son in the will of GEORGE SUTHERLIN, SR., was the ancestor of the Texas branch of the SUTHERLAND family presented in full in succeeding generations.

According to records in one of the SUTHERLAND Bibles now in the Archives at the University of Texas Library in Austin, Texas, "JOHN SUTHERLIN, son of GEORGE SUTHERLIN, SR., was born July 19, 1752," (page 678). In the birth records of the other SUTHERLAND Bible, the entry reads, "JOHN SUTHERLAND, son of GEORGE, was born July 19, 1752, giving the transition of the name from SUTHERLIN to SUTHERLAND. Just under it, the entry reads "AGNES SUTHERLAND, consort to JOHN and daughter of DAVID SHELTON, was born July 19, 1757," and in the Marriage Records of both Bibles is the identical entry, "JOHN SUTHERLAND, SR. and AGNES SHELTON was married January 8, 1776."

The Bible Records under death entries record the death of AGNES SUTHERLAND, September 15, 1821, in Anderson County, Tennessee, since the JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR. Bible so states.

The tombstone of JOHN SUTHERLAND, SR. in Oakwood Cemetery, Tuscumbia, Alabama bears this inscription. "In Memory of JOHN SUTHERLAND, SR., born in Pittsylvania County, Virginia, July 19, 1752 and died Seventh September A. D. 1836."

JOHN SUTHERLAND, oldest son of GEORGE SUTHERLIN, SR., of Pittsylvania County, Virginia, was born in Virginia, July 19, 1752, but certainly not in Pittsylvania County as is stated on his tombstone, because Pittsylvania County had not been erected at that time, and the 1759 deed to his father shows GEORGE SR., bought land and moved to what was later Pittsylvania County when JOHN was seven years old.

Pittsylvania County records show that JOHN, who was twenty-four years old when the Revolutionary War started in 1776, took the oath of allegiance there before JOHN WILSON on October 18, 1777. His father and his brother GEORGE, also took the oath the same year.

Records of a court of claims held October 15, 1782 in the same county lists JOHN SOUTHERLAND and also GEORGE SOUTHERLAND as having furnished beef for the Continental Army.

Since he was the proper age to fight, it is likely that JOHN also took an active part in the fighting.

The most likely record that might be his is listed in "North Carolina Soldiers of The Revolution" by the D.A.R.

A little research on the JOHN SOUTHERLAND claim number 3827, page 555, who received pay through C. DIXON, and on the GEORGE SOUTHERLAND, page 56, grant number 3523 of DIXON'S Company might reveal that they were the sons of GEORGE SUTHERLIN, SR. of Pittsylvania County, Virginia. MR. ELIJA SUTHERLAND of Danville, Va. and descendants of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., of Texas, both insist that JOHN (I), son of GEORGE III of Virginia was known as Captain but not necessarily a Military Title.*

This County was just across the state line from North Carolina and we are told that the original SUTHERLAND holdings were about three miles west of Danville, just inside the Virginia state line.

JOHN and his father or brother GEORGE, both signed a petition to get inspection in Danville in the early day and on Sept. 19, 1795 a receipt of the tobacco received for the Dan River Warehouse, Danville was signed by JOHN SUTHERLIN and JOHN DIX.

Both of the later bought one-half acre lots in the original town of Danville when it was established November 23, 1793, but evidently JOHN SUTHERLIN never built on his, for later records show that JOHN and AGNES SUTHERLIN sold a one-half acre lot in Danville. (Ref: Clement's "History of Pittsylvania County, Virginia.")

About the time of his father's death in 1804 or a little later, JOHN and AGNES moved with their family to Knox County later Anderson County, Tennessee.

In Virginia, they had buried three of their four oldest children, SARAH, DAVID, and SUSANNAH - ELIZABETH had married in 1802, so when they ventured into the frontier of this new state, the oldest child living then under their roof was their fifth child, GEORGE SUTHERLAND, then sixteen.

In Tennessee, JOHN SUTHERLAND was active in the establishment of the Methodist Church, being one of the original trustees of White's Chapel, which was the first Methodist Church established in Knoxville. (Ref: "French Broad Country") JOHN lived in Tennessee until about 1822. There the remaining children grew to manhood and womanhood and married, three of them marrying three of the children of JOHN MENEFEE and his wife, FRANCES RHODES.

About 1823, JOHN SUTHERLAND, SR. moved to Alabama to join several of his children who were already living there.

He died at Tuscumbia, Alabama September 7, 1836, six years after his son, GEORGE and the MENEFEES had moved on to Texas.

Children of JOHN and AGNES SHELTON SUTHERLAND were:

1. SARAH SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 15, 1776; d. Sept. 10, 1795.
2. DAVID SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 19, 1778; d. June 20, 1800. DAVID was named for his grandfather DAVID SHELTON who in 1799, when young DAVID was twenty-one, gave him power of attorney to attend to the grandfather's business in Kentucky and in 1800 made him one of the executors of his will; (Caswell Co., N.C. Records) however, DAVID died in 1800 before his grandfather SHELTON died in 1801.

*At a court held at Chatham Va., 21 Nov. 1780, William Wilkerson produced a commission from executive appointing him first Lieutenant; Thomas Wilkerson, Second Lieutenant; and John Southerland, Ensign: (Pittsylvania Co., Va. Court Order Bk No.4, p. 374).

3. ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, b. July 27, 1782; d. Sept. 27, 1847 (date on tombstone at Tuscumbia, Ala.) m. (1) June 26, 1802 QUIN MORTON, b. June 6, 1781; d. July 4, 1837 (dates on tombstone at Tuscumbia, Ala.) son of JOHN and TALITHA TINSLEY MORTON; m. (2) McDONALD.
4. SUSANNAH SUTHERLAND, b. June 12, 1785; d. June 28, 1801 "on Sunday Morning."
5. GEORGE SUTHERLAND V) b. Jan. 8, 1788 in Pitts. Co., Va.; d. April 22, 1853 in Jackson Co., Texas; m. in Tenn. Oct. 10, 1815, FRANCES MENEFEE, b. Sept. 19, 1789 in Tenn.; d. March 15, 1874 in Jackson Co., Texas; dau. of JOHN and FRANCES RHODES MENEFEE.
6. LUCY SUTHERLAND, b. Jan. 20, 1790 in Va.; d. Sept. 24, 1829 in Ala.; m. (1) THOMAS H. PAINE, m. (2) May 14, 1812 THOMAS MENEFEE, b. March 8, 1779 in Va.; d. 1858 in Jackson Co., Texas, son of JOHN and FRANCES RHODES MENEFEE.
7. JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., b. May 11, 1792 in Va.; d, April 11, 1867 at SUTHERLAND Springs, Texas; m. (1) Dec. 31, 1816 in Knox Co., Tenn. DIANA KENNEDY; d. Feb. 17, 1827 in Ala.; m. (2) in Ala. ANN BRYAN LANE who d. 1840; m. (3) in Colorado Co., Texas, MARGARET DIXON (DICKSON) in 1841.
8. AGNES SUTHERLAND, b. Aug. 22, 1794 in Va.; d. Feb. 28, 1859 in Fayette Co., Texas; buried first in Pine Springs Cemetery, Fayette Co.; in 1936 her body was removed to the State Cemetery in Austin, Texas with that of her husband, WILLIAM MENEFEE, signer of the Texas Declaration of Independence, whom she married Dec. 17, 1817 in Tenn. WILLIAM MENEFEE, son of JOHN and FRANCES RHODES MENEFEE, b. 1796; d. Oct. 28, 1875 in Fayette Co., Texas.
9. THOMAS SUTHERLAND, b. Feb. 9, 1798 in Va.; d. Aug. 8, 1827 in Ala.; m. Apr. 25, 1822 ANNE HENRY.

NOTE:

The above information was taken from the family records in the Bibles of JOHN SUTHERLAND and GEORGE SUTHERLAND now in the Archi ves of the University of Texas Library at Austin, Texas.

II. GEORGE SUTHERLIN, JR., IV. A deed GEORGE SUTHERLIN, SR. to GEORGE, JR., dated 1775 proves that the latter was born not later than 1754 and places him in line of succession just younger than JOHN, born 1752. GEORGE was old enough in 1776 to take the oath of allegiance to the newly formed United States. In 1800, he would have been 50 years old, therefore, it appears that it was not he that married June 16, 1800, MARY (POLLY) MICHEBOROUGH, unless of course this was a very late first marriage or a second one. More likely it was the marriage of his son, GEORGE. Be that as it may, of that marriage there were children. NATHANIEL, JOSEPH, STEPHEN, FRANCIS, BENJAMINE, JOHN H. and MICHELBOROUGH.

1. BENJAMINE m. and moved to Mo. Had: JAMES F., JOHN H., RHODA, MARY, ELLEN and ROBERT MARION.
2. JOHN H. SUTHERLIN thought to have moved to Montana. Had: WILLIAM H., LUTHER, FRANCIS and ROBERT N.
3. MICHAEBOROUGH SUTHERLIN died at Danville in 1836. Had: CAPT. C. M. SUTHERLIN, lived near Idaho Falls, Idaho and FRANCES TAYLOR SUTHERLIN m. T. L. WILLIAMS'

III. THOMAS SUTHERLIN, third son of GEORGE SUTHERLIN III, of Pittsylvania Co., Va., had: (1) GEORGE SUTHERLIN, b. 1796; d. 1856; m. POLLY NORMAN. 2. JOHN SUTHERLIN m. SALLIE CONWAY, dau. of CHRISTOPHER CONWAY. 3. THOMAS SUTHERLIN, JR., m. 1819 FRANCES JEFFERSON SUTHERLIN, dau. of his Uncle JAMES and went probably to Miss. 4. NANCY SUTHERLIN m. SAM LANE. 5. FRANCES PRIDE SUTHERLIN m. ARTHUR BAUGH (Prides & Baugh both Henrico Co. families). 6. SUSANNAH SUTHERLIN m. MR. WILLIAMSON. 7. MARY SUTHERLIN m. ------BARNETT. 8. ELIZABETH SUTHERLIN m. ------ BARNETT.

There is no record of the wife of THOMAS SUTHERLIN, b. 1755-60 but since his daughter was named FRANCES PRIDE we would venture a guess that she was a PRIDE, perhaps daughter of THOMAS PRIDE who lived in Halifax Co., Va., and Caswell Co., Va. 1762-1785. (See PRIDE)

IV. WILLIAM SUTHERLIN, son of GEORGE III of Pittsylvania Co., Va., born about 1760-65; m. Nov. 29, 1785 in the above county, NANCY GWIN.

V. ADAM SUTHERLIN, son of GEORGE SR., or III of Pitts., Co., Va., m. Dec. 20, 1801 in that county, ELIZABETH (BETSIE) ROBERTSON, dau. of EDWARD ROBERTSON. (M. Bk. I p. 32) ADAM was named one of the executors of his father's will and ROBERTSON was one of the eleven men who offered security. ADAM was named one of the executors of his father's will and ROBERTSON was one of the eleven men who offered security. ADAM was Captain of Pitts. Co. Militia in 1803. Judging by the date of his marraige he was probably b. 1775-1780. ROBERTSON SUTHERLIN, evidently the son of ADAM and BETSIE was bondsman on May 17, 1824 for the marriage of WILLIAM S. SHELTON to ELIZABETH ROBERTSON.

VI. JAMES SUTHERLIN, son of GEORGE SR., was the greatest benefactor of his fathers will although he was the youngest son. His will written March 16, 1812 and recorded in Pittsylvania Co. names his wife PATSY SUTHERLIN,

executrix and mentions two children, FANNY JEFFERSON SUTHERLIN and JAMES MADISON SUTHERLIN. In 1819 the daughter m. her first cousin, THOMAS SUTHERLIN, JR.
VII. MILLIA, dau. of GEORGE SUTHERLIN, SR., m. JOHN GWIN, perhaps the brother of NANCY, wife of WILLIAM SUTHERLIN.
VIII. ELIZABETH SUTHERLIN m. Oct. 17, 1791, ROBERT MICHAELBOROUGH.
IX. NANCY SUTHERLIN, dau. of GEORGE, SR. m. McDANIELS.
X. SALLY SUTHERLIN of GEORGE, SR., m. WILLIAM SMITH.

Parts of the information for these first four generation was furnished by MR. E. T. SUTHERLIN of Danville, Virginia.

SUTHERLAND
SIXTH GENERATION

DESCENDANTS OF GEORGE SUTHERLIN III

Grandchildren of JOHN and AGNES SHELTON SUTHERLAND.

I. Children of fifth generation ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN and AGNES SUTHERLAND, and her husband QUIN MORTON, son of JOHN and TALITHA TINSLEY MORTON whom she married June 26, 1802.

1. QUIN TINSLEY MORTON, b. March 26, 1803; d. Sept. 12, 1804.
2. JOHN SHELTON MORTON, b. Oct. 26, 1804; d. July 23, 1807.
3. TALITHA ANN MORTON, b. Aug. 6, 1806 in Tenn.; d. Oct. 1, 1839 in Texas; m. Oct. 11, 1827 in Ala. JOHN W. HODGES.
4. AMERICA MORTON, b. Mar. 3, 1808 in Tenn.; d. Aug. 8, 1855 in Texas; m. W.J.E. HEARD, b. Aug. 16, 1801; d. 1871.
5. WILEY (blotted) BLOUNT MORTON, b. Jan. 1, 1810.
6. DAVID SHELTON MORTON, b. Jan. 22, 1812; d. June 28, 1837 (date from tombstone) just six days before his father's death; m. MARY and left two small sons, DAVID MORTON, JR. and QUIN MORTON II) (Ala. Court Records).
7. SUSANNAH McKENDREE MORTON, b. Dec. 11, 1813; d. sometime later than 1847; m. ——— SAMPLE. (Information other than birth from tombstones in Oakwood Cemetery, Tuscumbia, Ala.)
8. AGNES SHELTON MORTON, b. April 25, 1816.

NOTE:
1. The information on the family of ELIZABETH and QUIN MORTON was taken from the records of the JOHN SUTHERLAND Bible except where otherwise designated. Bible is now in the Archives of the University of Texas Library in Austin, Texas.
2. See MORTON Section for additional MORTON data.

GEORGE SUTHERLAND

Before we list the sixth generation children of GEORGE S UTHERLAND V) and his wife FRANCES MENEFEE, it is fitting that we summarize his many accomplishments.

On his tombstone in the family cemetery near Edna and Ganado, Texas is this inscription:

"To the memory of Major GEORGE SUTHERLAND, a soldier of the Texas Revolution, and a participant in the Victory won at San Jacinto April 21, 1836; Born in the State of Virginia January 8, 1788; Emigrated to the province of Texas 1830. Departed this life April 22, 1853."

To this rather imposing list of accomplishments could be added many more, for this intrepid pioneer was on the frontier of Tennessee with his parents when he was sixteen; pioneered in Alabama as early as 1820, and it was he, with his brother-in-law, JESSE WHITE, who led a large contingent of settlers to Austin Colony in Texas in 1830 and 1831.

It was GEORGE SUTHERLAND who signed the contract with STEPHEN F. AUSTIN to bring to what is now Jackson County, Texas, that group of pioneers who were later called the "Alabama Settlement."

In signing this contract, he represented these heads of families: 'JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR. (who was not able to come until later), WILLIAM MANIFEE, THOMAS MANIFEE, WILLIAM HEARD, JOSEPH RECTOR, WILLIAM PRIDE, JESSE WHITE, BENJAMINE J. WHITE, SAMUEL ROGERS, ROBERT G. CROZIER.' While their names are not mentioned, there came, also, three widows: Mrs. JEMIMA HEARD, Mrs. ELIZABETH DEVER, and their

mother, Mrs. FRANCES RHODES MENEFEE, widow of JOHN MENEFEE, and either mother, mother-in-law, or grandmother to almost the entire group.

GEORGE SUTHERLAND had been commissioned Major in the Anderson County, Tennessee Militia Thirteenth Regiment in 1809, BROWN says that he had served in the legislatures of both Tennessee and Alabama. In the next several years, he was to serve Texas as well. He commanded a Company at the storming of San Antonio in the fall of 1835, and had his horse shot from under him at San Jacinto. According to the Adjutant General of Tenn., SUTHERLAND served as a Lieutenant in the War of 1812.

On March 6, 1836, his young son, WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND, gave his life in the supreme sacrifice with the other heroes of the Alamo.

GEORGE SUTHERLAND joined the Army at San Jacinto after having taken his family out of the path of the Mexican Army advancing up the coast from Matamoros, Mexico

Family tradition says that it was GEORGE SUTHERLAND, with grief in his heart for his lost son, and with fear in his heart for his family hidden in the forest, who at San Jacinto, faced the persistantly retreating SAM HOUSTON and demanded that plans to retreat farther (to the Sabine) be abandoned.

The battle was fought where they stood at San Jacinto, the victory was won, and a vast empire gained.

GEORGE SUTHERLAND served his country in peace as well as war.

He was a member of the Texas Conventions of 1832 and 1833, a member of Congress of the Republic of Texas in 1837 and a member of the second, but unsuccessful, committee to select a site for the Capitol of Texas.

Prior to the war with Mexico for Texas Independence, GEORGE SUTHERLAND was active in all the proceedings that led up to it.

The first and second Conventions have been mentioned. He was also present with his son, WILLIAM, at the Navidad-Lavaca meeting July 7, 1835.

He was one of a committee of five appointed to prepare a memorial to the Mexican Government asking for the repeal of an Act prohibiting further American Colonization in Texas and setting forth the reasons for the respect and attachment of the colonists for the constitution of 1824.

He was also a member of the committee who prepared a petition to the Mexican Government for the separation of Texas from the state of Coahuila and the establishment of it as a separate state with a more convenient capitol than Saltilla.

As the provisional government took shape, GEORGE SUTHERLAND was on several vital committees: (1) committee to recommend regulations of customs in Texas, (2) committee to plan and recommend methods for uniformity in organizing the militia, (3) a Commissioner of Archives appointed December 5, 1835 to provide that fit and suitable persons be appointed to take charge of all land records.

He left a fine heritage for his descendants and for his sixth generation children named below.

(Information mostly from Brown's, "History of Texas")

SIXTH GENERATION

II. Children of fifth generation, GEORGE SUTHERLAND (V), son of JOHN and AGNES SUTHERLAND, who m. Oct. 10, 1815 FRANCES MENEFEE, dau. of JOHN and FRANCES MENEFEE:

1. JOHN MENEFEE SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 15, 1816; d. July 19, 1832 while in school in Ala.
2. "WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND I) of GEORGE was born tenth August 1818;" d. "WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND, son of GEORGE and FRANCES, was slain in the Alamo at San Antonio sixth of March 1836" (Quotes from Family Bible).
3. THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 2, 1820 in Limestone Co., Ala.; d. Apr. 4, 1900 at Edna, Texas; m. Jan. 27, 1848 MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, b. Apr. 8, 1832; d. Jan. 9, 1872, dau. of JOHN W. HODGES and his first wife, TALITHA ANN MORTON. (See MORTON)
4. GEORGE (WASHINGTON) SUTHERLAND VI), b. July 18, 1822 in Ala.; d. Nov. 11, 1827; buried in Tuscumbia, Ala.
5. FRANCES AGNES SUTHERLAND b. June 12, 1824; d. Sept. 15, 1867; m. in Jackson Co., Tex. Dec. 1, 1834 ALEXANDER TALFERIA GAYLE, d. Mar. 28, 1857.
6. ELIZABETH MARTHA SUTHERLAND, b. Mar. 28, 1828 in Ala.; d. Jan. 18, 1883 at Edna, Texas; buried in SUTHERLAND Cemetery. ELIZABETH MARTHA married, divorced her first husband, DR. CHARLES GAYLE, and took her name back. She was the beloved "Aunt Betty" of her nieces and nephews.
7. GEORGIA ANN SUTHERLAND, b. Feb. 7, 1830; d. Feb. 22, 1848; m. May 13, 1847 WILLIAM B. MUNSON, d. Nov. 18, 1848.

NOTE:

Source of information, the family records in the GEORGE SUTHERLAND Bible now in the Archives of the University of Texas Library at Austin, Texas.

III. Children of fifth generation LUCY SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN and AGNES SHELTON SUTHERLAND, who m. (1) THOMAS H. PAINE; m. (2) May 14, 1812, THOMAS MENEFEE, son of JOHN and FRANCES MENEFEE.

1. MARIAH PAINE of first marriage died as a child.

Issue of second marriage.

2. JOHN SUTHERLAND MENEFEE, b. June 29, 1813; d. Nov. 4, 1884; m. (1) July 9, 1839 ANGELINE R. CLARK; d. Feb. 19, 1841; m. (2) Nov. 27, 1847 FRANCES JANE DEVER, b. July 3, 1815; d. Feb. 28, 1879, dau. of JAMES and ELIZABETH DEVER.
3. GEORGE MENEFEE, b. July 3, 1815; d. Jan. 31, 1891; m. Feb. 1, 1842 LETITIA L. MERCER.
4. SUSAN L. MENEFEE, b. June 13, 1817; d. Mar. 13, 1893; m. Oct. 7, 1841 JOHN W. HODGES, widower of her first cousin TALITHA ANN MORTON.
5. FRANCES OVERACRE MENEFEE, b. July 17, 1819; m. Mar. 10, 1839 BARTON PECK of Goliad (license in Jackson Co., Texas.)
6. THOMAS MENEFEE, b. Dec. 13, 1821; d. Jan. 25, 1829.
7. AGNES SHELTON MENEFEE, b. Jan. 19, 1824; d. 1873; m. (1) Rev. R. H. HILL, d. 1857 leaving 5 children; m. (2) NEWTON LANDA; d. in Confederate Army and left two more children.
8. WILLIAM MENEFEE, b. Dec. 15, 1825. Was in Mexican War, enlisting at Port Isabel and took part in the Battle of Monterrey. He and his brother, THOMAS, were in Whitfield's Legion Confederate Army. WILLIAM never married, but lived in Goliad with his sister, Mrs. PECK.
9. THOMAS NELSON MENEFEE, b. Aug. 29, 1829; d. 1862 in the Civil War; m. AMERICA KELLETT.

2. Information from SUTHERLAND and MENEFEE Bibles, MENEFEE Bible in possession of Mrs. ELSIE HENDRICKS, Ganado, Texas - great, great, granddaughter of THOMAS MENEFEE and his wife LUCY SUTHERLAND.

IV. Children of fifth generation AGNES SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN and AGNES SUTHERLAND, who married Dec. 17, 1817 in Tenn. WILLIAM MENEFEE, son of JOHN and FRANCES MENEFEE:

1. SARAH S. MENEFEE, b. Sept. 14, 1818; d. 1844 in Wharton Co., Tex.; m. Sept. 26, 1838 LEVY MERCER, son of ELI and ANN THOMPSON MERCER, b. July 28, 1815; d. 1865.
2. THOMAS SHELTON MENEFEE, b. Sept. 27, 1820; d. Feb. 3, 1912; m. MARY ELIZABETH PENN MENEFEE.
3. JOHN SUTHERLAND MENEFEE, b. July 27, 1822; d. 1848 in Montgomery.
4. TALITHA ANN MENEFEE, b. June 5, 1824; d. Fayette Co., Tex. Aug. 15, 1846; m. Jan. 29, 1845, Rev. JOHN W. DEVILBISS in Colorado Co., Texas.
5. WILLIAM MENEFEE, JR., b. May 5, 1826; m. June 9, 1859 SUSAN B. SMITH, dau. of AMBROSE and NANNIE SMITH.
6. GEORGE MENEFEE, b. May 6, 1828; d. Aug. 25, 1829.
7. QUIN MORTON MENEFEE, b. Aug. 11, 1830; d. Sept. 5, 1867 of yellow fever, m. MARY ELIZ. PENN.
8. ELIZABETH FRANCES MENEFEE, b. Sept. 14, 1835, in Tex.; d. April 11, 1853 in Fayette Co., Tex.

NOTE

Information of this family mostly submitted by Miss HETTIE MENEFEE of Edna, Texas, granddaughter of WILLIAM and AGNES MENEFEE, assisted by her niece, LUCILLE BILLUPS BUHLER. (1957)

JOHN SUTHERLAND

JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR. was a few years younger than his brother GEORGE. In 1816, he was assistant postmaster at Knoxville, Tenn. On January 8, 1817, he was one of the 48 subscribers to the first public library in Knoxville.

Sometime after 1821, he moved with his father, JOHN, SR., to Alabama and induced his brother GEORGE to go into the Mercantile business with him in Tuscumbia, Alabama. There he was trustee of La Grange College.

JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., was one of those for whom GEORGE SUTHERLAND signed the contract to join Austin Colony in 1830, but he could not meet the time limit specified by Austin so did not move to Texas until about 1837 or later.

However, he was there on a visit in 1836 and happened to be in San Antonio with his nephew, WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND, in February of that year when the Army of Travis, fortified in the Alamo, was besieged by the Mexican Army.

On the day of the Mexican's approach, he and a companion were on sentry duty on the western side of town when they saw the Mexican Army approaching.

In racing their horses back to the fort, JOHN SUTHERLAND was thrown and his leg was injured. Shortly after that when Travis asked for volunteers to take an appeal out for help, he volunteered to go, saying that because of his injury he would be of little use in the fighting.

He did get through to Gonzales and other places with the message.

After the peace was won and colonists could again come into Texas, he moved his family there. His version of the Alamo story was published by Miss ANNIE SUTHERLAND a good number of years ago and has been used by other authors as reference.

In 1841, when he married the third time and in 1846 when he wrote a letter which is preserved today, he was living in Colorado Co., Texas.

Later he moved again to Cibolo Creek and the town of SUTHERLAND Springs, Texas was named for him.

SIXTH GENERATION

V. Children of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., son of JOHN and AGNES SUTHERLAND, who m. Dec. 31, 1816 at Knoxville, Tenn. his first wife, DIANA KENNEDY, dau. of JAMES and SARAH KENNEDY b. 27 Jan. 1797; d. Feb. 17, 1827 in Tuscumbia, Ala. Issue:

1. DAVID KENNEDY SUTHERLAND b. 21 Feb. 1820 in Knox Co., Tenn.; d. 4 Feb., 1852; m. EMILY ELIZABETH DART.
2. SARAH AGNES SUTHERLAND b. 5 Feb., 1822 in Knoxville; d. 29 Jan., 1870 at Sutherland Springs, Texas; m. 5 Jan., 1842 JAMES PATTERSON NELSON CRAIGHEAD; b. 3 Dec., 1812; d. 5 Sept., 1854.
3. JOHN JAMES SUTHERLAND b. 22 Dec., 1824 at Tuscumbia, Ala., d. 13 June, 1845 at Egypt, Texas; unmarried.

Issue of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., of JOHN, and his second wife, ANN BRYAN LANE, m. Nov. 15, 1827 at La Grange, Ala.; d. Jan. 10, 1840 at Egypt, Texas. ANN was the daughter of LEVIN and NANCY LANE.

4. GEORGE QUINN SUTHERLAND b. 16 Nov., 1829 at Tuscumbia; m. in Lavaca Co., Texas 5 Nov., 1861 LYDIA A. MIDDLEBROOK. He died 20 Sept., 1869. His widow later m. W. E. BARNES in 1872.
5. LEVIN LANE SUTHERLAND b. 23 Aug. 1832, never married; d. in South America.
6. MARGARET ANN, b. 16 Oct., 1834; d. as infant.
7. JACK SUTHERLAND, b. 26 Jan., 1838 at Egypt, Texas; d. 18 June, 1897; m. 23 Mar., 1870 MARY ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND; b. 24 Sept., 1848 in Bourbon Co., Ky., dau. of DR. WILLIAM SUTHERLAND of Victoria, Texas. MARY E. d. 18 June, 1897.
8. MARGARET ANN (II) b. 10 Jan. 1840; d. Nov., 1840.

Children of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR. and his third wife, ANN MARGARET DICKSON, widow of ABIJAH DICKSON. JOHN JR., m. Jan., 1841 at Egypt, Texas ANN MARGARET b. 5 Aug., 1809 at Savannah, Ga.; d. 5 Nov., 1862 at Sutherland Springs, Texas:

9. MARY FRANCES SUTHERLAND b. May, 1843; d. 8 Nov. 1901; married ———————JOHNSON.
10. WILLIAM THOMAS SUTHERLAND b. 1 Dec., 1845; d. 2 May, 1924; m. EUNICE SOPHIA b. 14 Feb., 1849; d. 24 June, 1939; no issue.
11. ALEXANDER HAMILTON SUTHERLAND b. 1 Mar. 1848 m. Nov. 1873 FANNY VICTORIA DIX of Corpus Christi, Texas. She was the dau. of CAPT. JOHN JAMES DIX and CYNTHIA McNEIL dau. of JEMIMA EDWARDS and DR. McNEIL. JOHN JAMES DIX was one of 6 brothers who moved with their parents from Mich. to Texas. He and two brothers fought with the Confederacy while the other three fought with the Union.

Below is a letter written by JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR. to his eldest daughter, SARAH AGNES and her husband then living in Tenn. It gave news of family and times and is therefore, worth preserving.

Wharton, Texas
December 13, 1846

My Dear Sir,

Your esteemed letter dated Oct. 27 with Sarah's P. S. annexed came to hand three mails since, through which I was much gratified at learning the entire recovery of Sarah's health and also the health of the family and our connections.

To Sarah - Your Uncle William Menefees' have moved to Fayette County. I advised you sometime ago of his selling his land. He moved about three weeks since. He is now at Egypt.

Mr. Walker, the purchaser arrived and took possession last week. He also purchased Col. Hodge's place for his brother-in-law. They are wealthy planters and intend making sugar.

Col. Hodges has just returned from the San Antonio River where he and his brothers-in-law, Hill and Peck have been for six or seven weeks erecting buildings, preparatory to removal. They will settle about twenty miles above Goliad west side of River.

The sugar crops are just about through with. Your Uncle Thomas Menefee made about thirty thousand and your Uncle George about thirty-five thousand, a superior article to any we get from La.

Frances Gayle has a fine daughter about a month since. Calls her Martha Francis for her two grandmothers. Her son, George, was only fourteen months old when the daughter was born.

Mrs. Levy Mercer and Mrs. Reed also has daughters about the same age, all doing well.

My health this year has been better than usual. So also has the rest of the family. Not so with all our friends. Your Uncle William Menefee and son, William have both been very unwell, but now recovering.

JOHN SUTHERLAND

This letter was probably addressed to JAMES PATTERSON NELSON CRAIGHEAD to whom JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR'S., daughter, SARAH, born in 1822 had been married for four years and they no doubt, were residing in Knoxville, Tenn. at the time the letter was written.

The UNCLE GEORGE was GEORGE SUTHERLAND of Jackson Co., and FRANCES GAYLE was his eldest daughter named for her mother, FRANCES MENEFEE.

Both THOMAS and WILLIAM MENEFEE had married sisters of GEORGE and JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., and COL. HODGES, now married for the second time, and his brother-in-law, HILL and PECK were all married to SARAH'S cousins, the daughters of THOMAS MENEFEE.

This letter written ten years after Texas Independence and 16 years after the Alabama Settlement was made in Jackson County, Texas, seems to record the first migration from the colonist's original holdings.

SARAH and her husband later moved to Texas and settled at Sutherland Springs in Wilson Co., which was settled by her father. She is buried there.

Sixth generation, grandchildren of THOMAS SUTHERLIN of Pittsylvania Co., Va., and his wife probably —— PRIDE, and later generations.

I. GEORGE SANDERS SUTHERLIN b. 1796 m. POLLY NORMAN.

Issue:

1. NARCISSA b. 1820 m. MATTHEW HODNETT. Had: (1) ANNIE HODNET m. HART McDEARMA, (2) PAULINE m. JOHN TAYLOR, (3) JACK HODNETT, (4) WILLIAM HODNETT m. KITTY TAYLOR.
2. MAJOR WILLIAM T. SUTHERLIN b. in Pitts. Co., Va., 7 April 1822; d. Danville Va. July 22, 1893; m. JEANIE ERWIN PATRICK. He was Mayor of Danville 1855-61, Railroad promoter, educator and banker. He was commissioned Major in the confederate army. His home is said to have been the last Capitol of the Confederacy as Jefferson Davis was staying there when he was notified of the surrender at Appomatox. The home is now used as a public library.
   Issue: (1) MARTHA ELLA died young. (2) JANIE LINDSEY m. 1871 COL. FRANCIS SMITH.
   Had. 1. JANIE SUTHERLAND SMITH m. BARRETT.
3. PAULINE SUTHERLIN m. 18 June 1848 J. PACE.
4. GEORGE SUTHERLIN b. 1826; d. 1861.
5. JOHN M. SUTHERLIN b. 1830; d. 1881.
6. NATHANIEL GWIN SUTHERLIN.

II. JOHN SUTHERLIN, son of THOMAS, m. SALLIE CONWAY, dau. of CHRISTOPHER CONWAY.

Issue:

1. SARAH ELIZABETH b. 1828.
2. NATHANIEL ARTHUR moved to La; killed Dec. 14, 1863 in the battle of Fredericksburg, member of Co., F., 9th La. Regiment, 1st Lt. C.S.A.
3. CHRISTOPHER THOMAS m. ELIZA ANN FERRELL, dau. of B. L. FERRELL of Halifax Co., Va.
   Issue: (1) CHRISTOPHER THOMAS, JR. m. MISS PEGLER, (2) PETER SUTHERLIN moved to Macon, Ga., (3) BIRD SUTHERLIN no issue.
4. JOHN HASKIN SUTHERLIN b. 6 April 1821 in Pitts. Co., Va.; d. 9 June 1883 in DeSoto Parish, La.; m. SARAH PRISCILLA KEENER b. 2 Nov. 1832; d. 25 Jan. 1881. Had:
   (1) GEORGE died as a child.

(2) EDGAR W. SUTHERLIN b. July 12, 1851; d. 21 Oct. 1924 De Soto Parish, La., graduate of La State Univ. 1871; Senator, Lawyer, Judge; m. MARY LEIGH WILLIAMSON b. 25 Oct., 1870 dau. of COL. GEORGE McWILLIE WILLIAMSON and MARY LEIGH MARSHALL.
Had:
A. MAJOR JOHN HASKIN SUTHERLIN, U.S.A. born Shreveport, La. 15 Dec. 1901; m. FREDÀ OVERBEY.
Have: (a) DRISTIN LEIGH (b) JOHN HASKIN, JR.
B. MARY WILLIAMSON SUTHERLIN b. 20 Dec. 1904.
C. MARGARET LEIGH SUTHERLIN b. 7 Jan., 1907.
D. COL. GEORGE HAWES SUTHERLIN, U.S.A.F., b. 18 Mar. 1910; m. BETTIE ARRINGTON, dau. of JOHN DUNCAN ARRINGTON and LALIA JONES.
Have: (a) GEORGE HAWES SUTHERLIN, JR. b. 12 July, 1939 (b) LALIA LEIGH b. 12 Dec., 1944; (c) JOHN A. b. Oct. 1949; d. Oct. 1949.
E. SARAH CONWAY SUTHERLIN b. 9 April, 1913 m. ROY PRINE;
Have: (a) MARY MARGARET PRINE b. 25 Mar., 1941 (b) SARAH LEIGH PRINE b. 6 Dec., 1946.

(3) JOHN ARTHUR SUTHERLIN (son of JOHN HASKINS SUTHERLIN) b. 1854; d. 1907; m. MITTIE McMICHAEL.
Had:
A. JOHN ARTHUR, JR., B. JAMES, C. EDGAR, D. ALICE, E. EVA.

(4) WILLIAM KEENER SUTHERLAND b. July 11, 1859; d. Nov. 1917. Prominent La. doctor, graduate of Heidelberg University, Germany m. MINA UTZ of Shreveport.
Had: WILLIAM KEENER SUTHERLIN, JR. b. 29 Jan., 1905.

(5) ALICE SUTHERLIN b. 1864 in De Soto Parish La.; d. 1939; m. G. A. WHITE.
Had: A. NORENE WHITE died as infant.

(6) ELLA SUTHERLIN d. as child

(7) JAMES HASKIN SUTHERLIN b. 25 Oct. 1870; d. 1937 Oklahoma City, graduate of the U. of Va., Oklahoma State Senator, Judge, Lawyer m. IRENE ELAM.

5. JAMES CONWAY SUTHERLIN, son of JOHN, son of THOMAS (I) of GEORGE III m. MISS KILLMER.

6. WILLIAM SANDERS SUTHERLIN, his brother, b. 1825; d. Aug. 25, 1864 at Sheppardstown, Md in 9th La. Inf. Confederate Army.

7. GEORGE HERITAGE SUTHERLIN b. 9 Dec., 1830 near Danville, Va.; m. (1) MARY McMICHAELS; m. (2) AGUSTA MILES, 2nd Lt. Company F, Cresent Reg. C.S.A.

The above information submitted by COL. GEORGE H. SUTHERLIN, U.S.A.F., a descendant of THOMAS (I).

SUTHERLAND
SEVENTH GENERATION

Descendants of JOHN (I) and AGNES SHELTON SUTHERLAND.
Grandchildren of GEORGE SUTHERLAND and FRANCES MENEFEE.

I. Children of sixth generation THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I) and his wife MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, dau. of JOHN W. HODGES and first wife, TALITHA ANN MORTON HODGES:

1. TALITHA MORTON SUTHERLAND, b. Mar. 30, 1849; d. Feb. 27, 1934 in Houston, Tex.; m. Mar. 6, 1873 at "Springhill" in Jackson Co., Tex. FRANCIS MENEFEE WHITE, JR., son of FRANCES MENEFEE WHITE and MARGARETTE ANN SEALY.

2. FRANCES MENEFEE SUTHERLAND, b. July 6, 1850; d. Aug. 17, 1896; m. Mar. 6, 1873 LUCKY F. WELLS, son of DR. FRANCIS FLOURNOY WELLS and his wife, MARTHA McNUTT of Texana.

3. MARTHA ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, b. Jan. 27, 1852; d. Jan. 13, 1876; m. Sept. 10, 1873 DR. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS, son of DR. F. F. WELLS and wife MARTHA McNUTT WELLS.

4. GEORGE SUTHERLAND VII), b. Nov. 27, 1853; d. May 23, 1908; never married.

5. Son born Nov. 1, 1855, d. Mar. 6, 1857.

6. JOHN WILEY SUTHERLAND, b. Feb. 6, 1857; d. Oct. 1, 1897; never married.

7. MARY HODGES SUTHERLAND, b. Mar. 9, 1859; d. Oct. 14, 1934, at Austin, Texas; m. (1) DR. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS, widower of her sister MARTHA ELIZABETH, on Nov. 4, 1883; (he died at Edna, Texas, May 5, 1892); m. (2) Jan. 14, 1895 ROBERT MERCER CROCKETT.

8. THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND II), b. Feb. 27, 1861; d. May 3, 1923 at Salado, Texas; m. Dec. 9, 1885 LAURA L. ROGERS, dau. of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his wife MARY EVELYN EVANS b. Dec. 24, 1868; d. Mar. 12, 1932 at Houston, Texas.

9. FLORENCE GAYLE SUTHERLAND, b. Feb. 4, 1863; d. June 5, 1866.

10. WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND II), b. Mar. 26, 1865; d. Sept. 10, 1937; m. Dec. 8, 1889 EMMA ROGERS, dau. of MR. and MRS. SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS.
11. ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND, b. Apr. 15, 1867; d. Nov. 17, 1911 at Uvalde, Texas m. Oct. 21, 1891 MINNIE ROGERS, dau. of MR. and MRS. SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS.
12. LILIAN BELL SUTHERLAND, b. Apr. 19, 1868; d. Dec. 2, 1952; m. (1) Jan. 11, 1894 H. B. DICKSON, sheriff of Wharton Co. He d. about Mar. 1, 1894; m. (2) Oct. 18, 1898 EDWARD LEE FAIRES; d. Sept. 3, 1953. No issue.

NOTE:

1. The information for this seventh generation of the SUTHERLAND family, children of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I) son of MAJOR GEORGE SUTHERLAND, and his wife, MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, was taken from the records of their family Bible now in possession of T. S. SUTHERLAND IV) in Austin, Texas.

II. Children of sixth generation FRANCES AGNES SUTHERLAND, dau. of MAJ. GEORGE SUTHERLAND and his wife, FRANCES MENEFEE, b. June 12, 1824; d. Sept. 15, 1867; m. Dec. 1, 1843 ALEXANDER TALEFERIA GAYLE, d. Mar. 28, 1857.

1. GEORGE SUTHERLAND GAYLE, b. Sept. 13, 1845; d. Feb. 1, 1914 at Edna, Texas; m. Sept. 1, 1875 REGINA S. DILL of Goliad; b. Apr. 27, 1855; d. Feb. 3, 1945.
2. VIRGINIA GAYLE, b. Jan. 14, 1855; d. Mar. 3, 1929; m. COL. S.M. LESESNE in 1879; no issue.
3. BARTLETT BUCKNER GAYLE, b. July 30, 1856 in Jackson Co., Texas; d. Feb. 19, 1933 at Edna, Texas; m. Feb. 28, 1878 EUDORA STARR BANKHEAD, dau. of ZACARIAH and his wife ROSANNA WHITE BANKHEAD; b. Dec. 1, 1859 in Jackson Co., Texas; d. Nov. 21, 1908 in San Antonio, Texas.

Grandchildren of THOMAS MENEFEE and LUCY SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN, SR. and AGNES.

I. JOHN SUTHERLAND MENEFEE m. Nov. 25, 1847 FRANCES JANE DEVER. Issue:
1. STEPHEN AUSTIN MENEFEE, b. Nov. 6, 1848; d. Dec. 27, 1923; never married.
2. LUCY ELIZ. MENEFEE, b. Nov. 23, 1850; d. Feb. 23, 1917; m. June 27, 1878 THADDEUS ELIJAH MERCER, son of ELIJAH G. MERCER and JEMIMA A. HEARD b. Sept. 30, 1855; d. Nov. 13, 1928.

II. GEORGE MENEFEE m. Feb. 1, 1842 LETITIA ANN MERCER, dau. of ELI and ANN THOMPSON MERCER. Issue:
1. THOMAS MENEFEE, b. 1843.
2. JAMES MENEFEE, b. 1845.
3. GEORGE MENEFEE, JR., b. Sept. 3, 1847; d. Sept. 13, 1900 at Edna, Texas; m. June 20, 1878 in Jackson Co., Tex. MOLLIE VALINDA LOONEY, b. Mar. 30, 1859 in Texas.
4. PENELOPY MENEFEE, b. 1849.
5. LUCY MENEFEE, b. 1851.
6. MATTIE MENEFEE, b. 1853.
7. WM. MENEFEE, b. 1855.
8. JOHN MENEFEE, b. 1857.

III. SUSAN L. MENEFEE, m. Oct. 7, 1841 JOHN W. HODGES being his second wife.
Issue:
1. LUCY ANN HODGES, b. Nov. 5, 1844; d. 13 Mar. 1893; m. Sept. 1865 DILLARD FANT.
2. WILLIAM DEPRIEST HODGES, b. Feb. 1848.
3. THOMAS MENEFEE HODGES, b. Aug. 1849; m. Mar. 30, 1871 SALLIE M. LOYLESS.
4. ROBERT WARD HODGES, b. Feb. 1848; m. April 9, 1868 MARTHA WORDLEY.
5. FRANCES MERANDA HODGES, b. Jan. 1, 1851; m. May 29, 1868 N. L. WORD.
6. AGNES SHELTON HODGES, b. Dec. 7, 1852; d. Jan. 26, 1882; m. EUGENE DAVIS.
7. GEORGE PIERCE HODGES, b. April 1856.

IV. FRANCES OVERAKER MENEFEE m. Mar. 10, 1839 BARTON PECK of New York, N.Y. and Goliad.
Issue:
1. LUCY PECK m. THOMAS MERIWEATHER.
2. SUSAN PECK, m. GUS PATTON of Goliad.
3. FANNIE AGNES PECK, m. GEO. MERIWEATHER.
4. WILLIAM PECK.
5. BARTON PECK, JR., m. (1) lost both first wife and first child; m. (2) LULA GORMAN.
6. VIOLA PECK, m. MR. WORD.
7. ALONZO PECK, m. MARY OPHELIA BELL.
8. SAMUEL WILLIAM PECK.
9. MARY LOUISE PECK, m. DR. A. W. GRAY
10. THOMAS MENEFEE PECK.

V. AGNES SHELTON MENEFEE, m. (1) R. H. HILL, m. (2) NEWTON LANDA. Had issue by both husbands; five by first and two by second marriage.

VI. THOMAS NELSON MENEFEE, m. about 1860 AMERICA KELLETT.

Issue:

1. THOMAS NELSON MENEFEE, JR., b. before 1862; m. ANN ABERNATHY.

NOTE:

Later generations of HODGES will be found under HODGES.

Grandchildren of WILLIAM MENEFEE and his wife AGNES SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN SR. and AGNES.

I. SARAH S. MENEFEE, m. Sept. 26, 1838 LEVI MERCER.

Issue:

1. AGNES MERCER, b. July 15, 1840; m. May 26, 1858 EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT b. 4 April, 1834; d. 5 Feb. 1917.
2. MARY MERCER, m. A. N. KERR.

II. THOMAS SHELTON MENEFEE, m. Nov. 7, 1869 MARY ELIZ. PENN. MENEFEE, widow of his brother, QUINMORTON MENEFEE.

Issue:

1. THOMAS BLAKEMORE MENEFEE, b. Nov. 28, 1870 in Fayette Co., Texas; m. June 5, 1912 ANTONETTE POLANSKY; no issue.
2. SUSAN ELLA MENEFEE, b. May 16, 1874; m. June 18, 1893 ROBERT VAN McNELLY; d. Dec. 17, 1903.
3. HENRY AMZI MENEFEE, b. July 11, 1877; d. Nov. 5, 1938; m. April 15, 1903 ELIZ. KRAUSE.

III. WILLIAM MENEFEE, JR., m. June 9, 1859 SUSAN B. SMITH dau. of AMBROSE and NANIE SMITH.

Issue:

1. JOHN AMBROSE MENEFEE, b. Dec. 1, 1860; d. young.
2. WILLIAM OTIS MENEFEE, b. Nov. 20, 1865; d. April 4, 1866.
3. NANNIE WAUGH MENEFEE, b. Dec. 1, 1860; m. June 6, 1889 O. P. BASFORD.
4. THOMAS WORDLEY MENEFEE, b. May 9, 1870; m. Nov. 23; 1889 KATE RANDALL.
5. AGNES S. MENEFEE, b. June 8, 1872; m. (1) T. H. NAPIERS; m. (2) JOHN LUTY.
6. ROBERT S. MENEFEE, b. Dec. 29, 1876; m. WILLIE M' GRANHAM.
8. MARY ELIZ. MENEFEE, b. Aug. 21, 1880; m. WALTER H. WILCOX.

IV. QUIN MORTON MENEFEE, m. Oct. 10, 1855 MARY ELIZ. PENN.

Issue:

1. WILLIAM PENN MENEFEE' b. Aug. 1, 1856 in Fayette Co.; d. Mar. 5, 1925 at Flatonia, Texas.
2. ELIZ. FRANCES MENEFEE, b. Oct. 5, 1858; d. Feb. 15, 1895; m. April 22, 1891 FRANCIS MENEFEE WHITE III), son of JOHN T. WHITE and his wife MARY CATHERINE SEALY.
3. HENRIETTA AGNES MENEFEE b. Aug. 15, 1860; d. Aug. 10, 1957 at Edna, Texas; never m.
4. KATE MENEFEE, b. May 24, 1862; d. June 17, 1862.
5. ANNIE PATRICK MENEFEE, b. Oct. 1, 1863; d. June 11, 1872.
6. SARAH TALITHA MENEFEE, b. Mar. 2, 1866 in Fayette Co.; d. May 26, 1953; m. Nov. 27, 1898 GEORGE BUHLER; d. Mar. 19, 1939.

Grandchildren of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR. son of JOHN, SR. and AGNES, grandson of GEORGE III) of Pittsylvania Co., Va. and his three wives.

I. DAVID KENNEDY SUTHERLAND, son of the first wife, DIANA KENNEDY, m. EMILY ELIZABETH DART.

Had: 1. DIANA ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND m. PETER JAMES PLUMB; descendants live in Austin, Texas.

2. SARAH AGNES SUTHERLAND, d. Dec. 6, 1851; never married.

II. SARAH AGNES SUTHERLAND, dau. of DIANA, the first wife m. JAMES PATTERSON NELSON CRAIGHEAD.

Issue:

1. ELIZA TEMPERANCE CRAIGHEAD, b. 11 Dec. 1843; d. 19 Aug. 1877; m. 17 June 1873, JOHN W. LILLY.
2. ANNA SUTHERLAND CRAIGHEAD, b. 16 May 1845; d. 5 Dec. 1846.
3. JOHN SUTHERLAND CRAIGHEAD, b. 8 Mar. 1847 in Knoxville, Tenn.; d. 22 Sept. 1935; m. 22 Dec. 1870 MARY ISOBELLA McALISTER b. 27 Jan. 1846; d. 4 Mar. 1910.
4. DIANA KENNEDY CRAIGHEAD, b. 17 Feb. 1849; d. 10 Mar. 1854.
5. JANE KENNEDY CRAIGHEAD, b. 7 May 1851 in Knoxville, Tenn.; m. 13 Aug. 1870 in Tenn. JOSEPH WILLIAM ANDERSON, later editor of Floresville, Texas Chronicle; killed by Mexicans Sept. 24, 18 ——.
6. PATTERSON NELSON CRAIGHEAD, b. 8 Sept. 1853; never married; d. 28 Sept. 1882.

III. GEORGE QUINN SUTHERLAND, son of JOHN, JR. and his second wife ANN BRYAN LANE, m. LYDIA A. MIDDLEBROOK.

Issue:

1. ANNA SUTHERLAND, b. 16 Aug. 1862; d. 4 July 1908; m. MAULDIN.
2. JOHN SUTHERLAND, b. 22 June 1864; d. 27 June 1965; oldest Mason in the state of Texas; m. 1885 ESTELL ANDERSON of St. Helena's Parish, La., Mayor of Bay City for 14 years.
3. GEORGE WILLIAM SUTHERLAND, b. 26 April 1866; d. in Alice, Texas 30 Dec. 1959; m. SARAH J. McDONALD, b. 12 Mar. 1868; d. 8 Sept. 1951.
4. SARAH AGNES, b. 8 June 1868; d. after 1949; m. 9 Nov. 1886 LEMUEL THOMAS HILBUN b. 4 Aug. 1861; d. 7 Sept. 1930.

IV. JACK SUTHERLAND, son of JOHN, JR. and his second wife ANNY BRYAN LANE m. Mar. 30, 1870 MARY ELIZ. SUTHERLAND.

Issue:

1. MARY JANE (called MAMIE) b. 15 July, 1872, still living in 1961; never married.
2. ANNIE BRYAN SUTHERLAND, b. 27 Feb. 1874; d. 15 Sept. 1957 never married. Taught school many years and wrote "The Fall of the Alamo" from Memories of her grandfather, JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR.
3. JACK HUGH SUTHERLAND, b. 1 Jan. 1876 at Sutherland Springs, Texas; d. 22 Jan. 1958; m. 29 Aug. 1918 CORA BELL WREN of Fort Worth Texas b. 8 Sept. 1887.
   Had: (1) JACK WREN SUTHERLAND and (2) dau. who m. B. B. BAKER of San Antonio, Texas.
4. AGNES SUTHERLAND, b. 6 Nov. 1877; d. 26 Dec. 1946; never m.
5. WINNIFRED LEE SUTHERLAND, b. 25 Jan. 1879; d. 1960; m. FRANK T. MERRIWEATHER.
   Had: (1) FRANK T. JR. (2) LEVIN and (3) PECK MERRIWEATHER.
6. WALTER LEVIN SUTHERLAND, b. 14 Nov. 1881; d. 21 Sept. 1958; m. LIZZIE b. 1 Sept. 1879; d. 14 Sept. 1909.
7. FREDERICK LANE SUTHERLAND, b. 26 July 1883; d. 12 Nov. 1901.
8. LIZZIE SUTHERLAND, b. 1 Mar. 1885; d. 20 April 1886.
9. JOHN WM. SUTHERLAND b. 25 July 1886 m. CALLIE lived at Sutherland Springs.
10. LEVIN QUINN, b. 21 Dec. 1888 lived in Houston, has issue.
11. LUCY MORTON SUTHERLAND, b. 30 Sept. 1891 m. J. M. GENTRY of Goliad, Texas and they have three sons. He d. 1948. She died about 1963. One son named FRANKLIN GENTRY.

V. MARY FRANCES SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR. (son of JOHN and AGNES, grandson of GEORGE III) and his third wife, ANN MARGARET DICKSON, widow, m. ——— JOHNSON.

Issue:

1. ROBERT ALEX JOHNSON, b. 5 Aug. 1867; d. 30 Sept. 1878.
2. WILLIAM JOHNSON lived at Goliad, Texas.

VI. ALEXANDER HAMILTON SUTHERLAND, b. 1 Mar. 1848; m. Nov. 1873 FANNIE VICTORIA DIX of Corpus Christi, Texas.

Issue:

1. JOHN DIX SUTHERLAND, b. 4 Dec. 1874 in Corpus; m. IRENE ELIZABETH GRAVIS; have one adopted son DOUGLAS SUTHERLAND, who has a son, RICHARD SUTHERLAND.
2. WILLIAM ALEX SUTHERLAND, b. 1 Dec. 1876 m. MINNIE NEWBERRY; lived in Las Cruses, N.M.
3. FANNIE FLORENCE SUTHERLAND, b. 2 April 1882; m. CHARLES H. BUSH.
4. ETHEL SUTHERLAND, b. 29 June 1885; m. 7 Jan. 1905 REID LOUIS PUSTER, b. 25 Nov. 1882; d. 25 Mar. 1925.
5. SIDNEY McNEIL SUTHERLAND, b. 2 April, 1888 in Monterrey, Mexico; m. MARTHA ——— in Van Couver; no issue.
6. ROBERT McDONALD SUTHERLAND.

NOTE:

ALEXANDER H. SUTHERLAND was a Methodist Missionary to Mexico.

SUTHERLAND
EIGHTH GENERATION

Descendants of GEORGE SUTHERLAND V and FRANCES MENEFEE:

I. Seventh generation TALITHA MORTON SUTHERLAND, dau. of THOMAS SHELTON and MARY E. HODGES SUTHERLAND, m. Mar. 6, 1873 FRANCIS MENEFEE WHITE, JR.

Issue:

1. MARY MORTON WHITE, b. Sept. 26, 1874 in Jackson Co.; d. Feb. 18, 1936 in Houston, Tex. and buried in

Edna Cemetery; m. (1) Jan. 7, 1896 ADDISON YOUNG HARRELL; m. (2) B. J. DODGE.

2. MARGARETTE ESTELLE (PEARL) WHITE, b. Jan. 22, 1876 in Jackson Co.; d. 23 April, 1960; m. Jan. 1, 1900 in Jackson Co. to SAMUAL TRIBBLE CREWS, d. 10 Nov. 1963.
3. HERMAN SUTHERLAND WHITE, b. Dec. 9, 1877 in Jackson Co., Texas; d. Nov. 1936 in Edna, Texas; m. (1) Oct. 4, 1904 NOLA MARSHALL; m. (2) Aug. 22, 1928, CLEMENTINE LESAGE
4. WILLIAM LEE WHITE, b. Dec. 23, 1879 in Jackson Co., Texas; d. Dec. 15, 1930 and buried in Edna, Texas; m. (1) Mar. 2, 1907 MARGUERITE CLAY; m. (2) Aug. 21, 1912 ALLIE YEATS; no issue.
5. FRANCIS DUPUY WHITE' b. June 10, 1882; d. Dec. 15, 1915 and buried in Edna, Texas; m. (1) Jan. 8, 1908 MARY ESTHER HUGHES; m. (2) Aug. 16, 1914 CARRIE VICKERS; no issue.
6. TALITHA SUTHERLAND WHITE, b. Feb. 27, 1884; d. in Wis. Dec. 27, 1913 and buried in Edna, Texas; m. Jan. 27, 1904 JOHN FRANKLIN CLEMMER.
7. THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND WHITE, b. Oct. 23, 1886 in Jackson Co.; d. July 3, 1954 at Corpus Christi, Texas and buried at Edna, Texas; m. (1) May 26, 1909 MYRTLE THRIFT; m. (2) MRS. L. T. CRUZE, Sept. 11, 1934; m. (3) Mar. 2, 1947 LETA JOHNSON.

NOTE:

1. Data taken from Family Records in the Bible of FRANCIS MENEFEE WHITE, JR., and TALITHA M. SUTHERLAND WHITE, furnished by MARY SAM CREWS, their granddaughter.

II. Seventh generation FRANCES MENEFEE SUTHERLAND, dau. of THOMAS and MARY ELIZ. SUTHERLAND m. 6 Mar. 1873, LUCKY FRANCIS WELLS.

Issue:

1. DR. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS II), b. Sept. 30, 1876; m. June 21, 1911 ELLA MARJORIE PATTERSON, b. Mar. 23, 1891.
2. THOMAS JOHN WELLS, b. Dec. 31, 1878; d. Apr. 28, 1946; never married.
3. FLORA SIMONS WELLS, b. Nov. 6, 1880; d. 29 July 1965; m. July 24, 1912 to WILLIAM BEHN McDOWELL.

Data from T. S. SUTHERLAND I) family Bible Records now in possession of T. S. SUTHERLAND IV), Austin, Tex.

III. Seventh generation MARTHA ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, dau. of THOMAS S. and MARY ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, m. Sept. 10, 1873 DR. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS I).

Issue:

1. SHELTON WELLS, b. Sept. 13, 1874; never married.
2. ELIZABETH MARTHA (Bettie) WELLS: b. Jan. 1876; m. Apr. 17, 1901 EMIL EGG of Ganado, Texas.

IV. Seventh generation MARY HODGES SUTHERLAND, dau. of THOMAS S. and MARY ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, m. (1) Nov. 4, 1883 DR. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS I); m. (2) Jan. 14, 1895 ROBERT MERCER CROCEKTT.

Issue of first marriage.

1. MARY WELLS, b. Aug. 1, 1884; d. June 2, 1955.
2. MATTIE GARRETT WELLS, b. Aug. 29, 1886; d. 23 April 1967; m. Nov. 1, 1919 ROSS ANDERSON.
3. HESTER McNUTT WELLS, b. Jan. 20, 1888; d. Feb. 1955.

NOTE:

1. The information for this record was taken from the T.S. SUTHERLAND I) Bible now in possession of T. S. SUTHERLAND IV) of Austin, Texas with additions.

V. Seventh generation THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND II), m. Dec. 9, 1885 LAURA L. ROGERS, dau. of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and MARY EVELYN EVANS ROGERS.

Issue:

1. THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND III), b. June 21, 1887; d. 3 April, 1957; m. Nov. 2, 1910 MARY ELIZABETH ROBERTSON, b. 9 June 1887, dau. of MACLIN and ALICE ROBERTSON of Salado, Texas; d. 20 June 1950.
2. SAMUEL ROGERS SUTHERLAND, b. July 17, 1889; d. Jan. 7, 1891.
3. GEORGE SUTHERLAND VIII), b. Feb. 21, 1891; d. Aug. 2, 1904 in Nueces Canyon while riding his horse; buried Montell, Texas.
4. MARY SUTHERLAND, b. June 20, 1892; m. LOUEN S. VICKREY, Dec. 23, 1913 at Harlingen, Texas.
5. JOHN WILLIAM LEE SUTHERLAND, b. Dec. 13, 1893 at SUTHERLAND Place "Spring Hill" in Jackson Co.; m. June 1, 1927 EULA WARD at San Marcos, Texas.
6. MINNIE BELL SUTHERLAND, b. March 15, 1896 in Nueces Canyon; m. Oct. 30, 1918 AULSEY K. ANDERSON at Brownsville, Texas (By REV. RUFFNER).

7. LIZZIE (ELIZABETH) SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 26, 1899; d. 25 Dec. 1963; m. (1) DAVID C. DONALSON, son of MR. and MRS. GEORGE DONALSON of San Marcos, Texas, Nov. 4, 1921 in Belton, Texas; m. (2) JAMES ARLING MEDLEY, JR., July 6, 1936 at Harlingen, Texas; d. 17 Jan. 1964.
8. TALITHA FLORENCE SUTHERLAND, b. Dec. 24, 1900 in Uvalde, Texas; m. June 1, 1926, at Belton, Texas, CHARLES EDWARD HUDSON, son of MR. and MRS. JAMES HARVIE HUDSON of Pine Bluff, Arkansas.
9. WELLS FAIRES SUTHERLAND, b. Aug. 26, 1902 at "Riverside Ranch" in Nueces Canyon; m. Feb. 28, 1926 DESSIE WOOD in Belton, Texas.
10. FRANK ROGERS SUTHERLAND, b. Jan. 22, 1904 at "Riverside Ranch," Edwards Co.; d. 19 April, 1957; m. June 10, 1932 at Lake Charles, La. (By Rev. WHITE, Methodist Minister) PERLA MAE TURNEY.
11. MABLE PEARL SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 17, 1905 at "Riverside Ranch".
12. ARA SUTHERLAND, b. July 11, 1908 at "Riverside Ranch."
13. EMMA ELIZABETH, (afterwards called EMMA JEAN SUTHERLAND) b. May 18, 1910 at Salado, Texas, Bell Co.; m. Feb. 14, 1942 at Mineral Wells, Texas, JOSEPH TIMOTHY O'CONNELL.
14. FRANCES LUCILLE SUTHERLAND, b. Sept. 1, 1911 at Salado, Texas; m. Jan. 7, 1937 GERALD GARMON at First Methodist Church, Houston (by REV. PAUL QUILIAN)

Data for this family from the Bible Records of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND II) and LAURA ROGERS SUTHERLAND now in possession of MRS. CHARLES E. HUDSON, San Benito, Texas (1956).

VI. Seventh generation WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND, m. Dec. 8, 1889 EMMA ROGERS, dau. of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and MARY E. EVANS ROGERS. Issue:

1. JOHN D. SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 20, 1890 in Jackson Co., Texas; m. Sept. 4, 1912, ELSIE JOSEPHINE STOVALL, b. Mar. 5, 1894 in Marshall Co., Texas.
2. WILLIAM D. SUTHERLAND, JR', b. Jan. 21, 1893; m. July 5, 1920 in Travis Co., Texas. ELIZABETH CROCKETT, b. Mar. 11, 1901.
3. SAMUEL SHELTON SUTHELRAND, b. Apr. 30, 1895; d. 2 June 1963; m. July 30, 1919 at Victoria, Texas CARLISLE CRAWFORD, b. July 29, 1898 at Victoria, Texas.
4. THOMAS ROBERT SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 24, 1898; m. Aug. 20, 1938 NORA BELL FARLEY at Carrizo Springs, Texas.
5. LAURA MAE SUTHERLAND, b. June 4, 1901; d. 22 Oct. 1963; m. Aug. 8, 1920 at Uvalde, Texas, CHESTER KING, b. Jan. 15, 1898.
6. GEORGE GAYLE SUTHERLAND, b. Apr. 24, 1904; m. Mar. 5, 1927 at Chilton, Texas PEARL MAXEY, b. Jan. 19, 1907.
7. VIRGIL SUTHERLAND, b. June 16, 1906; m. Jan. 1, 1930 at Montell, Texas VELMA SCOTT, b. Apr. 12, 1910 at Gonzales.
8. VIOLA SUTHERLAND, twin of VIRGIL, b. June 16, 1906; m. Aug. 9, 1932 at Uvalde, RUFUS JAMES GREEN, b. May 8, 1903.
9. HARRY KEITH SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 15, 1908; d. 5 Dec. 1958; m. in Kerrville, Texas on June 19, 1936 LILLA ELOISE SCOTT, b. Nov. 22, 1912 at Gonzales, Texas.
10. MALCOLM SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 17, 1910; m. (1) CHARLOTTE GELIEN; m. (2) DOROTHY STAHE, 1948.
11. EDWARD LESESNE SUTHERLAND, b. Jan. 17, 1913, m. Oct. 3, 1936 at Blanco, Texas, MELITTA EMMA GOETH, b. May 20, 1915 in Blanco Co.

VII. Seventh Generation ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND, son of THOMAS and MARY E. SUTHERLAND, m. Oct. 21, 1891 MINNIE ROGERS. Issue:

1. ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND II), b. Jan. 2, 1893; m. (1) THELMA LEWIS, Feb. 14, 1919; m. (2) JENNIE WARE SHIRLY Nov. 12, 1943 at Uvalde, Texas.
2. BETTIE SUTHERLAND, b. May 10, 1894; m. Oct. 18, 1916 at Uvalde, Texas JOHN EMMETT CRAFT, b. May 22, 1892 in Denton Co., Texas; d. Jan. 9, 1941; buried Flower Mound Cemetery in Denton Co.
3. FRANCIS WELLS SUTHERLAND, b. Aug. 30, 1896; m. June 27, 1936 at San Antonio, Texas, LORENA DAVENPORT, B. Utopia, Texas, Feb. 2, 1905.
4. ROGERS ADUSTON SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 26, 1898; m. Nov. 25, 1924, HAZEL BLAKE, (at Depew, Okla.) b. May 24, 1903 at McKinney, Texas. No Issue.
5. FAIRES SUTHERLAND, b. June 1, 1900 Ganado, Texas; m. (1) June 15, 1923 EDNA MORTON at Breckenridge, Texas; and m. (2) Nov. 25, 1927 VICTORIA RICHTER, b. Dec. 13, 1907 at Buffalo, New York.
6. MARY ELOISE SUTHERLAND, b. July 20, 1902 at Ganado, Texas; m. Aug. 1, 1923 at Sabinal, Texas STERLING HARPER FLY, b. Nov. 27, 1896 at Hondo, Texas.
7. HARRELL CROCKETT SUTHERLAND, b. Mar. 14, 1907; m. Aug. 26, 1931 at Columbus, Texas, EVELYN MORGAN, b. Aug. 8, 1906.
8. FLORA SUTHERLAND, b. Feb. 6, 1909 at Montell, Texas; m. JOHN TURMAN ARNIM, b. Mar. 21, 1906.
9. MARGUERITE MINNIE SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 22, 1910 Montell, Texas; m. June 14, 1930 at Crystal City Texas, WAYNE WINN, b. Jan. 31, 1910 at Bracketville, Texas.

Grandchildren of FRANCES AGNES SUTHERLAND, dau. of MAJOR GEORGE SUTHERLAND, and her husband, A. T. GAYLE.

I. GEORGE SUTHERLAND GAYLE, m. Sept. 1, 1875 REGINA S. DILL.

Issue:

1. FRANCES GAYLE, b. Aug. 31, 1876; d. Feb. 17, 1950; m. Nov. 4, 1896 A. R. McDOWELL; d. June 28, 1941; no issue.
2. NANNIE ELIZABETH GAYLE, b. Sept. 26, 1877; d. Mar. 6, 1929; m. Nov. 25, 1896 EDWIN PERCY SIMONS, d. Dec. 7, 1946.
3. GEORGE SUTHERLAND GAYLE, JR., b. Feb. 7, 1879; m. Jan. 4, 1904 PEARL PROVINE.
4. ALLISON DILL GAYLE, b. Oct. 25, 1880; m. Nov. 27, 1907 IDA VIRGINIA CRENSHAW.
5. REGINA STARR GAYLE, b. Aug. 31, 1884; m. Sept. 18, 1907 MILAM TRAVIS SIMONS II).
6. JENNIE LESESNE GAYLE, b. July 14, 1886; m. Jan. 24, 1925 HUGH L. WHITE, no. Issue:
7. LEA M. GAYLE, b. Jan. 7, 1888; m. Apr. 24, 1915 ESTHER JOHNSON.

Submitted by: A. D. GAYLE, SR., great grandson of GEORGE SUTHERLAND and his wife FRANCES MENEFEE.

II. BARTLETT BUCKNER GAYLE, m. Feb. 28, 1878 EUDORA STARR BANKHEAD.

Issue:

1. BARTLETT BUCKNER GAYLE II), b. Feb. 14, 1879; m. Nov. 22, 1918 ARTIE AMELIA PRYOR, b. July 4, 1900.
2. FRANCIS ALEXANDER GAYLE, b. Aug. 12, 1880; d. Jan. 26, 1948; m. Nov. 29, 1906 ESSIE B. LEATHER, dau. of J. F. and ANNA LEATHER.
3. ZACHARIAH BANKHEAD GAYLE, b. Sept. 14, 1882; d. Mar. 19, 1931; m. ALBERTA BONNOT; no issue.
4. MARY ELIZABETH GAYLE, b. Aug. 31, 1885; m. Dec. 25, 1910 FRANCIS JOSEPH KRAUSE; no issue.
5. SARAH ROSE GAYLE, b. Nov. 16, 1887; m. BEN FRANK WAFFORD; no issue.
6. BEULAH RODGERS GAYLE, b. May 28, 1890; m. Aug. 10, 1910 FRED GREEN.
7. WILLIAM GEORGE GAYLE, b. Oct. 16, 1892; m. Aug. 31, 1910 WILLIE ROGERS, dau. of FRANK W. ROGERS of Edna.
8. SAMUEL LESESNE GAYLE, b. Feb. 3, 1895; m. ANNA LUCAS.
9. SHELTON STARR GAYLE, b. July 3, 1896; d. May 11, 1903.
10. FRANCES AGNES GAYLE, b. May 4, 1898; never married.

Descendants of THOMAS MENEFEE and LUCY SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN, SR. and AGNES SHELTON; sister of MAJOR GEORGE SUTHERLAND of JOHN, SR., by AGNES.

I. THADDEUS ELIJAH MERCER, m. June 27, 1878 LUCY ELIZABETH MENEFEE, dau. of JOHN S. MENEFEE.

Issue:

1. JOHN ELIJAH MERCER, b. Sept. 16, 1879; m. Nov. 19, 1911, Ganado, Texas MINNIE GERTRUDE EZZELL, dau. of MR. and MRS. BEN F. EZZELL.
2. AUSTIN RUSSELL MERCER, b. Dec. 26, 1882; d. April 1, 1956; m. Feb. 14, 1918, Edna, Texas BESSIE EZZELL, sister of MINNIE EZZELL.
3. FRANCES RACHEL MERCER, b. Nov. 2, 1884; d. Feb. 1, 1938; m. June 20, 1917 LUTHER LEROY BETTS, b. Jan. 2, 1876; d. May 6, 1931, son of DR. WM. POWELL BETTS and SUSANNA JANE KELLY.
4. WILLIAM MENEFEE MERCER b. June 6, 1887; m. Mar. 27, 1918 MARY MYRTLE WEST, dau. of MR. and MRS. W. H. WEST.
5. HENRY ELI MERCER, b. Aug. 5, 1889; d. July 5, 1956; m. Jan. 11, 1933 ALMA LEE FRANKLIN FOX (widow) dau. of MR. and MRS. WESLEY CANTON FRANKLIN.

II. GEORGE MENEFEE, JR., son of GEORGE and LETITIA ANN MERCER MENEFEE, m. June 20, 1878 MOLLIE VALINDA LOONEY.

Issue:

1. THOMAS HENRY MENEFEE b. Sept. 26, 1880; m. SADIE NORTHINGTON.
2. JOHN WESLEY MENEFEE, b. July 21, 1882; m. WILLIE CRAIG.
3. JAMES LOONEY MENEFEE, b. Dec. 31, 1884; m. DORA CARRELL.
4. GEORGE EARNEST MENEFEE, b. Dec. 4, 1886; m. BLANCHE MARIE HOPKINS; two sons.
5. GRACE LETITIA MENEFEE, b. Feb. 24, 1889; m. April 6, 1910; JOHN FRANKLIN BARNETT, b. April 2, 1883 in Montgomery, Texas, son of JOHN EDWARD BARNETT.

   Had: (1) GRACE EVELYN BARNETT, b. Dec. 15, 1911; m. THOMAS MORGAN FERGUSON. Have:

   A. THOMAS MORGAN FERGUSON, b. Jan. 9, 1943; B. JOHN FRANKLIN FERGUSON, b. Dec. 25, 1944. C. LETITIA RUTH FERGUSON, b. May 19, 1947; D. LEONARD PRICE FERGUSON, b. Mar. 23, 1951.

(2) JOHN FRANKLIN BARNETT, JR., b. Feb. 25, 1913; d. Oct. 13, 1944 in Italy in World War II; m. ETHEL COOK: No Issue.

(3) PRICE MENEFEE BARNETT, b. April 27, 1914; m. JOHNNIE ALLEN.
Have:
A. SUSAN MARIE BARNETT, b. Nov. 25, 1948: B. JOHN FRANKLIN BARNETT, III) b. Nov. 5, 1952.

(4) CAROLYN SUNSHINE BARNETT, b. April 20, 1922; m. WARREN EDWARDS.
Has:
A. MARY EVELYN EDWARDS, b. Nov. 24, 1943; B. MICHAEL LANCE EDWARDS, b. Dec. 2, 1944.

Grandchildren of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR. (of JOHN and AGNES) by his three wives. JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., m. (1) 31 Dec. 1816 DIANA KENNEDY.

I. DIANA ELIZABETH, dau. of DAVID KENNEDY SUTHERLAND, m. PETER JAMES PLUMB.
Issue:
1. JAMES PLUMB, m. MARY BOLETTI.
2. RISHER SUTHERLAND PLUMB.
3. WILLIAM THOMAS PLUMB, m. CORA VAUGHN
4. KATE PLUMB, m. W. C. REDD.
5. MARY ELIZABETH PLUMB.
6. PETER JAMES PLUMB, JR., m. CLARA EGGLING.

II. ELIZA TEMPERANCE CRAIGHEAD, dau. of SARAH AGNES and granddau. of JOHN, JR., and DIANA KENNEDY, m. JOHN W. LILLY.
Issue:
1. ALICE LILLY, b. 1877; m. 19 Aug. 1901 SMITH EVANS lived at Floresville, Tex. Had: EDITH, FLORA G., HAZEL, EUNICE, THELMA and GRACE EVANS.

III. JOHN SUTHERLAND CRAIGHEAD, m. MARY ISOBELLA McALISTER.
Issue:
1. SARAH AGNES CRAIGHEAD, b. 19 Sept. 1871; d. 14 July 1872.
2. JOHN ALEXANDER CRAIGHEAD, b. 26 April 1873; d. 26 Nov. 1914; m. 23 Nov. 1905 ALMA POLLY at Floresville, Texas
3. JAMES PATTERSON NELSON CRAIGHEAD, b. 3 Feb. 1875; d. 18 Aug. 1921; m. 26 Oct. 1902 MARY BROOKS.
4. CHAS. A. CRAIGHEAD, b. 26 Aug. 1879; m. 1911 BRENT NICHOLS.
5. R. M. CRAIGHEAD, b. 26 Jan. 1886; d. 21 Mar. 1922.

IV. JANE KENNEDY CRAIGHEAD sister of ELIZA TEMPERANCE m. JOSEPH W. ANDERSON.
Issue:
1. JAMES WILLIS ANDERSON, 2. HUGH OLIVER ANDERSON 3. PATTERSON LEONIDUS ANDERSON, 4. AGNES ANDERSON.

Descendants of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., of JOHN I) and AGNES, and his second wife ANN BRYAN LANE, whom he married 17 Nov. 1827.

V. ANNA SUTHERLAND, dau. of GEORGE QUIN SUTHERLAND and his wife LYDIA MIDDLEBROOK, m. ———————MAULDIN.
Issue:
1. JOHN L. MAULDIN of Humble, Texas.
2. HENRY MAULDIN of Houston, Texas.

VI. JOHN SUTHERLAND, son of GEORGE QUIN SUTHERLAND and LYDIA MIDDLEBROOK m. ESTELL ANDERSON.
Issue:
1. ETHEL SUTHERLAND, b. Dec. 1886; d. June 1967; m. (1) GROVER C. TIPPINS; m. (2) ALLEN T. KINSEY.
Issue:
(1) ETHEL MAY TIPPINS, b. 20 May 1910; m. SARGENT WALCOTT RUGELEY; no children.
2. IBBIE SUTHERLAND, b. Aug. 1888, m. 1912 CONE J. ROUNSAVILLE
Issue:
(1) JOHN QUINN ROUNSAVILLE, M. D., b. 1916; m. (1) HELEN DIGGS and had JOHN QUINN ROUNSAVILLE, JR., now instructor at Harvard Univ., m. (2) BETH PHILLIPS and had ROGER ROUNSAVILLE.

(2) STELLA JANE ROUNSAVILLE, b. 1917; m. 1947 THOMAS C. HART.
Had: LARRY CONE HART (adopted) b. Dec. 1953 and LINDA HART b. July 1954.

3. GEORGE QUINN SUTHERLAND, b. Sept. 1892; m. Aug. 1920 ADELYN DENHAM.
Issue:
(1) JOHN DENHAM SUTHERLAND, b. 1921; m. 1945 BETTIE FISHER and has
A. JOHN GREGG SUTHERLAND, b. Sept. 1956.

4. FLORENCE SUTHERLAND, b. Aug. 1893; d. Dec. 1961; m. (1) Sept. 1911 S. C. CREECH d. 1932; m. (2) ROY E. DAVIS.
Issue:
(1) JOHN SUTHERLAND CREECH, b. Oct. 1913, d. Sept. 1927.
(2) SIDNEY CLAY CREECH, JR., b. Mar. 1921; m. 1945 SUE.
Had:
A. SUSAN CREECH, b. Mar. 1952; B. SIDNEY CLAY CREECH III), b. April 1955; C. BETH CREECH b. Feb. 1957.

5. ESTELLA SUTHERLAND, b. Dec. 1896; m. Nov. 1919 F. R. NORTON.
Issue:
(1) BILLY FRANCIS NORTON, b. 1920; m. Sept. 1959 MILDRED WOOD and have RICKY LEE NORTON (adopted) b. Jan. 1963. BILLY F. NORTON is an ordained minister and is pastor of the First Baptist Church at Sealy, Texas.

6. JOHNYE SUTHERLAND, b. March 1898; m. Dec. 1924 N. F. ELLENBURG, d. March 1955.
Issue:
(1) PATRICIA ELLENBURG, b. June 1932 m. (1) RONNIE PHILEAUX and had ANTHONY PHILEAUX; m. (2) JACK EVANS.

VII. GEORGE WILL SUTHERLAND, son of GEORGE QUIN SUTHERLAND and LYDIA MIDDLEBROOK, and grandson of JOHN, JR., m. SARAH J. McDONALD.
Issue:

1. JAMES B. SUTHERLAND, b. Dec. 1886; d. 19 Sept. 1923; m. and had one child who died as an infant.

2. JOHN WESLEY SUTHERLAND, b. 1 Jan. 1891; m. SUE FAN BALL, b. 15 Dec. 1889; d. 27 Jan. 1938.
Issue:
(1) JOHN W. SUTHERLAND, b. 14 Feb. 1921; m. 3 July 1943 BEA KALAYJIAN and have SUE FAN SUTHERLAND, b. 14 Oct. 1946.
(2) MARQUERITE SUTHERLAND, b. 11 Feb. 1927; m. 1 Feb. 1947 PATRICK ALTON CLOWER.
Issue:
A. LINDA SUE CLOWER, b. 5 June 1950; B. DAN STEPHEN CLOWER, b. 10 Nov. 1953.
(3) ROBBIE JEAN SUTHERLAND, b. 16 Sept. 1928; m. July 1950 CLYDE EVANS JENKINS
Issue:
A. JUDY ANN JENKINS, b. 25 July 1952; B. CLYDE EVANS JENKINS, III), b. 29 Sept. 1954;
C. JOHN LEWIS JENKINS, b. 25 Nov. 1957; D. RONNIE LEE JENKINS, b. 24 Dec. 1961.

3. JESSIE SUTHERLAND, b. 1 Jan. 1891 (twin) d. 2 June 1891.

4. GEORGE SUTHERLAND, b. 11 Feb. 1894, m. MONTEZ. No Issue.

5. ROBERT QUIN SUTHERLAND, b. 11 Dec. 1895.

6. OLLIE SUTHERLAND, b. 1896; d. 1898.

VIII. SARAH AGNES SUTHERLAND, dau. of GEORGE QUIN SUTHERLAND and LIDIA MIDDLEBROOK, m. LEMUEL T. HILBURN 9 Nov. 1886.
Issue:

1. LYDIA ESTELL HILBURN, b. 19 Aug. 1887 m. 1906 WM. TERRY HODGE b. 1886 in Sparta, Tenn.
Issue:
(1) EUNICE HODGE b. 5 July 1907; d. Jan. 1959; m. (1) MORRIS ENFIELD; m. (2) DeFOOR.
Issue: A. MORRIS ENFIELD, JR., b. 28 Oct., 1938 m. ANN YUDESIS; no children.
(2) MILDRED LILIAN HODGE b. 16 Feb. 1914, m. 23 Feb. 1935 SHELBY J. LONGORIA, b. 2 Jan. 1908, Banker and developer of Matamoros, Mexico.
Have: (two adopted children)
A. SANDRA LONGORIA b. 13 Sept. 1944; m. 28 June 1964 FAUSTO YTURRIA, JR., b. 19 Jan. 1935.
Children: (a) CASSANDRA LEONOR, b. 6 Aug. 1965;
(b) SHELBY THERIOT, b. Oct. 26, 1966;
(c) FAUSTO YTURRIA, III), b. 6 Dec. 1968.
B. TOMMY LONGORIA, b. 8 June 1946.

2. WILLIAM EDGAR HILBUN, b. 16 Feb. 1892. 3. LILLIE NINA HILBUN, b. 8 Jan. 1897, d. 7 May 1907.
4. LEMUEL THOMAS HILBUN, JR., b. 18 Sept. 1902. 5. JOHN LESLIE HILBUN, b. 12 July 1905.

JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., m. 1841 MARGARET ANN DICKSON (widow) in Texas.

IX. WILLIAM ALEXANDER SUTHERLAND, son of ALEXANDER H. and grandson of JOHN, JR. and his third wife MARGARET ANN DICKSON, m. MINNIE NEWBERRY.

Issue:

1. WILLIAM A. SUTHERLAND, JR., b. 6 Mar. 1906 Rear Admiral U.S. Navy, m. MAUD PERRIN of Miss.
   Have:
   (1) PERRIN SUTHERLAND, officer of Submarine, is married and has children.
   (2) CONSTANCE SUTHERLAND, m. WM. McMANUS.

X. FANNIE FLORENCE SUTHERLAND, dau. of ALEXANDER H.; m. CHAS. H. BUSH.

Issue:

1. FLORENCE ELIZ. BUSH, b. 8 June 1912 m. MANOLA AGUIRRE ALEMAN.
   Had: (1) MANOLA AGUIRRE, b. Dec. 1947; (2) ELIZ. AGUIRRE, b. Sept. 1949.
2. CHAS. HANDMAN BUSH, JR., b. 4 Nov. 1914, m. CATHERINE and has
   (1) MICHAEL EDWARD BUSH; (2) STEPHEN BUSH.

XI. ETHEL SUTHERLAND, dau. of ALEXANDER H. SUTHERLAND and granddau. of JOHN SUTHERLAND, JR., and his third wife, FANNIE VICTORIA DIX, m. REID LOUIS PUSTER.

Issue:

1. ROBERT LOUIS PUSTER, b. 6 Jan. 1906; d. 14 May 1945 in Okinawa, Sargent in Marines and combat photographer m. 29 June 1931, MAMILEE SWANK.
2. JOHN JAMES PUSTER, b. 13 Nov. 1908 m. 23 Dec. 1936 NINA RUTH PERRY.
   Issue:
   (1) RUTH EILEEN PUSTER, b. 14 June 1941; (2) JOHN SUTHERLAND PUSTER, b. Nov. 20, 1942;
   (3) ROBERT LOUIS PUSTER, b. 25 Oct. 1943.
3. ETHEL ELIZ. PUSTER, b. 9 Oct. 1910; m. (1) Sept. 1930, FRANCIS LOVE; m. (2) 11 June 1942 AUBREY CULLEN EADS
   Issue:
   (1) DUNAVON (LOVE) EADS, b. 26 June 1931 m. 10 Aug. 1951 PATRICIA KATHLEEN BOUNDS; has a dau. ELIZABETH KATHLEEN EADS b. 3 June 1956.
4. ALTOGRACIAS PUSTER, b. 31 Oct. 1913; d. 3 May 1935.
5. EDITH PUSTER, b. 7 Mar. 1920; m. AUSTEN MOODY SHOOK, b. 21 Oct. 1914.
   Issue:
   (1) AUSTEN MOODY SHOOK, JR., b. 24 Mar. 1942
   (2) DANIEL RILEY SHOOK, b. 22 Aug. 1947.
   (3) VICTORIA SHOOK (twin) b. 22 Aug. 1947.

1622190

WILLIAM MENEFEE

Austin, Texas (Friday, Mar. 20, 1936)

"The bodies of Judge and MRS. WILLIAM MENEFEE, noted Texas pioneers, were to be removed from Pine Springs Cemetery six miles from Flatonia and re-entered at the State Cemetary at Austin, Sunday, March 22, according to L. W. KEMP, chairman of the State Historical and Landmark commission.

Judge MENEFEE died Oct. 29, 1875. His wife died Feb. 28, 1859.

Born in Knox Co., Tenn., May 11, 1796, a son of JOHN and FRANCES MENEFEE, Judge MENEFEE came to Texas in 1830 and settled in what is now Jackson Co. He was sent as a delegate from the district of LaBahia to the First Convention of Texas, which convened at San Felipe de Austin Oct. 1, 1832, and to the second Convention in 1833. Elected from the Austin municipality, he was seated as a delegate to the Consultation of San Felipe on the day it convened Oct. 16, 1835.

For a time, he was a member of the Council of the provisional gov't of Texas. By the Council, he was appointed first Judge of Colorado. He was elected by that municipality to the Constitutional Convention at Washington-on-the Brazos Mar. 1, 1836 and was a signer of the Texas Declaration of Independence.

Judge MENEFEE was the first Chief Justice of Colorado Co. He represented that county in the second, fourth, fifth and nineth Congress of the Republic of Texas.

He was one of the five commissioners appointed to select a site for the Capital of Texas. He was a candidate for the vice-presidency of the Republic, but was defeated by Gen. ED BURLESON Sept. 6, 1841. In 1842, he participated in the Vasquez Campaign.

He moved to Fayette Co. in 1846 and represented that county in the legislature in 1856.

Judge MENEFEE married AGNES SUTHERLAND, dau. of MR. and MRS. JOHN SUTHERLAND. MRS. MENEFEE was born in Va. Aug. 22, 1794."

Article copied from the San Antonio Express Saturday, Mar. 21, 1936.)

Beside the accomplishments recounted here, "Brown's History" gives at least two more instances that are notable.

During the turbulent days Texas and Mexico were trying to resolve their troubles in a peaceful manner, WM. MENEFEE was on a committee to prepare a petition to the state government of Coahuila and Texas asking for a donation of land to Texas for the creating of a fund for the future establishment of primary schools in Texas. (p. 200)

This was probably the initial step which resulted in the creating of the public school land in the State of Texas.

WILLIAM MENEFEE was also, in 1836, one of a committee of 12 appointed to prepare a declaration "setting forth to the world the causes that impel us to take up arms and the objects for which we fight." (p. 325)

He lived to be 79 years old.

Descendants of WILLIAM MENEFEE and AGNES SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN, SR. and AGNES SHELTON SUTHERLAND.

SARAH S. MENEFEE, dau. of WILLIAM and AGNES m. Sept. 26, 1838 LEVI MERCER.

1. AGNES MERCER, m. EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, Mar. 26, 1858.

Issue:

(1) EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT II) b. May 14, 1859; m. MRS. JESSIE MERCER.
(2) MARY CROCKETT, b. Feb. 4, 1861; m. F. F. DIMMIT, Mtho. minister.
(3) ROBERT MERCER CROCKETT, b. Sept. 29, 1862; m. MARY SUTHERLAND WELL, a widow.
(4) QUIN MENEFEE CROCKETT, b. May 10, 1866; m. LIZZIE FOWDEN.
(5) NANCY PERKINS CROCKETT, b. Nov. 3, 1868; m. HENRY E. TOWNS.
(6) SUSIE IRENE CROCKETT, b. Mar. 15, 1871; m. WILLIAM DONATHAN.
(7) HARRY LEE CROCKETT, b. Oct. 12, 1872; m. CORABEL ANDERSON.
(8) WILLIE EULINE CROCKETT, b. June 3, 1877; m. CHARLES A. DAVIS.
(9) MORTON H. CROCKETT, b. Dec. 10, 1879; m. MRS. MAE McINTIRE.
(10) ROY HASSELL CROCKETT, b. Aug. 27, 1882; m. VERNON RICHARDSON
(11) CECIL LESLIE CROCKETT, b. May 3, 1886; m. HELEN BROWN.

NOTE: the CROCKETT information was submitted by MRS. CORA CROCKETT of Smithville with the assistance of MRS. SUSIE DONATHAN of Austin, Texas 1957.

For future generations of CROCKETT see CROCKETT Chapter.

II. WILLIAM MENEFEE, JR., m. SUSAN SMITH.

1. NANNIE WAUGH MENEFEE' dau. of WILLIAM MENEFEE, JR., and SUSAN SMITH, m. June 6, 1899, O. P. BASFORD.

Issue:

(1) MENEFEE BASFORD.
(2) WILLIAM BASFORD.
(3) LLOYD BASFORD married and had:
A. JOHN A. BASFORD; B. MILDRED BASFORD; C. LAZELLE BASFORD; D. AGNES BASFORD.

2. THOMAS WORDLEY MENEFEE, son of WILLIAM MENEFEE, JR. and SUSAN SMITH, m. Nov. 23, 1889, KATE RANDALL.

Issue:

(1) JAMES RANDALL MENEFEE b. Jan. 1, 1911; d. 1937.
(2) ROBERT S. MENEFEE, son of WILLIAM MENEFEE, JR. and SUSAN SMITH' m. Aug. 3, 1903 FLORENCE STEWART.
Issue: A. FLORENCE STEWART MENEFEE, b. Nov. 5, 1905; B. DOROTHY MENEFEE, b. Jan. I, 1911; m. JOE PEACOCK; C. ROBERT SMITH MENEFEE, JR., b. Dec. 15, 1906.

3. GEORGE QUINN MENEFEE, son of WILLIAM MENEFEE, JR. and his wife SUSAN SMITH, m. WILLIE M. GRAHAM.

Issue:

(1) JOHN A. MENEFEE, m. ——— CAMPBELL; had
A. MARJORIE MENEFEE m. B. B. HOWELL.
Had:
(a) THOMAS GRAHAM HOWELL; (b) B. V. HOWELL, JR.

4. MARY ELIZ. MENEFEE, d. May 2, 1969 dau. of WILLIAM MENEFEE, JR. and his wifc, SUSAN SMITH, m. WALTER H. WILCOX.
   Issue:
   (1) WALTER H. WILCOX, JR. (2) JOHN WILCOX (3) LAZELLE WILCOX (4) KATHERINE WILCOX m. MOODY and live at Galveston (5) WM. WILCOX.

III. QUIN MORTON MENEFEE, m. MARY ELIZ. PENN.
1. ELIZ. FRANCES MENEFEE, dau. of QUIN MORTON MENEFEE and MARY ELIZ. PENN, m. April 22, 1891 FRANCIS MENEFEE WHITE, son of JOHN T. WHITE.
   Issue:
   (1) WILLIAM GREY WHITE, b. 1892; d. Dec. 19, 1917 at Tuscon, Ariz. while in the Army, nevcr married.
   (2) ELIZ. (BETTIE) WHITE b. Feb. 15, 1895; m. (1) May 11, 1929 CECIL CLYDE GREENE d. May 1, 1939; m. (2) June 8, 1947 JOHN WILLIAMSON GRAHAM, no issue.
2. SARAH TALITHA MENEFEE, dau. of Q. M. MENEFEE and MARY ELIZ. PENN, m. Nov. 27, 1898 GEO. BUHLER.
   Issue:
   (1) GEORGE THEODORE BUHLER, b. Dec. 31, 1902 at Edna, Texas; m. Sept. 10, 1933 LUCILLE ELIZ. BILLUPS, b. July 28, 1912 at Edna.
   Have: A. PATRICIA MARIE BUHLER, b. Nov. 1, 1936.

IV. THOMAS SHELTON MENEFEE m. MARY E. PENN MENEFEE, widow of his brother.
1. SUSAN ELLA MENEFEE' dau. of THOMAS S. and MARY E. MENEFEE, m. June 18, 1893 ROBERT VAN McANELLY.
   Issue:
   (1) LEO SHELTON McANELLY, b. Jan. 14, 1895 in Fayette Co., m. June 10, 1919 LOUISE H. BIGLER b. Feb. 13, 1895.
   Had:
   A. SHELTON BIGLER McANELLY, b. Nov. 8, 1920 in Franklin, La.; m. Aug. 30, 1945 CLAIRE ROSSEAU.
   Have: (a) MICHAEL LEO McANELLY, b. Nov. 1, 1946; (b) DIANNE MARIE McANELLY, b. Oct. 9, 1948; (c) ROBERT VAN McANELLY, b. June 24, 1950; (d) MARTHA JANE McANELLY, b. Dec. 10, 1953.
2. HENRY AMZI MENEFEE, son of THOMAS S. and MARY ELIZ. PENN MENEFEE' m. April 15, 1903 ELIZ. KRAUSE.
   Issue:
   (1) HENRY EARL MENEFEE, b. Dec. 18, 1904 in Moulton, Texas; m. June 2, 1928 SARA THAMES, b. July 14, 1907.
   Had:
   A. WILLIAM EARL MENEFEE b. Dec. 13, 1931 m. and
   Has:
   (a) SARA ANN MENEFEE, b. Jan. 5, 1953; (b) WILLIAM EARL MENEFEE, JR., b. Dec. 20, 1955.
   (2) MELVIN LEVIN MENEFEE, b. Aug. 18, 1914; m. Sept. 4, 1940 ELAINE MARTHA STOUT, b. Jan. 16, 1925.
   Have:
   A. ROGER MENEFEE, b. June 26, 1943; B. BETTY ELAINE MENEFEE, b. May 27, 1946;
   C. DEBORA ANN MENEFEE, b. Oct. 30, 1952.

SUTHERLAND
NINTH GENERATION

Descendants of GEORGE SUTHERLAND V. and his wife, FRANCES MENEFEE, dau. of JOHN and FRANCES RHODES MENEFEE.

Ninth and later gencrations descendants of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I) and his wife, MARY ELIZ. HODGES and of their dau. TALITHA MORTON SUTHERLAND who married 6 Mar. 1873, FRANCES MENEFEE WHITE, JR., and had:

I. MARY MORTON WHITE m. 7 Jan. 1896 at Edna, Texas ADDISON YOUNG HARREL, b. 8 Mar. 1872 at Morganfield, Ky., d. 15 May 1920 at Plainview, Texas, son of HENRY WAKEFIELD HARRELL and ARABELLA YOUNG.

Issue:

1. ARABELLA HARRELL, b. 23 Feb. 1897 at Edna, Texas; m. 20 Oct. 1919 JAMES ERIC BEALL, b. 17 Dec. 1894 at Valda, Texas. Had:
   (1) JAMES HENRY BEALL, b. 2 Sept. 1922 at Laredo, Texas; m. 29 Sept. 1945, MARY LOUISE WALKER at Houston, Texas. Had:
      A. MARY ELIZ. BEALL, b. 13 Aug. 1946 at Lafayette, La.
      B. JAMES ERIC BEALL, JR., b. 22 Feb. 1948, Houston, Texas.
2. MARGARETTE HARRELL, b. 18 Mar. 1901, Edna, Texas m. 12 Sept. 1922, at Edna, ABSALOM THEODORE WEBBER, b. 4 Nov. 1900. New Orleans, La.; B. S. Texas A & M; Had:
   (1) ABSOLOM THEODORE WEBBER, JR., b. 12 Dec. 1928; m. 16 June 1962 New Orleans; COURTNEY ANN INEZ PARKER.
      Had: one child.
3. MARY VIRGINIA HARRELL, b. 30 Mar. 1912 in Houston; B. A. Rice Univ., M. A. Texas Univ.; m. 30 Sept. 1939 THOMAS HERMAN STANCLIFF b. 15 Sept. 1904 in Peoria, Ill. Had:
   (1) THOMAS HERMAN STANCLIFF, JR., b. 6 April 1941 at Houston; m. 26 Jan. 1963 BARBARA ANN MILLER, B. S. Texas A and I. Had:
      A. SAMUEL CHRISTOPHER STANCLIFF, b. 15 Dec. 1963.

II. MARGARET ESTELL WHITE, m. 1 Jan. 1900 SAMUEL TRIBBLE CREWS.

Issue:

1. LAURA TALITHA CREWS, b. 31 July 1901 Edna, Texas; B. A. and M. A. Univ. of Texas, m. 16 June 1935 at Crowell, Texas WILLIAM LEE CREWS (not related) of West Columbia, Texas. Had:
   (1) MARY MARGARET CREWS, b. 16 Jan. 1940; B.A. Texas Univ.; m. 12 Jan. 1964 at Folkston, Ga., LT. THOMAS F. TAYLOR, b. 12 Sept. 1936; Lt. J.G. - U.S.N.R.; B.B.A. Texas Tech; son of JAMES F. TAYLOR and HELEN BERNICE O'NEAL of Breckenridge, Texas. Had:
      A. TALITHA LEE TAYLOR, b. 30 Sept. 1966 at China Lake, Calif.
2. MARY SAM CREWS, b. 21 Sept. 1905 Edna, Texas. B.A. Univ. of Texas; not married.
3. SAMUEL TRIBBLE CREWS (III) b. 24 May 1919 at Crowell, Texas; B.S. Mechanical Engineering and B.S. Petroleum Engineering both from Texas A & M; m. 14 Aug. 1942 in Hawaii, JULIA EDGE SUTHERLAND of Albermarle Co., Va. and had:
   (1) JUDITH DEE CREWS, b. 11 Mar. 1944; B.A. Texas Tech; m. 27 Aug. 1966 in Midland, Texas; GEORGE HARPER CHAFFEE, B.A. Journalism, Texas Tech; b. 31 Jan. 1944 at Fort Worth, Texas, son of ELIZABETH HARPER and ROLAND FULLER CHAFFEE.
   (2) SAMUEL TRIBBLE CREWS IV) b. 27 Aug. 1946, Houston, Texas; m. 10 Aug. 1968 in St. Francis, Ky. SARA THERESE PETERSON, b. 6 Jan. 1949 in Loretto, Ky. dau. of ROSE MARY OSBORN and WM. BUCKLER PETERSON.
   (3) MARGARET EDGE CREWS, b. 29 Aug. 1949.

III. HERMON SUTHERLAND WHITE, m. (1) 1 Oct. 1904 NOLA MARSHALL; m. (2) 22 Aug. 1928, CLEMENTINE LE SAGE.

Issue of first marriage:

1. MARY T. WHITE, b. 11 June 1905; d. 29 Oct. 1925.
2. LILLIAN BELL WHITE, b. 15 Dec. 1906; d. 15 Aug. 1968 at McAllen, Texas; buried Edna, Texas; m. (1) Oct. 1928 REAGAN HOUSTON; m. (2) 16 Sept. 1933 J. P. WILLIAMS.
   Had by first marriage:
   (1) REAGAN T. HOUSTON, JR., b. 10 Oct. 1930; m. 25 Nov. 1959 in San Antonio, Texas, CAROL MEYER.
      Had: A. REAGAN T. HOUSTON III), b. 3 Dec. 1960 in San Antonio;
      B. FOARD M. HOUSTON, b. 8 Nov. 1963.
   Had by second marriage:
   (2) JOHN PAT WILLIAMS, b. 10 Sept. 1934; m. 9 Nov. 1958 in Pirmasens, Germany, ELLEN BALZAR.
      Had: A. JOHN PAT WILLIAMS III), b. 10 Aug. 1960 in San Antonio;
      B. KIMBERLY WILLIAMS, b. 30 Sept. 1966 in Laredo, Texas.
3. HERMAN WHITE, JR., b. 22 Feb. 1908; died as infant.

Second Issue of second marriage.

4. MARY T. WHITE II), b. 5 June 1929 at Victoria, Texas; m. 9 June 1951 NORMAN CLIFTON HEFFRON b. 15 July 1927 in Houston, Texas. Had:
   (1) JOHN SUTHERLAND HEFFRON, b. 12 Oct. 1952 in Victoria, Texas. (2) MARY T. HEFFRON b. 14 Sept. 1954.
5. CLEMENTINE BERTHA WHITE, b. 11 Dec. 1931 at Victoria, Texas

IV. TALITHA SUTHERLAND WHITE, m. 27 Jan. 1904 JOHN FRANKLIN CLEMMER of Wisconsin.
Issue:
1. WM. LEE CLEMMER, b. 7 Nov. 1905; d. 15 July 1939, Lt. Coast Guard; m. 1931 ADRIA CHENEY of New London, Conn. Had:
(1) WILLIAM LEE CHEMMER, JR., who in 1957 had a child, JESSICA JEAN CLEMMER.
(2) CONSTANCE NOREEN who in 1957 was m. to ——— LINDELIN.
2. LETHA GERTRUDE CLEMMER, b. 16 April 1908; m. 14 April 1934; HERBERT TSCHUDY and Had:
(1) HERBERT O. TSCHUDY, JR., b. 10 Nov. 1934; (2) HARRIET LEE TSCHUDY, b. 17 April 1936;
(3) JOHN HENRY TSCHUDY, b. 20 Mar. 1939; (4) WILL BENDER TSCHUDY, b. 13 Mar. 1940.

V. THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND WHITE, m. (1) 26 May 1909 MYRTLE THRIFT.
Issue:
1. HURST WHITE, b. 23 Sept. 1912 m. and Had:
(1) GLORIA DELL WHITE, b. 23 Feb. 1948.

Ninth Generation descendants of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I), and his wife, MARY ELIZ. HODGES and of their dau. FRANCES MENEFEE SUTHERLAND, who m. 6 Mar. 1873 LUCKY FRANCIS WELLS. Had:

I. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS II), M.D. m. 21 June 1911 ELLA MARJORIE PATTERSON, dau. of JOHN PATTERSON and his wife, MAUDE CLARK of Montell, Texas.
Issue:
1. MARJORIE FRANCES WELLS, b. 16 June 1912; m. 21 Dec. 1934 JOSEPH RUDOLPH WRIGHT. Had:
(1) MARTHA JO WRIGHT, b. 14 Sept. 1945; m. 26 Aug. 1965 BINNION DELOSS HUFFSTUTLER.
(2) MARY JANICE WRIGHT, b. 22 Jan. 1950.
2. MAUDE CLARK WELLS, b. 15 Dec. 1913; d. 29 June 1969; m. 28 April 1946, ROBERT WILLIAM McCLUNG d. 26 Oct. 1962. Had:
(1) MARCIA ANNE McCLUNG, b. 6 Mar. 1948.
3. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS III), b. 7 Nov. 1915; d. 8 July 1960; m. 12 April 1957 RITA GAY THEDFORD; no issue.
4. JOHN PATTERSON WELLS, b. 8 Oct. 1921 m. 9 July 1945 DOROTHY JANE SWEET. Had:
(1) JOHN PATTERSON WELLS II), b. 30 June 1950; (2) LUCKY FRANCIS WELLS II), b. 6 Jan. 1953;
(3) CHARLES DAMERAW WELLS, b. 12 Feb. 1954; (4) ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS IV) b. 25 July 1961.
5. FRANCIS SUTHERLAND WELLS, b. 13 Mar. 1924; m. Feb. 1963 RITA TEDFROD WELLS, widow of his Brother, R. W. W. III).
6. FLORA ELIZABETH WELLS, b. 17 Aug. 1927; m. April 1950 FLOYD ANDERSON ELLISON. Had:
(1) GEORGE MARSH ELLISON, b. 11 Dec. 1952; (2) SUSANNE ELIZ. ELLISON, b. 17 Oct. 1954;
(3) KATHERINE CLAIRE ELLISON, b. 26 Mar. 1958; (4) PATRICIA JANE ELLISON b. 23 June 1960.

II. FLORA SIMONS WELLS, m. 24 June 1912 WILLIAM BEHN McDOWELL.
Issue:
1. WILLIAM WELLS McDOWELL, b. 30 Aug. 1914; m. 3 Jan. 1944 BARBARA JANE ROUSE. Had:
(1) WILLIAM ROSS McDOWELL, b. 6 Jan. 1947.

Ninth and later descendants of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND and MARY ELIZABETH HODGES and of their dau. MARTHA ELIZ. SUTHERLAND m. 10 Sept. 1873 DR. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS I). Had:

I. ELIZABETH MARTHA WELLS, m. 17 April 1901 EMIL EGG of Ganado, Texas.
Issue:
1. FRANCES EGG, b. 6 May 1903; m. CHARLES SERAFINO. Had:
(1) PATSY SERAFINO, b. Sept.; m. JOHN McMILLAN and has MARY MARGARET McMILLAN (adopted) and a son, b. in 1956.
(2) BETTIE ROSE SERAFINO (a nun).
(3) NANCY SERAFINO m. EVERELLE BARRELLAUX.
(4) MARY JEAN SERAFINO.
2. EMILIA EGG, b. 28 Dec. 1905 m. DUDLEY JORDAN of Victoria, Texas. Had:
(1) DUDLEY DAWN JORDAN, b. 26 Aug. 1932; m. Dec. 1949 R. L. GOODMAN, JR., U.S.A.F., who died in Korean War; m. (2) and had children
Children of first marriage:
A. R. L. GOODMAN III), b. 23 Sept. 1950. B. DEBORA DAWN GOODMAN b. 3 Sept. 1952.
(2) JOYCE JORDAN b. 1 Dec. 1934; m. WILLIAM PEARY. Had:
A. DEE PEARY and a son.

Ninth and later generation - the descendants of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I) and his wife, MARY ELIZABETH HODGES and of his son, THOMAS S. SUTHERLAND II) and his wife, LAURA L. ROGERS m. 9 Dec. 1885 and had:

I. Eighth generation THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND III), m. 2 Nov. 1910, MARY ELIZABETH ROBERTSON, b. 9 June 1887; d. 20 June, 1950, Of Salado, Texas.

Issue:

1. THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND IV), b. Uvalde, Texas 21 Sept. 1911; B.A. and M.A. Univ. of Texas m. 25 Nov. 1933 at Austin, Texas, LOIS PEYTON HARTLEY, b. 23 Sept. 1911; B.A. College of Charleston, S.C.; dau. of DAN PEYTON HARTLEY and CAROLINE LOUISE TIEDEMAN of Charleston. Had:
   (1) CAROL SUTHERLAND, b. 10 April 1935 at McCamey, Texas; B. of Journalism U. of Texas; m. 24 Oct. 1959 at Gonzales, Texas; THOMAS MARVIN HATFIELD, b. 5 Mar. 1935 San Antonio, Texas; B.A. Trinity Univ.; M.A. and Ph.D. Univ. of Texas; son of MARVIN A. HATFIELD and LUCILLE SMITH. Have:
   A. THOMAS SUTHERLAND HATFIELD b. 12 Sept. 1960, San Antonio, Texas; B. ALICE ELISABETH HATFIELD b. 6 July 1962 at Austin, Texas; C. SARA CAROL HATFIELD b. 5 Mar. 1968, Hopewell, Va.
   (2) BARBARA SUTHERLAND b. 12 Sept. 1936, Austin, Texas; B.A. Univ. of Texas; m. 10 Feb. 1962 at Austin, THOMAS ANTHONY LANKES b. 30 July 1937 at Canonsburg, Pa., son of THOMAS R. LANKES and FRANCES JOAN KUBENIK of Monclova, Mexico. have:
   A. CHRISTOPHER ALAN LANKES, b. 18 Jan. 1963 at Austin; B. MICHAEL ANDREW LANKES b. 26 Dec. 1964; C. CATHLEEN LANKES, b. 9 Feb. 1966; D. MATHEW THOMAS LANKES b. 25 Feb. 1969.
   (3) GAYLE SUTHERLAND, b. 13 Sept. 1937 at San Antonio; B.A. Univ. of Texas; m. 22 Oct. 1960 at Gonzales, Texas THOMAS ROGER De GREGORI; b. 5 May 1935 Cleveland, Ohio; B.A. and M.A. Univ. of New Mexico, Ph.D. Univ. of Texas; son of JAMES VICTOR De GREGORI and MARY ANN TAMBASCO of Albuquerque, N. M. Have:
   A. ALICE EVE DeGREGORI b. 22 Nov. 1963; B. JAMES VEBLEN De GREGORI b. 29 Dec. 1965; C. ROGER SUTHERLAND De GREGORI, b. 15 Mar.1968.
   (4) MARY ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND b. 24 Sept. 1940 in Mexico City; B.A. and Master of Social Work, Univ. of Texas; m. 11 May 1963 in Lima Peru, HERBERT PETER WEBER b. 28 May 1921, Allersburg, Germany; no issue.
   (5) KAY SUTHERLAND b. 24 April 1942 Washington, D.C.; B.A. and M.A. Univ. of Texas m. 28 Sept. 1963 at Austin ODIN ALF TONESS, JR.; b. 18 Dec. 1941 Corpus Christi; B.A. and M.A. Univ. of Texas. both KAY and ODIN are candidates for Ph.D. Univ. of Ill.; ODIN, son of O. A. TONESS, SR. and wife, GLADYS SCHMITT of Victoria, Texas.
   (6) ANNE SUTHERLAND b. 16 Nov. 1945; B.A. Univ. of Texas; Diploma and B. of Literature, Oxford, Univ., m. 27 Aug. 1968 at Oxford, Eng., CHARLES FRANCIS LOUIS b. 18 Nov. 1941 at Oxford; College, Diploma, B. of Literature and Ph.D. Oxford.
   (7) LIN SUTHERLAND b. 25 Sept. 1948 Austin, Texas; m. 18 Jan. 1969 DAVID HELM ELLIOTT b. 13 April 1945; B.A. Univ. of Texas.
2. ALICE SUTHERLAND, b. 26 June 1914, Georgetown, Texas; B.A. and B.S. Univ. of Texas; m. 3 Sept. 1939 JOHN A. ROMBERG, Lawyer-Judge of Gonzales Co. for 18 years to present; Univ. of Texas; son of JOHN CONRAD and OLGA JAHN ROMBERG of Gonzales, Texas.
3. MARY ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND b.1 Sept. 1920 at Salado, Texas; B. of Journalism, Univ. of Texas; m. 17 June 1944 in Washington, D.C. LESLIE E. CARPENTER b. 20 Feb. 1922 at Austin, Texas; B. of Journalism Univ. of Texas. Had:
   (1) SCOTT SUTHERLAND CARPENTER b. 9 Sept. 1946 in Washington, D.C. m. 17 June 1967 at McLean, Texas, JOYCE BEASLEY B.A. Univ. of Texas dau. of MR. & MRS. GUY BEASLEY of McLean, Texas.
   (2) CHRISTY CARPENTER b. 15 Dec. 1949 Washington, D.C.

The National Capitol has been the home of LES and LIZ CARPENTER almost since their marriage and for a number of years they formed a husband-wife team as correspondents and columnist, commenting on the national scene and figures. LES CARPENTER still heads this Bureau.

LIZ served as president in 1954 of the Woman's National Press Club and in 1956 was selected by the State Dept. as U.S. Press Representative to N.A.T.O. Conference and tour of installations by Pres. EISENHOWER.

Since 1960 she has given full time to service with the LYNDON B. JOHNSONS, serving, first as Press-Secretary to MRS. JOHNSON during the 1960 campaign of the KENNEDY - JOHNSON ticket and later when JOHNSON was

elected to the vice-presidency, she was appointed his executive assistant. After JOHNSON became President of the United States, she served as MRS. JOHNSON'S Press-Secretary until the end of his administration, Jan. 1969.

Her personal account of those years is recorded in her book, "Ruffles and Flourishes" which was released by her publishers, Jan. 20, 1970, one year from the day she cleared her desk and left the White House.

On her first trip to Scotland in the summer of 1969, LIZ spent a day touring Sutherland County. In a special letter home she wrote of her days experience with warmth and feeling. For those of us who may never go there, she gives a glimpse of our motherland and Sutherland Co.

"At Invengordon we entered Sutherland County driving along the North Sea to the village of Golspie. High atop a mountain, Ben Bhraggie, is a statue of the First Duke of Sutherland. He stands there grandly towering over everything as he looks out over the North Sea.

The place to stay in Golspie -- or anywhere if you ever come -- is Sutherland Arms, for behind this attractive Inn is a stone with a galeic inscription which means this is the rallying ground for Clan Sutherland.

We motored on up to Dunrobin Castle about two miles north of Golspie. I had expected to see a decrepid Castle falling down, but picturesque. Not at all. There were two tremendous gates with the coat of arms on them and a magnificent drive of gigantic maples towering over the walk to a story-book castle, all intact, well cared for and now a boy's school. It is of Norman design with lots of rounded towers, grey stone, and hangs off a cliff that looks out on the most magnificent view in the world - the North Sea.

Like all castles, some of it goes back to the 10th century and the rest was added, from time to time, through 1845. Over each window is engraved in stone the Sutherland motto, "Sans Peur" (Without Fear).

If any of you ever go to Scotland, I strongly urge you to fly to Iverness, rent a car and motor up through Sutherland County. I am going to do this again before I die --- and really stay there. You certainly get a feeling about your roots. It's land that breeds strong people and you can practically feel the wariness they must have felt looking out over the North Sea for invaders.

The highlands lift your heart and on the way back, my guide broke out in one Scotch song after another. I like their tone. They all speak of home with names of mountains, rivers and towns.

I shall go back some September or October when the mountains are purple with heather."

4. GEORGE (ROBERTSON) SUTHERLAND IX) b. 4 May 1923 at Belton, Texas; m. 18 Dec. 1942 in Austin, JEAN TABOR b. 18 Jan. 1923; B. and M. of Home Economics, Univ. of Texas. Had:
   (1) GEORGE (ROBERTSON) SUTHERLAND X) b. 1 Nov. 1944 at Austin, Texas; B. of Business Admx. Univ. of Texas; m. 4 June 1965 DI ANN WILLIAMS b. 24 Aug. 1944, dau. of JAMES S. WILLIAMS and JEWELL A. LOVETT.
   (2) CYNTHIA JEAN SUTHERLAND b. 10 Feb. 1949.
   (3) KAREN SUTHERLAND b. 2 May 1953.
5. WILLIAM GORDON SUTHERLAND b. 12 Oct. 1929 at Austin; m. 1954 FAY HARRISON HENSON (widow). She has a dau. BEVERLY HENSON m. 23 Oct. 1965; A. CRAIG CLEVENGER.
   Issue of WM. and FAY SUTHERLAND:
   (1) WM. SHELTON SUTHERLAND b. 7 Nov. 1956 (2) STUART RUSSELL SUTHERLAND b. 7 Aug.1958.

II. Eighth generation MARY SUTHERLAND m. 23 Dec. 1913 at Harlingen, Texas.
LOUEN STINSON VICKREY d. 24 Nov. 1926 at Houston, Texas.

Issue:

1. MARY MARGARET VICKREY b. 11 Feb. 1924 at Houston, Texas; degree Radio Engineering Rice Institute; m. 30 Aug. 1947 AUSTIN P. BOYD, Engineering, Rice Institute; d. 12 June 1962. Margaret m. (2) 1 Nov. 1964 JAMES MATHEWS of Yorktown, Va. Had by first marriage:
   (1) WILLIAM AUSTIN BOYD, b. 25 Oct. 1950.
   Jim has by a former marriage Mike, Scott and Diane MATHEWS.
2. CAROLYN LOUISE VICKREY b. 22 Mar. 1926 Houston, Texas; m. JOHN FRANCIS DE MAR of Houston. Had: (1) SUSAN DIANE DE MAR b. 16 Oct. 1948; m. 31 Aug. 1968 RICHARD D. NOWAKOWSKI at Houston.
   (2) JOHN FRANCIS DE MAR, JR., b. 23 Oct. 1952.

III. Eighth generation MINNIE BELL SUTHERLAND m. 30 Oct. 1918 at Brownsville, Texas; AULSEY K. ANDERSON; b. 25 July 1888 at Pleasanton, Texas.

Issue:

1. LOIS ANDERSON (adopted) b. 7 Dec. 1926; m. 1 May 1946 WILLIAM EDWARD TOWNS at Victoria, Texas; no issue.
2. LAURA FRANCES ANDERSON b. 2 May 1929; m. 26 Nov. 1947 KARL AUGUST ROELL. Had:
   (1) JO ELAINE ROELL, b. 23 Jan. 1949; m. 24 July 1965 WM. BRADLEY STEPHENS. Has:
   A. BRADLEY SCOTT STEPHENS b. 1 April 1967.

(2) MICHAEL WAYNE ROELL, b. 6 Jan. 1953.

3. KAY ANDERSON, b. 11 April, 1933 m. 25 Jan. 1954 JAMES HARVEY WASHINGTON, distant relative of GEORGE WASHINGTON, "The Father of His Country," JAMES - B.S. Univ. of Texas; M.S. Univ. of Washington. Had:
   (1) SHERRYL KAY WASHINGTON, b. 14 April 1956 at Olympia, Wash.; (2) LYLE JAMES WASHINGTON, b. 29 May 1959 at Pasadena, Texas.; (3) GLENN ORRIN WASHINGTON, b. 23 Feb. 1962.

IV. Eighth generation ELIZABETH (LIZZIE) SUTHERLAND, B.A. from S.W.T.C. at San Marcos; d. 25 Dec. 1963; m. (1) DAVID C. DONALSON d. 12 Dec. 1932; m. (2) JAMES A. MEDLEY' JR., d. 17 Jan. 1964.

1. DAVID SUTHERLAND DONALSON, b. 28 Nov. 1922; B. of Business Admx. Univ. of Texas; m. 22 Nov. 1948 MARIE MATHEWS of Dallas, b. 1 May 1925; B.A. Univ. of Texas. Had:
   (1) DAVID MATHEWS DONALSON, b. 28 May 1951; (2) PAUL LEE DONALSON, b. 10 Jan. 1953; (3) SCOT POPE DONALSON, b. 16 June 1956
2. JEAN ELIZABETH DONALSON, b. 30 Nov. 1924; B.A. Univ. of Texas; m. 20 Dec. 1952 ANSELL ISBELL b. 17 Mar. 1925; B.A. and M.A. North Texas State Univ. Had:
   (1) JAMES NATHAN ISBELL, b. 2 Feb. 1955; (2) ANITA BETH ISBELL, b. 23 Feb. 1956; (3) DOROTHY JEAN ISBELL, b. 7 May 1958; (4) DAVID THOMAS ISBELL, b. 14 Oct. 1959.
3. ROBERT LEE DONALSON, b. 22 Feb. 1928; Law Degree, Univ. of Texas; with honors; m. 25 June 1950 KATHERINE STEWART GAY, b. 7 Oct. 1928. Had:
   (1) ROBERT STEWART DONALSON, b. 2 Feb. 1954; (2) KATHERINE KARMANI DONALSON, b. Nov. 1957.

V. TALITHA FLORENCE SUTHERLAND, m. 1 June 1926 CHARLES EDWARD HUDSON, b. 19 Jan. 1901 Pine Bluff, Ark.; B.S. Texas A & M.

Issue:

1. EMMA BETH HUDSON, b. 10 Dec. 1927 at Brownsville, Texas; B.A. Univ. of Texas. m. 25 June 1949 JOHN HARDIE CHAIN, b. 1 Mar. 1922; B.S. Petroleum Engineering Univ. of Texas; son of MRS. ALBERT BUSHNELL CHAIN of Seward, Neb. and the late MR. CHAIN. Had:
   (1) PRISCILLA ANN CHAIN, b. 29 Dec. 1950; (2) JOHN HUDSON CHAIN, b. 7 Feb. 1953.
2. CHARLES EDWARD HUDSON, JR. b. 28 Nov. 1928.
3. JAMES HARVIE HUDSON II), b. 7 Aug. 1930; B. of Business Admx., Univ. of Houston; m. NANCY ESPEY, dau. of MR. & MRS. HARRY ESPEY of San Benito, Texas. Had:
   (1) JAMES HARVEY HUDSON III), b. 20 Sept. 1949; (2) NANCY BETH HUDSON, b. 28 Dec. 1951; (3) CHARLES ESPEY HUDSON, b. 17 April 1958; (4) EVE LYNN HUDSON, b. 26 Feb. 1960; (5) KATHLEEN ANN HUDSON, b. 2 June 1961.
4. ANN BRACY HUDSON, b. 30 Dec. 1935; m. 30 May 1957 WILLIAM FRANKLIN HARLOW, JR., b. 27 Jan. 1935; B.A. Baylor Univ. M.A. West Texas State Univ.; year of Special Advanced History Studies, John Hopkins Univ. Had:
   (1) WILLIAM MARTIN HARLOW, b. 6 May 1958.

VI. WELLS FAIRES SUTHERLAND, m. 28 Feb. 1926 DESSIE WOOD.

Issue:

1. DESSIE JO SUTHERLAND, b. 26 Jan. 1927 at Belton, Texas; m. 1960 in Fort Worth, Texas WILLIAM F. ROBBINS. Had:
   (1) CARLA JO ROBBINS, b. 25 July 1961; (2) WILLIAM FRANKLIN ROBBINS, JR., 19 Aug. 1962.
2. LAURANNE SUTHERLAND, b. 23 Nov. 1928; m. 26 Nov. 1946 at Johnson City, Texas, CURTIS GIPSON, b. 13 Oct. 1925. Had:
   (1) VICKI LYNN GIPSON, b. 12 Dec. 1952; (2) GLENDINE GIPSON, b. 21 Dec. 1953.
3. MARY FRANCES SUTHERLAND, b. 29 Mar. 1930 Austin, Texas.
4. LINDA JEAN SUTHERLAND, b. 21 Oct. 1937; m. 25 Mar. 1961, EDWARD RALPH BURKLEY who has 3 children by an earlier marriage.
   (1) EDWARD RALPH BURKLEY, b. 14 Mar. 1952; (2) KENNETH RAY BURKLEY, b. 4 May 1953; (3) LINDA KAY BURKLEY, b. 18 April 1955.

VII. FRANK ROGERS SUTHERLAND m. 10 June 1932 PERLA MAE TURNEY, dau. of WALTER TURNEY and ALICE LOUISE NOLEN.

Issue:

1. JUNE SUTHERLAND, b. 27 May 1935; m. 22 Dec. 1953 FREDERICK CROFT DEZENDORF B. of Business S.M.U. and had:
   (1) FREDERICK CROFT DEZENDORF, JR., b. 22 Feb. 1955; (2) KENNETH WESTON DEZENDORF, b. 27 Sept. 1957; (3) FRANK CLAY DEZENDORF, b. 24 Sept. 1959; (4) DANA DEZENDORF, b. 2 Dec. 1961.

2. DUANE FRANKLIN SUTHERLAND, b. 21 Jan. 1939.
3. JENNIFER KATHLEEN SUTHERLAND, b. 24 Feb. 1947; m. 15 June 1968 HUBERT M. LOGINON, JR.

VIII. JEAN (EMMA ELIZ.) SUTHERLAND, m. 14 Feb. 1942 at Mineral Wells, Texas, JOSEPH TIMOTHY O'CONNELL, b. 10 Jan. 1915 at Temple, Texas son of MRS. N. J. O'CONNELL of Austin.

Issue:

1. JOSEPH TIMOTHY O'CONNELL, JR. b. 10 May 1943 at Paris, Texas; E. E. Rice Univ.; graduate work Univ. of Chicago; m. 5 June 1966 at Houston MARTHA KRAUSE. Had:
   (1) JOSEPH TIMOTHY O'CONNELL III), b. 6 May 1969.
2. WM. EDWARD O.CONNELL b. 15 July 1946 Dallas, Texas; B. of Econ., Princeton Univ.; graduate work Columbia Univ. School of Business.
3. FRANCES JEAN O'CONNELL, b. 1 April 1950 Fort Worth, Texas.

IX. LUCILLE SUTHERLAND, m. 7 Jan. 1937 at Houston, GERALD V. GARMON.

Issue:

1. GERALD SUTHERALND GARMON, b. 11 Mar. 1939; Lt. U.S. Navy; U.S. Naval Academy; m. 9 Feb. 1963 CLAUDINE GOOD of Birmingham, Alabama. Had:
   (1) WILLIAM SCOTT GARMON, b. 18 Feb. 1964; (2) MICHAEL TIMOTHY GARMON, b. 11 June 1966.

Ninth and later generations descendants of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I), and his wife, MARY ELIZABETH HODGES and of their son, WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND II) and his wife, EMMA ROGERS who had:

I. Eighth Generation, JOHN D. SUTHERLAND, m. 4 Sept. 1912 in Edwards Co., Texas; ELSIE JOSEPHINE STOVALL, b. 5 Mar. 1894 at Marshall, Texas. JOHN D. served as Co. Commissioner of Uvalde Co. for 14 years.

Issue:

1. CATHERINE ESTELL SUTHERLAND, b. 8 Sept. 1913; B.A. Sul Ross; m. 22 May 1934 at Hondo, Texas; HARVEY JACK SCOTT, b. 9 Oct. 1908 Galveston, Texas and had:
   (1) HARVEY JACK SCOTT, JR., b. 20 Dec. 1935 Montell, Texas; B.S. Sul Ross, M.E. Sul Ross; is married
   (2) MARY JOSEPHINE SCOTT, b. 20 Jan. 1944 at Uvalde, Texas; m. 23 Nov. 1963 RUDY MOOS. Had:
      A. HOUSTON EDWARD MOOS b. 5 July 1964; B. SCOTT ALLEN MOOS b. Aug. 1965.
   (3) WILLIAM JOHN SCOTT, b. 5 Jan. 1948 at Uvalde; married.
2. MABLE JOSEPHINE SUTHERLAND, b. 23 July 1918 at Montell, Texas; m. (1) 9 Nov. 1935 at Montell, STEPHEN DOUGLAS POGUE; m. (2) 7 Mar. 1943 HAROLD NEWMAN of N.J.; had by 1st marriage:
   (1) JANICE JOSEPHINE POGUE, b. 16 Dec. 1938; m. 4 Sept. 1960 at Poramus, N.J., NATHANIEL JAY KULLER; and had:
      A. STEPHEN DALE KULLER, b. 30 Dec. 1961; B. KENNETH MICHAEL KULLER, b. 18 April 1963; C. GERALD WAYNE KULLER, b. 19 Jan. 1966; D. DARCE DENICE KULLER, b. 20 Sept. 1968 at Denville, N. J.
3. JOHNNIE JEAN SUTHERLAND, b. 11 Sept. 1928 at Montell; m. 7 Feb. 1948 at Uvalde, Texas JOSEPH VIVIAN GERARD GIROUX, b. 15 Oct. 1924 Kankakee Co., Ill. Had:
   (1) JOHN GERARD GIROUX, b. 18 June 1956; d. 20 June 1956; (2) MARY KATHLEEN GIROUX (adopted) b. 12 June 1958.

II. WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND, JR. III), m. 15 July 1920 in Austin, Texas ELIZABETH CROCKETT, b. 11 Mar. 1901; dau. of HARRY and CORA ANDERSON CROCKETT.

Issue:

1. ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, b. 7 Oct. 1922 in Austin; d. 17 Aug. 1928 in Austin, Texas.

III. SAMUEL SHELTON SUTHERLAND m. 30 July 1919 in Victoria, Texas, NANCY CHARLISLE CRAWFORD, b. 29 July 1898 in Victoria.

Issue:

1. SAMUEL SHELTON SUTHERLAND, JR., b. 14 Aug. 1921 at Montell; Degree Chem. Engr., Texas Univ., M.S. Texas A & M; m. 20 Aug. 1948 at Freeport, Texas ROSALIE JOY KETCHEM, b. 25 Sept. 1925, Sioux City, Iowa; B.A. Iowa State. Had:
   (1) SAMUEL SHELTON SUTHERLAND III), b. 10 Feb. 1951 at Freeport; (2) LAURA LOUISE SUTHERLAND, b. 17 Sept. 1953; (3) DWIGHT DANIEL SUTHERLAND, b. 29 Oct. 1960.

IV. LAURA MAE SUTHERLAND, m. 8 Aug. 1921 at Uvalde, Texas, NOEL CHESTER KING, b. 15 Jan. 1898, son of JOSEPH and MARY KING. He m. (2) 5 Feb. 1964 CARLISLE SUTHERLAND, widow of SAMUEL S. SUTHERLAND, SR., deceased.

Issue:

1. NOEL CHESTER KING, JR., b. 19 April 1924 at Uvalde; Civil Engr. Texas A & M; m. (1) 10 Mar. 1945 O'CEIL SMITH, b. 7 Dec. 1924 at Winfield, La., dau. of TALMADGE GIVENS SMITH and ELEANOR ODESSA EAGLES; d. 13 Oct. 1966 at Houston, Texas; m. (2) 26 May 1967 DOROTHY BRASHER GANTT, b. 25 Sept. 1933, dau. of LEE T. BRASHER and OLA DAUPHIN. Has by 1st marriage.

(1) NOEL CHESTER KING, III), b. 9 June 1946; (2) ETHANA ELOISE KING, b. 1 July 1950.

2. SHELBY SUTHERLAND KING, b. 22 Aug. 1926 in Uvalde; B.S. Texas A & M, M.S. Sul Ross; m. (1) 28 July 1950 in San Antonio, Texas PEGGY SHAW; m. (2) 16 July 1956 HELEN MARIE OGDEN. Had by PEGGY:
   (1) SHELBY GENE KING, b. 16 April 1951 at Fort Hood, Texas; (2) MARSHA LEA KING, b. 22 July 1952 at San Antonio.
   Had by HELEN
   (3) TRACY OGDEN KING, b. 9 Nov. 1960; (4) KREG ALAN KING, b. 18 Mar. 1963.

V. GEORGE GAYLE SUTHERLAND, m. 5 Mar. 1927 at Waco, Texas PEARL MAXEY' b. 19 Jan. 1907 at Chilton, Texas.

Issue:

1. CAROLYN JENICE SUTHERLAND, b. 5 May 1928 Waco, Texas; m. 14 Mar. 1948 at Greeley, Colo. ZANE RAYMOND HAYS, b. 21 Jan. 1926 Glade, Kan.; B.A. and M.A. Colorado State College. Had:
   (1) GAIL JEANETT HAYS, b. 29 July 1950 at Greeley; (2) STEPHEN LESLIE HAYS, b. 17 June 1952
   (3) DAVID RAYMOND HAYS, b. 28 Dec. 1956; (4) SCOTT JEFFERY HAYS, b. 10 Dec. 1960.
2. CYNTHIA ANN SUTHERLAND, b. 4 April 1932 at Waco, Texas; B.A. Colorado State College; m. 1 June 1952 at Greeley, Colo. THOMAS LEE TREMBATH, b. 27 Nov. 1930; B.A. and M.A. Colorado State College. Had:
   (1) CURTIS WAYNE TREMBATH, b. 30 Dec. 1954 at Junction City, Kan. (2) MICHAEL GEORGE TREMBATH, b. 14 May 1958; (3) KATHY ANN TREMBATH, b. 23 April 1960.

VI. VIOLA MARY SUTHERLAND, m. 9 Aug. 1932 at Uvalde, Texas RUFUS JAMES GREEN, b. 8 May 1903; B. A. and M. A. Baylor Univ. VIOLA B.S. Texas Woman's College

Issue:

1. PATRICK EUGENE GREEN, b. 13 Mar. 1933 at Uvalde; B.A. S.M.U., B.D. Perkings School of Theo. S.M.U., Ph.D. Drew Univ.; m. 16 Jan. 1960 DEWANA PRICE , B.A. S.M.U. Had:
   (1) MICHAEL PATRICK GREEN, b. 21 Mar. 1964; (2) JEFFRY RICHARD GREEN, b. 2 Aug. 1966;
   (3) LESLIE CLAIR GREEN, b. 30 Dec. 1968.

VII VIRGIL SUTHERLAND, m. 1 June 1930 at Montell, VELMA FRANCES SCOTT, b. 12 April 1910 at Gonzales, Texas B.S. Sul Ross, Alpine, Texas. VIRGIL followed his brother JOHN D. as commissioner of Uvalde Co. and has served in that office for twenty years.

Issue:

1. VIRGIL SUTHERLAND, JR., b. 15 Sept. 1931 at S.A. Texas; B.A. Univ. of Texas; m. 3 Sept. 1960 HELEN TRIMBLE and had:
   (1) MARK VIRGIL SUTHERLAND, b. 11 June 1961 (2) SHERRY LYNN SUTHERLAND (twin) b. 11 June 1961.
2. BILLIE BARBARA SUTHERLAND, b. 22 Sept. 1933 at San Antonio, Texas; B.A. from T.W.U. m. 25 July 1953 at Laguna, Texas CHARLES PRATT CHITWOOD, b. 19 Oct. 1932 Fannin Co., Tex. B. S. Texas Univ. Had:
   (1) APRIL ALYNE CHITWOOD, b. 8 July 1958; (2) HOLLY DELL CHITWOOD, b. 22 June 1962.
3. PATRICIA ELEANOR SUTHERLAND, b. 30 Mar. 1935; B.S. Sul Ross; m. 5 July 1957; JAMES LEON CAUBLE; B.S. Sul Ross. Have:
   (1) LANCE TYNER CAUBLE, b. 16 Mar. 1960; (2) KELLY LANE CAUBLE, b. 9 July 1963.
4. WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND, b. 2 July 1940 at Uvalde, Texas; m. in Mexico, 1 Jan. 1957 BARBARA JANE CUNNINGHAM and Had:
   (1) WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND V) (CINCO) b. 7 April 1958; (2) GEORGE BRYAN SUTHERLAND, b. 10 Dec. 1962; (3) STEPHEN SCOTT SUTHERLAND, b. 19 Feb. 1964.
5. BAILEY GAYLE SUTHERLAND, b. 22 April 1943; m. GAYNELL DALE and has: (1) JUDY GAYLE SUTHERLAND, b. 25 Jan. 1965; (2) TODD DALE SUTHERLAND, b. 22 April 1969.

VIII. Eighth Generation, HARRY KEITH SUTHERLAND, m. 19 June 1936 LILLA ELOISE SCOTT, b. 22 Nov. 1912; B.S. Our Lady of the Lake.

Issue:

1. KAY ELAINE SUTHERLAND, b. 23 May 1942 at Uvalde; B.S. Texas Tech.; m. 23 Aug. 1963, JOHN SAMUEL LOCHE, b. 16 July 1938; B.S. Texas Tech and Had:
   (1) CHERI DENICE LOCHE, b. 26 Sept. 1964; (2) JOHN ERIK LOCHE, b. 27 July 1967.
2. LILLA ELOISE SUTHERLAND, b. 28 July 1943; m. 8 April 1967 LAWRENCE FRED HEILMAN, b. 9 Dec. 1942 and had:
   (1) STEPHEN JOSEPH HEILMAN, b. 8 Nov. 1968.

3. HARRY KEITH SUTHERLAND, JR., b. 22 Jan. 1946; m. 10 Sept. 1966; MARTHA KAY CLEMENS. Had:
   (1) MELISSA LYNN SUTHERLAND, b. 19 Aug. 1967.

IX. MALCOLM SUTHERLAND, m. (1) CHARLOTTE GELEIN, b. 1 Mar. 1915 in Germany; m. (2) 20 Sept. 1948 at Sutherland Springs, Texas, DOROTHY MARIE STAHA b 23 Dec. 1923 in Lavaca Co., Texas. Had by 1st marriage:

1. CHARLOTTE ANN SUTHERLAND, b. 19 Mar. 1937 in Los Angeles, Calif.; m. (1) 22 Dec. 1954 RONALD DEAN BORST; m. (2) 1961 DONALD P. NICHOLS, JR. Had by 1st marriage:
   (1) DONNA LYNN BORST, b. 31 Mar. 1956; (2) RANDALL WADE BORST, b. 18 May 1958.
   CHARLOTTE had by DONALD P. NICHOLS:
   (3) STEPHEN ALLEN NICHOLS, b. 6 Dec. 1961.

MALCOLM has by DOROTHY:

2. JANE MARIE SUTHERLAND, b. 20 Feb. 1954, Victoria, Texas.
3. MICHAEL ROGERS SUTHERLAND, b. 23 Sept. 1955.
4. CHARLES ANTHONY SUTHERLAND, b. 16 July 1957.
5. GERALD MARK SUTHERLAND, b. 7 Oct. 1962.

X. EDWARD LESESNE SUTHERLAND, m. 3 Oct. 1936 at Blanco, Texas. MELITTA EMMA GOETH, b. 20 May 1915.

Issue:

1. GARY LESESNE SUTHERLAND, b. 15 May 1941. B.S. Texas A & M; m. 6 Dec. 1968 KARIN RUTH DANE, dau. of MR. and MRS. B.W. DANE of Harlingen, Texas. Had:
   (1) JASON LAMAR SUTHERLAND, b. 2 Sept. 1969.
2. EDWARD MAX SUTHERLAND, b. 20 June 1943; B.S. Texas A & M; m. 6 Oct. 1969 at Alexandria, Va., RUTH CANSTANCE HERMS, dau. of MRS. CARROLL AUSTIN.

Ninth and later generation descendants of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I), and his wife, MARY ELIZ. HODGES and of their son, ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND and his wife, MINNIE MALISSA ROGERS, who had:

I. Eighth generation ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND, JR., m. (1) 14 Feb. 1919 THELMA LEWIS, b. 30 Aug. 1897 at Bogue Chitto, Miss.; d. 26 Jan. 1943 at Uvalde, Texas, dau. of JOSEPH N. LEWIS and ALMA BILBO; m. (2) 12 Nov. 1943 JENNIE WARE SHIRLEY b. 8 Mar. 1907 at Bartlett, Texas dau. of WM. T. SHIRLEY and ROWENA MOON WARE.

Issue by THELMA:

1. THELMA LEE SUTHERLAND, b. 18 Nov. 1919 at Uvalde, Texas; d. 1 July 1961; m. (1) 20 Aug. 1936 PAUL GENE MORRISON, b. 22 Feb. 1917 at Imboden, Ark.; d. 14 Dec. 1958 at Uvalde, son of J. B. MORRISON and his wife, OLGA CROCKETT; m. (2) 1 May 1959 WRATHER HOLMGREEN.
   Had by PAUL:
   (1) JUDY ANN MORRISON, b. 12 April 1943 at High Point, N.C.; m. 31 May 1963, DONALD LEE RAY of Uvalde and had:
      A. JASON CROCKETT RAY, b. 15 Feb. 1965; B. JARED DEAN RAY, b. 28 May 1968.
2. REITHA LOUISE SUTHERLAND, b. 29 July 1921; m. (1) 22 June 1940 at San Antonio, Texas, ELBERT LEE BLACK, son of ARTHUR BLACK and DOTTIE HALE; m. (2) 21 April 1950 TOM VAUGHN ASKEW.
   Issue of 1st marriage:
   (1) BARBARA LOUISE BLACK, b. 16 July 1941 at Uvalde; m. 1958, DAVID GREGORY SMYTH. Has:
      A. SHARI LOUISE SMYTH, b. 1 June 1959; B. JULIE LYNETTE SMYTH, b. 24 July 1960;
      C. DAVID GREGORY SMYTH, JR., b. 13 April 1964.
   (2) MICHAEL DURBIN BLACK, b. 1 Mar. 1944; m. 1 Sept. 1963 LA VANNE PINK and had:
      A. LESLIE ALAN BLACK, b. 21 Dec. 1965.
3. INA MARIE SUTHERLAND, b. 20 May 1930; m. (1) 18 May 1950, at Uvalde, Texas, LESTER LEROY TOOLEY, b. 7 June 1925; d. 30 Aug. 1959, son of ROY POWELL TOOLEY and WILMA DAVENPORT: m. (2) 31 Oct. 1960 JOHN HARVEY McKEEFER. Had by LESTER:
   (1) GREGORY LESLIE TOOLEY, b. 19 Feb. 1953; (2) JEFFERY LANCE TOOLEY, b. 22 Aug. 1954;
   (3) BRADSON LEE TOOLEY, b. 17 Sept. 1955; (4) KENDALL LAYNE TOOLEY, b. 5 Aug. 1958.
   INA had by HARVEY:
   (5) JOHN HARVEY McKEEFER, JR., b. 31 Jan. 1961.
4. ROBERT DOLPH SUTHERLAND, b. 14 Jan. 1939 at Uvalde, Texas, m. 22 Dec. 1965 ELSIE BURNSIDE in Bermuda and had:
   (1) LARRY DALE SUTHERLAND, b. 18 Sept. 1966.
   R.L.S. JR. had by JENNIE, his second wife:
5. THOMAS WARE SUTHERLAND, b. 18 Mar. 1945 at Uvalde, Texas; m. PATRICIA ESTES; divorced; has:
   (1) A son, LAMAR SUTHERLAND, b. 23 Feb. 1965.

6. ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND III), b. 27 Sept. 1946; B.S. Sul Ross; m. 1966 JENNY LYN HUITT. Has:
   (1) SHERRY LYN SUTHERLAND, b. 16 Feb. 1967.
7. KAREN MARGUERITE SUTHERLAND, b. 6 Aug. 1948; m. (1) 20 Feb. 1965, EDGAR THOMAS THORP; m. (2) 1 Dec. 1968 FRED DUWAIN MERRIMAN of San Angelo, Texas. KAREN had by THORP:
   (1) ROBERT LYN THORP b. 16 Dec. 1965.

II. Eighth generation BETTIE MAY SUTHERLAND, m. 18 Oct. 1916 JOHN EMMETT CRAFT.
Issue:
1. JOHN EMMETT CRAFT, JR., b. 26 Sept. 1918 at Marietta, Okla.; m. 5 Nov. 1943 at Azle, Texas; CECILE M. RIDER and had:
2. (1) JOHN HAROLD CRAFT, b. 17 Aug. 1945 Fort Worth, Texas; B.S. North Texas State; (2) DAVID EMMETT CRAFT, b. 2 Feb. 1948; (3) MICHAEL ROBERT CRAFT, b. 11 Dec. 1957.
2 BILLY BOB CRAFT, b. 14 May 1925 Fluvanna, Texas; m. 10 Aug. 1946 MARGINELL JOHNSON, b. 17 Aug. 1923 at Cleburn, Texas. Had:
   (1) BILLY BOB CRAFT, JR., b. 6 June 1955.

III. FRANK WELLS SUTHERLAND, m. 27 June 1936 at San Antonio, LORENA DAVENPORT.
Have:
1. FRANCES ANN SUTHERLAND (adopted) m. GEORGE BROWN and had:
   (1) GEORGIA ANN BROWN, b. 29 Oct. 1959; (2) FRANK CODY BROWN, b. 21 June 1964.

IV. FAIRES HERMAN SUTHERLAND, m. (1) 15 June 1923 at Breckenridge, Texas EDNA MORTON, d. 1 Oct. 1924; m. (2) 25 Nov. 1927 at Waxahachi, Texas VICTORIA RICHTER, b. 13 Dec. 1907 at Buffalo, New York, granddau. of PERMENIOS ADAMS, cousin of the ADAMS Presidents.
FAIRES had by EDNA:
1. BETTY AUDREY SUTHERLAND, b. 10 May 1924, Breckenridge, Texas.
FAIRES had by VICTORIA.
2. BUDDY ROSS SUTHERLAND, b. 24 April 1929 at Cisco, Texas; m. 10 July 1952 CHARLOTTE DEERE BERRY, b. 2 Nov. 1935 at Ballenger, Texas graduate x-ray technician. Had:
   (1) GARY ROSS SUTHERLAND, b. 6 Feb. 1954; (2) KERRY RICTER SUTHERLAND, b. 6 Mar. 1955; (3) TREND CHARLENE SUTHERLAND, b. 29 Sept. 1956 at Odessa, Texas.
3. FLORA GENE SUTHERLAND, b. 22 Jan. 1931 at Uvalde; m. 3 June 1949 at Grand Falls, Texas WILLIAM DOC HUBBLE, b. 16 June 1926 at Rock Springs, Texas. Had:
   (1) STELLA GENE HUBBLE, b. 27 Mar. 1950; (2) SHIRLEY JEAN HUBBLE (twin) b. 27 Mar. 1950; (3) WM. DOC HUBBLE, JR., b. 7 Nov. 1953 at Eldorado, Texas.
4. CAROL VICTORIA SUTHERLAND, b. 11 Feb. 1933; m. 17 June 1952 Grand Falls, Texas ROBERT BRYAN BELL, b. 2 April 1933 at Fort Stockton, Texas; B.S. in Geology, Texas Tech. Had:
   (1) VICTORIA ANN BELL, b. 3 Aug. 1956 Alexandria, Va. (2) ROBERT STERLING BELL, b. 20 Mar. 1958, Hobbs, N.M. (3) REBECCA DAWN BELL, b. 1 June 1964 Snyder, Texas.
5. FAIRES HERMAN SUTHERLAND, JR., b. 11 Feb. 1935, Uvalde; B.S. Texas Tech; m. 1 June 1958 MARTHA ANN HUDSON, b. 6 Mar. 1940. Had:
   (1) MICHELE ANN SUTHERLAND, b. 31 July 1966.
6. RICHARD ROGERS SUTHERLAND, b. 19 July 1940 Uvalde, Texas; A.S. Odessa College, B.A. Whittier College, M.A. Univ. of Southern Calif. Studied a year in Taiwan; candidate for Ph.D. Harvard Univ.
7. REGINA BELL SUTHERLAND, b. 5 April 1942; m. 28 Aug. 1960 JIMMIE WAYNE HARRIS, b. 13 Oct. 1938 in Eldorado, Texas and had:
   (1) JIMMIE WAYNE HARRIS, JR. b. 29 July 1961, Sonora, Texas; (2) GINA BELL HARRIS, b. 16 May 1963; (3) MICHAEL TODD HARRIS, b. 25 July 1966.
8. MELISSA PEARL SUTHERLAND, b. 25 Feb. 1944; B.S. Texas Tech; m. 1964 in Monahans, Texas JAMES HAMILTON O'HARROW, b. 14 Aug. 1944 in San Angelo, Texas. B.S. Texas Tech. Had:
   (1) MARY LISA O'HARROW, b. 6 Oct. 1964 at Lubbock; (2) JAMES HAMILTON O'HARROW, JR., b. 11 June 1967.

V. MARY ELOISE SUTHERLAND, m. 1 Aug. 1923 at Sabinal, Texas STERLING HARPER FLY; B.A. and M.A. Texas Univ.
Issue:
1. STERLING HARPER FLY, JR., b. 11 Feb. 1925 at Sabinal; M.D. Texas Univ. School of Medicine; m. 23 Feb. 1952 at Portland, Texas BOBBY LOU KIRKPATRICK, b. 20 Sept. 1929; B.S. Mary Hardin Baylor.
Had: (1) RUTH MARGUERITE FLY, b. 29 Mar. 1953 at El Paso; (2) STERLING HARPER FLY III), b. 6 Jan. 1955 at Uvalde; (3) SUSANNE FLY, b. 14 Sept. 1956; (4) BRUCE HAMILTON FLY b. 23 June 1961.

2. ROBERT FISHER FLY, b. 10 Aug. 1927 at Hondo, Texas; B.S. Texas A & M; Vice President 1969 of Del Monte Corp.; m. 18 June 1949 at Crystal City, Texas ELIZABETH BURTON RASCOE, b. 12 Feb. 1931 San Mateo, Calif. Had:
   (1) CANDACE ANN FLY, b. 26 Feb. 1951; (2) ROBERT FISHER FLY, JR., b. 17 Feb. 1953 at Uvalde; (3) STEPHEN RASCOE FLY, b. 5 Sept. 1955: (4) JOHN SIDNEY FLY, b. 10 May 1958.
3. PATRICIA ANN FLY, b. 26 Nov. 1933 Crystal City, Texas; B.S. Univ. of Texas; m. 24 July 1954 at Uvalde PATRICK WALTER KELLY, b. 4 Jan. 1932; B.S. Texas A & M, Pet. Engr. Had:
   (1) CYNTHIA ANN KELLY, b. 16 Aug. 1955; (2) PAMELA KELLY, b. May, 1957; (3) NANCY SUSAN KELLY, b. 25 Mar. 1959; (4) JOAN ELIZ. KELLY b. 19 Oct. 1961.

VI. HARRELL CROCKETT SUTHERLAND, m. 26 Aug. 1931 EVELYN MORGAN.
Issue:
1. HARRELL CROCKETT SUTHERLAND, JR., b. 26 Oct. 1932; B.S. in Speech Therapy, S.W.T. State; m. 6 July 1957 MARGIE NELL WITCHER. Had:
   (1) DAVID LEE SUTHERLAND, b. 7 Nov. 1958; (2) KENT RAY SUTHERLAND, b. 27 Mar. 1960; (3) MARGARET ANN SUTHERLAND, b. 2 April 1962.
2. MARY SUTHERLAND, b. 28 Aug. 1936, Carrizo Springs, Texas m. 28 Aug. 1955 PAUL CARROLL HOLTER, Major USAF son of MRS. WILLIAM WYATT of Middleport, Ohio. Had:
   (1) PAUL CARROLL HOLTER, JR., b. 4 Jan. 1957. (2) LORE SUSAN HOLTER, b. 8 May 1958; (3) BRUCE THORNTON HOLTER, b. 24 Mar. 1963; (4) STEPHEN SUTHERLAND HOLTER, b. 16 Nov. 1966.
3. DAVID EARNEST SUTHERLAND, b. 17 April, 1948; m. 1968 PHYLLIS ANN FIREBAUGH, b. 1 Aug. 1948 and had:
   (1) DAWN ELIZ. SUTHERLAND, b. 24 June 1969.

VII. FLORA HESTER SUTHERLAND, m. JOHN TURNAM ARNIM at Sabinal, Texas.
Issue:
1. JOHNNIE ARNIM, b. 28 Oct. 1934; d. 16 Jan. 1936.
2. MILDRED ARNIM, b. 5 Oct. 1940 at Sabinal; B.S. Sul Ross; m. 7 Mar. 1957, EMMIT MORGAN CAUSEY, JR. Had:
   (1) CHERYL ANN CAUSEY, b. 9 Jan. 1958; (2) CARLA KAY CAUSEY b. 23 Feb. 1967.
3. TERRY GEORGE ARNIM' b. 21 Nov. 1943; m. 28 May 1966, JUDY ANN HAEBIE of Tivoli, Texas. Had:
   (1) TERRY MORRIS ARNIM, b. 4 Mar. 1967; (2) CLINT BRADLEY ARNIM, b. 27 Feb. 1969.

VIII. MARGUERITE MINNIE SUTHERLAND m. 14 June 1930 at Crystal City, Texas; WAYNE WINN, son of J. A. WINN and his wife, MARTHA PEARL ALEXANDER of Laguna.
Issue:
1. WAYNE WINN, JR., b. 20 Dec. 1932; U.S. Border Patrol; m. 15 Feb. 1953 ROSEMARY NADINE STEWART b. 8 Dec. 1932 dau. of B. J. STEWART. Had:
   (1) JIM RAY WINN, b. 13 Jan. 1955 at Uvalde; (2) ROSILEE WINN b. 17 April 1956; (3) DIANE WINN, b. 16 Sept. 1957; (4) STEWART WAYNE WINN, b. 17 Sept. 1959.
2. JEANNINE WINN, b. 30 July 1936; B.S. Southwestern Univ.; m. 21 July 1962 ALFRED F. HAUGHEY; B.S. Iowa State. Had:
   (1) SAMUEL WINN HAUGHEY, b. 25 April 1963; (2) ADAM JOSEPH WINN, b. 25 Dec. 1965; (3) ANNA KATHLEEN HAUGHEY, b. 3 Sept. 1968.

Ninth generation descendants of GEORGE SUTHERLAND and his wife, FRANCES MENEFEE and of their daughter, FRANCES AGNES who m. 1 Dec. 1843 ALEXANDER T. GAYLE and Had:
GEORGE SUTHERLAND GAYLE, m. 1 Sept. 1875 REGINA STARR DILL and had issue:

I. NANNIE ELIZ. GAYLE m. 25 Nov. 1896 EDWIN PERCY SIMONS and had issue:
1. GENA LEE SIMONS b. 5 Aug. 1897; m. 27 Nov.1919 AUBREY LAURENCE and had:
   (1) ELIZABETH JANE LAURENCE, b. 27 July 1924.
2. MILAM GAYLE SIMONS, b. 25 Aug. 1899; m. 9 Feb. 1929 LILLIAN MAE HENSELY and had:
   (1) EDWIN LAVAL SIMONS, b. 7 Dec. 1929; m. 20 Sept. 1950 SUSIE JORDON and had:
      A. LINDA SUE SIMONS; B. MARTHA LILLIAN SIMONS.
   (2) MILAM GAYLE SIMONS, JR., b. 16 Jan. 1931; m. 4 Feb. 1956 MARION FRANCES CALLOWAY.
   (3) CHARLOTTE BETH SIMONS, b. 16 Feb. 1934; m. 22 May 1953 JOHN MERCK and had:
      A. DEBORAH MAE MERCK, b. 7 April 1954.
   (4) WILLIAM TRAYLOR SIMONS, b. 9 Mar. 1936.
3. WALLACE CLEMENT SIMONS, b. 4 Nov. 1901; m. 30 June 1934, RHEA WHITTINGTON; no issue.

4. FRANCES ELIZ. SIMONS, b. 23 Nov. 1905; m. 6 July 1929, JESSE CARLETON FARQUHAR and had:
   (1) JESSE CARLTON FARQUHAR, JR., b. 10 Sept. 1939; m. 26 Nov. 1959, CLARA LOUIS MALSCK Had: A. LEA DUDLEY FARQUHAR, b. 27 July 1960; B. LESLIE ELIZ. FARQUHAR, b. 18 Sept. 1961: C. JESSE CARLTON FARQUHAR III), b. 19 Oct. 1964.
   (2) WALLACE LEE FARQUHAR, b. 9 June 1946; m. 11 June 1966 DORIS DAVIS.

II. GEORGE SUTHERLAND GAYLE, JR., m. 4 Jan. 1904 PEARL PROVINE and had:
1. PEARL ELEANOR GAYLE, b. 30 Jan. 1905; m. 21 Oct. 1928 FRANK WRIGHT. Had:
   (1) ELEANOR ANN WRIGHT, b. 23 June 1933; m. 23 Aug. 1953 Rev. ROBERT GENTRY.
2. NANNIE MAE GAYLE, b. 28 Mar. 1910; m. 24 April 1937 T. F. DUPONT. Had:
   (1) GAYLE JEAN DUPONT, b. 2 Sept. 1940; (2) TODD FRANK DUPONT, b. 29 Aug. 1942; (3) NANETTE MIRIAM DUPONT, b. 12 July 1945.
3. GEORGE SUTHERLAND GAYLE III), b. 16 Sept. 1912; m. 3 Sept. 1937 JANE COLLEY. Had:
   (1) JUDITH LESESNE GAYLE, b. 1 Jan. 1941; (2) GEORGE SUTHERLAND GAYLE IV), b. 24 Mar. 1943 (3) GLENA COLLEY GAYLE, b. 12 Jan. 1948.

III. ALLISON DILL GAYLE, m. 25 Nov. 1907 IDA VIRGINIA CRENSHAW and had:
1. ALLISON DILL GAYLE, JR., b. 16 Sept. 1908; m. 30 June 1941 LANE SIMONS and had:
   (1) LOIS LANE GAYLE, b. 2 Jan. 1943; (2) MARY ALLISON GAYLE, b. 21 Oct. 1943.
2. VIRGINIA ELLIOTT GAYLE, b. 13 Sept. 1915; m. 19 Feb. 1945 OTTO LAWRENCE and had:
   (1) NANCY GAYLE LAWRENCE, b. 24 Dec. 1951.

IV. REGINA STARR GAYLE, m. 18 Sept. 1907 MILAM TRAVIS SIMONS II) and had:
1. MILAM TRAVIS SIMONS III), b. 15 Sept. 1908; m. 1 Feb. 1933 DOROTHY KOOP and had:
   (1) DOROTHY CATHERINE SIMONS, b. 2 Feb. 1936; (2) DORIS REGINA SIMONS, b. 28 Sept. 1940; (3) MILAM TRAVIS SIMONS IV), b. 17 Aug. 1943.
2. ARCHIE GAYLE SIMONS, b. 12 Aug. 1911; never married.
3. CATHERINE LUCILLE SIMONS, b. 25 Sept. 1917; m. 17 June 1944 GARVICE SHOEMATE and had:
   (1) CHARLES GARVICE SHOEMATE, JR., b. 18 Sept. 1950; (2) JEAN ANN SHOEMATE, b. 22 Sept. 1952; (3) ROBERT MILAM SHOEMATE, b. 15 Aug. 1954.
4. REGINA ELIZ. SIMONS, b. 16 July 1923; m. 18 Sept. 1946 HARLEY STELL.

V. LEA MAXWELL GAYLE, m. 23 April 1915 ESTHER JOHNSON and had:
1. LEA MAXWELL GAYLE, JR., b. 23 Dec. 1916; lost at sea in 1943 World War II.

BARTLETT BUCKNER GAYLE, younger son of FRANCES AGNES SUTHERLAND and A. T. GAYLE, m. 28 Feb. 1978 EUDORA STARR BANKHEAD and had:

I. BARTLETT BUCKNER GAYLE, JR., m. 22 Nov. 1918, ARTIE AMELIA PRYOR and had:
1. BARTLETT BUCKNER GAYLE III); m. ROBIE NELL WELLS and had:
   (1) BARTLETT BUCKNER GAYLE, IV) (2) LUCINDA GAYLE.

II. FRANCIS ALEX. GAYLE, m. 29 Nov. 1906 ESSIE B. LEATHER and had:
1. FRANCIS ALEX. GAYLE, JR., b. 18 July 1908; m. 30 Aug. 1942 EDITH BRAGDON, no issue.
2. ESSIE AGNES GAYLE, b. 23 Jan. 1913 Leon Co., Texas; m. 4 Mar. 1939 WARREN N. RICHEY of Anadarko, Okla. and Had:
   (1) FRANK WARREN RICHEY, b. 20 April 1940; (2) JOHN RICHEY b. 26 Aug. 1942; (3) JEAN GAYLE RICHEY, b. 17 May 1947; (4) BEVERLY ANN RICHEY, b. 30 Aug. 1950.
3. MARGARET REGINA GAYLE, b. 20 Sept. 1919 in Edna; m. 2 Feb. 1939 RAYBURN DEAN BURFORD and had: (1) WM. GAYLE BURFORD, b. 19 Mar. 1941; (2) KATHERN ANN BURFORD, b. 30 June 1943; (3) NANCY BURFORD, b. 17 May 1953.
4. JACK LESESNE GAYLE, b. 5 Feb. 1920; d. 29 April 1922.
5. WILLIAM FRANCIS GAYLE, b. 28 Aug. 1924; m. 1 Jan. 1950 BETTY WAKEFIELD in Leon Co., Texas and had: (1) GAY ELLEN GAYLE, b. 6 May 1953 in Palestine, Texas

III. BEULAH RODGERS GAYLE, m. 10 Aug. 1910 FRED GREEN and had:
1. EUDORA MAY GREEN, b. 11 July 1911; d. 12 April 1912.
2. THOMAS GREEN, b. 18 July 1923; m. BETTY LOU COX and had:
   (1) THOMAS STEPHEN GREEN, b. 31 Jan. 1948; (2) DAVID AUSTIN GREEN, b. 28 Aug. 1953; (3) MARK ALAN GREEN, b. 18 Oct. 1954.

IV. WILLIAM GEORGE GAYLE, m. 31 Aug. 1910 WILLIE ROGERS and had:
1. W. B. GAYLE, b. 7 Jan. 1912; m. 7 Sept. 1930 RUBY JACKSON, b. 9 Sept. 1910 and had:
(1) DOUGLAS JACK GAYLE, b. 25 June 1931; m. HERTHA GAYLE, b. 9 Sept. 1929 and had:
A. JOHN RICHARD GAYLE, b. 21 May 1958; B. FRIEDA ANN GAYLE, b. 14 Sept. 1959;
C. STUART BARTLETT GAYLE, b. 25 Sept. 1960; D. BARBARA SUE GAYLE, b. 17 Sept. 1961.
(2) JOHN WILLIS GAYLE, b. 2 Mar. 1933 m. PEGGY MILLER and had:
A. JO PAULETTE GAYLE, b. 26 Dec. 1950; B. DANIEL WAYNE GAYLE, b. 24 June 1954;
C. STEPHEN CLARK GAYLE, b. 1 Oct. 1955.
(3) BARBARA LOU GAYLE, b. 5 Nov. 1934; m. 1955 BRUCE B. DAVIS and had:
A. LINDA ANN DAVIS, b. 30 Jan. 1956; B. BRUCE BARTON DAVIS, JR., b. 16 June 1959;
C. NANCY RUTH DAVIS, b. 25 Dec. 1961.
(4) PATSY ANN GAYLE, b. 12 Jan. 1943, m. TROY STUBBS and had:
A. JERRY DEAN STUBBS, b. 2 Aug. 1959; B.. DIANA LYNN STUBBS, b. 12 Aug. 1960;
C. MICHAEL ALLEN STUBBS, b. 26 Oct. 1962.
(5) WILLIAM BARTLETT GAYLE, b. 14 April 1945.

V. SAMUEL LESESNE GAYLE, b. 3 Feb. 1895, m. ANNA LUCAS and had:
1. SAMUEL LESESNE GAYLE, JR.

Ninth and later generation descendants of THOMAS MENEFEE and his wife, LUCY SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN and AGNES. Grandchildren of THADDEUS ELIJAH MERCER, who married LUCY ELIZABETH MENEFEE, dau. of JOHN S. MENEFEE.

I. JOHN ELIJAH MERCER, m. Nov 19, 1911 MINNIE GERTRUDE EZZELL. Had:
1. FRANCES AMELIA MERCER, b. Mar. 22, 1913, Lolita, Texas; m. Nov. 30, 1935, El Campo, Texas ELTON JOSEPH LING, son of ADOLPH LING and EMMA ANDERS; b. July 4, 1913. Had:
(1) GLENN ELTON LING, b. Dec. 16, 1940.
2. WILLIAM HENRY MERCER, b. Mar. 28, 1916, Lolita, Texas; m. (1) Nov. 30, 1937 MATTIE HELENA MARTHILJOHN, dau. of NICHOLAS MARTHILJOHN and LILLIE BRANCH; b. Aug. 21, 1917; d. Sept. 21, 1938; m. (2) Sept. 15, 1940 THELMA LEA SHOWS, dau. of MR. and MRS. TERRY ADAM SHOWS.
Had: (1) WILLIAM HENRY MERCER, JR., b. Sept. 20, 1938, Edna, Texas.
Issue of second marriage:
(1) SHERRELL ALAN MERCER, b. Dec. 22, 1944; (3) JOHN DALE MERCER, b. Aug. 4, 1947
(4) MARVIN LYNN MERCER, b. Aug. 21, 1949.
3. ROBBIE RAE MERCER, b. May 12, 1922, Edna, Texas; m. Jan. 1946, Manhatten, N. Y. VIRGINIA DAVENPORT. Had: (1) KAREN NANCY MERCER, b. Nov. 4, 1946; d. Jan. 30, 1947, in N. Y.;
(2) WAYNE DOUGLAS MERCER, b. Feb. 1948, Brooklyn, N. Y.; (3) SHARON NANCY MERCER b. Nov. 1950, El Campo, Texas; (4) JANET LEIGH MERCER, b. April 26, 1955, East Newport, Long Island, N. Y.

II. AUSTIN RUSSELL MERCER, m. Feb. 14, 1918 BESSIE EZELL, dau. of BEN EZZELL and VIOLA GRIFFITH.
Issue:
1. NORMAN BLAIR MERCER, b. Aug. 13, 1920; m. Dec. 22, 1946, Ganado, Texas BERTIE LEE FOX. Had:
(1) THADDEUS BLAIR MERCER, b. Feb. 4, 1948; (2) BERT NORMAN MERCER, b. Sept. 26, 1951;
(3) SEVILLA GAIL MERCER, b. Jan. 19, 1953.
2. RALPH PAUL MERCER, b. July 6, 1922; m. Aug. 11, 1945 EUNICE OWEN, b. Jan. 20, 1927. Had:
(1) EVAN ELBE MERCER, b. Dec. 27, 1947; (2) RONNIE GENE MERCER, b. July 15, 1949;
(3) SHERYL ELAINE MERCER, b. Nov. 29, 1950.
3. JESSE BRYANT MERCER, b. June 29, 1924.
4. SUNSHINE MERCER, b. Aug. 11, 1932.

III. FRANCES RACHEL MERCER, m. June 20, 1917 LUTHER LEROY BETTS, b. Jan. 2, 1876, Cleburn Co., Ark.
Issue:
1. OLLIE ELSIE BETTS, b. April 23, 1918, Lolita, Texas; m. Mar. 28, 1945 JESSIE BINAM HENDRIX, JR., b. Sept. 4, 1918, son of J. B. HENDRIX, SR. and his wife, SELMA REUE. Had:
(1) SHERRILL RAY HENDRIX, b. Feb. 14, 1946, El Campo, Texas; (2) FRANCES SELMA HENDRIX, b. July 21, 1948; (3) CHARLOTTE MONA FAY HENDRIX, b. Oct. 21, 1950; (4) SUSANNA BETH HENDRIX, b. Mar. 8, 1953, Jackson Co.
2. KENT KAY BETTS, b. Sept. 27, 1919, Lolita, Texas; d. June 16, 1940, Pascagoula, Miss.

3. KIRBY LEE BETTS, b. Feb. 25, 1921, Ganado, Texas; m. June 21, 1950 FRANCES ROBERTA WALLACE, b. Mar. 24, 1926, dau. of GILBERT R. WALLACE. Had:
   (1) KENT WALLACE BETTS, b. Feb. 17, 1953; (2) BARBARA GAIL BETTS, b. April 4, 1954.
4. DEXTER LARAINE BETTS, b. Nov. 12, 1922, Ganado, Texas; m. Nov. 24, 1946 DOROTHY NELL UPCHURCH, b. July 6, 1925, dau. of MR. and MRS. J. W. UPCHURCH of Arlington, Texas. Had:
   (1) KAY LYNN BETTS, b. Feb. 24, 1952; (2) GARY NEAL BETTS, b. Dec. 14, 1953.
5. DEMPSTER DALE BETTS, b. Sept. 27, 1925; m. Jan. 28, 1945 FRANCES VAN MARTER, b. Aug. 3, 1925. Had:
   (1) LINDA JEAN BETTS, b. May 23, 1946; (2) WANDA DALE BETTS, b. Feb. 21, 1948; (3) TERRI LYNN BETTS, b. Nov. 26, 1955, Houston, Texas.

IV. WILLIAM MENEFEE MERCER, m. Mar. 27, 1918, MARY MYRTLE WEST, b. July 22, 1895.
Issue:
1. RUSSELL LEE MERCER, b. Oct. 10, 1919; m. Nov. 11, 1939, Bay City, Texas; NELLIE ADELIA RINGGOLD, b. Jan. 3, 1922; dau. of JAMES WYATT RINGGOLD and NELLIE ADELIA CHAMBLER of West Columbia, Texas. Had:
   (1) MARY NELL MERCER, b. Dec. 2, 1940; (2) BETTY SUE MERCER, b. Dec. 29, 1948; (3) CHARLENE ANN MERCER, b. May 20, 1950.

V. HENRY ELI MERCER, m. Jan. 11, 1933 ALMA LEE FRANKLIN FOX, dau. of WESLEY and FRANCES JANE WARREN FRANKLIN.
Issue:
1. LUCY MARIE MERCER, b. Mar. 27, 1935; m. Oct. 4, 1953 HAROLD WIESE, son of EDWIN and NETTIE RICTER WIESE. Had:
   (1) BRENDA MARIE WIESE, b. Dec. 1, 1955.
2. HENRY ELI MERCER, JR., b. Nov. 14, 1938.

Note: All information on the MERCER Family was submitted by ELSIE BETTS HENDRIX from Bible records and the notes of her mother, FRANCES MERCER BETTS, and with permission of her Uncle, HENRY ELI MERCER, SR.

CHAPTER II

HODGES GENERATIONS

I ROGER HODGES I) of Virginia m. MARY MANNING, daughter of JOHN MANNING I).

Other Early HODGES of Norfolk Co., Va.

II JOSEPH HODGES of Va., m. (1) SARAH ––––; m. (2) MARY FEREBEE; m. (3) MARTHA JORDAN MORATALL.

His Brothers of Norfolk Co., Va.

III JAMES HODGES, SR. of Va. and N.C. m. (1) MARY PORTLOCK; m. (2) MIRIAM STOCKLEY, widow, probably MIRIAM LAMB.

IV JAMES HODGES, JR. of Va. and N.C. and Tenn. m. (1) ELIZABETH HODGESON; m. (2) MARY (perhaps POPE).

His Brother, WILLIS HODGES

V DAVID HODGES of N.C., Tenn., Ala., and Miss. m. NANCY WARD, daughter of ROBERT.

VI JOHN WILEY HODGES of Tenn., Ala. and Texas m. (1) TALITHA ANN MORTON, dau. of QUIN; m. (2) SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE, dau. of THOMAS.

VII to XII The Texas descendants of JOHN W. HODGES.

CHAPTER II

EARLY HODGES IN NORFOLK CO., VA.

I ROGER HODGES - FIRST GENERATION

Norfolk County, Virginia, originally called New Norfolk after its parent Co. in England was created in 1637 and at first included today's Norfolk, Princess Ann and Nansemond counties. The first two were one and were referred to as Lower New Norfolk while Nansemond was called Upper New Norfolk until it was separated in 1642 and given its present name.

These three counties occupy the extreme southeast corner of the State of Virginia and form a wedge between the North Carolina boundary, the James River and the Atlantic Ocean. When Princess Ann was organized in 1691 out of Lower Norfolk, it claimed the Atlantic coast line but left to the mother county the excellently protected harbors off Hampton Roads and in Elizabeth River. This tidewater stream with its Eastern, Southern and Western Branches and many creeks spreads like an octopus through the entire upper two-thrids of Norfolk Co. providing it with easy communication by water.

The Northwest River must have been so named by the early inhabitance of what is now Currituck Co. N.C. for it flows through the southern part of Norfolk Co. and into Currituck Bay in North Carolina.

New Norfolk and Isle of Wight Co. which adjoined it on the west, were the seat of most of the early HODGES in Virginia, who brought with them to these shores the culture, religion and customs of the Mother Country.

"The HODGES Family is one of very great age" according to Sir EDWARD STARCHEY some forty years ago who was then in possession of their pedigree from King John down to 1660 (Wm. & Mary Quarterly Vol. 5 (1) p. 8).

The HODGES in Virginia took up just about the time Starchey's Chart left off.

In order to encourage immigration to its Royal Colonies, after 1619. England offered 50 acres of land for the importation of each person into Virginia. Sometimes a Colonist paid his own expenses and, himself, received the land, but others found ship captains and speculators eager to transport them and receive the head right of 50 acres each. Usually the immigrants settled in the vicinity where the land was granted.

These land patents up to the year 1669 and beginning when the system was inaugerated are listed in a valuable volume "Cavaliers and Pioneers" by Nugent: p. 61 & 83 JOHN HODGES came in 1637 and 1638, land granted in Chas. City Co., (County Records destroyed); p. 50 ROBERT HODGES in 1637 land to JOHN GOOKIN on Nancemond River; p. 229 RICHARD HODGES in 1653 land in Gloucester Co.; p. 150 JOHN HODGES @ 1648 land to PHILIP BENNETT Upper Norfolk Co.; p. 447 ROBERT HODGE transported in 1662 by THOMAS POPE.

The Quit Rent Roll of 1704 included all counties of Virginia except those in the Northern Neck along the northern boundary of the present state, and is as near a census as is available until after the Revolution, although it is not without error. The HODGES included in it were:

1. ROGER HODGE - Isle of Wight Co. - 300 acres.
2. ARTHUR HODGES - Essex Co. 100 acres.
3. JOSEPH HODGES - Norfolk Co. - 50 acres.
4. RICHARD HODGES - Norfolk Co. - 375 acres.
5. ROGER HODGES - Norfolk Co. - 109 acres.
6. THOMAS HODGES - Norfolk Co. - 50 acres.
7. THOMAS HODGES - King and Queen - 250 acres.
8. ROBERT HOGE - Isle of Wight Co. - 60 acres.
9. JOHN HOGES - Norfolk Co. - 526 acres.
10. THOMAS HOGES - Norfolk Co. 407 acres.

In research, the compiler has examined the documents concerning all of these HODGES except ARTHUR of Essex and THOMAS of King and Queen Co., and is positive of at least one omission in Norfolk Co. and believes the entire report on HODGES from York and Gloucester Counties to have been left out.

There were two ROGER HODGES in Norfolk Co. in 1704. The one listed on the Quit Rent Roll was ROGER, JR. ROGER HODGES, SR. had received by patents and deed before this date 1030 acres and had conveyed about 585. He should have been listed with about 450 acres.

For the compiler and her large family connection, the HODGES story begins in Texas. The marriage there of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND and MARY ELIZABETH HODGES was recorded in the Family Bible of the parents of each. In the Bible of GEORGE and FRANCES MENEFEE SUTHERLAND' it is simply and briefly stated "THOS' S. SUTHERLAND and MARY E. HODGES was married on the 27th of January 1848."

In the Bible of JOHN W. HODGES, father of MARY ELIZABETH, who, at thirteen, had lost her mother, TALITHA ANN MORTON, first wife of JOHN W' HODGES, it is written: "Thomas Sutherland and Mary Elizabeth Hodges was married on the 27th day of January, Eighteen Hundred and forty-eight - 1848."

Thus were joined in Texas, more than one hundred and fifty years after their arrival in the Colony of Virginia two families of the southern part of that state. The HODGES, as we have seen were originally from Norfolk Co. and their proven lineage dates back to the year 1666. The first definite records of the Sutherland are found in 1698 in King William Co. but the third GEORGE SUTHERLAND migrated to Southside Va. and we find him residing first in Halifax, then in Pittsylvania Co. about 1760.

Furthermore, THOMAS SUTHERLAND and MARY ELIZABETH HODGES were second cousins, her grandmother ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND' wife of QUIN MORTON being the sister of GEORGE SUTHERLAND, father of THOMAS.

The HODGES family of Eastern Va. was said by Bishop MEADE to have been one of the leading ones of that section in his day.

The first of that line, definitely established as an antecedent of JOHN W. HODGES was ROGER HODGESI) who was no doubt a resident of Norfolk Co. several years before the first document proving his residence and dated 1666, was effected. JOHN W.'s descent from ROGER is through his son, JOSEPH HODGES, SR. of Norfolk Co.; to his grandson, JAMES HODGES, SR., of Norfolk Co. Va. and Pasquotank Co., N.C.; to his great-grandson JAMES HODGES of Norfolk Co. Va. Halifax Co., N.C. and Smith Co. Tenn; to his great-great-grandson, DAVID HODGES and his wife NANCY WARD of Halifax Co. N.C., Smith Co. Tenn., Franklin Co., Ala., and Tishamingo Co. Miss.

Thus we see that the generations from and including MARY ELIZABETH HODGES who married THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND, Jan. 27, 1848, to ROGER HODGES, the immigrant of 1666, are seven. Her children are now all deceased since the death in 1952 of BELL SUTHERLAND FAIRES' but the living descendants today include three, and sometimes four more generations.

Under date of April 15, 1666, we are introduced to ROGER HODGES of Va. who that day notified the court that he intended to be out of the country. (Norfolk Court Orders p. 32)

A deed, JOHN MANNING to MARY HODGES (Book E. p. 47) dated April 2, 1669) daughter to ROGER HODGES I) of Norfolk Co., Va. reads in part:

> "JOHN MANNING of ye Suthern Branch of Elizabeth River, for the love and affection I have for my grand-daughter, MARY HODGES, being ye daughter of my daughter, MARY HODGES and her husband ROGER HODGES, do give all that land lying on a ridge adj. a swamp, being 20 acres lying in Julian's Creek of Elizabeth River it being part of 300 acres JOHN MANNING formerly bought of THOMAS WHYTE and a house has been recently built on said land by ROGER HODGES, father of said MARY HODGES."

A certificate was granted ROGER HODGE on Oct. 15, 1672 for 200 acres for importation of self two times. Since only 50 acres per person was allowed he must have had a companion each time, perhaps his wife. (p. 85 Court Orders of Norfolk 1666-1672).

Unfortunately for our HODGES research, many of the documents in Book 6 of Norfolk Records are not legible.

A deed to JOHN MANNING, SR., from THOMAS WHYTE, (Book 6, p. 158), we believe, might well prove that THOMAS WHITE, who came to Virginia in 1637 with one THOMAS SAWYER who was granted land in the Lower Co. of New Norfolk on the eastern branch of Elizabeth River, was the father-in-law of JOHN MANNING, SR., father of his first wife MARY, mother of MARY MANNING, wife of ROGER HODGES.

There arc several HODGES whose arrival in the Colony of Virginia are recorded in Nugents "Cavaliers and Pioneers" but ROGER'S is not unless he is the HODGES whose first name is blotted out.

And, while ROGER'S land holdings in Norfolk had their humble beginning in the twenty acres given MARY, probably the first child of ROGER and his wife MARY MANNING, he was soon to acquire more from the same source as rccorded in Norfolk Records Book 6, p. 209. This too is not readable due possibly to fading and damaged by water.

On Sept. 4, 1680, he patented 250 acres in Lower Norfolk Co., (Grant Book 7, Part I, p. 55) and in April 1693 ROGER HODGES, JOHN CREEKMORE and EDMUND CREEKMORE patented 1920 acres on the south side of the Northwest River in Norfolk Co. Va.

The account of the division of this tract was recorded in Norfolk Records Book 5 - p. 214 on March 15, 1693/4.

> "The surveyors having surveyed a tract of land about 1900 acres on the Southwest side of the Northwest River, and patented the same and having by proclamation put on a sale of lots of the said land -- this is to say part of the said land is to belong to JOHN CREEKMORE, another part of said land is to belong to ROGER HODGES, and the lower part is to belong to EDMUND CREEKMORE.
>
> Signed:
> JOHN CREEKMORE
> ROGER HODGES
> EDMUND CREEKMORE"

By profession ROGER HODGES, SR., was a cooper, and he seems to have been successful enough that several of his sons and grandsons followed his trade as long as they resided in tidewater Virginia. Tobacco was the medium of exchange in the Southern Colonies and making hogsheads in which to ship it to European markets was a satisfactory occupation to at least three generations of this HODGES family.

Before his death in 1708 ROGER HODGES had acquired the distinction of being addressed as CAPTAIN ROGER HODGES but whether this title was one of respect, of a maritime nature or for military service, we do not know, although the fact that it seems to have been bestowed late in life would indicate it to be one of respect.

The will of ROGER HODGES like many of those of early 1700's is destroyed. However, from other documents of Norfolk, we have reconstructed the family of CAPT. ROGER HODGES and his wife, MARY MANNING, daughter of JOHN MANNING, SR., who were married about 1665-1668 in Virginia, since the MANNINGS had lived there even before 1648.

> (Oct. 25, 1648 - "200 acres granted to JOHN MANNING in Lower Norfolk Co. on the N. W. side of Gayther's Creek being a branch of the southwest branch of Elizabeth River running unto the lands of MARMADUKE MERRIMAN due unto said MANNING for the transfer of WM. BAXTER, CHRISTOPHER COLLINS, MARTHA BRICE and FRANCIS ROBINSON" "Cavaliers and Pioneers" p. 180.)

I. CAPT. ROGER HODGES of Norfolk Co., Va. and his wife MARY MANNING had issue:

1. MARY HODGES born before 1669 died before 1703; Never Married.
2. THOMAS HODGES, Cooper (Deed Bk. 7, p. 35 & 36, 1703).
3. RICHARD HODGES who owned 375 a. in Norfolk in 1704 (Deed - ROGER HODGES to RICHARD HODGES Bk. 6, p. 115, illegible, 1679 will of RICHARD TAYLOR names godchild RICHARD HODGES. ROGER HODGES was TAYLOR'S brother-in-law).
4. JOSEPH HODGES, Cooper, of Norfolk Co. b @ 1671; m. (1) SARAH before 1705; m. (2) MARY before 1720; m. (3) MARTHA JORDAN' widow before 1733, d. 1766.
5. ROGER HODGES the younger, b. @ 1675, d. 1716 (Bk. 9, p. 541) m. before 1701 MARY, daughter of GEORGE BALLENTINE SR., of Norfolk Co. (McIntires-Wills of Norfolk)
6. BENJAMINE HODGES - called brother of JOSEPH (Deed Bk. 22, p. 246) Also spoken of as son-in-law by EDWARD DAVIS who married ROGER'S widow. Son-in-law usually meant stepson in that era.
7. MARY WILLIAMS called daughter-in-law (step-daughter) by EDWARD DAVIS.
8. Perhaps ELINOR, wife of JOHN PAGE (Elinor was a favorite name in the MANNING family. On Dec. 30, 1695 ROGER HODGES and his wife, MARY, for no stated consideration deed 50 acres adj. JOHN MANNING to JOHN PAGE (Bk. 6, p. 57).
9. Perhaps JOAN, wife of JOHN ALDRIDGE, similar deed as one to JOHN PAGE (Book 6, p. 57) July 29, 1696.

On page 11 of Bk. 8 Norfolk Co. records the minutes of the Norfolk Court of May 1708 are recorded. On that day "MARY HODGES, relick and widow of CAPT. ROGER HODGES, appeared and added to the inventory some small things omitted and forgotten in the inventory formerly given by her:

> "to Bulton - gold one burlott
> To JOHN MURPHRAY 2 piggins
> To JOHN WILLIAMS - - - - - - -
> To EDWARD RICHARDSON part of a hide RICHARD HODGES had.

Virginia, scttled 1607, was not more than sixty years old at the time ROGER HODGES and MARY MANNING were married, and although the former was probably a new-comer to the Virginia scene, during their thirty years of married life, they lived in a sizeable nest of his wife's relatives.

The will of her father, JOHN MANNING, as well as that of her husband is lost but later records of Norfolk Co. help to establish several members of the MANNING family, as they did the family of ROGER HODGES.

The first of these, a deed from JOHN MANNING I) and wife LIDIA, disposes of 500 acres on Garths (Gayters) Creek in the southern branch of Elizabeth River which adjoined a tract of land belonging to MARMADUKE MERRINGTON and NICHOLAS ROBINSON (Book E. p. 38).

This gives us the name of the last wife of JOHN MANNING I). She was LIDIA RICHARDSON. Bans of matrimony for JOHN MANNING and LIDIA RICHARDSON were posted in the court of Lower Norfolk Co. in Feb. 1659. MANNING'S first wife was MARY, probably WHYTE and his children were by her. Their children were:

1. MARY, wife of ROGER HODGES in 1669.
2. JOHN MANNING who was his father's heir and of age before Feb. 15, 1672 (Bk. E., p. 136), married SARAH MORTON, daughter of WILLIAM and ANN MORTON (Wills of ANN MORTON (Book 4, p., 14) and of WM. MORTON, JR. (Book 7, p. 35 Norfolk Co. 1703/4) He died 1716 leaving sons JOSEPH, JOHN III, WILLIAM and THOMAS MANNING. (Norfolk Records Bk. 9, p. 570).
3. MARGARET TAYLOR, wife of RICHARD who died in 1679 (Wills of Norfolk Co. 1637-1710 p. 65). In this will RICHARD names his wife MARGARET and children, JOHN, RICHARD, MARGARET and SUSAN; his God-children RICHARD HODGES and ELIZABETH DAVIS. The will was witnessed by ROGER HODGES and ELLINOR OWENS.

   In the same year, 1679, his widow, MARGARET, also died and left will which provides for the future care of her orphaned children:

   MARGARET was to be left in the care of brother, ROGER HODGES,
   SUSANNAH with brother THOS. MANNING,
   My sonne RICHARD, to friend, WILLIAM OWENS.
   Son, THOMAS, at dispostion of overseers.
   Son, JOHN, may choose whom he will live with.

   The first RICHARD TAYLOR, aged 50, came to Va., in 1608. He was a member of the Convention of 1625 and of the House of Burgesses 1627/8).
4. THOMAS MANNING' mentioned with ROGER HODGES husband of MARY MANNING as brother by MARGARET TAYLOR, probably married, first the daughter of FRANCIS NASH who in 1686 mention young THOS. MANNING in his will. THOMAS evidently married second, the mother of JOHN WATTFORD who in 1694 calls THOMAS MANNING his father-in-law (step-father) and his (Wattford's) brothers, SOLOMON, THOMAS and JOHN MANNING, and sister SARAH MANNING (Book 5, p. 219).
5. ELLINOR first wife of WILLIAM OWEN, SR. ELLINOR OWEN with ROGER HODGES witnessed the 1679 will of RICHARD TAYLOR. The will of WM' OWEN, SR. (Book 9, p. 45 Norfolk Co.) names his three bros-in-law EDWARD DAVIS, RICHARD TAYLOR and RICHARD LEWELLING. (Dated Dec. 10, 1710).

   Before May 15, 1710, MARY HODGES, widow of ROGER HODGES had married EDWARD DAVIS (Deed bk. 8, p. 154).

   At the time of his death WM. OWEN had wife, MARY, so we surmise that ELLINOR OWEN who signed the will of MARGARET MANNING TAYLOR was ELLINOR MANNING and OWEN'S first wife.
6. The wife of RICHARD LEWELLING.
7. Perhaps, NICHOLAS MANNING' who married ELIZABETH, daughter of JUDITH JOYCE ROSE (Will of JUDITH ROSE dated 1704 in Norfolk Co. Va.)
8. Perhaps, JAMES MANNING, who in 1671/2 was given power of attorney by JOHN BRETT in Isle of Wight Co.

There was a THOMAS MANNING in early Norfolk records who was a contemporary of JOHN MANNING I) who may have been father of No. 8 above.

The first JOHN MANNING died before Jan. 18, 1670 on which date his neighbors NICHOLAS ROBINSON and MARMADUKE WARRINGTON app. his estate (Norfolk Court Orders 1666-72 p. 32). On Feb. 15, 1672, EDWARD NORRINGTON (probably MERRINGTON or WARRINGTON) and his wife LIDIA, deed to JOHN MANNING II) "a tract of land where I now live, being ye land my aforesaid wife had of her former husband, JOHN MANNING, dec'd, lying and being in a creek, commonly called Julian's Creek."

Before his death in 1708, ROGER HODGES and wife, MARY, in two separate deeds each dated March 3, 1682, conveyed for an unnamed consideration small tracts of land to THOMAS WILLOUGHBY and HENRY DALE. The fact that records show that in 1689 WILLOUGHBY had wife, MARGARET, indicates that MARGARET may have been the daughter of RICHARD and MARGARET TAYLOR, who was left in the care of her uncle, ROGER HODGES in 1679. Perhaps the wife of DALE was SUSANNAH TAYLOR, her sister, also now grown.

While definite tracing of the lineage of ROGER HODGES I) beyond himself and that of his wife, MARY, beyond JOHN and MARY MANNING, does not seem possible at this time, we can say that indications are strong that there was an early connection to the "WILLIS" family.

That there was also one to the WHITE family is less evident but more logical according to the records available to us.

In fact, there are few WILLIS records in Norfolk and they do nothing to explain why WILLIS, as a given name, appears in the early part of the eighteenth century not only persistantly in the HODGES connection, but also in the sons and grandsons of several of their close neighbors and associates.

According to a reference in Norfolk Co., Court Records, Bk. D. p. 19B, dated Jan. 1658/9 JOHN WILLIS and wife MARY, were defendants in a suit with COL. THOS. LAMBERT. They would have been old enough to have been the foreparents of these numerous citizens called by the given name of WILLIS. There are no further records of them and the 1770 will of a later JOHN WILLIS of Princess Ann Co., fails to shed any light on the subject. It would have been the will of a grandson of the first JOHN and MARY.

The first with this given names was WILLIS WILSON, a grown man in 1712, but neither his will nor that of his father or brothers indicate why about then or a little later, records introduce WILLIS ETHEREDGE, WILLIS CHERRY, WILLIS FEREBEE and between 1700 and 1750 at least three different WILLIS HODGES among the descendants of three different sons of ROGER HODGES I).

One explanation could be that they descended from a common ancestor JOSEPH WILLIS who was transported to Va. in 1639 by GEORGE MENIFIE who received land in nearby Charles City County, the supposition being that the CHERRY S, FEREBEES and ETHEREDGES as well as the HODGES used the name JOSEPH in the first generations and then substituted WILLIS for the JOSEPH in the latter ones. Since we have no proof that ROGER HODGES I) was not born in the colony, it is possible that the WILLIS line came through him and he, himself, was reared in some nearby county whose records are destroyed. Gloucester Co. where an early RICHARD HODGES resided, was also seat of a WILLIS Connection.

On the other hand a relationship between the WHITE and MANNING families would certainly be logical for we know from the land patents extracted and printed in "Cavaliers and Pioneers" that JOHN MANNING, who was granted 200 acres on Gaythers Creek on the Southern branch of Elizabeth River in Lower Norfolk Co. moved into a neighborhood soon to be or already occupied by THOMAS ETHEREDGE, MARMADUKE MERRINGTON (or WARRINGTON) NICHOLAS ROBINSON and THOMAS WHITE all of whom were granted land on Gaythers Creek, before 1660.

In fact, THOMAS WHITE was already living in Va. before he, with PETER SEXTON, were granted 450 a. at the month of Gaythers Creek in 1654 (p. 247 of "Cavaliers and Pioneers") He was no doubt the THOMAS WHITE who was headright of THOMAS SAWYER 10 March 1637 when SAWYER patented 250 acres two miles up the East Branch of Elizabeth River for importation of WHITE and four others. MARY WHITE aged 17 in 1651 was probably unmarried and daughter of THOMAS (Witnessed will in Lower Norfolk).

In 1639, "JOHN WHITE, gentleman, for his own personal adventure, received 50 acres in Lower Co. of New Norfolk adj. Julian's, his neck" (a neck was a narrow strip of land lying between two more or less parallel streams) (p. 111 of "Cavaliers and Pioneers.")

Perhaps Gaythers Creek later became Julian's Creek, the name Julians being bestowed on one of the streams rather than the land.

It was land on Julian's Creek that was deeded by JOHN MANNING in 1669 and described as being part of 300 a. bought of THOMAS WHITE. It was also 160 acres on Julian's Creek that JOSEPH HODGES sold 1723 reserving a small plot where his father, CAPT. ROGER HODGES and other members of the family were buried, and the 20 acres which JOHN MANNING gave to his granddau. in 1669, was on this same creek.

It would be interesting to know if these WHITES: THOMAS, JOHN and RICHARD, who were living in Lower Norfolk in 1645, and NICHOLAS who was transported to near-by Isle of Wight Co. by Edward Rogers May 14, 1636 (p. 82 C. and P.) were sons or grandsons of JOHN WHITE who headed the ill-fated first English settlement in the North American continent in 1585. This was on Roanoke Island in Currituck Bay barely south of what is the Norfolk Co. Va., boundary. VIRGINIA DARE, first white child born in America, was WHITE'S granddaughter and of course

was lost with her father and mother and the entire colony while WHITE was in England pleading for ships to take food and relief to his settlers on Roanoke Island.

In 1689, THOMAS WILLOUGHBY of the County of Lower Norfolk and wife, MARGARET, for £ 2 sterling, grant to RICHARD CHURCH of the same county a small piece of land commonly called by the name of Whites Island in Curotuck in the county aforesaid bounded by that part of Currituck Bay which lies within the landbanks of the two Islands, Roanoke and Currituck, containing 2600 acres of land. The Islands formerly belonging to COL. LEMUEL MASON, COL. RICHARD FOSTER, THOS. JARVIS and my father, THOS. WILLOUGHBY decd. CHURCH to have 1/3 of White Island (Book 5, p. 104, Norfolk Co. Records).

This deed is most interesting. This THOMAS WILLOUGHBY is either son or grandson of the first THOS. WILLOUGHBY who came to Va. in 1610 aged 9 years, evidently with his father, THOMAS WILLOUGHBY; COL. LEMUEL MASON was son of FRANCIS MASON, who came 1613. Whites Island is hard by Roanoke Island and Currituck Co. N. C. was then considered (1689) a part of Lower Norfolk.

Granting that MARY, the first wife of JOHN MANNING, was probably MARY WHITE, daughter of either THOMAS of Gaythers Creek, or JOHN Of Julians Creek, it is not impossible that the WILLIS line also comes through her mother's side. Both THOMAS and JOHN WHITE were men, grown when they came to Va., and no doubt married already or soon after.

As we have already stated NICHOLAS WHITE was transported to Isle of Wight Co. 14 May 1636 (p. 82 C. & P.)

NICHOLAS WILLIS was son-in-law in 1700 of EDWARD DAVIS of Princess Ann Co., formerly part of Lower New Norfolk (Book 1, p. 266 P.A. Records).

JOHN and MARY MANNING were probably parents of NICHOLAS MANNING son-in-law to JUDITH ROSE in 1704.

"Cavaliers and Pioneers" does not cover two years of land patents to Va. which are lost. Also it covers fragmentarily the era of the "Ancient Planters" before land was given as a headright which would have been to April 1619. And while neither this excellent book nor the Quit Rent Roll of 1704, list numerous WILLIS families in this area, fragmentary records of Gloucester, York and Charles City Cos. prove they were there early and were numerous. A RICHARD HODGES lived there at the right time to have been father of ROGER, who is not mentioned in "Cavaliers and Pioneers" as an immigrant. MARY, dau. of JOSEPH HODGES, was christened in Gloucester Co. We will see that RICHARD, as a given name, is used even more frequently than WILLIS among HODGES men.

So much for the possibility of relationship of HODGES to WILLIS or WHITE. While this is not offered as a fact, we feel it to be worthy of mention since it is doubtful if public records will ever yield any further proof in this direction.

Early records of Norfolk, Princess Ann and Isle of Wight, still legible, have been thoroughly searched as well as those of early adjacent North Carolina. With records of Nansemond, Warwick, Chas. City, James City and Gloucester Cos. tragically destroyed and those of York partially so, there seems little likelihood of definite proof beyond the point we have already gone unless it is from private records, or the answer could lie in England.

While we have been unable to establish any definite relationship of ROGER HODGES to any other of that name in Va. there were others in the same area who were his contemporaries and at least one who preceeded him.

II. The will of EDWARD HODGE, d. June 10, 1649, is recorded in Norfolk Co. Records, Book B. p. 119. In it he named his brother MR. SAMUEL HODGE, merchant, his friend MR. CORNELIUS LOYD and left to WM. ROBINSON his plantation in Lynn haven. There are no further records in Norfolk of SAMUEL.

III. Another HODGE of Norfolk whose career there was short lived is ROBERT HODGE born 1648, died 1681 who married ALICE, daughter of COL. LEMUEL MASON. Since his wife was expecting their first child at the time of his death, there has been much speculation as to which HODGES family may have come from this marriage. Perhaps it will be disappointing to some to know that the records prove that this only child was a girl, MARY HODGES. The will of ROBERT HODGE d. Sept. 10, 1681, p. Oct. 18, 1681 names:

1. His wife, ALICE, who was with child.
2. His father-in-law, COL. LEMUEL MASON.
3. Brother, ALEXANDER HODGE.
4. His brother, THOMAS HODGE.
5. Brother JOHN HODGE of Dartmouth who had sons, ROBERT and JOHN (in England).
6. His sister MARY SHEPHARD, wife of PETER.

Executors: ANTHONY LAWSON and BENNONI BURRUS.

Witnesses: PAT ANGUS, ANTHONY LAWSON, BEN BURRUSS, DAVID WHITFORD
(Vol. 1, p. 79 "Norfolk Co. Wills 1635-1710" - McIntosch).

From additional documents in Norfolk we are advised that ROBERT was preceeded in Va. by his brother WILLIAM, and that his mother was BARBARA HODGE, widow, of Modbury in England, (Aug. 19, 1667, Book E, p. 29, Norfolk Records).

On page 54 of the same book ROBERT JONES of Modebury in Co. of Devon "do appoint RONALD JONES of Linhaven in Co. Lower Norfolk Va. my attorney for the settlement of the estate of my brother WILLIAM HODGE in ye said county. May 22, 1669. (Book E. p. 47)

JOHN HODGE of Dartmouth, In Devon, Eng. gave similar power of attorney to his well beloved brother ROBERT HODGE in 1671.

ROBERT'S widow, ALICE, married at least twice after his death. First to WM. PORTEEN and later to SAMUEL BOUSH, SR.

Her will dated 1736 and probated 1748 mentions: MRS. MILLER'S children, the HAIRS, JOHN IVYS daughter, MARY, and SAMUEL BOUSH. (Book H, p. 233 Norfolk Co. Records)

That ROBERT'S only Child was MARY HODGE, or HODGES, is proven by two documents in Norfolk.

(1) Deed d. Feb. 16, 1682/3 "Benoni Burruss of Lynnhaven in Lower Norfolk to MARY HODGES, daughter of ROBERT HODGES, late of said co. 200 acres sold by BURRUSS to ROBERT HODGE in his life-time. BURRUSS acting now as guardian of ROBERT HODGE'S child, grants and confirms unto MARY HODGE lawful daughter and heir of the above said, ROBERT HODGE, said tract of land." (Book 4, p. 135 Norfolk Records.)

(2) From a later record we are advised that MARY HODGES, daughter of ROBERT, lived to a marriageable age and about 1705 claimed the estate of her father in her own right (Book 7, p. 43).

A later deed, dated 9-4-1720, identifies her as the wife of WILLIAM MILLER and in her will dated 3-22-1741 she names her children: sons, MATHIAS, HENRY and MASON; her daughters, MARY and ALICE IVY.

IV. Another contemporary of ROGER HODGES was CAPTAIN THOMAS HODGE who appears in the Norfolk Co. Records about 1676.

It has not been determined whether there was any relationship between THOMAS HODGES and the family of ROGER HODGES I) of Norfolk or whether he was the THOMAS HODGES brother of ROBERT HODGE of Modebury, England and Norfolk Co. This is unlikely since THOMAS born in 1637 ("Va Colonial Executative Journal Vol. I p. 180) was 11 years older than ROBERT of 1681 will. He was in Va. before the death of ROBERT for in Aug. 1676, he served with JAMES JOSEY, EDMOND BILLSON, and ROBT. PULE (or POWELL) as Overseers of the estate of Governor RICHARD BENNETT, quaker, who resided in Nansemond Co. If older and in Va. at the time of ROBERT'S death, he would have settled his brother's affairs. Fortunately Bennett's will is among the few of Nansemond Co. which are preserved.

Perhaps there was some connection between THOMAS, and a JOHN HODGES who was transported to Virginia in 1648 by MR. PHILIP BENNETT who received 515 acres in Upper Norfolk Co. for bringing JOHN HODGES and 9 others to the colony.

Nansemond County adjoined Norfolk on the west and until 1642 was officially called Upper Norfolk Co. and the name evidently was in usage for some time thereafter.

MR. THOMAS HODGES patented 707 acres in Lower Norfolk Co. on Oct. 6, 1684 (Land Grants Vol. 7 part I p. 430)

The 1704 Quit Rent shows that he owned 407 acres in Norfolk Co. at that time. His son and heir JOHN HODGES owned 526 acres which were located on the Western Branch of Elizabeth River very near to the Nansemond Co. line.

CAPT. THOMAS HODGES served for years and up until his death as a member of the County Court of Norfolk. In the last several years of this service he was joined by his son, JOHN HODGES, in this capacity.

He also served on the Legislative Council of Colonial Virginia. On November 14, 1691, CAPTAIN THOMAS HODGES presented the following two bills:

1. An act ascertaining the place for the erection of the College of William & Mary (read for first time).
2. An act laying an importation tax upon skins and furs for the better support of the College of William and Mary.

(Legislative Journal of Council of Colonial Va., Vo. I, p. 144 and 205).

Thus THOMAS HODGES of Norfolk had the distinction of presenting to the Colonial government the plan for founding the first college in Virginia and the second oldest university in the United States today.

THOMAS HODGES married (1) ELIZABETH WILLIAMS daughter of EDWARD WILLIAMS and his wife ELIZABETH as shown by deed of gift from the WILLIAMS to their children. (Deeds and Wills of Norfolk Co. Bk 5 p. 128, dated April 23, 1690).

Their only son and perhaps their only child was JOHN HODGES of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River (Norfolk Records Bk. 8, p. 143).

JOHN married ELIZABETH MORE only daughter and heir of WILLIAM MORE (Book 9, p. 229 Norfolk Co.)

The only other indication of a relationship to THOMAS HODGES in the Norfolk records is contained in the will of ROBERT ROUSE dated 1687 and naming as his bros-in-law JOHN HODGES and THOMAS HODGES (Norfolk Co. Wills Vol. I, p. 109, McIntosch).

This will also mentions MARY HOLLOWELL as kinswoman. The 1681 will of THOMAS HOLLOWELL, was witnessed by THOMAS HODGES, ROBERT BOWERS and HENRY BOWERS (Vol. I, p. 113).

During this era there are no records in Norfolk to indicate that a JOHN HODGES resided there but he might have lived in adjoining Nansemond.

Before his death in the summer of 1708, THOMAS HODGES married FRANCES ------, a widow.

At the Norfolk Court of September 15, 1708, MRS. FRANCES HODGES is granted administration of the estate of MR. THOMAS HODGES (Book 8, p. 24).

The inventory of the estate of THOMAS was begun 10 Feb. 1708/9 and finished 25 Feb. 1708/9. It takes 4½ pages of a legal sized book to enumerate, beginning on page 53 of Book 8.

On page 55 his slaves were listed as follows: TONY, MOLL, CASEY, ROGER, COLLEY, BESS and PEGGY, and were divided by consent; TONY and MOLL for MRS. FRANCES HODGES and ROGER, COLLEY, BESS, PEGGY and CASEY for CAPT. JOHN HODGES.

"Estate appraised for ℔ 95, 16 shilling 4 pense not including cattle, sheep etc. and old lumber divided by consent. Sworn to at ye Court by MRS. FRANCES HODGES Admx. to be a true inventory of ye estate of MR. THOS. HODGIS dec'd and hath been divided between and with the consent of JOHN HODGIS, his son, a sum of money and ye plantation."

1. Captain JOHN HODGES son of THOMAS was deceased within six years. His will recorded in Book 9, p. 330 was dated May 27, 1714 and proved Aug. 20, 1714, made legacies as follows:

(1) Dau. ELIZABETH - five negroes, stock.
(2) Daughter MARY 2 negroes, stock, furniture.
(3) Daughter KATHERINE 2 negroes, stock, furniture.
(4) Daughter JUDITH 2 negroes, stock.
(5) Son WILLIAM, lands when he comes of age.
(6) Wife, ELIZABETH, the manor plantation during her life and privilege of keeping and driving stock on my land above the head of the Western branch of Elizabeth River which I have in partnership with WM. POWELL.
(7) Mother-in-law (step-mother) FRANCES HODGIS, widow of my father, slaves in her possession.

All children were minors. Also a son, JOHN HODGES

ELIZABETH, widow of JOHN married in 1720 SAMPSON POWER.

WILLIAM HODGES only son of JOHN, had at least one son who was JAMES HODGES and who had wife, MARY.

This JAMES lived for a while at least in Nansemond Co. On Dec. 10, 1757 he sold to WILLIAM SHEPHERD also of Nansemond "all that tract of land lying and being in the county of Norfolk on the head of the Western Branch adj. ROBERT BOWERS, ABSALOM CIVIL and JOHN PURKENS" (Deed Bk. 18, p. 73).

Before June 17, 1762, JAMES had moved his residence back to Norfolk.

"JAMES HODGES and MARY his wife, son of WILLIAM HODGES of the Western Branch of Norfolk Co. to JEREMIAH CREECH a tract of land on the headwaters of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River known by the name of Part of Beach Ridge containing 100 acres which sd. JAMES had of his father, WILLIAM." (Deed Bk. 20, p. 94).

This land had been deeded June 10, 1712 by LEWIS CONNER to JOHN HODGES and his wife ELIZABETH - a plantation commonly known by the name of Part of Beach Ridge and being at the head of the Westermost branch of Elizabeth River." (Deed Bk. 9, p. 230)

Without doubt GENERAL JOHN HODGES of fame in the War of 1812 was of this line.

"GENERAL JOHN HODGES descended from WILLIAM HODGES of Hodges Ferry Plantation on the Western Branch of Elizabeth River in Norfolk Co. Va. The said WILLIAM HODGES had a son WILLIAM who married LIDIA THOMAS on July 4, 1760. They had a son WILLIAM who married SALLY DEANS and were the parents of GEN. JOHN HODGES. Born Dec. 31, 1786." (Va. Historical Mag. Vol. 17, p. 98).

WILLIAM HODGES I) possibly married twice as indicated by the following Norfolk Co. Deed (Deed Bk. 1759-1761, p. 195).

"WILLIAM HODGES and wife ELIZABETH Of Norfolk Co. Va. to JAMES HODGES of same for ℔ 40 a plantation lying and being in the Western Branch of Elizabeth River opposite the plantation of JOHN HODGES adj. THOMAS HAIR."

The will of MRS. FRANCES HODGES, widow of CAPT. THOMAS HODGES was probated in Norfolk Co. July 17, 1730 but fails to mention any HODGES heirs. Through it we know that she had a daughter ELIZABETH wife of EDWARD THURSTON, a daughter FRANCES, wife of MR. THOMAS NELSON and a grand-son-in-law MR. JACOB WALKER, evidently married to one of the daughters of JOHN HODGES.

II SECOND GENERATION

I. JOSEPH HODGES, SON OF ROGER I)

After the death of ROGER HODGES, his widow married EDWARD DAVIS, as proved in a deed recorded on page 154, Book 8 dated May 15, 1710.

"EDWARD DAVIS as marrying MARY HODGES, widow of ROGER HODGES dec'd did become in right of her dower of land, now in occupation of JOSEPH HODGES, son of the said ROGER and MARY HODGES EDWARD DAVIS gives said land and title to JOSEPH HODGES."

Eighteen years previous, JOSEPH received by deed 50 acres of land adj. WM. ETHEREDGE from CORNELIUS ELLIS (Book 5 Part I, p. 185 - Jan. 17, 1692) This fixes the date of JOSEPH'S birth as not later than 1671. From this date until his death in 1766 JOSEPH lived an active life and transacted much business, even up to the year of his death although he was then at least 95 years of age. However, this 50 acres which he purchased of CORNELIUS ELLIS, he sold July 17, 1693 to LAWRENCE COPPINGER but for some reason still owned this land in 1704. Since JOSEPH, like his father, ROGER, was a cooper, and not a planter, it was not necessary that he own a quantity of land to make a living.

In Deed Bk. 7, p. 79, "JOSEPH HODGES of Elizabeth River in the County of Norfolk with the consent of my wife, SARAH HODGES, do sell to AMOS ETHEREDGE of ye Southern Branch 50 acres adj. WILLIAM ETHEREDGE."

This was the land purchased by HODGES in 1692 and this latter deed dated June 19, 1705 establishes the fact that he had wife, SARAH, at this time.

SARAH was probably his first wife though at an earlier date, 1694, both JOSEPH and a REBECKA HODGES witnessed the will of JOHN BIGGS, SR. If she was his wife she may have been either sister or daughter of CORNELIUS ELLIS, or a dau. of his wife. He was adm. of TIM. HARVEY @ 1670.

On June 19, 1723 "JOSEPH HODGES of Norfolk Co. cooper and MARY, his wife, deed to WM. WALLACE of same Co. for 5 shillings, 129 acres of land and wood on the west side of the Southern Branch of Elizabeth River, adjacent to lands of THOMAS HERBERT and JOHN and JOSEPH MANNING, divised to said JOSEPH by the last will and testament of his father, CAPT. ROGER HODGES." (Book 2, p. 80) We are advised by this document that JOSEPH'S wife, SARAH, is dead and he is now married to MARY – – – – –.

Aug. 16, 1723 "recent indenture to verify another of JOSEPH HODGES and wife MARY for £ 25 money of Va. paid by WM. WALLACE' whereby they acknowledge and confirm to WM. WALLACE said land in his possession, 129 acres except a piece of ground 34 foot by 10 foot where said JOSEPH'S father and others of said family have been buried here-to-fore" (Book 2, p. 81).

In 1730 Tax List of Norfolk Co. JOSEPH HODGES and two sons are listed as taxable in the district between Suggs Mill and the Great Bridge. These sons had to be fourteen years of age or older to be included in the tax. None of the sons of JOSEPH showed up in independent households in this tax list (Va. Geneologist Jan.- May 1963)

These two sons who were approaching maturity in 1730 were JAMES and probably JOSEPH, JR.

In 1733 THOMAS JORDAN of Nansemond Co. released to JOSEPH HODGES of Norfolk Co. in right of HODGE'S wife, MARTHA, formerly wife of his father, THOMAS JORDAN, four slaves that is, TONY, SAM, PHOEBE, FRANK.

Of these four slaves, PHOEBE and SAM were bequeathed, in 1758, to the children of JAMES, son of JOSEPH HODGES, in their father's will.

Having established the first names of various wifes of JOSEPH HODGES, son of ROGER and MARY MANNING, b @ 1670; d. 1766; m. (1) before 1705 SARAH - - - ; m. (2) before 1720 MARY, probably FEREBEE; m. (3) before 1733 MARTHA widow of THOS. JORDAN (1) and MORTALL (2) every effort has been made to prove their family names but without success, except for wife MARY and certain information on MARTHA.

(Will of JAMES JORDAN MORTALL d. 1742, mother exctr.

Probate to MARTHA HODGES)

According to his will dated Nov. 1765, and proved August 1766; and other documents in Norfolk Co. and adjoining area, JOSEPH'S children were:

1. JAMES HODGES, b. 1705-1710; d. 1758 in Pasquotank Co. N.C. m. (1) about 1735 MARY PORTLOCK, daughter of JOHN PORTLOCK, JR.; m. (2) before 1757 MIRIAM STOKELY, widow, probably MIRIAM LAMB (Deed Bk. 18, p. 30)
   Proof:
   (1) JAMES HODGES will d. Feb. 2, 1758, P. Mar. 1758 recorded in Grimes "Wills and Inventories of North Carolina" p. 253. (2) Deed JAMES HODGES, cooper, to JOHN EDMONDS, Feb. 13, 1736, signed JAMES and MARY HODGES. (3) Will of JOHN PORTLOCK, JR. d. 1742 p. 1743/4 names son JOHN III) daus. MARY HODGES and ANNE WHITEHURST, small children, wife SARAH). Also his estate settlement (Deed Bk. H p. 119) names JAMES HODGES and SMITH WHITEHURST as husbands of his daughters. (1744).
2. JOSEPH HODGES, JR. business partner of his brother JAMES died in 1761, had wife LIDIA at time of death.
3. WILLIAM HODGES died 1764, left wife ANN and children JOSEPH, ANNE, MARY, SUSANNE mentioned in their grandfather's will.
4. FEREBEE HODGES, mentioned in the will of JAMES HODGES of Pasquotank and also in will of his father JOSEPH. He was a blacksmith in Portsmouth and had wife MARY when he died in 1779. Mentions only wife and one son, SAMUEL HODGES.
5. MARY HODGES possibly only daughter of JOSEPH, named first in his will, was bapt. Oct. 18, 1717 in Abingdon Parish Gloucesler Co. Va.; m. (1) WILLIAM BRESSIE before 1746; m. (2) PATRICK KEATON who died before November 15, 1752 and left a wife, MARY, and daughter, MARY and SARAH. Excts. JOSEPH HODGES, SR. and BENJ. HODGES, SR. (Wills of Norfolk Vo. II) On April 23, 1759, JOSEPH HODGES, signed the marriage bond of WILLIAM EVANS and MARY KEATON. The 1766 will of JOSEPH HODGES names his daughter MARY EVANS and his grandson WILLIAM BRESSIE.
6. Son, CHARLES to have home plantation.
7. Son, STEPHEN, a negro boy named GEORGE. STEPHEN in 1769 had wife, MARTHA.
8. Son, BENJAMINE, a negro boy named JAMMY.

JOSEPH HODGES was of the second known generation of his paternal line in this country. Having produced with the help of three wives, seven sons to carry on his name, he had made a solid contribution to the history of the HODGES of America. In the next generation, we will follow only the direct line from him to JOHN W. HODGES of Texas, except where additional data is needed for clarification.

Since he had three, possibly four, wives and only the first names of these several wives are definitely known with no dates of their deaths, or his children's births it is almost impossible to place his children within the proper marriage.

There are no records to prove that REBECKA HODGES who signed the 1694 will of JOHN BIGGS was the wife of JOSEPH who was also a witness but JOSEPH was of marriageable age at that time having been born not later than 1671, so there is a possibility she was his wife but if so we believe that they were childless or had only daughters who preceeded him in death. As we have seen his will mentions only one daughter but it also fails to mention two of his sons who were already deceased.

As for sons, however, the 1730 tax list of Norfolk County fails to list any of JOSEPH'S several sons in separate households and only two in his own were old enough to be enumerated in that of their father. These, who had to be sixteen years of age or older, were probably JOSEPH, JR. and JAMES. Since all of the sons of JOSEPH resided in Norfolk Co., we therefore believe that the first of them were by his wife SARAH to whom he was married in 1705 or earlier.

The fact that CORNELIUS ELLIS bound himself in the sum of 7000 lbs. of tobo to deliver the said 50 acres to JOSEPH HODGES in Jan. 1692 could mean it was a deed of gift and of significance. CORNELIUS ELLIS was probably the brother of WM. ELLIS.

Another wife's family name of which we have strong evidence is that of the wife, MARY, whom we believe to have been MARY FEREBEE, daughter of JOHN FEREBEE and his wife, ELIZABETH, who previously was the wife of WILLIAM ELLIS, SR. and of RICHARD POWELL who died 1657.

JOHN FEREBEE Lived in the vicinity of the ROGER HODGES family and his signature appears on many of the documents of this connection.

A deed recorded in Norfolk Deeds & Wills Bk. 7 p. 62 dated Feb. 14, 1704, conveys to THOMAS and JAMES FEREBEE by their father JOHN FEREBEE to each 200 acres of land patented to him April 4, 1685. To JAMES then only eleven years old and the youngest of the FEREBEE children, "my plantation where I live it being 200 acres." It then provides that "if JAMES die before manhood the land is to revert to the donor and is then to go to his daughter, MARY FEREBEE."

In the next century the name FEREBEE was a popular one for both boys and girls across Va. N. C. and Tenn. but FEREBEE HODGES, son of JOSEPH was the first to bear that given name.

We believe that his mother was MARY the second wife of JOSEPH HODGES and that she was MARY FEREBEE, daughter of JOHN.

MARY HODGES born 1717 may have been daughter of either SARAH or MARY. While she bore the name of the second wife, we know that her grandmother JOSEPH'S mother was MARY MANNING. The will of JOSEPH HODGES, SR. names as a grandchild only WILLIAM BRASSIE but we know that MARY enjoyed two later marriages. The will of her second husband, PATRICK KEATON, names his wife MARY and daughters SARAH and MARY. SARAH named first was probably the older of the two and could have been named for the wife's mother. This was a common custom of that and many generations.

WILLIAM HODGES who was married and had at least four children before his death in 1764 was also probably the son of this middle marriage to MARY FEREBEE.

But, sons CHARLES, STEPHEN and likely BENJAMINE were more probably son of the JORDAN marriage which took place before 1733.

It's possible that MARTHA, the widow of THOS. JORDAN who was JOSEPH'S last wife, was a MILES (or MYLES or MYALS).

About the time of this last marriage of JOSEPH when he was about sixty years of age, he, with CAPTAIN R. JOLE, CAPT. JOHN SANDERS and MR. SOLOMON WILSON, were called to Williamsburg, to attend a meeting of the executive Council of Colonial Virginia and to testify, in a case of piracy, involving JOHN BROWN, master of the Brigatine, "Three Brothers." The case was dismissed (Vol. IV. p. 266).

JOSEPH HODGES, his father, ROGER; his brother, THOMAS; and nephew, RICHARD; his sons, JAMES and JOSEPH, JR., and even, in their early years, JAMES son's JAMES, JR. and WILLIS, depended for their livelihood on the sea. Situated as they were at the entrance to Chesapeke Bay, and in what is still today one of the great maritime centers of the world, they and many of their neighbors took full advantage of this location. With the sea in front of them, innumerable protected harbors in every river and creek for crafts of that day and the forest at their back for an unlimited supply of lumber, they grew, packaged and transported tobacco, the then medium of exchange in the Colonies and a popular commodity in the European cities. We shall see that after they migrated West, the HODGES like their neighbors and friends in this new environment, were generally dependent on the land.

II. THOMAS HODGES, SON OF ROGER I)

Although the order of the births of the sons of ROGER HODGES I) and his wife, MARY MANNING, are not definitely established, it is probable that THOMAS was their oldest son.

> "ROGER HODGES of Elizabeth River for the love he has for his son, THOMAS HODGES, gives to him 120 a. of woodland ground on the southwest side of the Northwest River being part of a dividend taken up by JOHN CREEKMUER, EDMOND CREEKMUER and ROGER HODGES." (Deed Bk. 7, p. 35 Norfolk Co. Va. Nov. 11, 1703)

This was part of the grant of 1920 acres which had been made to ROGER HODGES I) and the two CREEKMORES in 1693/4 and was deeded to THOMAS II) in exchange for his rights to other lands which his father owned. The fact that both he and his father recognized his legal rights to property still in his father's possession suggests that he was the eldest son and as such, heir to his father and the original holdings.

By turning one page over from p. 35 in Bk. 7 to page 36, we find proof for this presumption.

> Nov. 15, 1703 "THOMAS HODGES, cooper, of the Northwest River in consideration of the land given me by my father, ROGER HODGES, in the North West River, I give all my rights, title and interest of all the land where my father lives to him to bequeath or give to whom he pleases especially the 20 acres formerly given by my grandfather, JOHN MANNING, dec'd unto my sister, MARY HODGES now dec'd." Wits: JOSEPH CHERRY, JOHN WILLIAMS, JOHN CREEKMORE (Bk. 7, p. 36).

We do not know the name of the wife of THOMAS HODGES nor the exact date of his death, but we do know that he married and left sons and died before March, 14, 1715.

On that date, "RICHARD HODGES, cooper, of Norfolk County, living on the Southwest side of the North West River, for the love and good will which he bears to his brother, FRANCIS HODGES, hath set over unto the said FRANCIS, 70 acres being part of a patent formerly granted to MR. ROGER HODGES dec'd and by his will given to his son, THOMAS HODGES, said land lying on the Southwest side of Northwest River now in possession of RICHARD HODGES, he being the proper heir of said land. And now, said RICHARD HODGES, of his own free will hath set over to the said FRANCIS HODGES the 70 acres joining land of MR. ROGER HODGES II) uncle to the aforesaid RICHARD and FRANCIS HODGES (Bk. 9, p. 481).

Since deeds to RICHARD HODGES from his father ROGER recorded in Book 6, p. 110 and JOHN HARSELL to RICHARD HODGES p. 128 and 152 are all impossible to decipher, it is difficult to determine where RICHARD HODGES of the 1704 quit rent roll obtained the 375 acres on which he was taxed at that time and also equally as

difficult to determine which RICHARD HODGES of later Norfolk Records was son of ROGER and MARY and which was son of THOMAS, and their grandson.

Since these deeds in Book 6 were all made in the 1690's, RICHARD I), son of ROGER, must have been the grantee. And, because without benefit of either later grants or deeds of consequence, RICHARD HODGES of the 1750 will devised to his son and heir, RICHARD, JR., his plantation of 370 acres of land, this much and no more which at that time, seemed to constitute his entire land holdings, we believe RICHARD of the 1750 will, to have been RICHARD I), son of ROGER. No other acreage was mentioned in the will. Furthermore, the order of the sons of RICHARD as named in his will and SOLOMON'S will indicate that RICHARD was father of at least four sons, RICHARD, THOMAS, SOLOMON and ROBERT before 1714, in which year, ROBERT BURGESS mentions ROBERT, the son of his daughter, ELIZABETH, who was wife of RICHARD HODGES I). Perhaps two of his five daughters were also born before that date. This fixes the marriage of RICHARD I) to have been not later than 1700 and his birth not later than 1680 by close figuring. If RICHARD I) of the 1750 will had been the son of THOMAS son of ROGER, this would fix THOMAS' birth at not later than 1660 and with a little leeway here and there to take care of later than teen-age marriages, it could easily have been as early as 1650-1660.

Also because JOHN MANNING made deed of gift to MARY HODGES in 1669 of 20 acres on which ROGER HODGES had recently built his home, we believe that: (1) ROGER HODGES was a young married man in 1669 just beginning with a young family perhaps his first child in his first home; and 2nd, that his son, THOMAS, even though perhaps the first born son was not old enough to have fathered RICHARD I) a man grown and with family in 1704.

Therefore, we will hereafter refer to RICHARD HODGES of the 1750 will as RICHARD HODGES I), son of ROGER; and RICHARD HODGES who moved to Currituck Co. before 1735 as RICAHRD HODGES II), son of THOMAS.

The latter "RICHARD HODGES" and wife FRANCES of the County Currituck N. C. deeded to WILLIAM HANBURY, JR. of Norfolk Co. Va. for L 45 current money of Va., 100 acres of land lying on the south side of the North West River in Norfolk Co. adj. lands of EDWARD CREEKMURE dec'd and lands of WILLIAM and CALEB HODGES (sons of ROGER, uncle to RICHARD and FRANCIS sons of THOMAS).

The tax list of 1735 published in the North Carolinan show that RICHARD HODGES owned 320 acres in Currituck county at that time.

Currituck Co. N.C. joined Princess Ann and Norfolk Cos. Va. on their southern boundary and at one time at least parts of it were considered to have been Virginia. On Feb. 11, 1747/8 JASPER LANE of Norfolk Co. Va. sold to RICHARD HODGES of Coratuck Co. in N. C. 75 a. lying in Princess Ann Co. Va. (Deed Bk. 7, p. 2 P. A. Co. Va.)

In 1742 RICHARD HODGES of Currituck served with FRANCES, widow of WILLIAM STAFFORD, as executor of STAFFORD'S will.

On May 2, 1748/9 RICHARD HODGES of that County wrote his own will which names his wife FRANCES and daughters: FRANCES BOWIN probably wife of JOSIAH; SARAH BURNHAM probably wife of JAMES; MARY HODGES; ELIZABETH HODGES; UPHAM HODGES. No sons were mentioned, but without further research in Currituck and neighboring counties, there is no certainty that he did not have sons to whom he had already made gifts of land. His will was witnessed by CALEB WILSON, GEO. POWERS, and WILLIS ETHEREDGE, all good Norfolk County Virginia names. Records of Currituck Co. are mostly gone.

There are few records concerning FRANCIS HODGES, son of THOMAS and brother of RICHARD, beyond the deed in which RICHARD devised part of his inheritance, as eldest son of THOMAS, to FRANCIS.

The 1730 Tax List of Norfolk Co. finds him on the Western Branch of Elizabeth River in the same household as RICHARD JOLIVE. Because of this information, we think it possible that FRANCIS may have married SARAH, the daughter of JOHN JOLLY of Norfolk who in his 1736 will named his daughter, SARAH HODGES (Norfolk Co. Wills Vol. II, p. 243).

On May 14, 1733, FRANCIS HODGES deeded a tract of 200 acres located on the Southwest side of the Northwest River to ROBERT HODGE (Book II, p. 150).

At a later date 1741 ROBERT devised half of this land to WILLIAM HODGES, perhaps his son.

On January 2, 1734 a FRANCIS HODGES witnessed the will of JOSEPH ABINGTON and on March 21, 1742 of ISAAC DAVIS in Currituck Co. N. C. but this was probably FRANCES, wife of RICHARD rather than FRANCIS, his brother.

III. RICHARD HODGES I), son of ROGER I)

Second generation, RICHARD HODGES, married well before 1714 and probably before 1700, ELIZABETH BURGESS, daughter of ROBERT BURGESS. This, we know, from a deed of gift from ROBERT BURGESS dated May 21, 1714 to his daughters SARAH MALBONE, wife of PETER, and ELIZABETH HODGES, mother of ROBERT and to his son, EMMANUEL BURGESS, each a slave.

From other Norfolk Co. records of that era, we have been able to establish other members of the family of ROBERT BURGESS to have been LIDIA WILKINS, MARY MALBONE, wife of RODOLPHUS, and ISOBELLA, wife, first of JAMES WILSON II) and later of MATHEW GODFREY. (Will of JAMES WILSON, JR. Vol. II, Norfolk Co. Wills p. 69 and of MATHEW GODFREY Norfolk Records, Bk. 9, p. 591, Mar. 15, 1715).

RICHARD HODGES, born about 1675 married about 1700 ELIZABETH BURGESS, died in 1751. His will dated Feb. 10, 1750 and recorded Nov. 21, 1751 in Will Bk. 1, p. 234 does not mention his wife, so we presume ELIZABETH was deccased.

Their children were:

1. RICHARD born about 1700-1705 married MARTHA RANDOLPH, dau. of GILES (Norfolk Will 1750) died before Sept. 18, 1766 (Will Book 1, p. 148, Norfolk Co.)
2. THOMAS HODGES, b. 1702-1708 died Feb. 1755 makes his brother RICHARD his executor. Given by his father's will ₤ 7 in full of his part.
3. ROBERT HODGES born before 1714 died 1771. Father's will leaves him two negro boys BRISTOE and SUNDAY presumedly descended from negro girl, JENNY, left to ELIZABETH HODGES and her son ROBERT HODGES by her father, ROBERT BURGESS May 21, 1714. EMMANUEL BURGESS mentioned in this paragraph but will is torn at this place.
4. To my son WILLIAM HODGES, my best bed.
5. SOLOMON HODGES deceased before Mar. 19, 1731. His will dated Aug. 14, 1730 and proven on the former date names his brothers THOMAS HODGES, ROBERT HODGES, and WILLIAM HODGES and proves that he, too, of age in 1731, was born not later than 1710. He was probably just older or younger than ROBERT. Since SOLOMON mentions neither wife nor children we presume him to have been unmarried. Not named in father's will.
6. Daughter ISOBELL GODFREY ₤ 10.
7. ANN FITZACKERY, daughter, and her husband, MR. THOMAS FITZACKERY, one negro.
8. Daughter MARY HODGES, one negro.
9. - - - - - - - BROWN, mother of RICHARD BROWN, RICHARD HODGES' grandson.
10. Daughter, who was mother of LIDIA PRICE.
11. To grandson, RANDOLPH HODGES one negro. In case he should die before reaching the age of 21, sd. negro for my grandson RICHARD.

Several of the sons of RICHARD I) left wills which name their children. In that of RICHARD, JR. we find the names of his sons RANDOLPH and RICHARD identified as the grandsons in that of RICHARD I).

(1) Will of RICHARD HODGES, JR. (Will Bk. I, p. 148, dated July 30, 1766, p. Sept. 18, 1766). "To grandson, WILLIAM HODGES, 100 acres lying on the Northwest River adj. CALEB WOODWARD and JAMES CREEKMUIR," This is probably the land deed to RICHARD I) by his father, ROGER I) and recorded in Norfolk County Records Bk. 6, p. 110.

RICHARD, JR. divided his plantation between his sons RICHARD, RANDOLPH and WILLIS, his daughters ELIZABETH SMITH and 1/3 to his wife who was MARTHA, daughter of GILES RANDOLPH. His daughter RACHEL MOHUN had already had her part and to his daughter MATHEW HODGES he left one bed and furniture.

His daughter, ELIZABETH SMITH, was possibly the wife of THOMAS SMITH to whom her 20 acres adjoined.

(2) The will of THOMAS HODGES, son of RICHARD I), dated 12 Jan. 1755 and proved Feb. 1755 (Unrecorded Wills of Norfolk Co. p. 50) in addition to designating his brother RICHARD HODGES his executor names his sons SOLOMON, KADAR and SAMUEL and his daughter ANN HODGES.

(3) The will of ROBERT HODGES son of RICHARD I), dated Dec. 22, 1770 and proved at the May Court 1771 identifies his wife MARY and only two sons JAMES and ROBERT and no daughters. We believe that he may also have had son WILLIAM as well as other sons and daughters and that his first wife may have been a daughter of JOHN SIMMONS of Princess Ann Co.

The will of JOHN SIMMONS of Princess Ann Co. which adjoins Norfolk in the Northwest River section devises to his grandson WILLIAM HODGES two slaves SIPPUE and PEG already made over to his mother and ₤ 5 when he comes of age. This will was dated Jan. 12, 1759 and recorded within two years in Norfolk Co.

SIMMONDS names AMY WHITE, daughter of PATRIC WHITE in the next paragraph of his will and leaves her the negroes ROSE and TONY.

In deed Bk. 13, p. 229 is recorded a deed, PATRICK WHITE and wife MARY of Norfolk Co. granted to ROBERT HODGES of the same Co. a tract of land containing 150 acres more or less lying on the West side of the

North River beginning at the mouth of Splitt Ridge branch adj. MR. SAMUEL SWEENEY (April 15, 1745). Wits: JOHN SMITH, MATHEW GODFREY, LUCY SMITH.

When PATRICK WHITE died in 1761 his daughters were AMY BURGESS, PRUDENCE MILLER, ZELIA BUTT and LYDIA WHITE.

As yet we have not placed WILLIAM HODGES, SIMMON'S grandson, in any HODGES family. Because of the association between SIMMONS, PATRICK WHITE, ROBERT HODGES named for his grandfather ROBERT BURGESS and AMY BURGESS daughter of WHITE we feel that there is a possibility that WILLIAM may have been a son of ROBERT by a first marriage and unnamed in his will. This is only a possibility and by no means the only one.

A deed recorded in Book 16 on page 55 reveals an exchange between ROBERT HODGES from WILLIS JAMES of Norfolk Co. The deed dated January 1752 conveys title to "a good feather bed and furniture, a cow and hiffer yearling which came by his wife; a sow, and six pigs, crops -- and the rest of my goods and chattle, both within doors and without doors."

This deed seems to indicate that the then wife of ROBERT HODGES was probably the step-daughter of WILLIS JAMES.

Whether this was MARY, named as wife of ROBERTS 1770 will, we do not know.

IV. ROGER HODGES, JR. SON OF ROGER I)

Fortunately, a deed from ROGER HODGES I) and his wife, MARY, is one of those in Book 6 which is still readable. Recorded in Norfolk Records Book 6, Part I, p.45 and dated July 15, 1696 it reads:

> "I ROGER HODGES together with MARY my wife grant unto ROGER HODGES the younger, our son, a tract of land in Norfolk Co. being the land of said HODGES bewix the land of EDMUND CREEKMORE, JOHN PAIG and JOHN ALDRIDGE, 100 acres of land being part of a larger tract etc."

The deed to JOHN ALDRIDGE, carpenter, dated 29 of July, 1696 and recorded on page 57 states that the land was part of the tract of 1920 acres patented in 1694 to ROGER HODGES, SR. and the CREEKMORE and states that the 100 acres deeded to ALDRIDGE was land on which the said ALDRIDGE was then already living.

There are several wills recorded in Norfolk which reconstruct the family of ROGER HODGES, JR. The will of GEORGE BALLENTINE, SR. of the Southern Branch of Elizabeth River dated 1700 and proved 1702 establishes the fact that ROGER HODGES, JR. like his father had wife MARY, who was the daughter of Ballentine who also, mentions his granddaughter MARY HODGES.

Her father's will shows that MARY BALLENTINE HODGES was one of a large family, her father enumerating sons: THOMAS, WM. GEORGE, ALEXANDER, RICHARD, DANIEL, DAVID; and daughters: MARY HODGES, DOROTHY, wife of JOHN CREEKMORE and FRANCES wife of HENRY DEALE.

The will of ROGER HODGES, JR. recorded in Book 9, p. 541 of Norfolk Records and dated Aug. 18, 1716, names the sons and daughters born to him and his wife MARY BALLENTINE. None had reached their majority at the time of their father's death. The will of his wife, MARY, recorded in McIntires Will of Norfolk Co., Vol. II p. 137 gives the married names of some of her daughters. This will was dated Jan. 10, 1736 and recorded May 21, 1736.

The will of their son, EDWARD HODGES, recorded May 21, 1736 and dated April 14, 1736 suggests that he and his mother may have died of a common malady. This will adds nothing else to the family history other than that he was as yet, unmarried and that he left his plantation to his brother, CALEB.

All this information is combined in the following listing of this family:

1. Son WILLIAM HODGES - homes plantation with 100 acres.
2. Son ROGER HODGES III) 100 acres.
3. Son CALEB, 50 acres adj. his brother ROGER, and EDWARD.
4. Son EDWARD, 100 acres adj. his brother ROGER.
5. Daughter MARY married before 1736 and was then MARY ECHOLS.
6. Daughter ABIGAIL mentioned in neither the will of her mother nor her brother, EDWARD, probably dec'd early.
7. Daughter DINAH was DINAH ULSTREE 1736.
8. Daughter ANN was ANN WARREN 1736.
9. FRANCES HODGES named in will of her mother and brother but not in father's.
10. ELIZABETH HODGES named as her sister FRANCES.

The will of ROGER HODGES, JR. made his wife MARY his executor and was witnessed by RICHARD HODGIS no doubt his nephew, and WM. WILKINS. JAMES WILKINS and NATHANIEL NOSEV witnessed MARY'S will twenty years later and the same year 1736, LEMUEL BRETT, WM. HODGIS, and JAMES WILKINS witnessed that of EDWARD HODGES, son of ROGER II) and MARY.

V. BENJAMINE HODGES, SON OF ROGER I)

There are several documents in Norfolk Co. which prove that ROGER HODGES and his wife, MARY MANNING, had a younger son who with their second daughter by the name of MARY were no doubt minors at the time of their father's death.

The first of these is a deed dated 1723 recorded in Bk. F., p. 10a from "JOSEPH HODGES and his wife MARY to BENJ. HODGES, both of Norfolk Co., a piece of woodland lying and being in the Southern Branch of Elizabeth River adj. HUGH HANLON, JOHN NICHOLS and THOMAS LEAKE part of 120 a purchased of HUGH HANLON dec'd and known as Bucks Ridge. ROBERT CANADY the privilege of getting light wood and timber."

This date is too early to have been BENJ. HODGES the son of JOSEPH. No consideration is mentioned in this transaction so we suppose it to have been a deed of gift.

The 1741 will of EDWARD DAVIS, second husband of MARY, widow of ROGER HODGES I), who must have been several years her junior leaves to his son-in-law (step-son) BENJ. HODGES, the great iron pot that was his father's.

In 1750 JOSEPH HODGES, SR. and BENJ. HODGES, SR. were named executors of the will of PATRICK KEATON, a second husband of MARY, daughter of JOSEPH. (Will Bk. 1, p. 290)

Finally on Oct. 15, 1765, ten months before the death of JOSEPH HODGES, SR., and some four years after the death of JOSEPH, JR., "BENJ. HODGES, SR. of St. Brides Parish of Norfolk Co. to THOMAS HANBURY of same, for five shillings a certain parcel of land 83 acres adj. SAMUEL BRACIE and adj. JOSEPH HODGES to Hodges Road, between BENJ. HODGES and JOSEPH HODGES, his brother.

We believe that the wife of BENJAMINE HODGES, SR. may have been the daughter of WILLIAM WILKINS who mentions his grandson LEMUEL HODGES in his 1745 will.

On Aug. 20, 1755 BENJ. HODGES, JR., of Norfolk Co. to LEMUEL HODGES of same, a tract of land situated above the great Bridge and bounded by lands of JOSEPH HODGES, JAMES HODGES and WM. NICHOLSON (Deed Bk. 17 p. 187 Norfolk Co. Va.)

On Nov. 17, 1756 LEMUEL HODGES and wife RUTH of Norfolk Co. to ROBERT WILKINS a tract of land near the Great Bridge devised to sd. LEMUEL HODGES by MR. CHARLES SWEENEY (Book 17, p. 275).

Either BENJ. HODGES, SR. or JR. had wife COURTNEY HODGES. In 1746 ARCHIBALD TAYLOR left L/ 200 to the dau. of MARY HODGES who lived at the Great Bridge when she becomes 20 ys. of age which she must have attained about that time for when the estate was settled COURTNEY HODGES received her L/ 200 legacy. These COURTNEY HODGES were not likely the same.

III. THIRD GENERATION

JAMES HODGES, SON OF JOSEPH, SON OF ROGER

JAMES HODGES I) lived all of his life except his last year in Norfolk Co. Va were; like his father, JOSEPH and his grandfather, ROGER, he followed the trade of cooper. He is not named in his father's will, having preceeded him in death by almost nine years. JAMES HODGES' will was recorded in Pasquotank Co. N.C. February 1758 and that of JOSEPH in Norfolk County, Virginia in Sept. 1766.

However, the will of JAMES mentions his father, JOSEPH HODGES, his former residence in Va. and his brothers JOSEPH HODGES, JR., FEREBEE and STEPHEN, the latter two of whom are named as sons in the will of JOSEPH HODGES, SR. JOSEPH, JR., was also deceased before his father's death.

We do not have the exact date of the birth of JAMES HODGES but from two documents we know he was born 1714 or earlier. He was listed on the 1730 tax list in the household of his father which indicated he was 16 years old or older. As a grown man he began to negotiate his own affairs as early as June of 1735 which proves he had reached his majority before that date.

On June 19, 1735, JAMES HODGES of Norfolk Co. purchased from COL. ANTHONY WALKE of Princess Ann Co. for 5 shillings, land estimated at 80 sq. poles (rods) in Norfolk Co. near Norfolk town on the main road into town (Deed Bk. 12 p. 70).

On Dec. 10, 1738, JAMES HODGES, Cooper, sold to THOMAS BLAIR, of the Borough of Norfolk Co., Perukemaker, ½ lot of land which said HODGES bought of COL. ANTHONY WALKE the other half lately sold to JOHN EDMONDS dec'd. - land lying without the town bridge (Book 12 - d. 1738).

This deed was signed by both JAMES and MARY HODGES, as was the Feb. 1736 deed to JOHN EDMONS, so we are introduced in these deeds to the first wife of JAMES HODGES I) who was MARY, daughter of JOHN PORTLOCK II) of Norfolk. We know this to be true because in his 1742 will, JOHN PORTLOCK, JR. names his daughter MARY HODGES, and in 1758 JAMES HODGES in his will names his son, PORTLOCK HODGES.

The PORTLOCK relationship will be further discussed at the end of this chapter.

Beside carrying on his trade as a cooper, JAMES HODGES bought and conveyed numerous plots of land in the interval between his first deed from COL. WALKE and his last in 1757 when he removed to Pasquotank Co., N.C. His will and deed indicate that, having acquired property on the Main Rd. and near the Great Bridge, from that advantageous location on this cross road of both land and water travel, he expanded his cooper business to include other merchandise.

On July 15, 1747 "JEREMIAH SIKES deeded to JAMES HODGES a piece of land lying and being at the Great Bridge in Norfolk Co. being twenty five feet on the road and according to the bounds that THOMAS SIKES had, and also a certain piece of marsh that THOMAS SIKES bought of MR. JOHN WILSON lying on the Main road that goes to the above said great Bridge being part of Great Bridge Island according as it was bounded by the said JOHN WILSON to the said THOMAS SIKES." (Book 14 p. 43 & 44)

Special notice should be taken of the above extracted deed because it will play an important role in the identification of JAMES HODGES, JR. to whom it was left in his father's will.

On January 18, 1757, JAMES HODGES bought in Pasquotank Co. from CALEB BURNHAM 200 acres of land on the Pasquotank River and moved shortly thereafter. We know this because on March 13, 1757, JAMES HODGES of Pasquotank Co. of the Providence of North Carolina sold to JOSEPH HODGES, JR., of Norfolk Co. 200 acres in Norfolk Co. above the head of the Southern Branch of Elizabeth River -- Great Bridge being the land I bought of GAMON, JOHN CURLIN, BENJAMINE and LEMUEL HODGES (Norfolk Deed Bk. 18, p. 30). This deed was witnessed by JOSEPH and FEREBEE HODGES and HENRY SIKES. It was signed by JAMES HODGES and his second wife, MIRIAM. Sometimes between 1747 when WILLIS HODGES, JAMES' son was born, and 1757, MARY PORTLOCK HODGES had died and JAMES had married MIRIAM STOKELEY, widow, who had a son, JOSEPH STOKELEY by her first marriage. Since JAMES HODGES names in his will a minor son whose name was LAMB, and WILLIAM LAMB of North Carolina had in 1758 both wife and daughter named MIRIAM, we believe that this second wife of JAMES HODGES could well have been, before her first marriage, MIRIAM LAMB.

The will of JAMES HODGES Senior is recorded in Pasquotank Co. North Carolina March 1758. It is dated February 2, 1758 and is on file in the office of the Secretary of State of N.C. It was copied in "Grimes Wills and Inventories" and is given in full on pp. 253, 254, 255 and 256.

We, too, feel it is interesting and important enough to be inserted here in full:

JAMES HODGES WILL

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN, the Second Day of February, one thousand Seven Hundred, fifty Eight. I, JAMES HODGES, of Pasquotank, North Carolina, being very Sick & weak in body but of Perfect mind & Memory, thanks be therefore given unto God, Therefore calling unto mind the mortality of my Body and knowning that it is appointed for all Men once to Dye, do make and ordain this my last Will & testament, that is to say, Principally and first of all, I give & recommend my Soul, into the Hands of god that gave it; and my Body I Recommend to ye earth to be Buried in decent order, at ye Discretion of my Executors.

Item. I give & Bequeath to my Son. Josiah, that Plantation & Island on the N. E. Side pasquotank River Bridge to him & his heires for ever.

Item. It is my Will & Desire that if my loving Farther, JOSEPH HODGES, has Willed any part or Parcel of his Estate to me, I humbly beg him to give & Bequeath it to my well beloved Son, JAMES HODGES, Jun., to him & his heires for Ever, & farther, it is my desire yt my loving Brothers, JOSEPH & STEPHEN HODGES shall collect all my Debts on the Great Bridge Books, and to Pay all my Just Debts that I owe in Norfolk & theire Lawfull Commissions.

Item. I give & Bequeath to my Son, WILLIS HODGES, wt. over Rush of my Book debts, if any Remaining, to him & his Heires for Ever.

Item. I Give and Bequeath to my loveing Son, SAMUEL HODGES, Negro boy named PETER, to him & his Heires for ever.

Item. I also give and bequeath to my Loveing Son, WILLIS HODGES, Negro boy Named SAM, to him, & his heires for Ever.

Item. I give & bequeath to my well beloved wife, my writing Desk & bigest ovel Table, my Painted Chest & Seal Skin trunk, one Set of Silver Teaspoons & Tong's, & all my Pewter I brought out of Virginia. Two Frying pans, five Iron pots, & all ye Plantation utensiels, & Sufficiant of household Meat to Support ye Family untel New years day, & fat.

It is my Will that my Estate shall Pay for ye Building of a New Kitchen, w'th one small Brick Chimmey in room of the old woed Chimmey. And farther, I give & Bequeath to my loveing wife all Small Furniture, such as Earth'nware & Coopers, & c., and ten old chairs and Six red Do., & one Safe Bought of Timothy Hickson, one Iron Chafeing dish, and all ye aforsd. mentioned, to her and her Heires for ever. I likewise desire that none of my Children shall lay and Clame to any Part or parcel, or any part, of my Wifes Estate that she was Posest of before I married her.

Item. I give & Bequeath to my Loveing Son, JAMES HODGES, my lot of Land & Marsh on the west Side of road going to the Great Bridg accord'g to ye bounds that THOMAS MANNING formerly held by, & give him my Storehouse standing by brick hous formerly belonging to MR. CHARLES SWENY, and I give him my Roan horse called Rock, & a dark bay Horse wch. I had in Swop of SOLOMON TIMPLE, & my Riding Sadle and housing.

Item. I give, bequeath to My loveing Wife, the use of my Negor Woman call'd Phebe, tell my Son, PORTLOCK attains to the age of Twenty one years, and then the sd. negro Phebe & her increase to return to ye sd. PORTLOCK & his heires for Ever. I likewise give him ye Horse I bought of DAVID COOK, Cali'd Ball, to be sold by FEREBE HODGES & the Money Laid out in Goods to support ye sd. PORTLOCK.

Item. I give & Bequeath to my well beloved Wife, my horse call'd Dultage, to her & her Heires for ever, & the use of Sam & Peter tell my two Sons, WILLIS & JOSIAS HODGES comes to Lawful age; & it is my desire that my two sons, JOSIAS & WILLIS HODGES, shall not in any wise disannul my part of the sd. Clause beforementioned.

Item. I Give & bequeath to my daughter KESIAH CURLIN, Negor girl call'd SARAH, & one feather bed & furniture, spinning wheel, pewter, one chest deliver'd to her when Marri'd, in full of her Portion, to her & her heirs for Ever.

Item. I give & Bequeath to my Daughter, MOLLY, the Negro Girl call'd Rachel, to her & her heirs for Ever.

Item. I give & bequeath to my Daughter, FRANCES HODGES, one negro Girl Call'd HANNAH, to her & her Heirs for Ever. I likewise give to ye use of my wife, ye use of the two Negro Gerles HANNAH & RACHEL, tell my two Children, MOLLY & FRANCES HODGES Comes to Lawful age.

Item. I give & bequeath to my Son-in-Law, JOSEPH STOKELY, my new Survey over ye River on ye N. E. side Pasquotank River, & I give him Cash to Purchase a grant for ye sd. Survey of Land, to him & his heires for Ever, & I desire that my Exe'or or Executors to take out of the grant Soon after my decease.

Item. I give & bequeath to my Daughter, MIRIAM HODGES, one Negro Girl call'd NAN, to her & her heires for Ever.

Item. I give & bequeath to my loveing Son, JAMES HODGES, my negro man Call'd BOATSWAIN, to him & heires for Ever.

Item. I give & bequeath, & it is my Will & desire, that my Brother, JOSEPH HODGES, Pay to Colo. ROBERT TUCKER, thirty Pound wch. I owe him upon Balce. of old Bond & ye Joint Bond Brother JOSEPH HODGES & I ower ye sd. ROBERT TUCKER, in Part of Eighty five Pounds that Brother JOSEPH HODGES owes to me, & uppon Settlem't wn. I was Last in Virginia in December last; & I further desire, that my loveing Brother, JOSEPH HODGES, shall Com in here & take all ye Invoics that is in PardonShip between him & I, at Spraules, Newtons, Atchison, & Sum them up & see wt. the Amounts is, & then go to ye sd. Sproules, Newtons & Atchison, & take true Copys of what we have Paid in company & see if I fall in Debt to pay it, giveing me Credit for ye one half of all ye money he pays away of mine, in my Old Book list; all ye Moneys that can be got in, Brother JOSEPH HODGES must have one half & ye other half to my well beloved Wife, MIRIAM HODGES in Concideration of Supporting & Schooling ye Children & after my beloved Wife, Miriam Hodges & Brother JOSEPH HODGES & MR. ANDREW MILLER' Merch't, if any remains to be Equal Divid'd between my two Sons & Daughters, LAMB, PORTLOCK, MOLLY & FRANCES HODGES.

Item. I give & bequeath to my loving Wife, Side Saddle & my longest Gun, some wite and Brown Sugar Bought of Capt. HEADLY and Part of a Barr'l Molasses.

Item. I give & bequeath my short Gun I brought from Virginia, to my Son, LAMB HODGES & one pair of hand Mill Stones being now in Possession of SOLOMON TEMPLE.

Item. I further give strict orders that no Person or Persons shall Pretend to make Publick vandue of any Part or Parcel of my before Mentioned Estate, under Penalty of one hundred Pounds, proc. Money.

Item. I give & Bequeath to my l'ving Wife, MARIAM HODGES four feather beds and furniture I brought out of Virginia, to her & her heires for ever.

Item. I give to my Daughter, MOLLY HODGES, three new Black Chairs & one small Ovel Table, to her & her heires for Ever.

Item. I give & bequeath to my daughter, FRANCES, three new black chaires, & one Square Table.

I do hereby appoint my real friend, Colo. ROBERT MURDON, & FEREBE HODGES, my whole & Sole Executors of this my last Will & Testament. And I do hereby utterly disallow, revoke and disanul all & every former testaments, Wills, Legacies & bequests & Exers., by me in any ways before bequest, and Executors by me in any ways before named, Willed & bequeathed, Ratifying & Confirming this & no other to be my last Will & Testament.

In Witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand & Seal, the day andyear above Written.

JAMES HODGES (Seal)

Signed, Seal'd, published, Pronounc'd & Declared by the sd. JAMS. HODGES as his Last Will & Testament in ye Presence of us ye Subscribers:

Test. JOHN HARRIS, Jrat.
DANIEL KOEN.
the mark
JOHN J. M. MURDEN.
of

NORTH CAROLINA, PASQUOTANK COUNTY. MARCH COURT, 1758

Present His Majesties Justices:

These may Certify that JOHN HARRIS, one of the Evidences to the within Will, Appeared in open Court and Made Oath on the holy Evangelist, that he was present and JAMES HODGES, sign, Seal, publish and declare the within to be and Contain his last will & Testament, and that he was at time of Sound & disposing memory, and that he also saw DANIEL COIN & JOHN MORDEN, the other two Evidences, Sign their names thereto at the same time. Then appeared JOSEPH HODGES, Exe'r in Virginia and was duly Qualified, Ordered that the Honle. RICHD. SPAIGHT, Esq. Secretary, have notice that Letters may issue.

Test. THOS. TAYLOR, Clk. Cou.

Copied from the Original Will, filed in the Office of the Secretary of State."

Although we have no documents to fix definitely the dates of the births of JAMES children, except the birth of WILLIS born in 1747, (Pension application), certain wording of the will of JAMES does indicate their approximate order of birth and in some instances to which wife they belonged.

More definite concern for the future of JAMES, JR., and bequests made outright to him, with no provision for elapsing further time, indicate that he was the eldest son and heir and was of age in early 1758.

Although negro slaves were given to sons, PORTLOCK, WILLIS, and JOSIAH, and daughters FRANCES, and MOLLY, a stipulation was made that his wife, MIRIAM, should have use of these said slaves until the children come of age and a phrase added stating that nothing should be done to disanul this provision.

MOLLY and FRANCES each were given definite gifts of household furniture as their married sister, KESHIA had received on marriage.

The younger daughter MIRIAM reasonably assigned to the last marriage was given a slave to which no provision was attached allowing the wife of have use of it until daughter MIRIAM came of age. She also was given no furniture.

Reading between the lines the will conveys the idea that it was not necessary to provide that the wife have the use of NAN the slave of MIRIAM because if true daughter, MIRIAM, wife, would naturally have use of NAN until the young daughter was of age or married. On the other hand there would be no need for the father to provide furniture for a marriage dower to dau. MIRIAM, since her mother was living and would attend to that.

There is no stipulation providing lapse of time or restriction on the bequests to SAMUEL or LAMB so by no logical reasoning we have placed SAMUEL in the older group and LAMB with the sister MIRIAM as of the second marriage. SAMUEL was of age as JAMES, JR. was.

A rough guess of the year and sequence of birth of JAMES children is given below:

JAMES HODGES, JR. - b. 1734-1736
SAMUEL HODGES (of age) 1736-1738
KESIAH CURLIN (married) b. 1738-1740
PORTLOCK (minor) b. 1740-1742
JOSIAH (minor) b. 1742-1744 (JOSIAH HODGES m. in Norfolk Co. Va. Sept. 21, 1765, MARY EWELL)
MOLLY (minor) b. 1745
WILLIS (minor) b. 1747
FRANCES (minor) b. 1749-
LAMB (minor) b. 1752-1754
MIRIAM (minor) b. 1754-1756

From this reasoning, we conclude that only LAMB and MIRIAM were children of the second wife. Their ages would depend on the date of the second marriage and each could have been born a couple of years later than the above estimate. We can safely say that MARY PORTLOCK HODGES died 1750-1753.

Several of the children of JAMES HODGES and his first wife, MARY PORTLOCK appear later in the records of Norfolk Co. Va.

On June 16, 1760, JOSEPH HODGES, WILLIAM HODGES and STEPHEN HODGES were bonded as guardians of JOSIAH and MARY HODGES orphans (Reel 98 - Some Guardians Bonds of Norfolk Co. 1751-1790).

Perhaps, by this time, two and a half years after the death of JAMES, SR., his wife, MIRIAM has remarried and different arrangements were necessary for the custody of some of his minor children by his first wife, MARY.

In 1764, JAMES HODGES, the younger, disposes of two pieces of property in Norfolk Co. identifying himself "as JAMES HODGES, marriner," in the one dated February 18 of that year; and as "JAMES HODGES late of Norfolk Co. in the Colony of Virginia but now of the Providence of North Carolina, marriner" in the latter one dated Oct. 18, of the same year (Deeds of Bk. 22).

On February 18, 1768, when WILLIS HODGES, son of JAMES, SR. would have just reached his majority a "WILLIS HODGES with the consent of the Court of Norfolk hath voluntarily and of his own free will apprenticed himself to JOHN WILSON, cordwarner, to learn his art, trade and ministry and after the manner of an apprentice to serve said WILSON from the date here set forth and during four years." (Decd Bk. 24)

There are several WILLIS HODGES of this era and this could have been WILLIS son of RICHARD HODGES, JR., of Norfolk Co. but since others of his brothers and sisters have recently been in Norfolk, we believe this was more likely WILLIS HODGES, son of JAMES SR., who now with father, grandfather, JOSEPH; and uncles JOSEPH

JR., and WILLIAM, all deceased; is of age, on his own and had the good sense to prepare himself for the future by learning a trade.

That he didn't follow it but emulated his older brother, JAMES HODGES, in moving west into North Carolina attests to the bond between these older and younger brothers.

JAMES HODGES, SR. had started this westward trek in 1757 when he took a brief step in that direction by moving to Pasquotank Co. where his residence was cut short by death a year later.

Because of this circumstance and the fact that MARY the mother of most of his minor children was deceased, his family was scattered and we have identified and located only three of them in future documents. Beside JAMES and WILLIS HODGES of Edgecomb and Halifax Cos. N.C., PORTLOCK, HODGES lived in Pitt Co., N.C. There was also a WILLIS HODGES there who served in the Rev. War and also applied for a pension. His application papers say that he was born in North Carolina in 1745 and lived there the rest of his life. He was not son of PORTLOCK HODGES, SR. who was still a minor in 1758. Neither was he WILLIS the son of JAMES, SR. or Norfolk and Pasquotank Cos. Perhaps he was an unnamed son of RICHARD, son of THOMAS, who moved to N.C. before 1742.

The pension application of WILLIS HODGES, already identified as son of JAMES, who followed his brother JAMES first to Edgecomb and Halifax Cos. North Carolina and then to Smith Co. Tenn., states that he was born in Norfolk Co. Va. in 1747 and moved to North Carolina when ten years old. This exactly tallies with the facts of JAMES HODGES I) life. He was not living in North Carolina in 1747 but in Norfolk Co. Va. but he did move there in 1757 when WILLIS was ten years old. Herein he, WILLIS, will continue to be spoken of as WILLIS, son of JAMES HODGES, SR.

Before continuing with the fourth generation of HODGES in this family we will here digress to record the documents which relate to MARY HODGIS daughter of JOHN PORTLOCK (II) of Norfolk Co. and first wife of JAMES HODGES, SR.

HODGES-PORTLOCK

MARY PORTLOCK HODGES, like her husband, was a third generation Virginian.

Her grandfather, JOHN PORTLOCK, SR. at a court of Norfolk Co. Jan. 16, 1712 "saith that he is now 54 years of age and that about the last of the month of March 1682, the same being about the beginning of the year, I was on the island at the Great Bridge on the head of the Southern branch of Elizabeth River, the island being that where on the stone house now stands which said island was then known by the name of Hickory Knowls, on which island one Costain then lived." (Deed Bk. 9, p. 234)

On October 21, 1687, a patent of 490 acres was made to JOHN PORTLOCK and on May 20, 1689 JOHN and his wife ELIZABETH conveyed 80 acres of this grant to WILLIAM ETHEREDGE, SR., her father (Deed Bk. 8, p. 84 WILLIAM ETHEREDGE to his son WILLIAM ETHEREDGE, JR.)

In 1702 JOHN PORTLOCK was, collector of all bills due on the south branch of Elizabeth River (Book 8, p. 277).

In 1703, he was crier of the Court (Norfolk Co. Court Orders)

The exact date of the marriage of JOHN PORTLOCK I) and ELIZABETH ETHEREDGE has not been preserved but it was doubtless shortly after he reached his majority about 1680-1682 - as he and ELIZABETH had nine children - seven sons and two daughters at the time of his death in October 1715.

Unto his eldest son and heir JOHN PORTLOCK, JR., he left "all and every part and parcel of that tract of land I now live on.

"Only my true and well loving wife, ELIZABETH PORTLOCK, to have her natural life upon the manner plantation without any interruption."

Besides JOHN he names his other sons - PAUL, WILLIAM, CHARLES, EDWARD, PETER and LEMUEL - seven in all. He names two daughters, ELIZABETH and LIDIA. To PAUL and WILLIAM he leaves land. All his books are to be divided between his seven sons and his two daughters. No mention is made of any child being a minor but if JOHN PORTLOCK was only 57 when he died and the father of nine children some of them, likely, were under age.

The will of JOHN PORTLOCK, JR., was written in 1742 and recorded in Norfolk Co. Feb. 18, 1743/4 on the oath of WM. PORTLOCK, WM. PORTLOCK, JR. and THOMAS NASH.

He left to his son JOHN III) "the land and plantation whereon he lived, his shooting gun and silver hilted sword" - but he gave detailed instructions to JOHN for the erection of a house for his wife and small children on the place" in lieu of her third part of my now dwelling house."

His son JOHN was also to have the parcel of land commonly called Gillings and water mill.

To his two daughters MARY HODGIS and ANNE WHITEHURST each fifty shillings.

The rest of the estate to be sold and wife SARAH to have one third part and two thirds to be divided between all his children except son, JOHN.

MARY HODGIS was wife of JAMES HODGES I) of Norfolk Co. as already explained.

JOHN PORTLOCK, JR. was married first to MARY MATHIAS, daughter of MATHEW MATHIAS, JR., and his first wife, ANN HALSTEAD, of Norfolk Co. Va.

On May 5, 1719 CAPT. JOHN HALSTEAD brother of ANN and therefore Uncle of MARY' then wife of JOHN PORTLOCK made a verbal will which was witnessed by THOS. NASH SR., JOSHUA PORTER, THOMAS WHIDDON. It was proven 27 May in the same year and property divised as follows:

To JOHN PORTLOCK, his water mill.

To JOHN MATHIAS his part of sloop.

To WILLIAM PORTLOCK the plantation he lives on and to ELIZ. PORTLOCK 1 negro.

Also to WM. PORTLOCK book relative to Sheriffs office (WILLIAM PORTLOCK was married to MARY'S sister).

Desire brother (HENRY HALSTEAD) let WM. PORTLOCK have horse Rainbo (Norfolk Wills Vol. II, p. 38).

On July 15, 1720 - JOHN MATHIAS, JOHN PORTLOCK and wife, MARY; WILLIAM PORTLOCK and wife ELIZABETH in person and HENRY MATHIAS and ANN MATHIAS infants filed suit against HENRY HALSTEAD administrator of goods of JOHN HALSTEAD deceases. (Court records Norfolk Co. 1712-1722 p. 21a)

The will of MATHEW MATHIAS II) probated p. 49 Deed Bk. 1730-1734 names (his second) wife SARAH, sons JOHN and MATHEW; daughters SARAH, MARY PORTLOCK, ELIZABETH PORTLOCK and ANN HALSTEAD.

We note that HENRY MATHIAS is not mentioned in his father's will so we presume he had died since 1720.

ANN MATHIAS also infant in 1720 was living in the home of her sister MARY PORTLOCK in August 1727. (Norfolk Court Orders 1724-35 p. 64) and was married to SIMON HALSTEAD heir of HENRY HALSTEAD, her uncle, before Mar. 20, 1728, (Deed Bk. G p. 137). MATHEW MATHIAS II) had children by his second wife, SARAH; MATHEW III), SARAH, ABIA, DINAH MATHIAS (Deed Bk. II, p. 75 Norfolk Co.)

ANN HALSTEAD MATHIAS, wife of MATHEW MATHIAS II) and mother of MARY MATHIAS first wife of JOHN PORTLOCK, JR. was the daughter of HENRY HALSTEAD, SR. and his wife BRIDGET. His will dated March 12, 1684, and probated in Norfolk Co. Va. May 15, 1685, names his son SIMON HALSTEAD, his heir, his wife BRIDGET, daughter ANN HALSTEAD and sons HENRY and JOHN who was a minor.

In December 1685, we find the signatures of both JOHN GASCOTT and BRIDGET HALSTEAD as witnesses of the will of RICHARD HILL of (Norfolk Co. Va. Wills Vol. p. 99) and before his death in 1691 BRIDGET HALSTEAD widow, became the wife of JOHN GOOSCOTT, ship captain and owner. He leaves to each of the children of his wife BRIDGET a small legacy but devised to Col. LEMUEL MASON and his sons GEORGE and THOMAS MASON his plantation and sloop in which he was shortly to leave for "Antegee." (Norfolk Co. Vol. I, p. 133)

His widow BRIDGET HALSTEAD GOOSCOTT out lived him by 20 years. Her will recorded in Bk. 9, p. 111 of Norfolk Co. Wills & Deeds names her son JOHN HALSTEAD; her grandchildren JOHN, MARY, ANN, ELIZABETH and HENRY MATHIAS children of my daughter ANN MATHIAS (HALSTEAD) who inter married with MATHEW MATHIAS; and ELIZABETH, SIMON, DREW, HENRY and BRIDGET, sons and daughters of her son HENRY HALSTEAD II.

This HENRY was executor of his brother JOHN'S will and in July 1720 was sued by the children of his sister ANN HALSTEAD MATHIAS (including JOHN PORTLOCK and his wife MARY) for their part of JOHN HALSTEAD'S estate.

MATHEW MATHIAS II) father of MARY PORTLOCK, first wife of JOHN JR., was probably a very young son of MATHEW MATHIAS I) whose will was dated June 24, 1669 and recorded in Bk. E. p. 55 Norfolk Records (Vol. I, p. 30 Norfolk Wills)

He had a wife MARY MATHIAS who was granted probate of his will (Court Orders 1666-1672 p. 36). He mentions three children including son JOHN, an oldest son probably JOHN and a youngest son probably MATHEW JR. He made friends DAVID MORROW and MICHAEL McCOY overseers and JOHN HEBDON and ANN MORROW witnesses.

The estate settlement of JOHN PORTLOCK, JR., identifies in the division of his property his children by his first wife, MARY MATHIAS as JOHN, MARY HODGES, and ANN WHITEHURST.

Those of his second wife SARAH were: KISIAH wife of THOMAS LEAKE, SAMUEL, JONATHAN, MARTHA SARAH, ELIZABETH, JEANONIE, LEMUEL, CARON and another daughter MARY PORTLOCK II.) SARAH, the second wife of JOHN PORTLOCK II, was the only surviving dau. of JOHN ASHLEY of Princess Ann Co. Va. who was deceased before 1737 (Court Records).

ETHEREDGE

In tracing the lineage of ELIZABETH ETHEREDGE, wife of JOHN PORTLOCK I) and mother of JOHN II) we go back to the little nest of new-comers in which the MANNING resided a century earlier and find that with the marriage of JAMES HODGES I) and MARY PORTLOCK the families of several neighbors on Gaythers Creek, joined hands.

Besides THOMAS WHITE and JOHN MANNING who came to this neighborhood in 1637 and 1648 respectively, THOMAS ETHEREDGE came in 1647 and MARMADUKE MARRINGTON (probably WARRINGTON) before 1654.

Nugent's "Cavaliers and Pioneers" which recounts the arrival or land ownership of these persons in listing them as headright in land patent, shows that NICHOLAS ROBINSON made a number of entries into Virginia between 1630 and 1640. We do not have the date of his first arrival nor of a grant to him but we know that he too lived on Gaythers Creek or in that neighborhood.

The will of THOMAS ETHEREDGE dated Nov. 9, 1671 and recorded Dec. 16, 1671 names his wife CHRISTIAN his eldest son WILLIAM and others: EDWARD, JOHN, THOMAS, and MARMADUKE. His daughters were ANN the wife of THOMAS NORCOTT, ELIZ. who married THOS. BLANCHE and had three children, SUSAN, SUSANNAH, and the mother of AMY WYATT. Also grandchildren - ANDREW ETHEREDGE, GILES and ALICE NORCOTT and AMY WHYATT.

Even before this in 1654 THOMAS WRIGHT of the Western Branch of Norfolk left among other minor orphans a daughter named CHRISTIAN but she could not have been the mother of THOMAS ETHEREDGE'S family because in 1671 he had several grandchildren. She might have been a second or later wife.

Because of the sparce population of that day and the proximity of the MARRINGTON and ETHEREDGE on Gayther's Creek it's very likely that MARMADUKE ETHEREDGE was named for MARMADUKE MARRINGTON and that they were related. Court records of Norfolk Co. under date of June 16, 1684 state that MARMADUKE WARRINGTON, a very aged man, was that day exempt from levy. Still he was probably approximately the same age as THOMAS ETHEREDGE who evidently had children before he came to Va. in 1647 and was now deceased 16 years.

It is likely THOMAS, first wife was the sister of WARRINGTON, or his daughter.

THOMAS left to his son and heir WILLIAM "the plantation I now live on adj. JOHN BRIGHTS land."

To his son EDWARD ETHEREDGE he left "land adj. to son WILLIAM and ye pond by JOHN WHYTE'S house." In this same year of 1671 JOHN WHYTE sold "to HENRY CULPEPER 225 acres of land adj. THOMAS ETHEREDGE which land was in the possession of my father, THOS. WHITE." We have speculated on the possibility that JOHN MANNING who received 300 acres from THOMAS WHITE recorded in Book 6 of Norfolk Records probably married one of WHYTES daughters, MARY mother of MARY MANNING, wife of ROGER HODGES.

It was ELIZABETH ETHEREDGE, daughter of WILLIAM who married JOHN PORTLOCK, SR. and was grandmother of MARY, the wife of JAMES HODGES who was great-grandson of JOHN MANNING and his wife, MARY.

The will of WILLIAM ETHEREDGE, the elder, recorded in Bk. 9, p. 572 of Norfolk Records on Feb.15, 1716, identifies his wife Annes; his sons: WILLIAM, CHARLES, AMOSS, THOMAS and ADAM: his grandson WILLIS and CHARLES sons of his deceased son CHARLES; his daughters ELIZABETH PORTLOCK, ANN NASH and GRACE ETHEREDGE, and his granddaughters JUDITH, wife of WILLIAM WALLACE, and DORCAS NASH.

ANNES, the wife of WILLIAM ETHEREDGE, was the daughter of "NICHOLAS ROBINSON, planter of ye Southern Branch of Elizabeth River." His will dated Jan. 28, 1666 and recorded on page 22 of Book F. Norfolk Records on August 15, 1677, states that his wife ANN is to have his estate for life and then it is to go to his loving daughter, ANNES ROBINSON, "now ye wife of WM. ETHEREDGE, and her children." It was witnessed by JOHN EDWARDS, MARMADUKE MERRINGTON (still living in 1677) and WM. ETHRIDG.

Thus MARY PORTLOCK first wife of JAMES HODGES, SR. and mother of JAMES JR. was descended from JOHN PORTLOCK, Senior and Junior, from THOMAS ETHEREDGE, WILLIAM ETHEREDGE and NICHOLAS ROBINSON of early Norfolk Co. on her father's side.

We have already found that her mother was MARY MATHIAS.

However, through her proven PORTLOCK, ETHEREDGE and ROBINSON lines connection is made with several other prominent families of Norfolk and its neighboring counties.

No effort has been made to ascertain the names of the wives of the numerous sons of JOHN PORTLOCK, SR. or the wives of the sons of THOMAS and WILLIAM ETHEREDGE, but ANN the daughter of WILLIAM ETHEREDGE SR. referred to as ANN NASH in his 1715 will was the wife of THOMAS NASH, SR. who died in 1734/5 leaving a will which identifies his wife ANN, sons, THOMAS, WILLIAM and SOLOMON and daughters MARY NASH, ELIZABETH WHITEHURST, ELLINOR MATTHIAS and DORCUS WHITEHURST.

Many of the ETHEREDGE, NASH, PORTLOCK, FEREBEE and WILSON descendants as well as JAMES HODGES and his brothers WILLIS and PORTLOCK migrated to North Carolina during the middle to latter part of the Eighteenth Century and the land records of the counties adjacent south eastern Virginia repeat the familiar names of Norfolk during the first century of her history.

FOOTNOTES:

There are many early ETHEREDGES wills recorded in Norfolk Co. and Currituck Co., N.C. Some of them identified as belonging to members of the families of THOMAS SR. and WILLIAM SR' of Norfolk Co. are briefly extracted below:

1. JOHN ETHEREDGE son of THOMAS called ROBERT WALSON Brother. Had wife ELIZABETH. His will written 1693 R. Sept. 15, 1698. Sons: JAMES, JOHN, Daughter,ELIZABETH (badly torn)
2. Will of THOMAS ETHEREDGE, the elder, of Norfolk Co. d. 13 May 1719——————————R. 17 July 1719——————————————wife ELEANOR ETHEREDGE, ROBERT and EDWARD two of five sons. Son in law EDWARD ETHEREDGE.
3. MARMADUKE ETHEREDGE married (1) BARBARA dau. of THOS. FENFORD. Her sister RUTH married THOS. FEREBEE and both moved to Currituck Co., N.C. MARMADUKE'S will recorded there Feb. 3, 1734, names only CALEB, MARMADUKE and MARY BELL, children of SARAH BELL.

4. Will of EDWARD ETHEREDGE Book 9, p. 272——————D. Dec. 10, 1713/4————————P. Oct. 16, 1713 Sons: AUGUSTUS ETHEREDGE, EDWARD ETHEREDGE: daus: SARAH, IVES, MARY ETHERED, others: JOHN IVES, grandson THOMAS IVES.

The above are the wills of the sons of THOMAS ETHEREDGE. Below are some of those of the sons of WILLIAM ETHEREDGE and his wife ANNES:

(1) Will of ADAM ETHEREDGE (Book 12, p. 88) d. April 1735 P. May 1735 Norfolk Co. Va. wife ELIZABETH land I recently bought in Pasquotank Co. N.C.
Son: LEVI, daus: LYDIA ETHEREDGE, ELIZ. ETHEREDGE

(2) Will of THOMAS ETHEREDGE probably son of WILLIAM d. Dec. 31, 1750, R. 16 April 1752 Norfolk Co. wife ANN, children SAMUEL and DINAH NASH. Grandchildren: COURTNEY PORTLOCK, THOMAS PORTLOCK son of MATTHEW, ENOCH ETHEREDGE, THOMAS and WM. ETHEREDGE, MARY ANN, ROBERTSON, DINAH, JOHN, LYDIA, WILLIAM and ANNA NASH.
THOMAS reserves cemetery where deceased ancestors are buried.

HODGES IN ISLE OF WIGHT CO. VIRGINIA AND NORTH CAROLINA

JAMES HODGES, JR. son of JAMES of Norfolk Co. Va. and Pasquotank Co. N.C. returned briefly to Norfolk Co. Va. when he completed his career as a marriner in Feb. 1764. However, his residence there was short-lived for by October of the same year he describes himself as JAMES HODGES of the Province of North Carolina.

When he took up residence in Edgecomb or Halifax Co. in that year, he was one of a third group of HODGES who had invaded this area.

Therefore, to avoid confusion in the North Carolina chapter of this history, we deem it necessary, or at least advisable, to identify the members of the other groups who preceeded him and since the first group were descendants of the Isle of Wight Co. Branch, we feel it necessary to begin there.

"Cavaliers and Pioneers" records the arrival in 1664 of one, ROBERT HODGES, in Virginia as head right of THOMAS POPE with land patented in Westmorland Co. In spite of this distant land grant, we believe that this could have been ROBERT HODGE who later lived in Isle of Wight Co. Va. POPE was an early and prominent family in this county.

Also in 1672 a ROBERT HODGE, resided in I. of W. with a family which included three immature sons indicating that his residence there, though perhaps brief, was of several years duration, he being the only HODGE in the early records of that county.

Actually, we are introduced to him through the will of a kinsman, ROGER HIGGINS, who, although he called ROBERT HODGES, brother, may have been, brother-in-law, step-brother or half brother of ROBERT.

The will of ROGER HIGGINS of Isle of Wight Co. Va. dated April 1672 and Recorded August of the same year names his mother, MARY LUPO, brothers JAMES HIGGINS and ROBERT HODGE, his Godson ROGER HODGES third son of ROBERT HODGES, also ROBERT'S first son, and another son, ELIAS HODGES, ANN the wife of NICHOLAS OGBURNE and JAMES LUPO. His brother ROBERT HODGES was made executor.

As we study this will, we realize that although ROGER appears as a given name in the families of both the Norfolk Co. group and this one, it is not necessarily an indication of kinship. The ROGER HODGES here was evidently named for his Godfather and Uncle ROGER HIGGINS.

In fact the popular use of the given name ROGER among the early settlers of America is without doubt due to the fact that they were admirers of JOHN ROGERS, first protestant martyr under MARY, Catholic daughter of HENRY VIII of England, who reigned briefly between her brother EDWARD and her sister Queen ELIZABETH, both of whom professed the protestant faith of their father. JOHN ROGERS trained for the priesthood but converted to protestantism by WILLIAM TYNDALE burned at the stake at Smithfield Feb. 5, 1555 rather than recant his adopted beliefs.

If there is a relationship between ROBERT of Isle of Wight Co. and either ROGER or THOMAS, first generation HODGES of Norfolk Co., then it must be hidden in the lost records of Nansemond Co. which lies between the two counties, or in their own very early and hardly legible ones.

While ROBERT HODGE was designated as executor of ROGER HIGGINS will, he never served as such for before the death of HIGGINS in August 1672, HODGE himself died and his estate was appraised by his executor, ROGER HIGGINS. (p. 100 Wills and Estates of I. of W. Co. - Chapman) In 1687 estate of ROBERT HODGES was app. by JOHN GOODRICH, TIM FENN and WM. WEBB. (Ibid p. 39) and a year later, in 1688, administration is granted JOHN DOWNES on the estate of ROGER HODGES. We believe that his widow likely married DOWNES and effort has been made to locate him, but to no avail. (p. 110 ibid)

In future records of Isle of Wight Co., we find some clues as to the activities and future progress of the sons of ROBERT HODGES who died in 1672 and we also are able to definitely identify the oldest son of ROBERT, unnamed in the will of ROGER HIGGINS, as ROBERT HODGES, JR.

The Quit Rent Roll of 1704 accredits ROGER HODGE of Isle of Wight Co. with 300 a. and ROBERT HODGE with 60 acres.

Between 1708 and 1718 either singly or jointly ELIAS and ROGER HODGE appraised the estates of WILLIAM CLARK, JOHN HARRIS, JOHN CARROLL and FRANCES LEE.

In 1711 ROGER HODGES received by deed about 16 acres of land from JOHN FINCASTLE and wife, KEA, which had come to KEA as one of the surviving daughters of TIMOTHY FENN one third part of a tract of 50 acres. This deed was witnessed by NATHANIEL RIDLEY, ELIAS HODGES, and ELIZABETH RIDLEY, and was recorded on page 190 of Deed Book 2, I. of W. Co. Va.

In March 1718 Ridley died and in his will, witnessed by ROGER HODGES, calls ROBERT HODGES god-son (p. 1, Vol. I "Wills of Isle of Wight." - Chapman)

(p. 7 ibid) The estate of ROGER HODGE, son of ROBERT who died 1672, was appraised on May 20, 1720 by GEO. GOODRICH, THOS. WRENN, and EDWARD MILLER.

In 1723 JOSEPH SEWARD and ELIZABETH HODGES witnessed the will of THOMAS DAY' She may have been a widow of ROGER.

The will of ELIAS HODGES of Isle of Wight Co. dated April 1727 and Recorded May 1727 names his wife, SARAH, and his daughters SARAH DAVIS and MARY HODGES. It was witnessed by JOHN GOODRICH and JOHN HODGES.

MARY later married WILLIAM HARRISON.

"Concerning the will of ELIAS HODGES: In 1742 on motion of WILLIAM HARRISON, a clause in the will of ELIAS HODGES to be explained in reference to a slave girl and her increase to his daughter MARY who was now wife of WM. HARRISON." (p. 113 "Wills of Isle of Wight Co." -Chapman)

Proof of this marriage helps to identify the JAMES HODGE of the 1722 will in Chowan County North Carolina who calls ELIZABETH HARRISON his cousin. Cousin here no doubt means niece as we have seen it often does. If used in that sense in this will of JAMES it could place him in the family of ELIAS of Isle of Wight. Since he mentions only his cousin and wife, SARAH CATHERINE, he was probably young and recently married.

Since both the will of ELIAS and the inv. of ROGER fail to name sons, we are at a loss to place the HODGES of Isle of Wight who appear in the next generation. We are a greater loss to identify daughters of ROBERT HODGE I) and of ROGER since neither left a will. Our only clues are the names of the families which are consistently associated with their descendants.

ROBERT HODGES, JR. moved to North Carolina in 1725 and took his family with him, so we can reasonably assume that the HODGES left in Isle of Wight Co., were sons of either ELIAS or ROGER.

In "Isle of Wight Co." by Boddie, we are introduced to them as we were the older generations as they appraised the estates of their friends and neighbors:

p. 89 in 1737 the estate of JOHN MARRINER appraised by JOHN GOODRICH, WM. HARRISON (son-in-law of ELIAS) JOHN HODGES and BENJ. HODGES.

(p. 101) In 1740 the estate of JOHN MILLER appraised by JOHN HODGES, BENJ. HODGES and WM. HARRISON.

p. 128 In 1747 estate of WM. MILLER appraised by JOHN MALLORY, JOHN HODGES, and BENJ. HODGES

Before 1732 BENJAMINE HODGES married MRS. HARRISON, widow of JOHN (Book 3 I. of W. Records, p. 318)

On Sept. 4, 1751 BENJ. HODGES of Newport Parish, I. of W. Co. deeded his entire estate to his daughter, HARTWELL DAVIS and her husband THOMAS DAVIS. (Deed Bk. 8, p. 455).

In his will dated Feb. 28, 1752, Recorded April 5, 1753, he mentions his daughter, HARTWELL DAVIS and his cousins (probably nieces and nephews) ELIZABETH, ANN and JOHN HODGES the children of JOHN HODGES who was executor (Vol. II Wills of Isle of Wight Co. p. 165) Witnesses: SCOTT, MILLER, JORDAN.

JOHN HODGES, JR. married COMFORT CAREY.

The 1770 will of JOHN HODGES, SR. names his son JOHN HODGES, JR. and JOHN'S wife COMFORT, his daughter REBECCA and other children, his own son BENJAMINE and daughter PATTY.

It is evident that the brothers, BENJ. and JOHN HODGES were sons, either of ROGER or of his bro. ELIAS, and because of their close association with WM. HARRISON, son-in-law of the latter it would follow that they were sons of ELIAS. However, he named no sons in his will.

We know that they were grandsons of ROBERT HODGE I) of I. of W. Co. Va.

ROBERT HODGE II) eldest son of ROBERT HODGE I), moved to Bertie Co., N.C. in 1726 so the ROBERT HODGE III) who conveys land in I. of W. Co. as late as 1742-1753 was probably ROBERT who was god-son of NATHANIEL RIDLEY in 1718 and probably son of ROGER HODGES who witnessed the will.

All of the conveyances prior to 1725 bear the same signature - "ROBERT (R.) HODGE."

ROBERT II) married probably around 1690, ANN BRANCH, daughter of GEORGE BRANCH SR., who died 1688, and his wife, ANNE' daughter of FRANCIS ENGLAND who died May 1677 (Will of England Vol. I, p. 21, Wills of I. of W. by Chapman; Appraisal of BRANCH May 1688 p. 42, Vo. I).

On Oct. 31, 1688, GEORGE BRANCH, heir of his grandfathers estate after his step grandmother's and father's deaths, sold to ANN BRANCH of ye Upper Parish of I. of W. Co. for 6500 lbs. of tobo, 50 acres where JOHN BRANCH lives. (Deed Bk. I, p. 599)

Within a few months GEORGE II) made similar sales to JAMES LUPO, to FRANCIS BRANCH, JOHN GOODRICH, JR. and DAVIS BRANCH adding proof that JAMES LUPO'S wife SARAH was in some way related to the known children of GEORGE BRANCH, SR. who were GEORGE II), FRANCIS, JOHN and ANN BRANCH. Perhaps SARAH wife of LUPO was daughter of JOYCE his second wife (I. of W. Co. Wills Vol. I, p. 28). Recall, too that MARY LUPO was named as mother-in-law of ROGER HIGGINS and that JAMES LUPO was named in his 1672 will.

In 1707 WM. DAVIS sold to ROBERT HODGE of ye Upper Parrish of I. of W. Co., 90 acres of a 344 acre patent to DAVIS (D. Bk. 2, p. 70).

On Nov. 13, 1713, HODGE received a grant of 500 acres I. of W. Co. the last 250 acres of which he sold to JOHN DUNCKLEY on July 9, 1725 (Great Bk. Vol. 2, p. 710).

Three months later on Oct. 25, 1725 "ROBERT HODGE and ANN his wife of I. of W. Co. sold to PATRICK BRADY of Surry Co. -- that parcel of land containing 50 acres more or less -- ye said land being taken up by JOHN OLIVER and by him bequeathed to his two daughters and by them sold to GEO. BRANCH ye father of said ANN HODGE and by him given to his son, GEORGE BRANCH and by him sold to ye said ANN HODGE."

ROBERT HODGE moved within a short time to Bertie Co. N.C. and it was his sons who were the first HODGES land owners in Edgecomb and Halifax Cos. N.C.

On March 7, 1726, WILLIAM GRAY of Bertie Precinct sold to ROBERT HODGES of Bertie, planter, 480 acres on Northeast Little Roquest Swamp adj. JAMES WILLIAMS and the MILTONS, price L 8 (Bertie Co. D. Bk. p. 240). We believe he had already received a grant for land and before his death he was to add 20 acres more to his holdings.

The will of ROBERT HOGGES of Bertie Co. was recorded there August 1742. This document dated March 30, 1740 identifies the members of his family as RICHARD, JOHN and ELIAS HOGGES, OLIVE WIGONS, ANN MOORE, and MATHEW WILLIAMS (dau.) Executors were sons ELIAS and RICHARD and son-in-law ISAAC WILLIAMS.

MRS. LEON W. ANDERSON, to whom geneologists were indebted for compiled Halifax Co. records said:

"Our deeds go back to 1732 when this area was Bertie Precinct in our County Albermarle."

and are complete to present. When Edgecomb (formed 1741) was divided in 1758 and Halifax formed, all old records were left in the Court House in Halifax. Many settlements of estates appear in these books."

The HODGES appear in the very early records of Halifax. In 1733 JOHN HODGES of Bertis Prect., gentleman, bought 216 acres on the south side of the Morratuck River and on Looking Glass Swamp and sold the same tract of 216 acres on August 20, 1735. This land though no doubt in Bertie Precinct was not located in what was later either Edgecomb or Halifax Co., but in Tyrrell.

The residence of ELIAS was in later Halifax Co. and equally brief. According to a deed recorded in Bertie Co. Windsor N.C. on May 7, 1739, JOHN SPIER of Edgecombe Prect. to ELIAS HODGES of Edgecomb a tract of land where ELIAS HODGES now lives on the North Side of Fishing Creek 200 acres lying between ELIAS HODGES and WILLIAM SPIERS.

On March 15, 1741 ELIAS HODGES of Edgecomb Co. N. C. sold this same 200 a. to JOHN TURNER. This deed was witnessed by WALTER McFARLAN who in the Halifax Co. Deed index is credited with selling land to one BENJ. HODGES (Bk. 3, p. 536). It was also witnessed by JOSEPH PARKER son of FRANCIS PARKER and brother of CATHERINE PARKER who was the wife of ELIAS HODGES (1746 will of FRANCIS PARKER in Edgecomb Co.) The HODGE and PARKER families were possibly neighbors in I. of W. Co. In 1685 THOMAS PARKER of that county names FRANCIS as one of his four sons.

The will of ROBERT HOGGES of Bertie does not identify ROGER HODGE, as a relative but on April 20, 1740, ROGER HODGES of Edgecomb Co., planter, deeded to JOHN LEE of Same 200 acres on the south side of Morratuck River in the same vicinity that JOHN HODGES land lay. While the deeds read Edgecomb Co. this river is not in that vicinity and the land was never in present day Edgecomb or Halifax Cos.

The HODGES named above compose the first group of that name recorded in Halifax and Edgecomb and we see their residence there was short lived.

ELIAS HODGE of Edgecomb Co. received by grant on Nov. 20, 1739 two tracts of land on Little Swan of Duck Creek and on Aug. 4, 1741 - 177 acres on south side of Fishing Creek.

Deeds in Edgecomb from ELIAS HODGE recorded in Deed Bk. 1, p. 27 and Book 5, pp. 27 show that he disposed of these three tracts of land in 1741 to JOHN TURNER, including a tract north side of Fishing Creek (in Halifax). Also in 1741 ELIAS HODGES of Beaufort Co. sold to JOHN TURNER the tract patented to him on Fishing Creek in Edgecomb. In 1744 ELIAS HODGE of Beaufort Co. sold land adj. JOHN TURNER to WILLIAM SPIER.

On March 11, 1740 SETH PILKINGTON of N.C. deeded to ELIAS HODGES of said Province, planter, 526 acres in Beaufort Co. or Trantors Creek adj. RICHARD SMITH THOS. PILKERTON and Grindals Creek.

Here we have proof of the removal of ELIAS HODGES from Halifax and Edgecomb Co. to Beaufort and his brothers RICHARD and JOHN either preceeded him or followed closely.

In Beaufort Co. Dec. 9, 1741, RICHARD HODGES, planter, bought 110 acres from RICHARD HOLLAND on north side of Trantors Cr. and Pamptico Rivers adj. THOMAS WILLIAMS.

On Nov. 19, 1744 ELIAS HODGES of Beaufort Co., planter to his brother, JOHN HODGES, 270 acres of the 526 which he purchased of PILKINGTON land adj. RICHARD SMITH and BENJ. HODGES, SAMUEL HARINGROVES and JOHN MOORE.

The will of RICHARD HODGES of Beaufort Co. was dated Sept. 3, 1747 and recorded April 16, 1752. He leaves to his son JOHN 400 acres on "Cochoomity" Bay; to his son HENRY the manner-plantation. He names his wife SARAH and daughter SARAH. Witnessed by JAS. COUPPER, JAS. SINGLETON, THOS WILLIAMS.

Before his death, RICHARD HODGES, was witness with BENJ. HODGES to a deed SAMUEL HARGROVES to JOHN HODGES, JR. June 9, 1747. And, in 1752 JOHN HODGES, son of RICHARD sold the 400 acres left to him by his father it being 400 acres of a patent to SAMUEL BOUTWELL 16 Nov. 1744 (Deed to HODGES not recorded).

In 1746 ELIAS HODGES of Beaufort had acquired 600 a. from BUTTENHEAD BOUTWELL of S.C. land on Boutwells Creek. One of the witnesses to this deed was ROGER HODGES, probably the one who had lived in Bertie Precinct, Edgecomb Co. before 1740.

MRS. GERTRUDE SODUBURG who lived for years in Pitt Co. N.C. and did extensive research there explains that Trantors Creek forms the present boundary line between Pitt and Beaufort Co. which were separated in 1760. It also forms about 6 miles of the boundary between Pitt and Martin Cos. before it flows into the Tar. Grindal Creek, is east of Greenville but drains the big Swamp or Grindal Pocasin.

The tax list of Pitt Co. 1762 includes:

ELIAS HODGES 1 white - 6 negroes - 7 polls
JOHN HODGES, SR. 1 w - 0 blacks - 1 poll
HOWELL HODGES 2 w - 4 blacks - 6 polls
MATTHEW 1 w 0 blacks - 1 poll
HENRY HODGES 1 w - 4 blacks - 5 polls
ROBERT HODGES no poll (having no land)

While many of the records of Pitt were burned some of the deeds and the index of Wills and Administrations were saved.

Therefore, we know that CATHERINE wife of ELIAS HODGES died May 1763 and that ELIAS was administrator of her estate. ELIAS died Nov. 1766 and letters of administration were granted NATHAN GODLEY. In spite of the fact that BENJ. HODGES, JR. does not appear on the 1762 tax list of Pitt Co., his estate was administered Nov. 1767 by WILLIAM WATKINS, JR.

In Beaufort Co. Records Deed Bk. 3, p. 390 in a deed dated June 2, 1758, ELIAS HODGES for the love, good will and affection I have and do bear to BENJAMINE HODGES son of BENJAMINE HODGES deceased, 200 acres where CATHERINE HODGES now lives on North side of Pamplico River pocasin and Grindle Creek said land taken up by SIMON JONES 11 Nov. 1743 and sold to ELIAS HODGES 9 June 1747.

Deeds in Pitt Co. dated March 25, 1772 separately from ELEAZOR HODGES to his sons ROBERT HODGES and MATTHEW HODGES land granted to BENJ. HODGES April 16, 1745 and bequeathed to ELEAZOR fix at least two of these disconnected HODGES in a definite family. A JOHN HODGES of Washington Co. N.C. made from MARTIN gave his brother HOWELL HODGES of Pitt Co. Power of Attorney May 22, 1779.

A deed ROGER HODGES of Craven Co. N.C. for 100 a. in Beaufort Co., WILLIAM TAUNT to ELIAS HODGES and at his death to ELEAZOR HODGES, heir at law, and from him by deed to ROGER HODGES, we believe places ROGER also in the family of ELEAZOR or of BENJAMINE, SR.

Since the will of ELIAS is destroyed, there is no way for us to know whether or not BENJAMINE HODGES SR. was his son. We can safely assume that if he were not then perhaps ELIAS had no sons since this last deed states that ELEAZOR was heir at law to ELIAS.

ELEAZOR later deeded land to FLOYD HODGES, so we may assume that he also was a son of ELEAZOR.

On Oct. 20, 1782 MATTHEW HODGES son of ELEAZOR received in Pitt Co. four grants for a total of more than 500 acres.

ROBERT HODGES received 337 acres, BENJAMINE 73 acres, HENRY HODGES 500 acres and HOWELL HODGES 200 acres; all of these granted on Oct. 21, 1782 and all on the North side of the Tar River in Pitt Co.

The 1800 census of Pitt Co. shows some of these HODGES still living there. FLOYD, ROBERT, JOHN, PEAGER, HENRY and LEMUEL are the only HODGES shown in this county in 1800.

The 1810 census shows that others have come while of the 1800 list only FLOYD is still living there.

WILLIS HODGES who was born 1745 in N.C. has joined the Pitt Clan and both PORTLOCK SR. and PORTLOCK, JR. of the JAMES HODGES I) clan are now living in Pitt. (JAMES of Norfolk Co. Va.)

The only clue of any relation of ROBERT HODGE of Isle of Wight Co. to the Norfolk Branch is the persistant recurrance of the name JOHN among his descendants. JOHN is a very common name and it possibly has no implications.

However, we reasoned that THOMAS HODGES I) of Norfolk Co. who lived in the western part of that county

near the Nansemond Co. boundary may have been son of JOHN HODGES who came early to Nansemond. Isle of Wight Co. joins Nansemond on the other side and it is equally possible that another son of JOHN took up residence there.

The only son and heir of THOMAS HODGE or HODGES of Norfolk was also named JOHN.

The second group of HODGES to appear in the Bertie-Edgecomb-Halifax area was composed by JAMES, MILES, JOSEPH, JOHN and BENJAMINE. However, the JAMES HODGES of this group never lived in what was later Halifax Co. north of Fishing Creek. All of the land he acquired was described as being north of the Tar River which flows through the middle part of Edgecomb and south of Fishing Creek present boundary between Halifax and Edgecomb.

JAMES HODGES of Edgecomb Co. acquired land there in 1754 from JOHN MESHO 150 acres North of Tar River. (Halifax Co. Deed Bk., 2 p. 171) On Feb.7, 1763, he acquired 100 acres from EDWARD COBB of Pitt Co. land on MESHO'S Mill Creek and North of Tar (Edgecomb Co. Deed Bk. C. p. 57) Finally on Jan. 30, 1765, he acquired another 100 acres from WILLIAM SESSUMS of Bute County, N.C., another 100 acres on North side of Tar River (Edgecomb Deed Bk. C. p. 358).

On March 10, 1762, JAMES MESHO of Cumberland Co., N.C. sold to JOHN HODGES of Edgecomb Co. a tract of land adj. MILES HODGES. This was witnessed by JAMES HODGES, JR.

MILES HODGES was witness to both deeds to JAMES HODGES which were recorded in Edgecomb. He was also witness to the deed dated Jan. 10, 1771 (Deed Bk. D p. 427 - Edgecomb Co.) in which JAMES HODGES sold to WM. WIGGINS both of Edgecomb Co. in the province of N.C. a parcel of land on the North side of Tar River.

The next deed of JAMES HODGES describes himself as being of the Province of South Carolina and for £ 100 he deeded to MIELES HODGES of Edgecombe Co. 150 a. north of Tar River part of a grant to JOHN THIGPEN (Bk. 3, p. 143 Edgecomb Co.) Witnesses BENJ. HODGES, JOSEPH MORGAN.

The first census of the new state of S.C. after the Revolution enumerates a JAMES HODGES in Georgetown District in S.C. but this county unfortunately lost its records by fire.

The 250 acres of land which JAMES sold between 1771 and 1776 probably does not represent all of the 350 or more acres he owned in Edgecomb Co. North of Tar River. For instance, in the deeds recorded and made to him the 150 acres which he sold to MILES HODGES and described as being a part of a grant to JOHN TINGPIN seems not to fit the description of any of the land conveyed to him in the three deeds which we have extracted.

The important things to note are that he never owned land north of Fishing Creek in what is now Halifax Co. and that he moved to South Carolina evidently taking his family with him.

These HODGES, JAMES, JAMES, JR., JOHN, MILES and BENJAMINE of Edgecomb seem to have been a related group but whether they are descendants of ROBERT of Bertie or related to the Norfolk unit, we do not know. It's possible they were independent of both. However, the given names of this group strongly indicate that they were related to those of Norfolk Co. Va. Perhaps they were sons of BENJAMINE HODGES I), brother of JOSEPH I).

The 1790 Census of Halifax Co. lists in that Co. HENRY HODGE, DAVID HODGES, JAMES HODGES and ROBERT HODGES. That of Edgecomb enumerates MILES HODGES, JOSEPH HODGES, WILLIS HODGES and MARY HODGES.

The 1782 Tax lists of Halifax enumerates JAMES HODGES and HENRY HODGES. The next year 1783 WILLIS is added with a purchase of 20 acres.

The JAMES here referred to was JAMES HODGES II) son of JAMES HODGES of Norfolk County, Virginia and Pasquotank Co., N.C. The DAVID and ROBERT of the 1790 Census of Halifax Co. were his sons now grown and taxable.

With the first group of HODGES removed to Beaufort Co. and JAMES of Edgecomb and his family removed to South Carolina in 1776. It is less difficult to identify the HODGES of later Halifax Co. as descendants of the JAMES HODGES I) son of JOSEPH I) of Norfolk, Co., Va.

FOURTH GENERATION

IV JAMES HODGES, SON OF JAMES, SON OF JOSEPH, SON OF ROGER

An item in the 1758 will of JAMES HODGES, SR. of Pasquotank Co. N.C. furnished the best clue to the identity of JAMES HODGES, his son.

Item: "I give and bequeath to my loving son, JAMES HODGES, my lot of land and marsh on the west side of the road going to the Great Bridge according to ye bounds that THOMAS MANNING formerly held by and I give to him my storehouse standing by the brick house formerly belonging to MR. CHAS. SWEENEY."

This was property still unsold in Norfolk Co. from whence JAMES HODGES had removed a year before. Six

years later when JAMES HODGES, JR., marriner, came home to Norfolk Co. he sold this legacy:

"JAMES HODGES mariner to WM. BRADLEY, gent. of ye Borrough of Norfolk in the Colony of Va. for £ 7-10 shillings one piece of parcel of land and marsh situated and lying and being at the Great Bridge in the county of Norfolk and Colony of Virginia, 25 feet on the main Road according to ye bounds that THOMAS SIKES had the land laid out to him.

Also a piece of parcel of Marsh, THOMAS SIKES bought of JOHN WILSON joining to the main road that leads to the great Bridge being part of Great Bridge Island according to said marsh was bounded by WILSON to SIKES" (Deed Bk. 22 p. 104) Deed was dated Feb. 18, 1764 and Recorded April 19, 1765.

We are quick to note one discrepancy between the will and the deed. The former says the bounds as set forth by THOMAS MANNING but the deed says according to the bounds of THOMAS SIKES. The explanation, we believe, is that JAMES HODGES was a sick man when he wrote his will which was probated at the next court following its writing and that, dependant on his memory for the title of this parcel of land, he said or wrote THOMAS MANNING instead of THOMAS SIKES. As he had bought numerous pieces of land during his residence in Norfolk Co. that was not surprising. This particular tract he had bought from JEREMIAH SIKES July 15, 1747, as recorded in Deed Bk. 14 p. 104 of Norfolk Co. and in the exact words used in deed above, and as quoted in the section of this book relating to JAMES HODGES SR.

The title, Marriner, with which JAMES HODGES, JR. identifies himself according to the abridged "Compedium of American Geneology" (Vol. II, p. 352) "was then used in a much more restricted sense than today. It meant a soldier of the seas and in Parish records would follow the name of a soldier or officer under the rank of Captain."

Neither JAMES HODGES nor any of his maritime neighbors could have visualized the future importance of the ports of Norfolk or the tens of thousands of marriners who would put in and be trained in its waters for the defense of this nation.

Another deed recorded in Book 22, p. 32 of Norfolk Co. and dated Oct. 18, 1764 is of equal, if not greater, importance than the other.

"JAMES HODGES, late of the county of Norfolk in the Colony of Virginia but now of the province of North Carolina, mariner, and ELIZABETH, his wife, to RICHARD BRICKERDIKE of Norfolk in the Colony of Va. for 5 shillings money of Va. one-half lot of land lying near the town bridge on the east side adj. land of WM. HODSON and on the other side land of HENRY GRISTOCK being part of land sold by ANTHONY WALKE to JAMES HODGES June 19, 1735 and by said HODGES sold to JOHN EDMONDS 17 Feb. 1736 and by THOS. WRIGHT, sheriff taken from sd. EDMONDS and sold to JOHN THOMAS by deed 19 May 1738; and by sd. THOMAS sold to WILLOUGHBY CARTER by deed 11 of Feb. 1741 and by said CARTER sold to WILLIAM HODGSON by deed 18 of Feb. 1742 and the said WILLIAM HODGSON dying intestate the said land fell to his daughter, ELIZABETH, party to these presents." Signed by JAMES HODGES and wife, ELIZABETH.

In this document we find proof of JAMES' move to North Carolina as he joined the trek westward to find adventure in pioneering on the land rather than the sea. We also find proof here of the name of his first wife, ELIZABETH HODGSON.

"Feb. 17, 1672 - WILLIAM HODGSON of Stafford Co., planter, have made and appointed Col. GEORGE MASON of ye Co. of Stafford my true and lawful attorney to act as lawful attorney for said, WILLIAM HODGSON in regards ROBERT JORDAN conveying land unto WM. HODGSON." (Norfolk Records Bk. 6 p. 163).

If this WILLIAM HODGSON was antecedent of ELIZABETH, and if he then moved to the Norfolk area, the HODGSON'S residence there was almost as lengthy as that of the HODGES.

WILLIAM HODGSON II) married ELIZABETH MESLER in Norfolk Co. May 11, 1744 (Norfolk Antiquity Vol. III, p. 95). This was probably WILLIAM HODGSON and these could have been the parents of ELIZABETH the wife of JAMES HODGES, JR., in 1764. On April 2, 1765, ELIZABETH HODGSON married JONA MERIDITH in Norfolk Co. (Norfolk Antiquity Vol. IV, p. 21). There is a derth of HODGESON records in Norfolk Co. and since ELIZABETH the daughter was already married to HODGES, perhaps this was ELIZABETH, widow of WILLIAM, father of ELIZABETH HODGES.

It is interesting to note that in 1800 shortly after JAMES HODGES moved to Smith Co., Tenn. JOHN LOVE of Bucklands in Prince William Co. in the state of Virginia by deed conveyed to WM. HODGESON and WM. JAMES HALL of Alexanderia 1000 acres in Tenn. in the Eastern District of Crab Orchard Valley (Smith Co. Deed Bk. 4).

When WILLIAM HODGESON of Stafford Co. gave Power of Attorney in 1672 to COL. GEORGE MASON, both Alexandria and Prince William Co. were a part of the then Stafford Co.

We know that before JAMES HODGES II) began selling land preparatory to moving to Tenn. ELIZABETH was dead and he had married a second wife, MARY. The first conveyance signed by JAMES HODGES and MARY jointly was in 1790 so the date of the death of ELIZABETH and the remarriage of JAMES could have been anytime within a 25 year period. We do know that ELIZABETH was his wife in 1764 when he identified himself as a citizen of North Carolina but how long she lived is uncertain.

JAMES HODGES' son, DAVID, who was antecedent of the Texas branch of HODGES was born Nov. 5, 1768 four years and a few days after the signature of ELIZABETH was placed on the Norfolk Co. deed so if he was the son of the second marriage, as seems likely, then the first marriage was indeed a brief one.

The first group of HODGES, who had lived in Halifax Co. North Carolina had moved away when JAMES HODGES came in 1764. The JAMES HODGES and JAMES JUNIOR who lived in adjoining Edgecomb Co. were to move away a few years later and as far as records show JAMES HODGES of Norfolk was the only HODGES in Halifax immediately after his arrival there probably between April and Oct. 1764.

Halifax Co. North Carolina separated from NorthAmpton Co. on the north and Bertie on the east by the Roanoke River, was separated from Edgecomb by Fishing Creek on the south and by a line of demarkation from Bute later Warren on the west. Its extreme north-western corner touched the Virginia boundary at the line dividing Mecklenberg and Brunswick Counties Virginia.

The compiler is indebted to BLACKWELL P. ROBINSON author of "William R. Davie" for a detailed description of Halifax City and its environment during the exact period of the residence there by JAMES HODGES and his brother, WILLIS, and their families in that county.

"The Town of Halifax was older than the county having obtained a charter in 1757 while the Co. was not established until 1758. This region well watered and drained, its soil rich and highly cultivated produced in 1778 corn, peas and tobacco in large quantities and some rice; also droves of hogs ranging among the plantations. When GEORGE WASHINGTON made his tour of the Southern States after the Revolution he reported this economic situation and trade by boats down the Roanoke River.

Still, because the Roanoke was at times too low for boats the section was dependent mainly on Suffolk and Norfolk Va. for import and export. Virginia merchants bought their abundant crops and paid them in Va. currency.

In 1758 the growth of the new town of Halifax was accelerated when the state Assembly changed the meeting place for District Court from Enfield to Halifax. The district then was composed of NorthAmpton, Granville and Edgecombe counties and of Halifax County, as soon as its separation from Edgecomb Co. became official Jan. I, 1759. The reason for the move was given as lack of accomodation and entertainment in Enfield which could be had in Halifax.

In the same year the assembly established public warehouses in Halifax and in 1777 bienniel fairs to be held in May and November "for the sale of every kind of Horses, Black cattle, sheep, hogs, pork and all kind of provisions, tobacco and every other natural production of the country; also for the sale of all and every sort of goods, wares, and merchandise, whether foreign or manufactured in the state."

The political importance of the town was manifest in its becoming the meeting place for the stirring third and fourth North Carolina Provisional Congresses in 1776 and the General Assembly of 1780.

In a census made by the state in 1786, Halifax Co. was rated as the most populas in North Carolina with 10,327 people and the only one in the state with more blacks than whites, 50.7 percent.

In this era Halifax was described by visitors as a petty town and entertainment there consisted of balls July 4th celebrations, Washington's birthday, weddings and court week; all were celebrated by elegant dinners, numerous toasts, discharge of cannons and more balls.

For the masculine population there also was horse racing and cock fights. Before the Revolution an English traveler praised the excellence of the horses of Southern Va. and North Carolina saying "They are much attracted to quarter-racing, and they have a breed the quarter horse which performs it with astonishing velocity -- as I am confident there is not a horse in England or the world that can excell them in rapid speed."

After the Revolution, because of depletion of local bloodstock in Tidewater, Virginia, the Roanoke Valley became the race horse region of the world.

Accustomed to more political-minded, EDENTON, SAMUEL JOHNSON complained "that the general topic of conversation in Halifax is horses, a subject, though apparently perfectly understood and repeatedly talked over seems never to be exhausted."

Cock fights were also popular entertainment for the men, especially those staged in Halifax between North Carolina and Virginia in which North Carolina was victorious by two battles.

A weekly newspaper was started in Halifax in 1784 and copies of the "North Carolina Journal" printed there from 1792 to 1814 are preserved in the state's libraries.

Still, when a play, "The Spanish Fryer" was to be acted here, there were not five tickets sold at sunset, so there was none acted. So wrote JAMES IREDELL to his wife in 1787, and continued, "I am told that the indelicacy of it was the cause and if so, I suppose it is very indelicate indeed."

A Latin school was established near Halifax in 1795 and was directed by the Reverend MR. WILSON and seems to have enjoyed a successful growth over the next several years.

There was a definite social and economical cleveage between eastern and western North Carolina as in Virginia. In the east the people were proponderously of English extraction. Its dominent element had been closely associated

with the Established Church and English ideals of government and political theory. There was a close economical, social and intellectual tie between the East and Virginia and the Mother Country. Halifax County was of this eastern culture and this to a certain extent was the environment into which JAMES HODGES moved when he arrived in Halifax Co. in 1764.

In this book from which the above accounts of conditions in that era and area were taken the author comments, "Like so many of the newly married couples of that day, no doubt WM. RICHARDSON DAVIE and his wife, SARAH, began their married life under the roof of the brides father." (p. 139 "Wm. R. Davie")

With his own father deceased in 1758 and that of his wife before October 1764, this could not have been the case with JAMES HODGES II) who came, in the latter year, to the more rural atmosphere of the south-eastern corner of the county, about twenty air miles from the county seat, Halifax. However, he and his wife, ELIZABETH, probably resided with some Norfolk Co. friend or relative for an interval while he decided on a proper location for an investment. Several families of the ETHEREDGE clan kinsmen of HODGE'S mother had been in this vicinity for twenty years.

The first deed on record to him speaks of him as JAMES HODGES of the Province of North Carolina Halifax Co. and was recorded in Book 9, p. 351.

The conveyors were MOSES HORN and wife who again on Feb. 19, 1767 conveyed to JAMES HODGES of Halifax Co. in the Province of N.C. an additional 315 acres beginning at a sweet gum in LOT HARRELL'S line part of a grant to MOSES HORN by the Earl of Granville bearing date of May 13, 1760.

This latter tract of 315 acres, was conveyed by JAMES HODGES to LOTT HARRELL on Dec. 5, 1767 Book A., p. 51, and recorded in Martin instead of Halifax Co. Witnesses to this deed were ALPHA and JOEL HORNE, CHRISTOPHER and AVEL HARRELL, JAMES HIGHSMITH and JESSEE BRYANT. There was no wife's signature on this deed and this fact may mean that at this time JAMES was a widower, ELIZABETH being dead and MARY not yet his wife.

The next conveyance to JAMES HODGES in Halifax Co. was from JOHN WHITAKER and wife, ANN, of the Co. for £ 135 Virginia money conveyed "490 acres of land on Deep Creek beginning at a poplar on the South side -- to a pine in the Great Branch and up sd. Branch to the upper fork then along the middle branch -- to a white oak in HERMAN STRICKLINGS line --- to Deep Creek and along the various courses of said creek to first station." Witnesses - DUDLEY, WHITAKER, CHRISTOPHER HAYNES, JOHN WHITAKER, JR. (Deed Bk. 12, p. 206)

The deed was dated March 13, 1772 and recorded at the May court the same year.

This was no doubt part of the land which was adjacent to a grant dated July 28, 1761, from the Earl of Granville to JAMES WHITAKER 597 acres adj. JOHN WHITAKERS Line on the corner of Deep Creek to HARMON STRICKLANDS line. (Grant Book 18, p. 800).

Between 1773 and 1778 JAMES HODGES bought two additional tracts in Halifax, one from JOHN PARKER and one from THOMAS AMMONS, both recorded in Bk. 13.

In a book compiled by the N.C. Daughter of the American Revolution titled "Roster of North Carolina Soldiers in the American Revolution" is the record of the enlistment on April 12, 1781 in Lytles Company of both JAMES and WILLIS HODGES. JAMES was a man now 45 to 50 years old and his service was brief as the record says he was omitted in 1781. WILLIS served in this tour of duty for an entire year being omitted April 23, 1782, (p. 133).

JAMES was among those who applied for depreciation and arreas of pay for service prior to the first day of January 1782 at Halifax and in the year 1783, 1784, 1785 and at Warrington in 1786.

In his pension application made in Smith Co., Tenn. August 28, 1832 WILLIS HODGES testified that he was at that time 85 years old, that he was born in Norfolk Co., Va. in 1747. That he lived in Halifax Co. N.C. when he went into the service and lived there 40 to 50 years, then removed to South Carolina 9 or 10 years before moving to Smith Co. Tenn. his present residence.

He further stated that he served as a private as follows:

177 - three months against the Tories (North Carolina had her share and more, of those who would not take up arms against the mother country).

Served another three months under Capt. GRISHAM COFIED and COL. JAMES HOGAN.

Served another two months under -

Served about 15 months --

1781 served under CAPTAIN MADDEN and COL. LISTON.

1783 served under CAPTAIN WM. LYTH and COL. ANDY LYTH.

Engaged in skirmishes with Tories and at Guildford and Eutar Springs.

Again here we have a minor discrepancy between the official record and the testimony of WILLIS HODGES aged 85 - fifty years later. No doubt the records are correct and it was 1781 in which he served with the LYTLES and not 1783, unless he reenlisted in the same outfit.

This is just one of the incidents closely connecting JAMES and WILLIS HODGES.

In 1777 JOSEPH HODGES (identity unknown) of Halifax Co. to WILLIS HODGES for £ 20 Va. money 10 acres part of the tract I now live on, beginning at the Meadow Branch, to Ammosses corner along a straight line to Packer's corner line. Wits: JAMES HODGES, JAS. PARKER, R. COTTON. Could this JOSEPH have been JOSIAH, brother of JAMES and WILLIS?

On Nov. 17, 1789, EDMUND DICKENS of Edgecomb Co. to WILLIS HODGES of Halifax Co. 180 a. for £ 140. Wits: ROBERT HODGES, KENCHEN KELLEBREW, TALBY BIGGS (Edgecomb Co. Deed Bk. 5, p. 570).

Fourteen months later WILLIS sold this property to WM. PARKER of Martin Co. (Bk. 6, p. 76 Jan. 21, 1791).

On July 3, 1789 JAMES and WILLIS HODGES of Halifax Co. N.C. deeded to JAMES SIMMONS of Curritook Co. N. C. £ 200 - 160 acres in Halifax Co. which was granted to JAMES WHITAKER, land along a new dividing line between ROBERT HODGES and the above said parties also adj. WM. KINCHENS and WILLIS HOWARD to Hale's Corner then along Hale's line to the new station." Wits: DAVID HODGES, SARAH HODGES, JOHN BIGGS, In the 1790 census of North Carolina JAMES, DAVID and ROBERT HODGES and HENRY HODGE, of the I of W Co. family, are in Halifax. In Edgecomb Co. are MILES HODGES, JOSEPH HODGES, WILLIS HODGES and MARY HODGES named as heads of families. Evidently WILLIS Lived near the Edgecomb-Halifax County boundaries.

On March 1, 1790 JAMES HODGES sold to JAMES SIMMONS both of Halifax, 8 acres beginning at the school house -- to Ogburn Hales Corner. Wits: TULLY BIGGS and SARAH HODGES.

Evidently SIMMONS wanted this 8 acres to round out the tract he bought the year before of JAMES and WILLIS, and JAMES, accomodated him. This deed is worth notice for two reasons. In it we find the first reference to a school house in these records and 1790 was fairly early for schools other than those in larger centers. Also it is important to fix Hale's corner in the mind for it is one of the boundaries by which the lands and transaction of JAMES HODGES II) are identified.

JAMES HODGES and his wife, MARY, sold on May 24, 1790 147 acres adj. JAMES SIMMONS corner for £ 147 to AMOS WORRELL of Southampton Co. Va. Wits: JAMES SIMMONS, BENJ. DICKENS, THOS. TAYLER. This deed is the first proof that ELIZABETH HODGSON, the first wife of JAMES, is dead and that he has remarried. We as yet do not know the family name of his second wife, MARY.

On Jan. 1, 1796, JAMES and MARY HODGES sold to ABNER BRUCE all of Halifax Co. for £ 201 Va. money, 272 acres in Halifax Co. beginning on the south side of Deep Creek to a black gum in OGBURN HALE'S line on the branch and following the branch to a sweet gum in HARMON STRICKLANDS line then 306 poles to a pinc in HARMON STRICKLANDS corner on the creek and along the various courses of the creek to the first station." (Deed Bk. 18, p. 110 Halifax Co.) Wits: HARAMAN BISHOP, WM. PARKER, ELI JOYNER.

The description above and the boundary between HODGES and STRICKLAND identifies that tract as part of the land bought in 1772 from JOHN and ANN WHITAKER. It also proves that HALE'S Corner was adjacent to this tract from the WHITAKERS to HODGES.

The last conveyance made by JAMES HODGES was signed by him alone and granted 297 acres to PETER WOMICK for £ 250 Virginia Money. The land began on the south side of Deep Creek beginning at a poplar in said creek to a pine in the Great Branch to the second fork to a gum and thense along an agreed upon line of marked trees between JAMES HODGES and his son, DAVID, 270 poles to a gum standing on the run of the creek thense along a straight line and down the creek to the first station. (This description is the same as that of WHITTAKER deed).

This deed was witnessed by JAMES SIMMONS and LEMUEL HOGAN and was dated Feb. 14, 1796.

SARAH HODGES who witnessed the two deeds as noted above must have been one of the older children and daughter of JAMES who later married, HALE of Hale Corner. When he went to live in Smith Co., Tenn. between 1796 and 1800 he was sixty years or older and his daughters were already married to his neighbor's sons HALE, STRICKLAND, HOWARD and WOMACK.

The first land record in Smith Co. Tenn. indicating the move of the HODGES from Halifax Co. to that area is one recorded on page 97 of Deed Bk. B. and dated Jan. 20, 1800. In it LEMUEL HOGAN Of Halifax Co. N.C. sold to DAVID HODGES of Davidson Co. Tenn. for $300 -- 320 acres of land lying in GENERAL HOGAN'S big survey in Wilson Co. (formerly Sumner) below Caney fork on the South side of the Cumberland River. Wits: JOHN WARD.

After the Revolution land was granted the veterans of that war as payment for their service. GENERAL HOGAN who lost his life in the war was granted 12,000 acres which went to his heirs and LEMUEL HOGAN, Halifax Co. N.C. was his eldest son. The flow of the population westward was prompted by this system and in Tenn. Sumner Co. was created in 1786, from DAVIDSON, WILSON from SUMNER in 1799, and SMITH from SUMNER the same year, later in the year.

We know that JAMES HODGES, father of DAVID, arrived in that neighborhood before Mar. 12, 1802. In fact, he probably came with his sons and their families and we know DAVID was there before the first part of 1800. On the March date cited above, JAMES HODGES, himself of Smith Co., Tenn., bought of ARTHUR HOGAN, son of LEMUEL, 182½ acres in Smith Co., from General JAMES HOGAN'S tract, adj. ARTHUR HOGAN. He paid $182.50 or one dollar per acre and later he sold five acres on the east side of the Mill pond on Hogan's Creek to his sons DAVID and RICHARD.

The first conveyance to his brother WILLIS HODGES, was recorded in 1817.

The will of the subject of this sketch, JAMES HODGES of the Fourth generation, is recorded in Will Bk. 2, p. 124-126, Smith County, Tenn. and is dated Oct. 4, 1813 and was probated August, 1814:

1. Daughter SARAH HALE - negro woman PHEABY and girls JUDE and MELLY, also feather bed and furniture.
2. Daughter MARY STRICKLIN $50.00
3. Son, DAVID, negro girl, BEEDY.

4. Son RICHARD, plantation, feather bed and furniture and negroes, JOHN and ANACA.
5. JAMES HODGES, grandson, son of my son JAMES HODGES, dec'd $50.00 (grandson in N.C.)
Residue to be divided among his children:
6. LYDIA BARUCH or (BOSWELL)
7. WILLIS HODGES
8. ROBERT HODGES
9. ELIZABETH HOWARD
10. CATY WOMACK
Grandson JAMES HODGES, son of RICHARD.
Sons DAVID and RICHARD HODGES excts.
Wits: RICHARD RIZEN and ARTHUR S. HOGAN.

We have only one definite date of birth among JAMES' children and that is of DAVID, born 5 Nov. 1768. SARAH HALE, first named dau. was unmarried in 1789 and again in 1790, when she witnessed grantor deeds made by her father. By estimation, we would place birth at about 1760 - 1766, DAVID having been born 1768. Perhaps JAMES, the deceased son was the oldest child and of the first wife, ELIZABETH. We know that RICHARD, second named son, was younger than DAVID, ROBERT or WILLIS, so evidently JAMES HODGES did not follow the usual pattern of naming his children in order of birth in his will.

His brother WILLIS, born in Norfolk Co. in 1747, died in Smith Co., Tenn., and his will was proved Jan. 1834. At the time of his death he was 87 years old.

In his pension application in 1832 he said that he married LUCY KILLEBREW in Halifax Co. on June 6, 1776. She was still living at the time of his death. Beside her, he names only his daughters: SALLY, ELSY, HANNAH, NANCY and LUCINDA but mentions six daughters without naming the sixth one.

RICHARD HODGES and TARTON WHITLEY were executors. (Will, Bk. 2, p. 118 Smith Co. Tenn.)

Pages were torn from the family Bible and attached to the Pension application as proof of the marriage of WILLIS and LUCY.

The pages, yet readable, prove that WILLIS and LUCY also had WM. HODGES born July 21,1778: SARAH HODGES born Sept. 6, 1783; OLWE born Nov. 9, 1785 and MARTHA born April 19, 1781. SALY of the will is the SARAH of the Bible records and perhaps OLWE and ELSY were meant to be the same or since MARY is named in the sisters will, perhaps both OLLIE and MARTHA are deceased before 1834.

Two of his daughters, SARAH and HANNAH, never married and on Nov. 19, 1857 made identical wills which were also recorded at the same time. They named their sisters: LUCY, MARY PARROTT and NANCY ASHWORTH: their brothers, WILLIAM HODGES, WILLIS HODGES, JAMES HODGES and DAVID HODGES. They made their cousin, DAVID P. HODGES, executor. (Will, Bk. 7, p. 128 Smith Co., Tenn.)

The observation has been made that numerous HODGES in South Carolina have joined the Daughters of the American Rev. on the service of WILLIS HODGES. The fact that he said he lived about ten years in that state and that, though his daughters named his sons, their four brothers, but made a cousin DAVID P. HODGES their executor, indicates that the brothers were probably not near by. They could have married while in South Carolina and remained there when their father and mother moved on to Smith Co., Tenn.

The will of RICHARD HODGES, son of JAMES, and cousin of SARAH and HANNAH HODGES, is recorded in Bk. 7, p. 31 Smith Co., Tenn. He speaks of all his children but he names only his sons, DAVID and ROBERT. We believe that this DAVID HODGES, son of RICHARD, is the cousin, DAVID P. HODGES, named in the wills of HANNAH and SARAH and is proof conclusive that JAMES and WILLIS of Halifax Co., N. C. and Smith Co. Tenn., were brothers and sons of JAMES, SR. of the 1758 will in Pasquotank Co., N.C.

The 1820 census shows only names of the heads of families and the Smith Co. scehdule lists WILLIS, DAVID, and ROBERT HODGES all 45 years and older, but not over 60. These could not have been sons of WILLIS, married in 1776 whose first child WILLIAM was born in 1778 and in 1820 was only 42 years of age. They were the sons of JAMES and were all born before 1775.

RICHARD, to whom he left his plantation, according to this census, was not yet 45 and was therefore the youngest of JAMES HODGES II) sons.

Perhaps the WILLIAM HODGES, with wife age 26-45 and children, was the son of WILLIS and his wife, LUCY.

In the pension applicaiton of WILLIS HODGES, PHILIP POPE gives an affidavit stating that he and WILLIS HODGES were raised in the same neighborhood, were then neighbors and had been acquainted ever since he could remember. He said that he knew WILLIS HODGES during the Rev. War, that he knew he was at Guildford and believed he served as stated in his application form and also believed said HODGES to be a man of truth.

This affidavit, in addition to the initial "P" attached to the name of DAVID HODGES, c/o of SARAH and HANNAH, may be clues to the last name of the mother of DAVID HODGES, son of JAMES II), and JAMES' second wife.

Although all available records in the Court Houses at Halifax and Tarboro, County seats of Halifax and Edgecomb counties, have been searched, the searcher did not have access to the court minutes and orders which might furnish the desired information, concerning the identity of MARY 2nd wife of JAMES HODGES II).

For some reason, we believe that DAVID HODGES, born Nov. 5, 1768 was of the second marriage partly because his birth was 11 months after the Dec. 1767 deed was signed by JAMES HODGES, alone, no wife's signature being attached.

DAVID P. HODGES, who was cousin and executor of the wills of WILLIS HODGE'S two daughters, SARAH and HANNAH, and who must have been the son of RICHARD HODGES, youngest son of JAMES, the only HODGES male shown in Smith Co., Tenn. in 1850 census, could have been named for his uncle DAVID HODGES, who died in 1844 or, if RICHARD and DAVID were full brothers, both sons of the second wife, MARY, then DAVID P. and his Uncle known simply as DAVID HODGES may have both been named for the father of MARY, DAVID P. perhaps POPE.

This is especially probably if JAMES, the deceased son, (and perhaps two of the daughters) were by the first wife, ELIZABETH.

It was usual to name a first son for the husband's father and a second for the wife's. This would have been taken care of in this instance. With daughters, the custom was reverse and according to that system the dau. ELIZABETH would have been the oldest daughter with MARY the second one.

Perhaps SARAH, born no later than 1770 the first daughter of JAMES by his second wife, was named for MARY'S mother or perhaps she was named for SARAH - - - - - the mother of JAMES I) and first positively identified wife of JOSEPH HODGES of Norfolk Co. who would have been the grandmother of JAMES Of Halifax Co., N.C. And Smith Co. Tenn.

There were numerous POPE'S in Halifax and Edgecomb Co. during the period when JAMES II) lived and brought up his family there but from the available records no connection to any of them has been made and there doesn't seem to be a DAVID POPE among them.

A year after Edgecomb Co. was created from Bertie, in 1742, both SAMUEL and ARRON ETHEREDGE were living on Fishing Creek in Edgecomb.

In 1747 JOSEPH LANE of that county bought land on POPES branch of Fishing Creek from WILLIAM ETHEREDGE of Norfolk Co. Va.

WILLIAM ETHEREDGE, in fact all of these of that name, were relatives of the mother of JAMES HODGES II) who was MARY PORTLOCK.

When JAMES HODGES established a final residence in Halifax Co. created from Edgecomb in 1758, it claimed the Southbank of Fishing Creek for one of its borders. No doubt the POPES for whom POPES Branch was named were not far distant.

FIFTH GENERATION

DAVID HODGES, SON OF JAMES II), SON OF JAMES I) SON OF JOSEPH, SON OF ROGER HODGES I)

DAVID HODGES was born Nov. 5, 1768, probably in Halifax Co. and certainly in the Province of North Carolina since his father JAMES HODGES II) moved there in 1764. We believe him to have been the eldest son of JAMES' second wife MARY though of this we have no definite proof. Nor do we have as yet proof of the last name of MARY.

The earliest mention we have of him in his signature on a deed in Halifax Co. N.C.; JAMES and WILLIS HODGES to JAMES SIMMONDS. This deed was dated July 3, 1789 at which time DAVID was four months short of his twenty-first birthday but in his twenty-first year.

On Feb. 14, 1796, JAMES HODGES conveyed to PETER WOMICK of Halifax Co. a tract of 297 acres of land which was bounded - " on one side by an agreed line of marked trees between JAMES HODGES and his son DAVID HODGES (Halifax Co. N.C. Deed Bk. 18, p. 96).

This deed was witnessed by LEMUEL HOGAN and JAMES SIMMONS.

Sometimes between this date and Jan. 20, 1800 DAVID HODGES moved from North Carolina to Tenn.

On the latter date "LEMUEL HOGAN Of Halifax Co. N.C. sold to DAVID HODGES of Davidson Co. Tenn. for $300, 320 acres of land lying in GENERAL HOGANS big survey (12,000 acres) in Wilson Co. formerly Sumner Co., below Caney Fork on the south side of Cumberland River. This deed was witnessed by JOHN WARD, brother-in-law of DAVID HODGES and by ARTHUR S. HOGAN, son of LEMUEL. It was registered on Sept. 15, 1802 in Smith Co. Tenn. after the county was created and this particular tract of land became a part of it. (Smith Co. D. Bk. B. p. 97).

DAVID HODGES married in Halifax Co. N.C. NANCY WARD, daughter of ROBERT WARD, of that county, and his wife MARY who was the daughter of BENJAMINE DICKENS of the same Co. ROBERT WARD'S father was DAVID WARD who resided in Halifax Co. N.C. before moving to Georgetown District in South Carolina.

We have seen that DAVID HODGES was named as a son of JAMES HODGES II) in his will which was probated in Smith Co. August 1814 (Will Bk. 2 - p. 124).

One year later the will of ROBERT WARD was proven in the Smith Co. Court. He names, among other grown children, his daughter, NANCY HODGES, and son JOHN WARD. He named as executors of his estate his son-in-law, DAVID HODGES and WILLIAM LANE.

According to information given to DR. MODENA PETERSON of Jackson, Miss., which was copied from the Bible of DAVID and NANCY HODGES and furnished to DR. PETERSON by MISS MARY CUNNINGHAM, the family of DAVID and NANCY consisted of the following: (Additional data added).

DAVID HODGES b. 5 Nov. 1768 d. 23 of April 1844 at Iuka, Miss., m. NANCY WARD b. 18 Mar. 1771 d. Aug. 4, 1850 at Iuka, Miss. Had Issue:

Their sixth generations children were:

1. MARY HODGES b. 22 July 1793 died Aug. 14, 1850 m. ———————THOMAS.
2. ROBERT HODGES b. 11, Dec. 1795 d. Nov. 1, 1862 at Alton Prison, Ill., which was a Federal Prison and he a Confederate soldier. m. (1) BETTY, m. (2) SUSANNAH both daughters of BERRYMAN TURNER.
3. JOHN W. HODGES b. 23 April 1801 Smith Co. Tenn. d. Jackson Co., Texas April 17, 1858; m. (1) in Ala., TALITHA ANN MORTON; m. (2) in Texas, SUSAN MENEFEE.
4. DAVID HODGES, JR., b. 8 July 1804 in Smith Co. Tenn. d. 22 Dec. 1872, m. MARY ANN CUSSACK.
5. NANCY HODGES, b. 1806 in Smith Co. Tenn. m. JOHN TURNER.
6. MIRANDE HODGES m. ———————TALBOT.
7. RICHARD HODGES m. NANCY POWELL.
8. EUSIBA HODGES m. ———————THOMPSON.
9. ELIZABETH HODGES m. ———————JARRETT.
10. BENJAMINE HODGES m. AMANDA TERRY.

This information does not agree with the 1790 census of Halifax Co. N.C. which lists DAVID HODGES as the head of a family with one male over 16 and under 26 which would be himself. Another 10-16 and one under 6. Of females there were also three; one in the same age bracket with DAVID and two under six.

Perhaps the Bible records ommitted children deceased as infants born before 1790. Or more likely the tax-list used for this particular so-called census was one later than 1790.

The 1790 and 1800 census of the newly emerged United States were burned when the British took Washington, D.C. during the War of 1812, so our 1790 census is in reality a review of tax lists of approximately that date. In 1790 DAVID HODGES b. 5 Nov. 1768 would have been of age and perhaps had been given the piece of land adjoining his father which is referred to in a 1796 deed from JAMES HODGES to PETER WORMICK.

However, it is improbable that, even though he was married at that time, that he had fathered three small children when he was 21 and his wife 19 years of age, even though we account for the male over 10 but under sixteen, as a brother. We still have to discredit the Bible and other later records, if we accept that theory.

It is possible that these extra persons were visiting relatives or it is also possible that he, as owner, was taxed for the land on which another family lived.

The Bible record and the 1820 census of Smith Co., Tenn. agree exactly as to ages, giving the birth of the first child as of 1793, so perhaps DAVID HODGES was not even married in 1790.

Whatever the mixup, we believe that this tax was levied on the property of DAVID, son of JAMES II)

Census Records even in the early decades of the twentieth century are sadly inaccurate.

The 1820 census of Smith Co. Tenn., enumerates DAVID HODGES, WILLIS HODGES, THOMAS HODGES (a young man) ROBERT HODGES, WILLIAM HODGES and wife 26 to 45, and RICHARD HODGES, all on page 17 of that County Census schedule.

In the family of DAVID HODGES, apparently as yet unbroken by marriage, we find beside the head of the family then 52 years of age, 2 males 18 to 26, one of whom was ROBERT, and the other JOHN W. then 19 years old; 1 male 16 to 18 who was DAVID, JR. b. 1804; 1 male 10-16 who was evidently RICHARD and 1 male under 10 who was BENJAMINE the last named of DAVID'S children.

The females in his family were: 1-45 years and up which would have been his wife NANCY then 49; one female 16 to 26 evidently MARY who would not be 27 years old until after July 22 of that year; 2 females 10 to 16 which would have included NANCY then fourteen and probably MIRANDE who married TALBOT; and fi nally two daughers under 10 years of age who were evidently ELIZABETH and EUSIBA.

We do not know the Church affiliation of the first generation of HODGES in America though we know they were closely associated with some of the most prominent Quaker families of their day, - BRACIE, LAMB, BENNETT,

and possibly POPES; but we do know that DAVID HODGES was a Methodist Minister effective enough in his ministry to be included in JOHN B. McFERRIN'S History of Methodism in Tennessee, from whom we quote:

"Among the worthy local preachers the name of DAVID HODGES deserves to be held in remembrance. He lived for many years in Smith County where his house was a preaching-place. When the beautiful valley south of the Tennessee River was purchased from the Indians, and brought into market, MR. HODGES removed to Franklin Co. Ala., and located 10 miles east of Tuscumbia. He opened his house again for the gosple and his residence was one of the preaching-places in the first circuit the author ever traveled. MR. HODGES was a plain, deeply pious, unpretending man, whose example was a beautiful exhibition of Christian life. He brought up, in the fear of the Lord, a large family of sons and daughters who followed in the footsteps of their pious parents. Several of his sons became prominent members of the Church and reflected much credit upon those who supervised their religious training. His children and grandchildren are ornaments to the Church."

Before he left Smith Co. evidently in 1823, DAVID HODGES sold to THOMAS HALE, RICHARD HODGES, SAML B. CRUTCHFIELD, ROBERT HODGES and JAMES DENTON (trustees) "a small tract of land on the south side of Cumberland River for $5 with the stipulation that its only use and benefit be of the Methodist Episcopal Church which was to have free access to the spring that is convenient to the ground whereon the meeting house now stands." (Deed Bk. H. p. 26) dated Dec. 15, 1822 and recorded Feb. Court 1823.

DAVID HODGES evidently was taking steps to further the growth and influence of the Church which he had served in this community and which was still to serve his large connection of relatives remaining there.

The last reference to DAVID HODGES recorded in Smith Co. was on the same page with the deed above and was a conveyance dated Feb. 3, 1823, in which he deeded to DAVID DOUGLASS for $1625, 333 acres in General HOGAN'S large survey. This was his home plantation and the land he had bought from LEMUEL HOGAN of Halifax Co. N.C. in 1800.

Unfortunately the County records of Franklin Co. Alabama were burned years ago and except for Bible Records and Federal Census the events that happened to the HODGES while they lived there would be lost to posterity.

The household of DAVID HODGES is recorded on page 60 of the 1830 Census of Franklin Co., Ala. and lists in his family; one male 60 - 70 which was DAVID, SR., himself, then 62, and one male 10-15 which we believe to have been BENJAMINE; one female 50-60 which was his wife, NANCY, nearing sixty, one female 30-40 which we believe was his daughter MARY still living at home, and two females 15-20 which according to the order of listing by family historians would have been the daughters EUSIBA and ELIZABETH.

His son JOHN W. HODGES is listed on page 65 of the same schedule with two males 20-30 which would have been JOHN W. who passed his 29 birthday in April of 1830 and perhaps his brother RICHARD not listed in the family of his father, DAVID, one female 20-30 which was TALITHA ANN, wife of JOHN W. then 24 years of age. It also lists two males under five years which fixes the date of this census as later than July 4, 1830, on which date QUIN MORTON HODGES the second son of JOHN W. and his wife, TALITHA ANN MORTON, was born.

In the Franklin Co. census of that year, were also enumerated the families of QUIN MORTON, JOHN W. HODGES' father-in-law and GEORGE SUTHERLAND whose youngest son, THOMAS, would marry in Texas, HODGES oldest daughter, MARY ELIZABETH not born until 1832.

The family of JOHN W. HODGES will constitute our sixth generation and will be the subject of the next chapter but the families of DAVID'S other children will be included here with that of their father.

The original plantation of the Rev. DAVID HODGES in Miss. where he moved before 1844, was in Tishamingo Co. but was later cut off in Prentiss Co. There DAVID HODGES and his wife, NANCY WARD HODGES and their daughter MARY THOMAS are buried in a one half acre plot reserved when the plantation was sold. This is near Iuka, Miss.

The tombstones there were photographed by MARY HARRELL STANCLIFF and give the exact dates of birth and deaths for DAVID and his wife NANCY which are given in the Bible records of the family.

The DAVID HODGES, JR. Bible has been preserved and is now in the possession of MRS. HENRY TAYLOR of Waco, Texas, a descendant of his youngest daughter, MARY ELIZ., who married JOSEPH EVANS CARY. (1959)

In it, beside the records of the marriages, births and deaths of the family of DAVID JUNIOR and his wife, MARY ANN CUSACK, and of some of their slaves, there are other items of interest and importance.

The deaths of DAVID HODGES SR., and his wife NANCY are recorded with dates as stated previously in this chapter.

PRISCILLA CUSAK, mother of MARY ANN HODGES,died in Sumpter Co. Ala. Oct., 1836.

JOHN CHRISTOPHER CUSACK the only brother of MARY ANN died at same place and month.

MARY THOMAS (alias) HODGES died Aug. 14, 1850. This was the eldest daughter of DAVID, SR.

MARTHA E. STODDARD, the sister of MARY HODGES, died in Mobile, Ala. 19 Sept. 1858.

JOHN W. HODGES bro. died near Goliad, Texas 21st of April 1858 aged 58 (should be 57) This date is evidently the date of the letter which brought word of his death. The family Bible of JOHN W, HODGES gives the date of his death as April 17, 1858.

REUBEN a negro child born to LITTLE HANNAH 28 of Dec. 1842 and baptised Sunday 19th of August 1843 by REV. FENICK P. SCRUGGS.

ALBINIA a negro girl died May 10, 1844 aged 12 years.

I DAVID HODGES JUNIOR born 8 July 1804 in Smith Co. Tenn., died Dec. 22, 1872; m. Feb. 20, 1834, MARY ANN CUSSACK, daughter of THOMAS CUSACK of Sumner Co. d. Oct. 9, 1871 less than a year after the death of her father who died 7th Dec. 1870.

SEVENTH GENERATION children of DAVID, JR. and MARY ANN HODGES.

1. THOMAS CUSACK HODGES was born near La Grange Ala. Jan. 29, 1836; was baptised by PROF. WM. H. ELLISON of La Grange College.
2. JOHN CHRISTOPHER HODGES was born at Tuscumbia Ala., 21 of July 1837; was baptised by LITTLETON FOWLER on his way as missionary to Texas, Oct. 1837; m. July 15, 1862 to TEMPTY S. ROBINSON.
3. MARTHA HODGES, b. Jan. 1, 1840; baptised Aug. 19, 1843 by REV. FINISH P. SCRUGGS, m. Sept. 2, 1866 JAMES R. BRIM.
4. DAVID HODGES, son of DAVID and MARY ANN HODGES, b. Feb. 15, 1842; bapt. Sunday, August 19, 1843 by REV. SCRUGGS; died a prisoner of War at Indianapolis, Ind. 28 Feb. 1862; captured at Fort Donelson 16 Feb. 1862.
5. ROBERT PATRICK HODGES was born 15 Dec. 1844, Tishamingo Co.; d. Feb. 9, 1845 aged 8 weeks.
6. BENJAMINE HODGES b. 20th Jan. 1846 Tishamingo Co. Miss; Bapt ——— d. Sunday 26 July 1868; entered Confederate Army April, 1861, served until Aug. 18, 1864; then fell on Battlefield wounded before Petersburg, Virginia, Death caused by Newmonia; buried at Soldiers Cemetery Iuka, Miss.
7. ELIZABETH JARETT HODGES, b. Feb. 3, 1848; bapt. by REV. ROBERT MARTIN 1850; m. 26 May 1867 to LEONIDAS PARKER of Rienzi, Miss.
8. ANN PRISCILLA HODGES, b. 25 Dec. 1849; bapt. by REV. ROBERT MARTIN 1850; m. Nov. 23, 1876 S. R. WILKINSON.
9. RICHARD ANTHONY QUITMAN HODGES, b. Dec. 17, 1852; bapt. Aug. 17, 1853, by REV. MR. MILLUM; d. Dec. 2, 1854.
10. MARY ELIZA HODGES, b. Aug. 16, 1855, bapt. by REV. J. PINER 1856; m. Dec. 16, 1880 in McClelan Co. Texas to JOSEPH E. CARY.
11. JAMES HODGES infant was born 11 March 1859 and died at birth.

Of the six sons of DAVID HODGES, JR. and his wife MARY ANN whose births are recorded in this Bible only JOHN CHRISTOPHER'S marriage is also recorded.

One son TELIN, for some reason, was omitted from this record. We know that there was such a son, twin to THOMAS CUSACK HODGES from the 1850 census of Tishamingo Co. Miss which lists the family of DAVID HODGES aged 42 farmer born in Tenn. and his wife MARY aged 36 born in S.C. as follows:

THOMAS HODGES aged 12, born in Ala.
TELIN HODGES aged 12, born in Ala.
DAVID HODGES aged 7, born in Ala.
BENJ. HODGES aged 5, born in Miss.
ELIZABETH aged 2, born in Miss.
ANN aged 2 born in Miss.
NANCY HODGES 78 born in North Carolina

The age of ANN is recorded improperly. She was less than one year of age.

NANCY HODGES, 78, is evidently, the widow of DAVID HODGES, SR. who died April 1844 shortly after he removed from Ala. to Miss.

II. ROBERT HODGES, the eldest son of DAVID HODGES, SR. and his wife, NANCY WARD, was born 11 Dec. 1795; died, a Confederate soldier, 1 Nov. 1862 in a Federal Prison in Illinois; m. (1) SUSANNAH TURNER; m. (2) ELIZABETH TURNER, both daughters of BERRYMAN TURNER. Had issue:

1. BERRYMAN HODGES, son of SUSANNAH;
2. SUSANNAH HODGES, b. Feb. 1822; m. COL. R. C. CLARK of Vernona, Miss.;
3. ROBERT SHATTUCK HODGES, of ELIZABETH b. July 1830 m. LOUISA A. SOUTHALL of Allsboro, Ala. in 1853; had issue:
   (1) PAUL HODGES, b. 2 June 1861 at Cartersville, Miss. became a lawyer
   (2) WALTER A. HODGES.
   (3) ROBERT S. HODGES, JR.
   (4) BLANCHE HODGES m. HARVEY HUGHES of Meridian.

Eighth generation descendants of DAVID HODGES, JR. and his wife, MARY ANN CUSSOCK, their grandchildren and later generations:

I. JOHN CHRISTOPHER HODGES m. TEMPIE ROBINSON, b. Feb. 1840, d. 1914, JOHN C. d. 12 May 1878. Issue:

1. JAMES HODGES b. 27 Aug. 1863 in Tishamingo Co., Miss.; d. 30 June 1930.
2. JOHN L. HODGES b. 26 Mar. 1865; d. 23 Dec. 1884.
3. SIDNEY E. HODGES, b. 10 Nov. 1866.
4. EMMA E. HODGES, b. 3 Dec. 1868; d. 31 Jan. 1888.
5. CORA HODGES, b. 27 Sept. 1878.
6. REUBEN HODGES, b. 27 Sept. 1878.

II. MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, dau. of DAVID HODGES, JR., m. at Robinson, Texas 16 Dec. 1880, JOSEPH EVANS CARY b. 28 Sept. 1857 d. 18 Feb. 1919. Had Issue:

1. JOHN LEE CARY b. 16 Dec. 1881; m. 22 Nov. 1905 MATTIE ALBERTA MOORE and had:
2. (1) DORA MAE CARY b. 2 Sept. 1906; m. 17 Feb. 1939 R.H. PERRY; m. (2) 2 July 1955 B.O. HERRING.
   (2) JOHN MILTON CARY b. 29 Nov. 1909; d. 8 May 1910.
   (3) HOWARD JOSHUA CARY b. 21 Nov. 1911; d. 10 Jan. 1949; m. Jan. 1938 LOUDELL GOODARD. Issue:
      A. CLAUD PERRY CARY, b. 19 Oct. 1938; B. MARTHA JO CARY, b. 9 July 1945.
   (4) PERRY EVANS CARY b. 9 Nov. 1913; m. 9 Sept. 1938 EVELYN STOCKWELL. Issue:
      A. SHIRLEY ANN CARY b. 4 May 1940; B. JOHN RICHARD CARY b. 9 Jan. 1948; C. ROBERT MICHAEL CARY b. 30 Nov. 1952; D. PHILLIP ALLEN CARY b. 22 Aug. 1954.
   (5) JOSEPHINE ALBERTA CARY b. 1 April 1918; m. 1 Aug. 1956 DALE TYLER and had:
      A. FRANCES JEANNE TYLER, b. 22 April 1957.
   (6) FRANCES CLARANELL CARY b. 21 Nov. 1922; m. 28 Feb.1942 BEN SHERMAN, JR.

2.and3. CALVIN and WILLIE CARY, twins, b. 14 April 1885; d. 3 May 1885.

4. BESSIE PRISCILLA CARY b. 7 May 1887; m. 8 Dec. 1909 ROBERT TAYLOR HOBBS d. 3 June 1955. Issue:
   (1) CARY ALEXANDER HOBBS, b. 11 Dec. 1910; m. 9 Sept. 1928 HAZEL WHITLOW. Issue:
      A. CLAUD CARY HOBBS, b. 18 Dec. 1935; B. CLYDE PERRY HOBBS, b. 18 Dec. 1935.
   (2) LULA BESS HOBBS, b. 27 Aug. 1913; m. 20 Sept. 1932 KELLY LEE SIMONS. Issue:
      A. ROBERT KELLY SIMONS, b. 20 July 1934; m. 20 June 1953 MARY JANE JOHNSON. Issue:
         (a) KYLE SCOTT SIMONS b. 22 Mar. 1957.
   (3) ROY HOBBS, b. 24 Feb. 1918; m. 18 Aug. 1940, IDA MAE KOLBE. Issue:
      A. JAMES ROY HOBBS b. 12 Mar. 1943; B. PHILLIP JAY HOBBS, b. 3 June 1948.
   (4) ROBERT LEE HOBBS, b. 13 June 1915; m. 23 Dec. 1939 MAXINE COMPTON. Issue:
      A. GARY HOBBS, b. 20 Dec. 1940; B. PRISCILLA HOBBS, b. 30 Dec. 1943.
   (5) CHARLES TAYLOR HOBBS, b. 30 Nov. 1928; m. 29 Oct. 1949 HAZEL NEHRING. Issue:
      A. GREGORY TAYLOR HOBBS, b. 18 Sept. 1951; B. CHAS. BOYD HOBBS, b. 22 Nov. 1956.
   (6) JAMES PHILLIP HOBBS, b. 24 Dec. 1923; m. 5 Aug. 1950 CHARLOTTE CLEMENTS.

5. FANNIE CARY m. 16 Nov. 1913, R. M. WOODWARD. Issue:
   (1) CECIL EVANS WOODWARD, b. 14 April 1918; m. 8 June 1943 IRMA MAE LAWLER. Issue:
      A. PAULA ANN WOODWARD, b. 6 July 1944; B. HAYDEN EVANS WOODWARD, b. 21 July 1949.
   (2) MARY FRANCES WOODWARD, b. 31 May 1925; m. 27 Jan. 1952 CECIL A. NEWTON. Issue:
      A. PATRICIA FRANCES NEWTON, b. Feb. 1959.
   (3) JOE CARY WOODWARD, b. 29 Sept. 1932; m. 2 May 1953 CARLINE ELIZABETH KLENT. Issue:
      A. ROBYN DALE WOODWARD, b. 5 April 1955;
      B. RHODIE CARL WOODWARD, b. 3 Sept. 1957;
      C. CHAS. CARY WOODWARD, b. 3 Sept. 1958;

6. and 7. MARY and DAVID CARY, twins, b. 6 Feb. 1892; died at birth.

8. CASSIE CARY b. 16 Dec. 1892; m. 23 July 1911, WM. HENRY TAYLOR. Issue:
   (1) MARY ALICE TAYLOR, b. 10 Jan. 1914; m. 31 Oct. 1933 MELVIN BAKER. Issue:
      A. DOROTHY ROSE BAKER, b. 12 Dec. 1935; m. 28 May 1955 C. B. REEVES. Issue:
         (a) SHERYL ANNETTE REEVES, b. 20 July 1956.
         (b) MARY CAROL REEVES, b. 23 Nov. 1957;
      B. MARTHA EVELYN BAKER, b. 5 Mar. 1943.
      C. ROBERT JACKSON BAKER, b. 17 Mar. 1952.

(2) JOSEPH THOMAS TAYLOR b. 12 Nov. 1921; m. 3 July 1943 WILLIE MAVIS McCROW; d. 21 April 1944 in Yougoslavia in service of U.S.
(3) ROSALIE TAYLOR, b. 2 Feb. 1925; m. 23 May 1949 WILLIAM E. MORGAN. Issue:
A. Infant dau. died at birth 20 Oct. 1952.
B. WM. CARL MORGAN, JR' b. 21 Nov. 1954.
C. MARSHA K. MORGAN, b. 6 Feb. 1957.

9. LULA CARY b. 3 Mar. 1895; died at birth.
10. JOSIE ADELINE CARY, b. 19 Oct. 1896; m. 11 Mar. 1919 JAMES EDWARD DAVIS. Issue:
(1) MARY ELEANOR DAVIS, b. 30 May 1920; m. 13 Nov. 1948 ROBERT FAIRFIELD. Issue:
A. MARY JOYCE FAIRFIELD, b. 11 Sept. 1949;
B. ROBERTA SUE FAIRFIELD, b. 9 July 1953.
(2) EDITH JANE DAVIS, b. 10 July 1922; m. 14 Mar. 1942 WALTER R. HOLZMAN. Issue:
A. MARY ANN HOLZMAN' b. 20 June 1944;
B. NANCY JANE HOLZMAN, b. 1 April 1945;
C. WALTER RICHARD HOLZMAN, b. 20 Oct. 1949.
(3) ANNIE LAURIE DAVIS, b. 6 July 1924; m. 15 Sept. 1953 PHILIP THEODORE SMITH. Issue:
A. PHILIP THEODORE SMITH, JR. b. 19 Sept. 1954;
B. JAMES EVERETTE SMITH, b. 27 Nov. 1956.
(4) JAMES WILMER DAVIS, b. 11 Nov. 1926; m. 28 Mar. 1958, BARBARA ANN ESTES. Issue:
A. KATHLEEN DIANE DAVIS, b. 2 Feb. 1959.

11, and 12, Infant twin sons of JOSEPH EVANS CARY and MARY ELIZA HODGES, b. 14 May 1899; died birth, unnamed.

HODGES
SIXTH AND LATER GENERATIONS

JOHN WYLIE HODGES, SON OF DAVID, SR., SON OF JAMES, JR., SON OF JAMES, SR. SON OF JOSEPH, SON OF ROGER I)

JOHN W. HODGES, born in Smith Co. Tenn., April 23, 1801, shortly after his parents and grandparents, had moved there from Halifax Co. N.C., was to follow their pioneering example in settling on two early frontiers. He had just reached manhood when he moved with his parents, DAVID HODGES, SR., and his wife, NANCY WARD, to the newly opened Indian cession in Northern Alabama. Later he was to move on to Texas shortly after that Republic had gained its independence from Mexico.

In Alabama, the HODGES found themselves in a cosmopolitan population made up of people from all over the South, who had converged there to take advantage of the new and cheap land then available after its recent purchase from the Indians who had occupied it. Many of these newcomers, like the HODGES, were recently of Tennessee.

This was true of GEORGE and JOHN SUTHERLAND, THOMAS and WM. MANIFEE and QUIN MORTON who were all earlier of Knox, then Anderson Co., Tennessee.

QUIN MORTON, like JOHN W.'s father, DAVID HODGES, SR., was a Methodist preacher and it was no doubt at "preaching" that he met and came to admire MORTON'S eldest daughter, TALITHA ANN, who was to become his future wife.

JOHN W. HODGES must have felt that he expressed himself better on paper than in person, since the delicate task of asking for the hand of his future wife, he entrusted to a written proposal. This letter is now in the possession of MRS. AGNES FANT RAMSEY of Dallas, Texas who has allowed it to be copied.

"May 10, 1827

Mifs. T. For sometime I have had a wish to express to you the secret of my heart and mind. It is my wish to have the liberty of paying my best address to you in the way of matrimony. It is a subject, I have well considered and no time has been spared in deliberate reflection.

I am sure you have the assendency with myself as it respects all that is good and great. You, I have chosen from the world, why?, because I love you best of all the fair sex. It's sometimes common for a man to use flattery in matters of this kind. But in this case I do think it is entirely unnecessary for I believes you to be a lady of too much good sence for anything of this kind to have any influence with you. Therefour, I shall act as plain as a child of nature - my wish is to get a wife and from the acquaintance I have with you, I must say

that I am very much pleased with your manners and also your person and moreover I think I should be a happy man if I should be so fortunate as to please you in this solem matter.

This is a subject that is frequently treated with indifference by some people who go to work without considering their own judgements.

But may I say without inter - I think that we have arrived throu years which will enable us to form an opinion and that correctly.

This I have riten in a great hurry this evening. In case I should not have an oportunity of talking with you,I take this method by proxey by a way of introducing the subject this you will have for reflection until next - - -

I am truly a lover and friend.

J. W. HODGES"

A similar letter of proposal was written to HODGES second wife, SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE, from Egypt, Texas, Aug. 30, 1840. It expresses much the same thought in much the same way, but the mature man is smoother both as to words and penmanship.

With the county records of Franklin Co. Ala. destroyed, we have only a fragmentary account of the activities of JOHN W. HODGES during his residence there, but we do know that in his early thirties, before he came to Texas, he served as trustee of La Grange College.

This college which was located at Mountain Spring Camp Ground, was an early Methodist school. It was later moved from the mountain to Florence, Ala. and is today a state Teacher's College there. Originally it was located about 4 miles southwest of present day Leighton, Ala. about 10 miles east of Tuscumbia in what is now Colbert Co., Ala.

In Texas he settled among or near his old neighbors of Ala. One of them was GEORGE SUTHERLAND whose sister, ELIZABETH, was the mother of HODGES' wife, TALITHA ANN.

On May 16, 1839, JOHN W. HODGES received certificate No. 20 for 640 a. of land in Goliad Co. (Texas Land Office). However, he did not settle in Goliad Co. when he first arrived in Texas, but in Colorado Co. near Egypt.

The 1850 Census of Goliad Co. Texas, lists the children of JOHN W. HODGES by name and gives the state in which they were born. It shows that SUSANNAH ANDERSON or SUSAN A. HODGES was born in Ala.

Since the family Bible gives the date of her birth as May 14, 1836, we are safe in saying that HODGES moved from Ala. to Texas 1836-1839.

He probably was required to have residence of some duration in the republic before he received the certificate for 640 acres in Goliad Co.

Before he left Colorado Co. he was to lose his first wife TALITHA ANN, who died Oct. 1, 1839 and their last child who was named for her mother, on Aug. 18, 1840.

From Colorado Co. he moved to Jackson Co., Texas, seat of the SUTHERLAND and MENEFEE families, where he married SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE, dau. of THOMAS MENEFEE and his late wife, LUCY SUTHERLAND, and first cousin of his first wife TALITHA ANN MORTON.

It was 1847 before he was to occupy the Goliad property according to the letter written by his wife's uncle JOHN SUTHERLAND, on Dec. 13, 1846, from Wharton, Texas, to his son-in-law and his daughter, SARAH, who were living in Tenn. This letter quoted elsewhere in this volume, states that when HODGES moved from Jackson to Goliad Co., he was accompanied by his brothers-in-law, HILL and PECK, who had also married daughters of THOMAS MENEFEE.

Dr. J. W. DE VILLBIS, an early Methodist minister in Texas, wrote in his diary as follows, concerning JOHN W. HODGES:

"At our first quarterly meeting we had a gracious outpouring of the spirit. Among the converts were the two daughters of that good man Col. Hodges who most of our old preachers knew. His eldest daughter familiarly known as "Puss" subsequently married Mr. Thomas Sutherland and died a few years ago, triumphantly in the faith of the gosple. The younger called "Duck" married Mr. Bell of Goliad."

These daughters of JOHN W. HODGES were MARY ELIZABETH and SUSANNAH the only living daughters of his first wife, TALITHA ANN MORTON.

The JOHN W. HODGES Bible is now in the possession of MRS. AGNES FANT RAMSEY of Dallas, Texas, his granddaughter.

From it, we have compiled the following record of his family:

JOHN W. HODGES, b. April 23, 1801, Smith Co. Tenn., d. April 17, 1858, Jackson Co. Texas; m. (1) Oct. 11 1827 in Franklin Co. Ala., TALITHA ANN MORTON; b. Aug. 5, 1806 in Tenn.; d. Oct. 1, 1839 at Egypt, Texas; m. (2) Oct. 7, 1841 SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE, b. June 13, 1817, in Tenn; d. Mar. 13, 1893 in Goliad, Texas.

Issue of 1st marriage to TALITHA ANN MORTON.

1. DAVID WILEY HODGES, b. Jan. 1, 1829, m. June 1856 OPHELIA C. LOTT - Had one son who never married.
2. QUIN MORTON HODGES, b. July 4, 1830, d. Feb. 11, 1832.
3. MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, b. April 8, 1832, d. Jan. 9, 1872, m. Jan. 27, 1848 THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND; b. 2 Nov. 1820 in Ala. d. 4 April 1900, Jackson Co. Texas.
4. JOHN SUTHERLAND HODGES, b. Aug. 28, 1834; m. Oct. 23, 1861 SARAH B. PETTUS; b. 2 Aug. 1842;
5. SUSANNAH ANDERSON HODGES, b. May 14, 1836, m. Sept. 6, 1855, GEORGE W. BELL, b. Dec. 25, 1834, d. Dec. 27, 1891.
6. TALITHA ANN HODGES, b. June 24, 1839, d. Aug. 18, 1840 or 1841.

Issue of second marriage to SUSAN L. MENEFEE.

7. LUCY ANN HODGES, b. Nov. 5, 1844 m. Sept. 1865 DILLARD FANT.
8. WM. DEPRIEST HODGES, b. July 1846.
9. ROBERT WARD HODGES, b. Feb. 8, 1848; m. April 9, 1868, MARTHA WORDLY.
10. THOMAS MENEFEE HODGES, b. Aug. 30, 1849, m. Mar. 30, 1871 SALLY MAY LOYLESS. (Moved to Junction, Texas. Counted among their descendants, triplett daus.
11. FRANCES MARANDA HODGES, b. Jan. 1, 1851, m. May 29, 1868 N. L. WORD.
12. AGNES SHELTON HODGES, b. Dec. 7, 1852 m. EUGENE DAVIS.
13. GEORGE PIERCE HODGES, b. April 1856.

The The obituary of COL. JOHN W. HODGES appeared in the June 1, 1858 issue of the "Texas Christian Advocate" a copy of which is now in the possession of AGNES FANT RAMSEY, granddaughter of JOHN W. HODGES and is hereafter quoted:

"OBITUARIES

COL. JOHN W' HODGES -- At the residence of his son-in-law, MR. SUTHERLAND, on the 17th of April, 1858, in Jackson county, Texas, after a painful illness of six days. Though it fell to his lot to die from home, still his last days were cheered by the presence and constant attention of his devoted wife and two married daughters, together with the best medical aid which the country could afford. When the solemn summons came, Brother HODGES was ready to depart, and be with Christ. The REV. JESSEE HORD, an intimate and long-time friend of his, happened to be passing through the neighborhood, and hearing of the Colonel's sickness, called to see him on the morning of the day on which he died. He found him entirely rational, calm and collected. In the conversing on the subject of his preparedness to meet God, he remarked, "I thank God that I have not deferred a preparation to meet Him, to a dying bed, when my sufferings are so great, but it has been a life-time business with me, and I have nothing to fear; I am ready."

He was born in Smith county, Tennessee, on the 23rd day of April 1801, being at the time of his demise, fifty-seven years of age, lacking six days. He joined the Methodist Episcopal Church, in the days of his youth, and was for more than forty years a consistent Christian -- the greater part of that time filling the offices of class leader and steward, with great acceptability and usefulness. He was, also, the friend and patron of education, and for a series of years during his residence in North Alabama, served as a Trustee of Lagrange College, and at the time of his death, was one of the most efficient Trustees of Paine Female Institute, located at Goliad, Texas. His house was ever the welcome and hospitable retreat of the weary Itinerant, and few men took greater delight in the society of ministers than did Brother H. as doubtless many traveling preachers in Tennessee, Alabama, and Texas can bear witness.

In the death of COL. HODGES, his family has sustained a loss which time cannot repair. Goliad county has lost one of its oldest and most estimable citizens, and the Church in the bounds of the Goliad Circuit, has been deprived of one of its best and most useful members; but we doubt not our loss is his eteranl gain. May all relations and acquaintances strive to follow his godly example, and meet him in Heaven."

A.F. COX

It seems that JOHN W. HODGES was ever interested in education. His grand daughter, the late MRS. HENRY BAILEY Of Rockport, Texas, who was the daughter of JOHN SUTHERLAND HODGES, is authority for the statement that he was President of Arimather College and Clerk of Goliad Co. after he moved there in 1846.

The records of Goliad Co. in Texas like those of Franklin Co. Ala. have been destroyed by fire.

In "Trail Drivers of Texas" by HUNTER, JOHN W. HODGES is spoken of as Col. JACK HODGES, who was a prominent Texan and who won distinction in the war with Mexico.

In the same volume, his son THOMAS MENEFEE HODGES gives a brief account of his own life, in which he tells of the family's moving to Goliad and of his father's increasing his herd of cattle until he had one of the largest in that section.

By his second marriage, when he died in 1858, JOHN W. HODGES left a family of young children, the oldest of whom was LUCY, aged fourteen and the youngest GEORGE PIERCE aged two years.

JOHN WILEY HODGES was buried in the family cemetery of his son-in-law, THOS. S. SUTHERLAND, of Jackson Co. Texas. When SUTHERLAND wrote his will he provided for this cemetery said - - "I direct that one acre of land around my family burying ground be surveyed off by my executors here after named, which said acre of land I hereby give and bequeath to the heirs of my father and mother, GEORGE and FRANCES SUTHERLAND, deceased, as a family graveyard. I further direct that the graves of myself and my family including the grave of my father-in-law, Col. HODGES be enclosed with an iron fence." (1900 will recorded in Jackson Co. Texas).

The portion of the GEORGE SUTHERLAND league of land on which this cemetery is located was sold shortly after April 1900 in settling the estate of THOMAS S. SUTHERLAND, SR. but has recently (1966) been purchased by two of the descendants of GEORGE and FRANCES SUTHERLAND, MR. PAT WELLS and MR. SAM GAYLE of Edna. Texas.

In this volume in subsequent generations only the descendants of JOHN W. HODGES will be included under the HODGES name.

The seventh generation, composed of his children, has been recorded above. Eighth and later generations follow.

HODGES
EIGHTH GENERATION

The grandchildren of JOHN W. HODGES and his two wives, (1) TALITHA ANN MORTON, dau. of QUIN MORTON and his wife, ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND: (2) SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE dau. of Thos. Menefee and his wife, LUCY SUTHERLAND, both daughters of JOHN SUTHERLAND I) and his wife, AGNES SHELTON.

I. Children of MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, dau. of JOHN W' and TALITHA ANN MORTON HODGES and her husband, THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I).

1. TALITHA MORTON SUTHERLAND; b. Mar. 30, 1849; d. Feb. 27, 1934 in Houston, Texas; m. Mar. 6, 1873 at "Springhill" in Jackson Co., FRANCIS MENEFEE WHITE, JR., son of FRANCIS MENEFEE WHITE I) and MARGARETTE ANN SEALY.
2. FRANCES MENEFEE SUTHERLAND; b. July 6, 1850; d. Aug 17, 1896; m. Mar. 6, 1873 LUCKY F. WELLS, son of DR. FRANCIS FLOURNOY WELLS and his wife, MARTHA McNUTT of Texana.
3. MARTHA ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND; b. Jan. 27, 1852; d. Jan. 13, 1876; m. Sept. 10, 1873 DR. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS, son of DR. F. F. WELLS.
4. GEORGE SUTHERLAND; b. Nov. 27, 1853; d. May 23, 1908; never married.
5. SON; b. Nov. 1, 1855; d. Mar. 6, 1857.
6. JOHN WILEY SUTHERLAND; b. Feb. 5, 1857; d. Oct. 14, 1897; never married.
7. MARY HODGES SUTHERLAND; b. Mar. 9, 1859; d. Oct. 14, 1934 at Austin; m. (1) Nov. 4, 1883 DR. ROBERT WILLIAMSON WELLS, former husband of her deceased sister, MARTHA ELIZABETH; m. (2) ROBERT MERCER CROCKETT'
8. THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND II); b. Feb. 27, 1861 at "Springhill" d. May 3, 1923 at Salado, Texas; m. Dec. 9, 1885 LAURA L. ROGERS; dau. of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his wife, MARY EVELYN EVANS, b. Dec. 24, 1868; d. Mar. 12, 1932 at Houston, Texas; both buried at Belton, Texas.
9. FLORENCE GAYLE SUTHERLAND; b. Feb. 4, 1863; d. June 5, 1866.
10. WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND; b. Mar. 26, 1865; d. Sept. 10, 1937; m. Dec. 8, 1889 EMMA ROGERS, sister of LAURA L. who married his brother, THOMAS.
11. ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND; b. April 15, 1867; d. Nov. 17, 1911 at Uvalde, Texas; m. Oct. 21, 1891 MINNIE ROGERS, sister of the wives of his two brothers.
12. LILLIAN BELL SUTHERLAND; b. April 19, 1869; d. Dec. 2, 1952; m. (1) Jan. 11, 1894 H. B. DICKSON, sheriff of Wharton Co., he died within a month; m. (2) Oct. 18, 1898 EDWARD LEE FAIRES; d. Sept. 3, 1953; no issue.

Family Bible of T. S. SUTHERLAND I) and his wife MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, which is now in possession of T. S. SUTHERLAND IV) in Austin, Texas.

Further records of the descendants of this family can be found in the eighth, ninth, and tenth generation of the SUTHERLAND family.

II. Children of JOHN SUTHERLAND HODGES and his wife, SARAH B. PETTUS. (JOHN SUTHERLAND HODGES was son of TALITHA ANN MORTON, and her husband, JOHN W. HODGES.) JOHN SUTHERLAND HODGES; m. Oct. 23, 1861 SARAH B. PETTUS, dau. of JOHN F. and SARAH YORK PETTUS.

Issue:

1. MARTHA VIRGINIA HODGES; b. Sept. 5, 1862; m. Feb. 5, 1882 WILLIAM MARSHALL SMITH, son of THOMAS JEFFERSON SMITH and his wife LUGANA ROBERTS.
2. MARY ELIZABETH HODGE; b. Dec. 6, 1864; m. Dec. 25, 1884 D. PERCY MITCHELL.
3. ROBERT LEE HODGES; b. June 18, 1866; d. Aug. 30, 1930; m. Oct. 23, 1888 ADA McKINNEY; b. July 17, 1870; d. Nov. 17, 1938.
4. SARAH MAE MORTON HODGES; b. May 16, 1868; m. Feb. 26, 1891 HENRY BAILEY.
5. BEN MILAM HODGES, b. July 17, 1870; m. LIZZIE ———————; no issue.

III. Children of SUSAN A. HODGES (SUSANNA) and her husband GEORGE W. BELL.

1. MARY OPHELIA BELL; b. Aug. 21, 1856; m. Dec. 25, 1879 ALONZO PECK, son of BARTON and FRANCES MENEFEE PECK.
2. GEORGE W. BELL, JR., b. Sept. 14, 1857.
3. JOHN H. BELL, b. Nov. 5, 1858.
4. WILEY H. BELL, b. Dec. 26, 1859; d. about 1907, buried at Montell, Texas.
5. WILLIAM BELL, b. May 17, 1861.
6. D. W. BELL (twin) b. May 17, 1861.
7. SUE FANN BELL, b. Jan. 21, 1863; m. Dec. 15, 1887 HENRY A. BALL.
8. LUCY BELL, b. Sept. 14, 1864; m. June 13, 1886 DR. C.D.W. McNEILL.
9. ROBERT W. BELL, b. Aug. 19, 1866; d. Dec. 6, 1894.
10. EUGENE BELL; b. Oct. 25, 1867; d. Dec. 13, 1900.
11. ELLA MAE BELL; b. May 25, 1969; m. May 12, 1892 O. S. ADAMS.
12. ERNEST Q. BELL; b. July 10, 1872.
13. QUIN MORTON BELL; b. Feb. 9, 1874 at Goliad; d. May 18, 1939 in Amarillo, Texas; m. May 14, 1898 in Woodward, Okla. MORA IVY; b. Jan. 8, 1881.
14. ORIN LEA BELL; b. Sept. 20, 1875; m. ALMA McNEIL.
15. MAUD A. BELL; b. Jan. 21, 1877; d. Dec. 11, 1946; m. Sept. 7, 1897 CHAS. C. WALKER.

IV. LUCY ANN HODGES, dau. of SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE, second wife of JOHN W. HODGES and grandau. of THOMAS MENEFEE and LUCY SUTHERLAND, m. 14, Sept. 1865 DILLARD RUCKER FANT.

Issue:

1. GEORGE NEVITT FANT, b. 14 Oct. 1869 Goliad, Texas; d. 16 Jan. 1890 graduate of Vanderbilt Univ.; never married.
2. LUCY ANN FANT, b. 22 June, 1872; d. 1 July 1872.
3. VIRGINIA BIRDIE FANT, b. 22 July 1874; d. June 1948, Santa Rosa, California; m. 1908 CHARLES JOSEPH TARUT, b. 24 Dec. 1865 New Orleans; d. 1950 North Hollywood, Calif.
4. DILLARD RUCKER FANT, JR., b. 7 Dec. 1875 at Goliad, Texas d. 18, Dec. 1952, Laredo, Texas; m. (1) 19 April 1899 ELLA SNYDER b. 1879 Georgetown, Texas; d. Dec. 1900; m. (2) 1908 GRACE CONVERSE; no issue.
5. OPHELIA FANT, b. 8 Jan. 1877; d. 19 July 1949 at San Antonia; m. (1) 22 Jan. 1895 ROBERT JAMES COLLINS, b. 31 Dec. 1873; d. Aug. 1913; m. (2) June 1921 JOHN NOEL SWEENEY, b. 1873 Bowling Green, Ky.; d. April 1946, no issue.
6. WILLIAM ROBERT FANT, b. 6 Dec. 1878 at Goliad; d. 21 May 1906; never married.
7. ERMEMGARDE FANT, b. 23 Dec. 1879; d. 16 Jan. 1908; never married.
8. LUCILLE FANT, b. 11 Sept. 1881 Goliad, Texas; d. 21 Oct. 1950 San Antonia; m. 10 Mar. 1909 JAMES BRECKENRIDGE SOUTH, b. Bowling Green, Ky.; d. DEc. 1955 San Antonia, Texas.
9. AGNES MENEFEE FANT, b. 23 Nov. 1883 at Goliad; m. 11 April 1906 LINTON OTIS RAMSEY; b. 13 May 1876 Macon, Ga.; d. 13 June 1956, Dallas, Texas

10. SUTHERLAND COOPER FANT, b. 10 Dec. 1888 at Goliad; d. 14 April 1936 San Antonio; m. (1) MAY TURNEY, d. 1909; m. (2) Dec. 10, 1911 GEORGINIA M. PURVIS, b. 17 Feb. 1891.

V. AGNES SHELTON HODGES, dau. of SUSAN L. MENEFEE and her husband JOHN W. HODGES, m. EUGENE DAVIS' half-bro. of GEORGE W. BELL.

Issue:

1. EFFIE DAVIS b. Mar. 15, 1876; d. May 1, 1925; m. Aug. 26, 1891, ROBERT MAY YANTIS, Had: (1) AGGIE YANTIS d. as infant. (2) MYRTLE RUTH YANTIS m. RALPH W. RUSSELL, AGNES SHELTON HODGES and EUGENE DAVIS also had EUGENE, FRANCES, AGNES, JOHN GRAY, and SUE ELLA DAVIS, who all died as small children.

VI. FRANCES OVERAKER HODGES, dau. of SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE and JOHN W. HODGES; m. Mar. 10, 1830 BARTON PECK of New York and Goliad.

Issue:

1. LUCY PECK m. THOMAS MERIWEATHER, Had:
   (1) FANNIE MERIWEATHER, m. JOHN L. BROWNE of Goliad, Texas.
   (2) FRANK THOMAS MERIWEATHER' m. WINIFRES SUTHERLAND.
   Had:
   (a) FRANK THOMAS MERIWEATHER, JR.
   (b) LEVIN L. MERIWEATHER, m. HELEN and has dau.; MARJORIE ANN MERIWEATHER m. DR. M. L. BENNACK and have LEE BENNACK.
   (3) LON PECK MERIWEATHER m. EVELYN and has three children.
2. SUSAN PECK m. GUS PATTON of Goliad, Texas. Had:
   (1) MAY PATTON m. WM. BUMGARTNER. Had:
   (a) BARTON PECK BUMGARTNER (b) WM. PATTON BUMGARTNER.
   (2) LONNIE WILLIE PATTON m. ROSS BURKE. Had:
   (a) ROSS E. BURKE, JR.
   (3) FANNIE PECK PATTON m. JOHN VON DOHLEN. Had:
   (a) J. GUS VON DOHLEN (b) CLAUSE VON DOHLEN; m. and had 2 children.
   (4) J. GUS PATTON.
   (5) BARTON PECK PATTON m. (1) MYRTLE LOTT; m. (2) JANIE DAUGHARTY.
3. FANNIE AGNES PECK m. GEORGE MERIWEATHER. Had:
   (1) SUE McNEILL MERIWEATHER m. ——— TURNER.
   (2) LUCILLE MERIWEATHER m. ———RIVES. Had:
   (a) LUCILLE RIVES m. L. B. BONDERAUS and had WM. RIVES BONDERAUS.
   (3) JENNIE MERIWEATHER. m. W. J. YEATES
   (4) DAISY MERIWEATHER, m. SHELBY BURKE. Had:
   (a) MERIWEATHER BURKE, m. LULA BONDEAUX and has SHELBY BURKE.
4. WILLIAM PECK - - - - -
5. BARTON PECK, JR., m. (1) and lost both wife and first child; m. (2) LULA GORMAN. Had:
   (1) HELEN BARTON PECK m. DR. B. H. PASSMORE. Had:
   (a) BEN BARTON PASSMORE m. WESSIE - - - - and has one child.
   (b) SHIRLEY PASSMORE, m. GENE JOHNSON and has two children.
   (c) DR. GLEN GORMAN PASSMORE, m. BETTY KNOX. Has:
   GLEN GORMAN PASSMORE, JR. and GAIL PASSMORE.
6. VIOLA PECK m. ——— WORD and had VIOLA WORD.
7. ALONZO PECK m. MARY OPHELIA BELL. Had:
   (1) SUE FANNIE PECK m. JAMES WORD JOHNSON. (2) ALONZO WILLIAM PECK. (3) IVY BELL PECK
8. SAMUEL WILLIAM PECK.
9. MARY LOUISE PECK, m. DR. A. W. GRAY. Had:
   (1) FRANCES PECK GRAY m. WARREN E. MOORE. (2) ALEXANDER W. GRAY m. LENA - - - has one child. (3) VIOLA GRAY m. J. C. McINTYRE. Had: (a) VIOLA McINTYRE and two grandchildren. (4) MARY GRAY. (5) WILLIAM THOMAS GRAY.
10. THOMAS MENEFEE PECK.

Submitted by MISS IVY PECK, granddaughter of FRANCES MENEFEE PECK and her husband, BARTON PECK I).

Ninth and Later Generations, great grandchildren of JOHN W. HODGES, and his wives (1) TALITHA ANN MORTON and SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE.

Descendants of JOHN SUTHERLAND HODGES and his wife, SARAH B. PETTUS.

I. MARTHA VIRGINIA HODGES, m. Feb. 5, 1882 WM. MARSHALL SMITH.
Issue:
1. MARY ELEANOR SMITH; b. Jan. 27, 1884; d. Oct. 10, 1918; m. LEWIS BEYETTE.
Had:
(1) MARY VIRGINIA BEYETTE; b. Sept. 9, 1907; m. at Laredo, Tex., Oct. 6, 1931 JOSEPH PATRICK PUIG; b. Mar. 17, 1904.
Issue:
A. MARY ELLEN PUIG; b. Mar. 18, 1932 at Laredo; m. July 3, 1952 EARL EUGENE ROLLERMAN; b. July 8, 1929 son of EDWIN ROLLERMAN and his wife, EVELYN RODRIGUEZ.
Have:
(a) ELIZ. CLARIE ROLLERMAN, b. April 2, 1954; (b) EDWIN JOSEPH ROLLERMAN, b. July 19, 1955; (c) EARL EUGENE ROLLERMAN, b. Sept. 26, 1956.
B. JOSEPH PATRICK PUIG, JR., b. May 18, 1933.
C. VIRGINIA CLAIRE PUIG, b. Sept. 14, 1938.
D. ELIZABETH ANN PUIG, b. July 26, 1940.
E. JOHN VALENTINE PUIG, b. July 14, 1946.
(2) JOHN LEWIS BEYETTE; b. May 31, 1909; m. MARY LILLIAN KETCHUM; no issue.
(3) MABLE BEYETTE; b. Mar. 19, 1911; m. GEORGE KIRKLAND.
Had:
A. GEORGE KIRKLAND, JR.
(4) SARAH LOU BEYETTE; b. Nov. 15, 1913; m. MONTE HALL; no issue.
(5) OLINDA BEYETTE; b. Aug. 5, 1916; married; no issue.
2. MAUDE IDA SMITH; b. Oct. 6, 1886; m. June 3, 1909 J. DUGAT HOWARD; b. Mar. 7, 1880; d. Jan. 12, 1943.
Issue:
(1) MARGARET LILLIAN HOWARD; b. July 3, 1910; m. Sept. 4, 1938 DAVID T. MORRIS; no issue.
(2) MARTHA VIRGINIA HOWARD, b. Nov. 16, 1913; m. Aug. 18, 1934 JOHN MALCOLM ORCHARD.
Had:
A. JANE ORCHARD, b. May 11, 1938; B. JOHN ORCHARD, b. May 19, 1942; C. JOSEPH WILLIAM ORCHARD, b. Feb. 25, 1944.
(3) JOSEPH DUGAT HOWARD, JR., b. Dec. 15, 1918; m. June 18, 1942 ALICE KENT.
Had:
A. KENT DUGAT HOWARD b. July 13, 1944; B. ANNE ELIZABETH HOWARD b. Jan. 24, 1949.
3. BESSIE MAE SMITH; b. Feb. 8, 1889; m. (1) June 21, 1908 HOMAR LEE McKINNEY; m. (2) April 2, 1946 REAGAN W. GILLETTE; b. Mar. 8, 1884.
Issue of first marriage.
(1) BESSIE MAE McKINNEY; b. Dec. 23, 1910; m. Oct. 25, 1933 THOMAS ALLANE MARSDEN; b. July 5, 1910.
Had:
A. THOMAS ALLEN MARSDEN, JR.; b. Oct. 1936; B. WILLIAM CARTER MARSDEN; b. May 16, 1941.
(2) MARY CHRISTINE McKINNEY; b. Dec. 12, 1912; m. Aug. 26, 1939 CARL SCHAFER; b. Dec. 12, 1906. Had:
A. GAYLE SCHAFER b. Apr. 29, 1940; B. JOSEPH SCHAFER, b. Apr. 13, 1942; C. GINGER BESS SCHAFER, b. Dec. 14, 1944. D. JANE BRYANT SCHAFER, b. Jan. 27, 1950; E. QUENTIN BRYANT SCHAFER b. Dec. 10, 1954.
4. LILLIAN PETTUS SMITH; b. May 27, 1892; m. Apr. 20, 1916 WILLIAM GLENN GAYLE who in 1956 was serving his 22nd year as District Judge of Bee, Live Oak, San Patricia, McMullen and Aransas Counties, Texas.

Issue:

(1) WILLIAM GLENN GAYLE II), b. June 3, 1917; m. Sept. 27, 1946 HAZEL WATTS, b. Jan. 7, 1918. Had:

A. WILLIAM GLENN GAYLE III) b. July 15, 1948 in Panama Canal Zone.

B. SARAH LEE GAYLE, b. Feb. 16, 1953.

(2) SIBBIE BEHETHELAND GAYLE, b. Oct. 12, 1918; m. June 18, 1943 VINCENT SEGER, b. Feb. 24, 1919. Had:

A. CONSTANCE SEGER, b. Jan. 24, 1948 (adopted).

(3) ROBERT HODGES GAYLE, b. Nov. 15, 1923; not married.

(4) MARTHA ELIZABETH GAYLE, b. Sept. 5, 1930 m. June 28, 1952 JOHN MATHEWS, JR., b. Oct. 19, 1921. Had:

A. JOHN MONROE MATHEWS, b. Oct. 23, 1953 B. GLENN GAYLE MATHEWS, b. Feb. 8, 1955.

5. SIBBIE OLIVE SMITH, b. May 16, 1895; m. THOMAS P. HULL, b. Oct. 1893. Issue:

(1) THOMAS P. HULL, JR., b. June 30, 1917; m. Dec. 6, 1941 MAXINE McDERMOTT of Houston, Texas. Had:

A. RALPH HULL, b. Nov. 7, 1946 B. CARLA HULL b. Oct. 12, 1948.

(2) MARY OLIVE HULL, b. May 19, 1921; m. RICHARD (DICK) CALKINS. Had:

A. CAROLYN CALKINS B. PHILIP CALKINS C. STEPHEN CALKINS.

(3) LILLIAN HULL, b. May 22, 1924; m. DR. HAROL BUTTRY.

Had: A. MILES BUTTRY, b. July 14, 1955.

6. THOMAS JEFFERSON SMITH, b. July 22, 1895; d. Dec. 13, 1900.

7. ALEENE SMITH, b. Jan. 3, 1900; m. Dec. 26, 1922 DR. SCOTT McNEILL, b. Feb. 8, 1899. Issue:

(1) MARJORIE ALEENE McNEILL, b. July 15, 1924; m. Sept. 7, 1946 JOHN ROBERTS. Had:

A. ELIZA DIANE ROBERTS, b. Jan. 5, 1949.

B. MARJORIE ALEENE ROBERTS, b. Nov. 6, 1950.

(2) SCOTT EDWARD McNEILL, b. Mar. 4, 1927; m. June 1, 1947 RAMONA SOUTHWELL. No Issue:

8. WILLIAM ALBERT SMITH, b. Jan. 2, 1905; m. in Monroe, La. GERTRUDE BRAUER; no issue.

II. MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, dau. of JOHN S. HODGES and his wife, SARAH B. PETTUS m. PERCY MITCHELL. Issue:

1. CLIFTON RAY MITCHELL, b. Jan. 28, 1886 m. IDA WILSON.

Had: A. GLENN MITCHELL, d. 1956.

2. ROBERT PERCY MITCHELL, b. Aug. 2, 1888, not married.

3. HODGES MITCHELL, m. MINNIE PUCKETT.

III. ROBERT LEE HODGES, son of JOHN S. HODGES and his wife, SARAH B. PETTUS, m. Oct. 23, 1888 ADA McKINNEY. Issue:

1. BEULAH INEZ HODGES, b. Jan. 27, 1890, not married.

2. JOHN SUTHERLAND HODGES, b. Aug. 27, 1892; not married.

3. LENA MAY HODGES, b. June 24, 1895; m. Sept. 3, 1919 LINZIE NEWTON CONNALLY, b. Mar. 26, 1890. Had:

(1) LENA MARY CONNALLY, b. May 4, 1926; m. Sept. 3, 1948 CLYDE FRANCIS LACY, b. Aug. 25, 1920. Had:

A. ALAN CONNALLY LACY, b. July 4, 1950. B. CLARK FRANCIS LACY, b. July 20, 1953; C. MARK EDWARD LACY, b. June 27, 1956.

(2) ROBERT LINZIE CONNALLY b. Sept. 17, 1927; m. June 25, 1949 BEVERLY BELLE DU PRE, b. Dec. 5, 1929. Had:

A. ROBERT LINZIE CONNALLY, JR., b. July 6, 1950. B. WILLIAM DU PRE, CONNALLY, b. June 30, 1952.

4. ORA LEE HODGES, b. Dec. 2, 1897; m. Aug. 25, 1919 THOMAS EDWARD GREGORY, b. Mar. 19, 1897; no issue.

5. ADA IRENE HODGES, b. Mar. 11, 1900; d. Jan. 7, 1949; never married.

6. MARY BEHETHELAND HODGES, b. Nov. 22, 1902; d. Jan. 17, 1936; m. Mar. 26, 1929 WALTER CLAYTON CALHOUN, b. Oct. 31, 1903. Had:

(1) MARILEE CALHOUN, b. Dec. 22, 1931; m. Aug. 11, 1952 JACK ADAMS DEER, b. Oct. 26, 1927. Had:

A. DAVID SUTHERLAND DEER b. Sept. 29, 1954; B. JEFFERY LEE DEER b. Oct. 18, 1956.

(2) DOROTHY BEHETHELAND CALHOUN, b. Sept. 17, 1935.

IV. SARAH MAE MORTON HODGES, dau. of JOHN S. and SARAH B. HODGES, b. May 16, 1868; m. Feb. 26, 1891 HENRY BAILEY. Issue:

1. TRAVIS BAILEY, b. Feb. 14, 1892; m. Mar. 26, 1917 at Rockport, Texas MARY CLARK b. Feb. 26, 1894. Had:
   (1) HENRY TRAVIS BAILEY, b. Sept. 9, 1918 at Austin, Texas; m. Sept. 1, 1942 FRANCES MAYO. Had:
      A. HENRY TRAVIS BAILEY, JR., b. Nov. 27, 1945; B. MARY ANN BAILEY, b. July 29, 1947; C. FRANK VICTOR BAILEY, b. July 29, 1949; D. TRAVIS MAYO BAILEY b. July 4, 1953; E. CATHERINE FRANCES BAILEY, b. Sept. 2, 1954.
   (2) OSCAR CLARK BAILEY, b. Nov. 19, 1919 at Dallas, Texas; m. Dec. 18, 1948 GENEVIEVE METZLER; No issue.
2. MATTIE PETTUS BAILEY, b. June 8, 1895; m. Mar. 30, 1936 BYRON BUSHART; no issue.

NOTE:

1. Information on the descendants of JOHN SUTHERLAND HODGES submitted by the various families represented here.

Descendants of SUSAN ANDERSON HODGES and her husband GEO. W. BELL.

I. MARY OPHELIA BELL, m. Dec. 25, 1879 ALONZO PECK. Issue;
   1. SUE FANN PECK, m. JAMES JOHNSON; 2. IVY BELL PECK; 3. ALONZO PECK, JR.

II. SUE FANN BELL m. Dec. 15, 1887 HENRY A. BALL. Issue:
   1. ROBBIE GENE BALL m. BARNEY G. ANDERSON. Had:
      (1) PAULINE ANDERSON, m. FRED BALDWIN; (2) BARNEY G. ANDERSON, JR.
   2. SUE FANN BALL, m. Nov. 19, 1919 JOHN W. SUTHERLAND. Had:
      (1) JOHN W. SUTHERLAND, JR., m. July 3, 1943 BEATRICE KALAYJIAN. Have:
         A. SUE FANN SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 14, 1946.
      (2) MARGUERITE SUTHERLAND, m. Feb. 1, 1947 PATRICK A. CLOWER. Have:
         A. LINDA SUE CLOWER, b. June 5, 1950; B. DAN STEVEN CLOWER, b. Nov. 13, 1953.
      (3) ROBBIE GENE SUTHERLAND, m. June 24, 1950 CLYDE E. JENKINS, JR. Have:
         A. JUDY ANN JENKINS, b. June 25, 1952; B. CLYDE EVANS JENKINS III) b. Sept. 29, 1954.
   3. HENRY ARTHUR BALL.

III. QUIN MORTON BELL m. May 14, 1898 MORA IVY. Issue:
   1. CLIFTON NELSON BELL, b. Feb. 22, 1900 at Amarillo, Texas; m. April 23, 1924 VELMA RUDE. Had:
      (1) LEROY NELSON BELL, b. April 11, 1925 at Vega, Texas; m. Apr. 17, 1949 in Claude, Texas JOYCE BARBER, b. Sept. 9, 1933. Have:
         A. CONNIE LYNN BELL, b. Apr. 11, 1951; B. LARY LEROY BELL, b. Nov. 28, 1954.
   2. QUIN MORA BELL, b. Dec. 18, 1901; d. Feb. 16, 1950 in Vega, Texas; m. Jan. 17, 1935 in Dallas, LOIS McKINN. Had:
      (1) MORA EVELYN BELL, b. Mar. 28, 1941.
   3. GRAHAM ADRIAN BELL, b. Feb. 29, 1908; d. Mar. 13, 1951; m. Apr. 21, 1935 BERNICE McCOMBS; no issue.
   4. GEORGE WALDERMAR BELL III) b. May 11, 1917 at Vega, Texas; m. Nov. 1, 1940 BETTY JO BOWMAN b. Oct. 8, 1925; divorced. Had:
      (1) BETTY MICHAEL BELL, b. Sept. 22, 1941.

IV. ORION LEA BELL m. ALMA McNEIL, Issue:
   1. LEA ALMA BELL, m. JOHN PHIPPS.

V. MAUD A. BELL, m. Sept. 7, 1897 CHAS. C. WALKER. Issue:
   1. ELLA MAY WALKER, b. Nov. 4, 1898; m. Nov. 1, 1916 FRANK LEONARD CANNON. Had:
      (1) CHARLES WALKER CANNON, b. April 8, 1918; m. Sept. 15, 1944, MARGARET HEISLER.
         A. PATRICIA JOAN CANNON, b. Oct. 6, 1947. B. CHARLES WALKER CANNON, JR., b. July 24, 1950.
      (2) FRANK L. CANNON, JR., b. Sept. 11, 1920; m. Sept. 8, 1946 MARY DEAN ROBISON. Have:
         A. FRANK L. CANNON III) b. July 14, 1947. B.WM' EDWARD CANNON, b. Feb. 17, 1953.
      (3) GEO. EDWARD CANNON, b. Jan. 9, 1930; m. Dec. 14, 1952 VIRGINIA O'NEAL. Have:
         A. CHRIS ED. CANNON, b. Oct. 7, 1953; B. MARK STEVEN CANNON, b. Dec. 2, 1954.
   2. ORA LEA WALKER, b. Mar. 26, 1900; m. July 19, 1919 GEO. GREEN REED. Had:
      (1) GEORGE G. REED, JR., b. Aug. 28, 1922; m. Sept. 2, 1942 ALICE WEBB. Had:
         A. RICHARD RONALD REED, b. June 30, 1943.

(2) FRANK AUSTIN REED, b. May 10, 1924.

3. MAUD BELL WALKER, b. Dec. 12, 1913; m. Aug. 29, 1934 EDWARD JAMES NIXON, JR. Had:
   (1) EDWARD JAMES NIXON III), b. Jan. 20, 1936.
   (2) CHARLES RICHARD NIXON, b. Feb. 8, 1940.

NOTE:
Information on the BELL family was submitted by ELLA MAY WALKER CANNON and MORA IVY BELL (MRS. QUIN M. BELL).

Ninth generation descendants of JOHN W. HODGES and his second wife, SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE and of their dau. LUCY ANN, m. 14 Sept. 1865 DILLARD FANT.

I. VIRGINIA BIRDIE FANT, m. CHAS. JOSEPH TARUT and had:
   1. MAXINE TARUT, b. 13 Mar. 1909 at New Orleans; m. 16 Mar. 1927 at Van Nuys, Calif., HAROLD CLIFFORD RYAN, b. 16 Sept. 1905 and had:
      (1) MILTON CHAS. RYAN, b. 7 Aug. 1931 B.S. Physical Ed.; m. JO ELLEN ANGELL, b. 8 Sept. 1932, and have: A. TIMOTHY PATRICK RYAN, b. 16 Sept. 1955 N. Hollywood, Calif. B. KATHLEEN MARIE RYAN, b. 8 June 1962. (2) MARILYNN LOUISE RYAN, b. 28 Sept. 1934; m. (1) 27 Sept. 1933 MAXWELL ELMER PRICE, b. 24 Aug. 1932; m. (2) RICHARD CASEY. Had by PRICE: A. MICHAEL JOSEPH PRICE, b. 5 June 1955; B. MATHEW SCOTT PRICE, b. 14 Mar. 1959; C. MARSHALL PRICE, b. 19 April 1962.
   2. DILLARD RUCKER TARUT, b. 19 June 1912; m. GUNNIE. Had:
      (1) YVONNE MARIE TARUT b., 14 July 1945; (2) DONNA LEE TARUT, b. 30 July 1945.
   3. JACK FANT TARUT, b. 12 Aug. 1913 at San Antonio, Texas; m. 26 March 1949 at Dallas, GLADYS THOMSON ANDREWS, b. 4 June 1914 and had:
      (1) JACK FANT TARUT, JR. b. 10 Feb. 1947, Berkeley, Calif.; (2) RICHARD LEWIS TARUT, b. 27 Jan. 1950, Subic Bay.

II. DILLARD RUCKER FANT, JR., m. ELLA SNYDER and had:
   1. ELOISE OPHELIA FANT, b. 17 Aug. 1900, Georgetown, Texas; m. 25 Mar. 1921 WILLIAM CADE FORD, b. 18 Jan. 1897; and had:
      (1) BETTY ELOISE FORD, b. 6 June 1922; m. June 1949 ANDRE, LUCIAN GOODMAN, b. 30 Nov. 1915 and had: A. JENEL CADE GOODMAN, b. 30 Sept. 1950; B. ADIENNE LYNN GOODMAN, b. 6 Jan. 1952; C. ANDRE, LUCIAN GOODMAN, JR., b. 11 June 1953; D. SHELLY ELOISE GOODMAN, b. 12 May 1955; E. WILLIAM KENT GOODMAN, b. 26 Dec. 1956.

III. OPHELIA FANT, m. ROBERT JAMES COLLINS and had:
   1. ERMENGART FANT COLLINS, b. 8 May 1900 Alice, Texas; d. Oct. 1943; m. (1) May 1916 FRED McMENEMY: divorced Sept. 1926; m. (2) 1927 JOHN MILTON RICKER. Had by 1st marriage:
      (1) ERMENGART McMENEMY, b. 3 Nov. 1922 Falfurias, Texas; m. 5 Nov. 1939 WILLIAM WALLACE WALTON of El Nido Ranch, Helotis, Texas. Have three children. (2) ROBERT COLLINS SWEENY (b. FRED McMENEMY, JR.) b. 30 Dec. 1919; m. 1946. Has four children and lives in San Antonio. Had by:
         (3) Had by second m. JOHN MILTON RICKER' JR., b. 1928; lives in S.C. and has children.

IV. LUCILLE FANT, m. JAMES BRECKENRIDGE SOUTH and had:
   1. VIRGINIA FANT SOUTH, b. 17 June 1911 at S.A. Texas; m. GRIMES and had one child.
   2. ROBERT WILLIAM SOUTH, b. 15 Nov. 1912; Minister; A.A. Degree Cumberland College, B.S. Wake Forest, B.D. Va. Theo, Sem.; m. MARGARET ELIZ. SMITH, b. 26 June 1915, Atlanta, Ga.; B.A. Converse College, Spartanburg, Spartanburg, S.C. Had:
      (1) PENELOPE LOUISE SOUTH, b. 9 June 1939, Lake City, Fla., B. Mus. and M. Mus. Converse College Artist's diploma Univ. of Vienna, Aus.; m. JOSEPH ZOLTAN HASZTOLNYIK. (2) PATRICIA MARGARET SOUTH, b. 1 Feb. 1945, Atlanta, Ga.; B.S. Radford College; m. F.E. WHITE, lives S. A., Texas.
   3. REAGAN SOUTH, b. July 1916 Long Beach, Calif.
   4. JOHN RUSSELL SOUTH, b. 1926 S. Antonio, Texas.

V. AGNES MENEFEE FANT, m. LENTON OTIS RAMSEY, and had:
   1. LUCY OPHELIA RAMSEY, b. 20 June 1907 at S. A., Texas; d. 20 Oct. 1907.
   2. LUCILLE FANT RAMSEY, b. 8 Nov. 1908; m. 19 May 1932, OLIN ARTHUR BEAUPRE' of Dallas, b. 11 Nov. 1904; divorced 1937. Had:
      (1) ELEANOR ANNE BEAUPRE', b. 15 April 1933; m. 28 Sept. 1951, JOHN GERALD BLAYLOCK, b. 28 June 1934 and have: A. SUSAN MARIE BLAYLOCK, b. 5 Dec. 1952, B. BEVERLY ANNE BLAY-

LOCK, b. 16 June 1956, C. YVONNE AGNES BLAYLOCK, b. 27 Dec. 1957, D. ELAINE LUCIA BLAYLOCK, b. 21 May 1959, E. JOHN GERALD BLAYLOCK, JR., b., 21 Nov. 1960.

3. LINTON OTIS RAMSEY, JR., b. 6 July 1910; not married.
4. MARY ANN RAMSEY, b. 17 Dec. 1913 S.A., Texas; m. 29 May 1945 HOWARD NOLEN BRYANT, b. 15 April 1913, and had:
   (1) GLADYS BRYANT, b. 14 Mar. 1947; B.A. Cum Laude Univ. of Houston; m. 18 Jan. 1969, HARRY LITTLETON BIRDWELL. (2) RUTH ANN BRYANT, b. 26 June 1950, Dallas.
5. MILDRED MENEFEE RAMSEY, b. 17 Sept. 1916; m. 23 July 1948 JAMES LINTON JONES, b. 19 Dec. 1923 and had:
   (1) JAMES LINTON JONES, JR., b. 30 May 1954 in Dallas.
6. WILLIAM DEPRIEST RAMSEY, b. 26 Sept. 1922; m. 8 Feb. 1946 ISOBEL THOMPSON of Mau. Hawaii.

VI. SUTHERLAND COOPER FANT, m. GEORGINIA M. PURVIS and had:

1. SUTHERLAND COOPER FANT, JR., b. 28 July 1912 at S.A., Texas; m. 27 Feb. 1942 CONSTANCE ANDERSON, b. 3 Oct. 1922 and had:
   (1) DAVID KEITH FANT, b. 15 Nov. 1944 at S.A. Texas.

CHAPTER III

WARD GENERATIONS

(in reverse order)

I The Texas HODGES-WARD descendants of JOHN W. HODGES 1839 to 1969 including as many as six generations. (See HODGES and SUTHERLAND).

II JOHN W. HODGES and his wives, TALITHA ANN MORTON and SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE. (See MORTON and SUTHERLAND).

III DAVID HODGES and his wife, NANCY WARD. (See HODGES.)

IV ROBERT WARD and his wife, MARY DICKENS, daughter of BENJ. DICKENS.

V DAVID WARD and his wife MARY, probably MARY WILEY.

VI JOHN WARD and his wife ELIZABETH, probably MURRAY.

VII The First Virginia generation.

- A. THOMAS WARD I) m. (1) HOLMES; m. (2) ----- WORKMAN; m. (3) ANN HAYES.
- B. JOHN WARD I) and ANN ----- of Norfolk.
- C. WILLIAM WARD I)
- D. EDWARD WARD I)
- E. CHRISTOPHER of Nansemond Co.

VIII Second Generation in Virginia

- A. THOMAS WARD II) of Isle of Wight Co.
- B. JOHN WARD II), W.B.E.R.
- C. EDWARD II) and WILLIAM WARD II), sons of WILLIAM
- D. EDWARD WARD II) of Lynhaven.

IX Third Generation in Virginia

- A. THOMAS WARD m. (1) JOAN
- B. JOHN WARD III and wife, ELIZ. SMITH
- C. Perhaps another THOMAS WARD of P.A. Co. Va.

X Fourth Generation in Va.

- A. THOMAS, JOSEPH and WILLIAM WARD, W.B.E.R.
- B. Their bro., JOHN WARD IV and wife, ELIZABETH
- C. ROBERT and JOHN WARD of P. A. Co.

CHAPTER III - Part A

WARD'S of Smith Co., Tenn. and Halifax Co., N.C.

NANCY WARD, who married DAVID HODGES, son of JAMES, was the daughter of ROBERT WARD who lived in Halifax Co., North Carolina for about the same span of years that JAMES HODGES did. Then he, too, moved to Smith Co., Tenn. where he died in 1815.

His will which was dated 7 Oct. 1813 was proved in the August 1815 court, of that county.

He was survived by his beloved wife, MARY, and left to her the plantation on which he lived; his household furniture; stock of horses, cattle, hogs and sheep, bees and geese and his slaves, JAY, JANE, WINNEL, WILLIE and ISAAC.

After the death of his wife, he directed that his daughter, SUSANNAH WARD was to have WINNEL and ROSE and her two children.

He left to his son, RICHARD WARD, the slave WILLIE.

To his daughter, NANCY HODGES, he bequeathed the negro man JAY and woman JANE and to another daughter, FRANCES BARKLEY, a feather bed and furniture and negroes CHEARY and FANNA.

After the death of MARY, ROBERT'S wife, the son, DICKENS WARD, was to come into possession of ROBERT'S plantation and one suit of bed-room furniture.

To daughters, SALLY LAWSON, PATSY WOOTEN, MARY WOOTEN and to son JOHN WARD he left to each the sum of $5, no doubt having already assisted each of them in some way.

(It was this son, JOHN WARD, who witnessed the deed to DAVID HODGES when he purchased his first land in Smith Co., Tenn. in 1801).

ROBERT WARD left to his daughter, ELIZABETH LANE, $300. and to her husband, WILLIAM LANE, the tract of land on which he, LANE, lived.

To his grand-daughter, EMILY WOOTEN, he left a slave, ISAAC, feather bed and furniture and two cows and calves.

He provided that after the death of his wife, his stock, household and kitchen furniture and plantation utensils were to be sold and the money derived from them to be divided between three of his children, namely, NANCY HODGES, FRANCES BARKLEY and DICKENS WARD.

His sons-in-law, WILLIAM LANE and DAVID HODGES, were named as executors. When the will was probated, LANE refused to serve and DAVID HODGES qualified as executor.

WARD'S will was witnessed by THOMAS HALE, RICHARD RIZEN, JOHN W. HODGES and RICHARD HODGES. (HALES and RIZEN families in Norfold and P.A. Cos., Va.

THOMAS HALE was brother-in-law and RICHARD HODGES was brother of DAVID HODGES, the executor, but JOHN W. HODGES could hardly have been the person of that identical name who was the son of DAVID and NANCY HODGES, unless he was allowed to witness it for sentimental reasons, since he was only 12 years old in 1813.

According to the Smith Co., Tenn. 1820 census, DICKENS WARD, a MARY WARD and WILLIAM LANE were heads of households in that county.

DICKENS WARD was 26 to 45, LANE was past 45 as was his wife and there was a young woman 26 to 45 in the household of MARY WARD who was past 45, in fact, if she was the widow of ROBERT, still living now five years after his decease, she was probably approaching eighty years of age. The young woman 26 to 45 with three children, two under ten and one evidently just past ten, was probably a widowed dau. or daughter-in-law with her orphaned children.

According to the 1790 census of Halifax Co., N.C., ROBERT WARD at that time had seven females and two young males, one over sixteen and one under 16, beside himself, in his family. This means that in that year one of the daughters and perhaps one of his sons were in households of their own or were not yet born or where omitted from the census.

We know that ROBERT'S eldest son, JOHN WARD, was of age in 1801 when he witnessed a deed to DAVID HODGES in Smith Co., Tenn., which means he was born not later than 1780. His sister, NANCY HODGES, was born 1771 and he could have been older though he does not appear in an independent house- hold in either Halifax or Edgecomb counties in the 1790 census. We believe, therefore, that he is the young male 16 to 26 listed in his father's household in that year.

JOHN WARD returned from Tennessee to make his final residence in Edgecomb Co., North Carolina where he died and left a will in 1823. It was dated fourth of Sept. of that year and recorded in November of the same, on page 4 of Book F. In it he names his wife, CHARLOTTE, and two sons, both under age.

To his son, JOSEPH J. E. WARD, he left all of his property in North Carolina, after he comes of age, and to the other son, DAVID C. WARD, all property in the state of Tenn.

His brother, DICKENS WARD, was to be executor in Tenn. and guardian of his son DAVID C. WARD. This brings up the possibility that the minor children living in the household of MARY WARD in 1820 might have been

children of her son, JOHN D. WARD, by his first wife and the female 26 to 45 may have been the daughter, SUSANNAH WARD, still unwed.

It would be strange if JOHN D. WARD at least 43 in 1823, at the time of his death, from two marriages produced only two children, those named in his will.

Thirty years after JOHN D. WARD'S death, his widow, CHARLOTTE WARD left to her nephew, ETHELRED PHILIPS, of Florida, her entire estate "if he continues the farm, keeps the negroes together and marks and cares for the graves of her late husband and son JOSEPH and self."

Since DAVID C. is not buried in the family cemetery, he evidently lived to manhood and claimed his property in Tenn.

BENJAMINE COFFIELD of Edgecomb, N.C. left a will in that Co. dated 18 July 1837, proved Aug. 1838 and recorded on page 220 of Book F. He names his grandson DAVID C. WARD of Tenn. and his daughters MARTHA C. FORTE and ELIZABETH C. PENDER. No mention is made of CHARLOTTE who twenty years later mentions only PHILIP and GRAY, neices and nephews. CHARLOTTE had been twice married before, first to GRAY, then to JACKSON and finally to JOHN D. WARD.

Since CHARLOTTE failed to mention a son, DAVID C. WARD, and COFFIELD failed to mention her or PHILIP and GRAY devisees, it seems evident that JOHN D. WARD was twice married, the first time to the daughter of BENJ. COFFIELD by whom he had DAVID C. and the second time to CHARLOTTE by whom he had JOSEPH, deceased as a minor.

This series of documents explains why ROBERT WARD named his sons-in-law, WILLIAM LANE and DAVID HODGES, executors of his will in1813. Evidently, the son, JOHN, had already returned to North Carolina and RICHARD and DICKENS, one born after 1790 were either under age or too young twenty-three years later, to be entrusted with the division of an estate.

The first document in Halifax Co., N.C. which mentions ROBERT WARD, is a deed recorded in Deed Bk. 10 on p. 280 under date of 19 Oct. 1768 and Proved in the November Court of the same year. In this conveyance, "DAVID WARD of the Province of N.C., county of Halifax, planter, for and in consideration of the love and good will and affection which I have and do bear toward my loving, ROBERT WARD, of the province of N.C. and county of Halifax, planter, have given, granted and by these present doth freely give and grant unto ROBERT WARD, a tract of land lying on Fishing Creek in province and county aforesaid, beginning at the mouth of Flat Gut and running to the old marsh, this being the dividing line between him and JAMES WARD, land, adjacent to Fishing Creek and NATHANIEL EDWARDS 130 acres more or less."

This deed was witnessed by CORNELIUS CARTER, ISAM and NATHAN PITTMAN.

On the same date, Oct. 19, 1768, registered also at the Nov. 1768 court and recorded on page 282 of D. Bk. F. is a deed "DAVID WARD to JAMES WARD, planter, of Halifax Co., N.C. for the good will, love and affection which I do bear toward my son, JAMES WARD, 130 a.", etc.

This was the tract of land spoken of in the deed to ROBERT as adjoining the 130 acres conveyed to ROBERT.

Thus we see that on the same day DAVID WARD divides between his two sons, ROBERT and JAMES a tract of 260 acres of land because of the "good will, love and affection which he bore to each." The fact that the word "son" was left out of the deed to ROBERT, probably by the recorder, does not alter the unmistakable meaning of this document.

It is interesting to find that on 8 Mar. 1731, JAMES WILSON and his wife, ELIZABETH, sold to NATHANIEL EDMUNDS land in Norfolk Co. which lay adjacent to THOMAS SWAN of Nansemond Co., Va. and RICHARD MOY (Deed Bk. II) Wits. RICH. MOY and JOHN FIFE.

Later in that same year NATHANIEL EDMONDS sold to RICHARD MOY of Princess Ann Co., Va. lands binding on RICHARD MOY; 14 July 1731 Witness JAMES WILSON (Deed Bk. 11 p. 38 Norfolk Co.).

In the early Va. records of the WARD family, there is much evidence of connection with the MOY family and we shall find later connections in N.C. In Bertie Co., N.C. JAMES MURRAY in 1729 deeded part of an estate, that came to him from JOHN EDWARDS, to JOHN WARD, father of DAVID. Because of lack of use of phonies in spelling in that era, EDWARDS and EDMONDS may have been the same.

In March 1761, in Halifax Co., N.C. DAVID WARD conveyed to JOHN WARD part of a patent granted to DAVID WARD on April 20, 1745.

The land to ROBERT and JAMES WARD was from a grant to DAVID WARD of Edgecomb Co., for 283 acres on Fishing Creek and along NATHANIEL EDWARDS line; dated 30 April 1753.

On 3 Oct. 1768, JOHN WARD of Halifax Co. and ELIZABETH, his wife, conveyed to ROBERT WARD, 130 acres, part of a patent to DAVID WARD, 20 April 1745.

This deed was witnessed by DAVID WARD, MATTHEW AND ISOM PITTMAN.

Not long thereafter, DAVID WARD joined the trek to South Carolina but he left in Halifax Co., temporarily at least, his three sons, JOHN, JAMES and ROBERT. He settled in Georgetown District of South Carolina and unfortunately that is one of the areas that lost its early records in the War between the States. For this reason we are

at a loss to determine the names of any of the other children of DAVID and his wife, MARY, who came to Edgecomb from Tyrrell Co., N.C., probably shortly after he sold in that county to JAMES HOWELL, "a tract of 180 acres where-on said DAVID WARD now lives, land being in Tyrrell and Beauforts Co. on the south side of Bear Grass Swamp and adj. on the Flatt Swamp, being part of a greater grant to JOHN WARD and bequeathed to said DAVID WARD by his father, JOHN WARD, deceased."

This deed was signed by DAVID WARD and MARY WARD and was dated 9 November 1755. We have seen that he had already patented, in not too distant Edgecomb Co., later to become Halifax, two tracts of land, one in 1745 and one in 1753. In 1756 he was to patent an additional 133 acres adjoining his own land in this area.

JOHN WARD and his brothers, JAMES and ROBERT WARD, all came to manhood, found and married their wives in Halifax or Tyrrell Cos.

JOHN WARD married ELIZABETH DOUGLAS, the sister of JAMES DOUGLAS in or before 1761 the year in which he was conveyed land in Halifax by his father, DAVID WARD. (Anderson's "Marriages of Halifax Co., N.C.)

The source of Mrs. ANDERSON'S information is the will of WILLIAM DOUGLAS SR. of Halifax Co. proved 1 Jan. 1764 in which he names his daughter, ELIZABETH WARD, his grandson, JOHN WARD, his sons-in-law JOHN WARD and WM. THOMAS, and an earlier will of his son, WILLIAM, which furnishes the same information.

According to a deed, dated Oct. 3, 1768, JOHN WARD and his wife, ELIZABETH, sold to his brother, ROBERT WARD, on that day the "130 acres of DAVID WARD'S April 20, 1745 patent which had been conveyed to him in 1761 by said DAVID WARD, his father," and it's possible that he left Halifax County at that time or soon after.

A JAMES WARD, married MARY HOWELL, daughter of THOMAS HOWELL, who died and left a will dated 10 Feb. 1794. (Will Bk. III p. 260 Halifax Co.)

The name HOWELL is not new to us for we have seen it repeatedly in the records of Norfolk, Princess Ann & I. of W. Cos., Va.

This is not JAMES WARD SR. but a son, JAMES WARD JR. JAMES SR., with his wife MARY, conveyed to his son, ELIAS WARD, (all of Halifax Co.) land on the north side of Fishing Creek along Beaver Dam, Nov. 1, 1777. (Deed Bk. 13 p. 558)

On Jan. 8, 1783, ELIAS WARD, of Halifax Co. sold to SAM'L FOREMAN of Edgecomb Co. 383 acres along Fishing Creek to "DAVID WARD'S old patent line."

MARY T. WARD relinquishes all her rights to this tract of land, "my son, ELIAS, sold to SAMUEL FOREMAN." Witnesses were: DANIEL WARD, ROBERT WARD, ELIJAH WARD.

Because MARY relinquishes her right to this tract of land conveyed by her son, the assumption is that JAMES WARD, her husband, was deceased at that time and ELIAS was his heir. Since we do not have the names of the other children of JAMES and MARY WARD, it is not possible to definitely identify DANIEL and ELIJAH WARD, who witnessed this deed, as ELIAS brothers. The third witness was ROBERT WARD, father of NANCY and Uncle of ELIAS. Since JAMES WARD SR. was deceased in 1777, the 1794 will of HOWELL must refer to another.

In his will, besides his son-in-law, JAMES WARD, THOMAS HOWELL names a son MATTHEW HOWELL, and daughters, PATIENCE PACE, JANE BUTT and SARAH PITMAN, wife of ELIJAH, and also a grandson, WILLIAM SKINNER.

DANIEL GARRETT of Tyrrell Co., from whence DAVID WARD removed to Edgecomb died about 1735. He mentions in his will his sons THOMAS, DANIEL, JAMES and JOHN GARRETT and his daughters MARY WARD and ELIZABETH RHODES. His sons DANIEL GARRETT JR. and JOHN were to act as executors. He also names his grandsons THOMAS GARRETT, son of JAMES, and DANIEL GARRETT, and STEPHEN COOPER. (Book I p. 19 Tyrrell Co.)

We believe that this was too early for the marriage of JAMES, son of DAVID WARD of Tyrrell for we know that his brother, ROBERT, to whom DAVID also devised land in Oct. 1768 was married after 1760 since his father-in-law, BENJAMINE DICKENS, only removed to Halifax Co., N.C. from Caroline Co. Va. in that year. In fact, ROBERT'S eldest daughter, NANCY, was born in 1771, so we estimate that he married MARY DICKENS about 1765-68.

DAVID WARD, father of the Halifax trio, JOHN, JAMES and ROBERT, had wife, MARY, whom he must have married between 1735 and 1740 or earlier and MARY WARD the daughter of DANIEL GARRETT definitely could have been the wife of DAVID as far as proximity and dates as well as names are concerned. However, since the will of PHILIP WARD of Bertie Co., under date of 1777 names his wife, MARY, and his children, JAMES, DANIEL, GEORGE, MICHAEL, MARY, MILLICENT, ELIZABETH and SARAH PHILIPS, it seems probable that he instead of DAVID WARD, may have married the daughter of DANIEL GARRETT. DAVID very likely married MARY WILEY, dau. or sister of JAMES.

The records of Tyrrell Co. offer an alternate solution of the marriage of JAMES, son of DAVID.

The will of THOMAS DANIELS, dated 11 July 1749 and probated September of that year in Tyrrell names his wife, ELIZABETH, his son, ROBERT LANIER, THOMAS, JOHN, WILLIAM and THOMAS DANIEL and his daughters, SARAH WILSON, ELIZABETH and MARY.

The will of his wife, ELIZABETH DANIEL was proved in June of 1752. She names her sons ROBERT, THOMAS, JOHN, WILLIAM, AARON and JOSIAH DANIELS and her daughters ELIZABETH, MARY WARD, RUTH and PRISCILLA. She also mentions JEMINA, the daughter of WILLIAM and MARY WILLS (or WILLIS?)

This latter will was recorded in both Tyrrell and Beaufort Cos. and there is no doubt that these are the wills of husband and wife even though each names children not mentioned by the other in all identifying six sons and five daughters. This was quite a large family and we are not certain whether the dau., MARY, married between 1749 and 1752 or that the father simply failed to give her last name as her married name. This would make a difference but since he gives the married name of SARAH, we assume MARY was not married in 1749, but before 1752 became the wife of JAMES WARD.

If we could definitely identify the DANIEL WARD, who was residing in Edgecomb Co. in 1790 and who probably is the same one who witnessed the deed of ELIAS WARD, son of JAMES, in 1783, we could more nearly solve the problem of which MARY married who. However, because of dates and places, we believe that PHILIP WARD married MARY GARRETT, that JAMES married MARY DANIELS and that DANIEL WARD of Edgecomb Co. was his son.

MARY, the wife of ROBERT WARD, was the daughter of BENJAMINE DICKEN and wife, ANN, of Fishing Creek in Halifax Co., N.C. to which locality he came from Caroline Co., Va. in 1760.

"On Oct. 7, 1760 THOMAS BARROW and his wife of Halifax Co., N.C. conveyed to BENJAMINE DICKENS of the county of Caroline and the Parish of St. Margarets in Va., 320 acres of land being one half of 640 acres granted to JAMES COTTON on 14 April 1740 beginning at a white oak on the North side of Fishing Cr. to a red oak on the great Pecosin thence adj. to Crocker's Corner.

This deed was witnessed by W. HUDSON and JOHN MOY.

The WARDS of Princess Ann Co., Va. are closely identified with the MOY family of that area and we find both MOYS and BARROWS in Beaufort Co., N.C.

The will of DICKENS for whom DICKENS WARD, son of ROBERT and MARY WARD, was named, is dated 24 Nov. 1790 and probated May 1794 in Halifax Co. N.C.

1. The first named devisee is his daughter, MARY WARD, to whom he left three negroes JOE, ROSE and EDIE. (This negro ROSE, was still living in 1815 when ROBERT WARD died and left her to his unmarried daughter SUSANNAH WARD).
2. To his daughter, ELIZABETH WILSON, DICKENS left three servants, DIANAH, MARTIN and BEADIE; and household furniture in her possession.
3. Daughter ANN LOWRY, was to have two negroes, TAB and SIMON and household furniture.
4. Daughter MARTHA, four negroes, CHINA, RODA, DAVA and her choice of another, out of the estate, after her mother's death. Also, one feather bed and furniture and one horse, saddle and bridle.
5. Daughter DELPHIA, four negroes, CINDE, SIMON and JOE and the second choice of negroes, after her mother's death. Also, one feather bed and furniture, and one horse and saddle, etc.
6. Son, BENJ. DICKENS JR. the land and plantation he hath on Deep Creek and other things he hath got.
7. Son, LEWIS DICKENS, the land and plantation I bought of the estate of JOHN ALSOBROOK, one feather bed and furniture and half of the movable estate that did belong to his bro., EPHRIAM DICKENS, decd. and half of the estate that falls to me by his grandmother. The other half of each estate to WM. DICKENS.
8. Son, WILLIAM DICKENS, all the land over the creek in Edgecomb Co. that did belong to my son, EPHRIAM DICKENS, decd.; also, stock. horse, bridle and furniture.
9. To my son, RICHARD DICKENS, my land and plantation on which I now live after his mother's decease, also negro boy, ANDREW.

   To my grandson, THOMAS LOWRY, a piece of land on the back swamp that was owned by my son, EPHRIAM, decd. when he comes of age; also one negro girl, LETTIE.

   The rest of my estate to my wife, ANN DICKENS and after her marriage or decease to be equally divided among all my daughters; MARY, ELIZABETH, ANN, MARTHA and DELPHIA.

   My three sons to serve as executors of my estate.

   Wits: JNO. ALSOBROOK, EPHRIAM DICKENS, JAS. SLATTOCK.

There is a brief biography of BENJAMINE DICKENS in "A History of the Higgs Family of England and America." p. 415.

"BENJ. DICKENS was a large land owner in Halifax Co. At the outbreak of the Rev. War, he was too old to serve, but furnished large quantities of supplies. By profession he was a Civil Engineer and helped lay out the town of Tarboro. He was chairman of the commission which established the line between Halifax and Edgecomb counties. One of his daughters was the mother of General LOUIS DICKENS WILSON, a member of the State Legislature 1830-1840. He organized a company to go to Mexico at the outbreak of the Mexican War. While there he died. On the Tarboro commons is a granite monument erected to the memory of this soldier and the county of Wilson, as well as the town of Wilson is named after him.

The record of Caroline Co., Va., from whence DICKENS came to Edgecomb, are mostly destroyed. Campbell's "Colonial Caroline" attempts to establish a history of that county from remaining fragments of which among other items, is an entry from court orders to the effect that MARY DICKENS in 1745 was named executor of the estate of BENJ. DICKENS. (p. 472)

This bit of information gives strong evidence that BENJ. DICKENS of Caroline Co., Va. later of Halifax Co., N.C. was BENJAMINE JR., the son of MARY and BENJ. DICKENS SR. who died in 1745. Probably his mother was still living in 1790 when he wrote his will for he speaks of part of an estate which he expects from her or his sons' grandmother.

His daughter, MARY probably his eldest, was born about the time of DICKENS SENIOR'S death or a little later.

In 1763, NORMAN DICKENS, of Caroline, was made guardian of GEORGE, FRANCES, ELIZABETH, JOHN, EUCLID and THOMAS WHITLOCK orphans of JOHN WHITLOCK. (p. 491)

In 1770, NORMAN DICKENS, WM. WATKINS, REUBEN GEORGE and THOMAS DICKENS were placed in charge of the estate of GEORGE WHITLOCK (p. 482) and in 1771, NORMAN DICKENS was made admx. of the estate of MARY RALLS, who probably was his mother or sister.

If this is MARY, mother of BENJ. DICKEN'S, then the grandmother of whom he spoke in his 1790 will, was the mother of his wife, ANN.

In Culpeper Co., Va. which adjoins Caroline, the will of CHRISTOPHER DICKENS was probated. This will was dated Aug. 21, 1778. He mentions his sons, CHRISTOPHER, RICHARD, BENJAMINE, WILLIAM, and his daughters, SUSANNAH RENDER, BETTY BARDINE, SARAH and WINIFRED. He states that his estate to be divided amongst his other fifteen children. His executors were his sons, RICHARD, BENJAMINE and JOHN DICKENS and his trusty friend, HENRY LEWIS. Because of significance of names we believe that CHRISTOPHER DICKENS was either brother or uncle of BENJAMINE DICKENS of Halifax Co. This could be equally true of NORMAN and THOMAS DICKENS of Caroline.

ANN DICKENS, wife of BENJAMINE II), was the daughter of ROBERT LOWREY who made his will on 4 July 1768 in Edgecomb Co., N.C. It was probated in April 1774, and names his wife, ANN, seven sons and six daughters.

The sons were JOHN, PETER, LEWIS, RICHARD, JAMES, WILLIAM and ROBERT LOWREY. The daughters were MARY COLLINS, ANN DICKENS, BETTY STANFIELD, SARAH MAY (or MOY), FRANKEY LANGFORD and JEMIMA WATTS. The witnesses of this will were WILLIAM COOK, ISAAC BEACHAM, ALEXANDER CLARK and the executors were LOWREY'S wife, ANN, BENJ. DICKENS and his son, JOHN LOWREY.

NANCY WARD, the daughter of ROBERT WARD, and his wife, MARY DICKENS, was born 1771. She was third named in a will which lists her youngest brother and an unmarried sister, SUSANNAH, before her.

Her mother, MARY DICKENS, daughter of BENJAMINE, and ANN DICKENS, was first named in her father's will, by estimation would have been born about 1745-1750.

MARY DICKENS' mother, ANN LOWRY, was named as second daughter of ROBERT and ANN LOWRY and was by estimation born 1720-25.

Because LEWIS LOWREY is named as the third son of ROBERT and ANN LOWREY, some research was done in the Caroline Co., Va. area and in the indicated counties of N.C. and Southeast Virginia in LEWIS records.

In Caroline County, the very sparce records preserved by Campbell in "Colonial Caroline" show that a JAMES LEWIS was a member of the first court of that county when it was made in 1727-28 from Essex, King and Queen and King William counties. (p. 353) In 1745, he was appointed constable of Caroline. (p. 262) In 1761, JAMES LEWIS died and his estate was admx. by ROBERT LOWRY, HERNDON, COLLINS and WORTHAM, (p. 477) but in 1762 it was admx. by JUDITH, JAMES and JOHN LEWIS. In 1765, at least part of the estate of JAMES LEWIS, was inventoried in Culpeper Co. In P.A. Co. Records Vol. I p. 4, d. 10 Feb. 1701 JOHN JAMES SR. and wife, SUSANNAH, made a Deed of Gift to MARY LEWIS, wife of RICHARD LEWIS. Later there is mention, in them, of JAMES LEWIS.

According to "Marriages of Essex and Old Rappahannock Co." by WILKERSON, JAMES LEWIS married in 1721 ELIZABETH, daughter of RICHARD LONG.

In 1732-34, ROBERT LOWRY was owner of two slaves which means that he was married at that time and a householder. (p. 330 Colonial Caroline)

In 1760, in Caroline Co. ROBERT LOWRY, HENRY BURK, SAMUEL WORTHAM and THOS. COLLINS were executors of the estate of SARAH BROWN. (p. 476) Recall that LOWRY, JOHN COLLINS and WORTHAM were admx. of JAMES LEWIS in 1761.

THOMAS LOWRY and SAM'L HAWES were both members of the last colonial court of Caroline Co. (p. 228)

In 1774, JOHN COLLINS was guardian to THOS. LOWRY, son of WILLIAM, and THOS. COLLINS for WM. LOWRY JR. (p. 493)

We believe that these LOWRYS are descendants of WILLIAM LOWRY JR. who in 1724 was left land in Essex and King & Queen counties, Va., by his father, WILLIAM LOWRY of Elizabeth City Co., just across the bay from Norfolk Co., Va. where in 1686/7 an older WILLIAM LOWREY of the kingdom of Scotland left a will dated 23 Jan.

and Proved 15 March of that year in Norfolk Co., Va.

The latter named his wife, JENIT ANDERSON, made his son JAMES, his heir "if he appear in this country"; mentions all his children, but not by name, and names his executors, Mr. THOS. SCOTT, Mr. FRANCIS MAKEMIA and YATXABY LOWRY or YOXLE YLOURIE (LOWRY).

WILLIAM LOWRY of Elizabeth City, who died in 1724, names his deceased dau., ANN KIRBIE, wife of THOS.; his son, WILLIAM, lands in Essex and King & Queen Cos.; his daughter, MARGARET, and her husband, RICHARD BOOKER, to whom he left all his money in Ireland and England.

He also remembered his daus.-in-law, MARTHA TABB, MARY LOWRY and JANE LOWRY.

He names his grandchildren, WILLIAM BOOKER, WILLIAM LOWRY and FRANCIS LOWRY and he made executors, THOS. KIRBIE and JOHN LOWRY, his son.

WILLIAM and SUSANNAH TUCKER and NICHOLAS McKAY were witnesses.

JOHN LOWRY of Elizabeth City Co., son of WILLIAM of the 1724 will, died in the same county in 1766. He left sons, JOHN, THOMAS, WILLIAM, dau. FRANCES STEPHENSON and grandchildren MARY and JOHN TABB. The sons, THOMAS and JOHN were given land which their father had formerly purchased in Lunenberg Co.

JAMES LOWRY, the son of WILLIAM LORRY of the Kingdom of Scotland, who died in Norfolk Co. 1686/7, evidently met the condition of his father's will and came to Va. His will is recorded there in Bk. F. p. 49 D. 9 July 1716 and P. May 1718/19.

He left sons, WILLIAM LOWRY, JAMES, JOHN, JACOB, ROBERT and THOMAS, also, daughters PHILLIS, MARY, MARGARET and JANE. His wife, JUDITH, was made executor.

We believe that ROBERT LOWRY, who died in Chowan Co., N.C. in 1680, may have been a sonof WILLIAM I) of the kingdom of Scotland. Later another ROBERT, a WILLIAM and JOSEPH LOWRY left wills in Pasquotank Co., N.C.

They were either sons of JAMES of Norfolk or this early ROBERT LOWRY of N.C.

ROBERT, of Pasquotank Co., was named executor of the will of WM. WAYMAN in that county in 1740 and MARY, HANNA, THAMER, THOMAS and ROBERT LOWRY were the Legatees. ROBERT and MARY LOWRY were witnesses. WAYMAN was a relative, perhaps father or brother of LOWRY'S wife, and the LOWRY children his nieces & nephews or grandchildren.

LOWRY'S will was probated in 1752 in Pasquotank Co., N.C. at which time his wife and executrix was ELIZABETH. His sons, there-in named, were WILLIAM, ROBERT and JOHN and his daughters "BETCY" and MARY LOWRY.

WILLIAM LOWRY, contemporary of ROBERT, died in the same county in 1751. Perhaps it's only a coincident that both of their wills are dated 19 Oct. 1750. He also had wife, ELIZABETH, and children, ROBERT, JOHN and MARY.

JOSEPH LOWRY of Pasquotank Co., died 1750/51. He left sons BENJAMINE and NOAH, daughters SARAH, LYDIA and HANNAH and the witnesses to his will were JOHN and THOMAS LOWRY.

With all of these LOWRY'S with similar names and living so near, still we know that ROBERT LOWRY of Halifax Co. was most likely to have been the son of WILLIAM III), son of WILLIAM II) of Elizabeth City Co. who was left land in Essex and King and Queen Cos. in 1724 which was cut off in Caroline Co. in 1727. These records are mostly gone so we have no will of WILLIAM III) of that county. We must stick to this as a fact, because only in Caroline Co., Va. could BENJ. DICKENS have met and married ANN LOWRY.

We believe though that WILLIAM LOWRY of Essex, married in 1732 a second wife, MARY, who was a widow. (Legislative Jouranl of Va. Vol. II p. 798)

However, we feel certain that ROBERT LOWRY of Halifax Co. formerly of Caroline was a son of WILLIAM by an earlier marriage born about 1700-1705.

The fact that he acted as executor of the estate of JAMES LEWIS in 1760 and that his daughter, ANN DICKENS, had a son, LEWIS DICKENS, invites a speculation that perhaps ANN, the wife of ROBERT LOWRY, was before her marriage, ANN LEWIS, or that his mother was a LEWIS.

In Halifax Co. 10 Jan. 1744, JOHN POPE of Edgecomb, conveyed to RICHARD LEWIS of sd. county, planter, for £50 Va. money 400 acres in Edgecomb Co. on the north side of Fishing Creek beginning at a mulberry at Col. THOS. POLLOCK'S corner, part of a patent."

In 1760, the will of RICHARD LEWIS of Fishing Creek was probated in Halifax Co. He named his sons NICHOLAS, THOMAS, and WILLIAM, and daughters, CHARITY and ANN LEWIS, to whom he left a negro girl, JUDITH. He also mentions grandsons RICHARD C. HILL and LEWIS HILL. This RICHARD may have been the son of RICHARD LEWIS, who died in 1746 and had daus. MARY and PATIENCE.

"Edgecomb Co. Marriages" by GRIFFIN and WILLIAMS, is authority for the fact that JOHN CROWELL, WILLIAM WHITEHEAD, and JACOB POPE all married, before 1744, daughters of RICHARD LEWIS. (p. 338)

It begins to look as if the LEWIS family to whom the DICKENS family was connected, through ANN, wife of BENJ. DICKENS, had its seat originally in S. E. Va. or N. E. North Carolina or that they removed thence some years before BENJAMINE DICKENS did.

JOHN WARD of Tyrrell Co. N.C. father of DAVID of Halifax

DAVID WARD of Halifax Co. N.C. and Georgetown Dist. S.C. was the son of JOHN WARD, whose residence was situated in Tyrrell while most of his land holdings lay in Beaufort Co. on Little Contentna Creek.

The first land grant to this JOHN WARD was made at Edenton on 26 July 1743 but he was in Tyrrell as early as 1729, as we shall prove later.

In Febraury, 1739, JOHN WARD, THOMAS HAWKINS, JAMES SMITH, JOHN BUTLER and STEPHEN LEE were among those summoned in Tyrrell for jury service.

On the same date in Chowan Co., THOMAS WARD, JOHN WARD SR., JOHN WARD JR. another THOMAS WARD, MICHAEL WARD and THOMAS GARRETT were summoned. (N.C. Colonial Records Vol. IV)

It is fortunate that we have these lists, for it helps us to place other WARDS in their proper settings and proves there were two JOHN WARDS of early N.C.

The land grant of July 26, 1743 which was applied for at Edenton on WARD'S plea that he had imported five whites into the colony, was refused probably because he had been in the colony too long to be classed as an immigrant.

The land applied for was a "500 acre tract in Beaufort Co. at the head of Little Contentna Creek, the land on which MICHAEL WARD now lives." WARD had three months in which to prove his right and evidently he failed, for a notation on the patent. states it was not granted.

On 22 Nov. 1744, at Newburn, JAMES SMITH, JOHN SMITH and JOHN WARD all received patents to tracts of land. JAMES SMITH'S was for 405 acres in Tyrrell, JOHN SMITH'S for 200 acres in the same county and JOHN WARD'S for 640 a. in adjoining Beaufort County. The one to WARD is copied below:

"GEORGE the second, To all to whom -- know ye that We have given and granted unto JOHN WARD a tract of land containing 6 hundred and forty acres lying and being in Beaufort County beginning at a pine on ye north side of Little Contanknee, (Contentna) running east 320 poles and through the swamp to a pine, thence 320 poles to an oak, thence 320 poles to a pine and thence 320 poles to the first station, to hold - yielding and paying four shillings proclamation money yearly for every hundred acres. Seating (?) the same according to his rights, clearing and cultivating three acres for every hundred within three years and those————————the auditor within six months" --

Dated 21 Nov. 1744 and signed by GAB JOHNSTON Esq. spoken of in the 1743 grant as "His Majesties Capt., General and Governor in Chief over said province."

Just over three years after receiving the patent to this section of land, presumedly shortly after he had met the condition for clearing, JOHN WARD conveyed a total of 485 acres lying on Little Contaneeke Creek in Beaufort Co., in three separate parcels to JOHN WARD JR., MICHAEL WARD and JOHN OVERSTREET. These plots of land adjoined one another, were all on Little Contentna and deeds all dated January 28, 1747/48. They were all registered in Beaufort in September, 1748 and the non-participating parties of one deed were the witnesses of the others. Thus JOHN OVERSTREET and JOHN WARD JR. witnessed the deed to MICHAEL WARD, who witnessed the deed to each of the other, etc., and each of the conveyances was signed by JOHN and wife, ELIZABETH WARD. Even though the land lay in Beaufort and the deeds were properly recorded there, JOHN WARD is spoken of as of Tyril Co., Province of N.C.

The deed to MICHAEL WARD was for 160 acres in Beaufort "land already in his tenue and occupancy," so it is probable that this section of 640 acres contained the 500 acres for which JOHN WARD applied in 1743, "on which MICHAEL WARD was then living."

A little more than a year later on 5 March 1748/49, JOHN WARD of Tyrrell Co. made his will which was recorded in 1750. In it he identifies the grantees of the Beaufort Co. deeds as his children and names two more, his son, DAVID, who was the father of ROBERT WARD of Halifax Co. N.C., and a second daughter, ELIZABETH NOBLE.

1. To his dearly beloved wife, (ELIZABETH) he left his manner plantation in the county of Terryl with all his stock of cattle, sheep and horses, a negro man named TOM, and all my household furniture until the day of her marriage or death
2. To his son, MICHAEL WARD, after death of his wife, £35 Va. money which is due by bond from CALEB HOWELL of Beaufort Co.
3. To his son, JOHN WARD, a negro man named TOM, with the cows and calves running on Little Cantanknee.
4. To his son, DAVID WARD, (who had not received any land by deed), he left his home plantation containing about 180 acres, after the death or marriage of his wife.
5. To his daughter, ELIZABETH NOBEL, a plantation of 140 acres of land being in Terryl Co., on which she now lives, after the death of my said wife, and ten head of cattle.
6. To DORCAS OVERSTREET 100 acres on Little Contentna adjacent JOHN WARD'S land. This was in addition to the 165 acres to her husband by deed.

The residue of the estate to be equally divided between MICHAEL, JOHN and DAVID WARD and ELIZABETH NOBLE. MICHAEL and JOHN WARD JR. were named executors. The will was signed with JOHN WARD'S mark which was a sprawling capital E. and it was witnessed by GRIFFITH HOWELL, JOHN and ELIZABETH BUTLER, the latter making his mark with an E turned on its' face.

In Terrell Co., two days before the registration of the will of JOHN WARD, on 14 May 1750, CORNELIUS FITZPATRIC of that county on 12 May 1750, conveyed to JOHN WARD of the same county and state a parcel of land on the North side of Alligator Ridge in Tyrrell Co., commonly called Cow Ridge, 125 acres. (D. Bk. II p. 415 Tyrrell Co. N.C.) Too late to have been in the will.

In the next decade there is no grantor deed showing disposition of this property, but DAVID WARD, last named son of JOHN WARD SR. in his 1750 will, sold his father's home plantation to JAS. HOWELL in 1754.

"DAVID WARD of Tyrrell Co. N.C. for £12 and 10 shillings current money of Va. from JAMES HOWELL --- 180 acres of land and plantation on which said DAVID now lives, land being in Tyrell and Beaufort counties on the south side of Bear Grass Swamp and joining to JOHN WARD and bequeathed to said DAVID WARD by his father, JOHN WARD, deceased; P. June 1755, and W. by JOHN SWINSON and THOS. HOLLY.

This deed, dated 9 Nov. 1754, was signed by DAVID WARD and his wife, MARY WARD, and this is the only clue we have to the idenity of DAVID'S wife. There are reasons to believe that DAVID married a WILEY, but no proof.

The 1755 tax list of Tyrrell Co. enumerates only a WILLIAM WARD and FRANCIS WARD as owning property, although JAMES and ELIZABETH sold land in that county to JOHN LEE in 1760 and ROBERT WARD to ALEX. MACKELAND in 1759.

The fact that DAVID WARD sold his land five years after his father's death indicates that ELIZABETH, the wife of JOHN WARD SR., had either remarried or was deceased for according to the terms of the latter's will, DAVID would not be in full possession until one of those conditions was met.

We believe that DAVID moved immediately to Edgecomb, later Halifax Co. N.C. where he had been granted 283 acres on April 30, 1753, and an undisclosed acreage on 20 April 1745. He was to receive still another grant on 11 May 1756. The first two of these plantations he gave to his sons JOHN, JAMES and ROBERT WARD, as we have already recounted in the Halifax story.

When Pitt Co. N.C. was created in 1760, JOHN WARD'S two elder sons MICHAEL and JOHN JR., who lived on the land conveyed to them by their father, in Beaufort County, were cut off in Pitt.

By deed and by will, we have found that JOHN WARD SR. of Tyrrell conveyed a total of 905 acres, 265 acres more than the patent of 640 acres which was his of 22 Nov. 1744.

One hundred and 40 acres of this surplus was no doubt in the 140 acres place which WARD gave by will to his daughter, ELIZ. NOBLE and which lay in Tyrrell Co.

The other surplus, or part of it, is accounted for in the homeplace of 180 acres which was left to the young son, DAVID WARD, and which lay in both Tyrrell and Beaufort Cos. The 100 acres needed in Beaufort to make up the full 640 acres, after WARD'S deeds to JOHN JR., MICHAEL and JOHN OVERSTREET (husband of DORCAS) for a total of 485 acres, was partly taken care of in his will for an additional 100 acres to DORCAS OVERSTREET in Beaufort, the land lying on Little Contentna adj. JOHN WARD.

This means that the 180 acres to DAVID WARD and 140 acres to ELIZABETH NOBLE, most of it in Tyrrell, came to JOHN WARD by other means than the 1744 grant.

However, the history of Tyrrell Co. before 1739 was checkered and varied and at different times its' lands were considered a part of Chowan, Albermarle or Bertie counties, before Tyrrell was created in 1729 or before it began keeping its' own records about 1735 to 1739.

Records of JOHN WARD'S family in Tyrrell are very sparce because, as we have seen, only a small portion of his land fell in that county. (140 acres to ELIZ. NOBLE and part of 180 acres to DAVID WARD).

There are no other references to DAVID WARD there, after he sold in 1754 and moved to Edgecomb and no

further records at all of NOBLES and OVERSTREETS in that countys' immediate records. Therefore, it is necessary to investigate the records of Beaufort Co. created 1712 from extinct Bath, and of Pitt Co. N.C. made in 1760 from Beaufort, in order to determine how the additional 320 acres came to JOHN WARD SR. of Tyrrell Co. N.C.

Unfortunately, Beaufort Co. has never allowed its' records to be filmed for libraries and so one must go to its' county seat, Washington N.C., personally or send someone. A large number of the records of Pitt Co. were destroyed by fire many years ago and that is an added handicap in local research.

The compiler was fortunate in having the help of Mrs. GERTRUDE SODERBURG, recently of Pitt Co. but now of Washington, D.C., who was familiar with the records of both of these counties.

However, before we discuss these counties, there are some documents in Bertie at which we should take a look because Bertie Co. was formed in 1722 from Bath and Chowan after Beaufort was created from the former in 1712 and there doesn't seem to be a clear distinction between the Bath Co. records in the early files of these two North Carolina counties.

A JAMES MURRARY and wife, ELIZABETH, of Bertie Co. divided a tract of 300 acres lying at the fork of Casey Swamp and at Whotten Swamp between a JOHN WARD, SAM'L PRESTON and THOS. BRIGMAN' These deeds are all dated 10 Nov.1729 and are recorded on pages 156, 157 and 167 of Bk. C. Bertie Co.

They, no doubt, are part of the settlement of an estate but JOHN WARD'S part is only 100 acres and as yet we have not located Whatten and Casey Swamps, so are not certain of the idenity of this JOHN WARD, of these deeds.

Other WARD deeds listed in the Bertie index of that early period are:

JOHN WARD from OWEN MACK DANIEL - Bk. D. p. 185-1734
DANIEL WARD from JOHN BARFIELD - Bk. F. p. 29-1735
THOMAS WARD from THOS. KIRBIE - Bk. D. p. 245-1733
THOMAS WARD from ROBERT EDWARDS - Bk. F. p. 293-1741
MICHAEL WARD from JOHN WILLIAMS - Bk. F. p. 362-1742
PHILIP WARD from WM. WARD - Bk. H p. 3 - 1753.

There are two deeds 1756 and 1757 to RICHARD WARD from MICHAEL WARD both recorded in Book H. and two from WM. BENTLEY; the first in 1755 to a JOHN WARD and the second in 1757 to LUKE WARD.

When we began to look for these persons in Tyrrell and Beaufort Counties we found the following deeds indexed in Tyrrell:

JETHRO BUTLER from OWEN MACDANELL - Bk. 1 p. 7 - 1736
WM. BENTLEY from JOHN BENTLEY SR. - Bk. 1 p. 18 - 1736
JOSEPH MOORE from THOMAS BRIDGEMON - Bk. 2 p. 33 - 1748

This must be the THOMAS BRIDGEMAN who received land on Casey and Watton Swamp at the same time that JOHN WARD and SAM'L PRESTON did, so we presume that the swamps, so designated, are not far distant and that the 100 acres from MURRAY to WARD accounts for that many of the missing acres of JOHN WARD SR. of Tyrrell.

Finding JOHN WARD and THOMAS BRIDGEMAN and PRESTONS (or PRESCOTT) in the same vicinity at the same appropriate time pretty well proves that JOHN WARD of Tyrrell was the JOHN WARD of the 1729 MURRAY deeds which appears to be a division of property. Was ELIZABETH the wife of JOHN WARD, a relative of MURRAY, or his wife ELIZABETH? Perhaps their daughter or niece or sister?

MURRAY is a Princess Ann Co., Va. family name and there are PRESTONS and many PRESCOTT records in Norfolk and P.A. Cos. Va. as well as Pitt Co. N.C.

On Nov. 1708, GEORGE BECK, of the county of Bath (later Beaufort and part of Bertie) in the government of N.C., Cooper, appointed his trusty and beloved friend, JOHN MURRAY of P.A. Co. Va., attorney to dispose of land in Norfolk Town, which formerly belonged to JANE LAWSON, to Mr. SAMUEL SMITH, (Norfolk Co. D. Bk. 10 p. 44).

In 1712, JAMES and ANN MACKOY of Precinct of Beaufort, County of Bath, appointed JOHN MURAY of P.A. Co. Va. to sell land to BENJAMINE ROBERTS. Wits: LYONELE and GRACE REDDING. (Deeds of Norfolk

Co. Va. 1710 - 1719 p. 176) MACOY was nephew of JOHN MURRAY and grandson of DAVID MURRAY SR. of Norfolk.

In June 1725, DAVID MURRAY JR. lived on the western side of the Eastern Branch of Elizabeth River adj. WM. BOLIHE, JOHN STORKE, JOHN MURDEN and JOHN STANLEY. This record is from Norfolk Co. Bk. F. p. 171.

This particular record is especially interesting because it says that there were two DAVID MURRAYS in South Eastern Va. the older of whom died in 1693 and left a will in Norfolk (Va. Wills and Administration) could have been the grandfather of DAVID WARD, son of JOHN WARD of Tyrrell.

At least part of the 300 acres from MURRY to WARD, BRIDGEMAN and PRESTON, had been conveyed to him by JOHN EDWARDS and his wife ELIZABETH, on Aug. 11, 1729. The witnesses were THOMAS and MARY RHODES. This brings up the possibility of a WARD-EDWARDS relationship. We found in Halifax Co. that DAVID WARDS 1753 patent was adjacent to land of NATHANIEL EDWARDS and there are numerous indefinite but significant associations of the EDWARDS and MURRAY family members in the Va. counties.

The legacy of MURRAY to WARD was 100 acres. The other acres lacking identity in JOHN WARD'S estate, are represented in the deed in Bertie to one of that name from OWNE MACK DANIEL in 1734. We have seen that JETHO BUTLER received land of this same OWEN MACDANELL in Tyrrell in 1736 and a JOHN BUTLER and wife ELIZABETH, were witnesses there in 1748 to JOHN WARD'S will.

In the Bertie deed MACKDANIEL to JOHN WARD, the consideration was for 320 acres on Flatt Swamp, part of a patent in 1729 to MARTIN COONMAN. The witnesses were JOHN and ISAAC HARRILL. (Bertie Co. B. D. p. 185) DAVID WARD'S deed to HOWELL, prove that JOHN WARD SR. of Tyrrell lived on Flatt Swamp so we conclude that the part of his plantation on which he lived and which he devised to DAVID was part of the acreage from MACKDANIEL, the other part to ELIZABETH NOBLE.

If JOHN WARD lived in Tyrrell immediately after the 1729 deed from MURRY (or perhaps even before) he may have been the first or certainly one of the first WARDS to live in that part of North Carolina.

In 1744, DENNIS GIBSON (or GLISSON?) conveyed property to EDWARD WARD (D. Bk. 1 p. 252) and from 1740 to 1760, ANN and WILLIAM WARD conveyed numerous holdings all in Tyrrell but never lived there.

JOHN, EDWARD and WILLIAM are the identical names of the sons of JOHN WARD of the 1733 will of Princess Ann Co. Va. but JOHN of Tyrrell, was residing in North Carolina too early to have been spoken of as of P.A. Co. Va. in the deeds in which he disposed of his inheritance in 1739. And of course there is no proven relationship between the three in early Terrell Co.

There was a JOHN WARD of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River who, with his wife, ELIZABETH, made a deed in Norfolk Co., dated 14 June 1728 to WILLIAM and RICHARD PRICE of the same county and state and acknowledged in court 15 Nov. 1728. This deed was for 107 acres of land inherited by JOHN WARD from his father, JOHN WARD SR.

This deed is also signed with a similar mark to a sprawling E but quite a bit neater, which may have been the result of the difference in age of the subjeet in 1728 and 1748; or of the clerk's ability to accurately copy the identification mark of this JOHN WARD.

So far, this is the only JOHN WARD that we have found of this exact era who had a wife, ELIZABETH.

Without pains-taking scrutiny of all other WARD doeuments of this age and general locality, it is premature to definitely state that JOHN WARD of the W.B.E.R. in 1728 is the same as JOHN WARD 1729, of the Tyrrell area but this is the strongest clue that we have.

The 1730 tax-list of Norfolk Co. Va. does show JOHN and THOMAS WARD as taxpayers in the W.B.E.R. but

this does not necessarily mean that JOHN was still living there. He may have been an absentee land owner or this may have been another JOHN WARD, son of THOMAS or JOSEPH, brothers of JOHN with wife ELIZABETH. The latter is probably the case as we know of no other property in Norfolk owned by JOHN who sold in 1728.

Another citizen of early Tyrrell was FRANCIS WARD, who served as the first clerk of that county. ("History of Tyrrell Co. N.C." by) He was there not later than 1736 and probably some earlier.

In 1758, after the death of JOHN WARD, a ROBERT WARD conveyed to ALEXANDER MACK LENDON, both of Tyrrell Co. for £16, a plantation where said MACK CLENDON now lives", 190 a. lying and being in the county of Tyrrell standing by Beaver's Dam and east 147 poles to JOHN WOOLEY'S line adj. FREDERICK JONES as by patent granted to STEPHEN LEE and by LEE conveyed to SAMUEL DURRANCE and by deed of sale dated 1741, conveyed to ROBERT WARD by JOHN HOOKER, sheriff, W. THOS. GARRETT, FRANCIS WARD.

ROBERT WARD also owned land in Terrell which he purchased of BENJ. MANNING.

While there is no known connection to the family of JOHN WARD SR. of Tyrrell, it is worth noting that MANNINGS were of Norfolk Co. and MACLENDONS of P.A. Co. Va.

There is a deed recorded in Beaufort Co., as of 1731, EDWARD WARD and his wife, ELIZABETH, surviving heirs of JOHN ALDRIDGE, decd. The deed was witnessed by ROBERT WARD and recorded in Bk. 2 p. 82. EDWARD and ROBERT are later of Pitt. We believe they are the same as those in Tyrrell, although shown in different counties because of boundary adjustments.

In Beaufort Co., there are no references to WARDS or OVERSTREETS in the 1755 tax-list but a JOHN NOBLE is there.

In Pitt Co. there are a few further references to NOBLES who possibly were the in-laws of ELIZABETH WARD dau. of JOHN.

In June 1762, THOMAS NOBLE of Pitt Co. received, by patent, a tract of land in that county on Cowford Br. on the east side of Briery Swamp and on 20 May 1762 THOMAS NOBLE of Pitt conveyed to JOHN NOBLE for £5 proclamation money, a tract of land about 100 acres in the Briery Swamp area. (Deed Bk. B. p. 137 and Deed Bk. p. 97 Pitt Co.)

It's possible that this is the same tract of land and THOMAS NOBLE conveyed it to his son shortly before it was confirmed to him.

We believe that JOHN was the son of THOMAS and husband of ELIZABETH WARD NOBLE.

In May 1762, ISAAC NOBLES made a conveyance to JOHN MOY and in 1761 JONATHAN JOLLY made one to THOMAS NOBLES.

MICHAEL WARD, the first named son of JOHN of Tyrrell in his 1748/49 will, was probably the oldest son, and if so, according to the custom of that day, would have been named for his paternal grandfather.

WILLIAM MOORE and ELIAS BERGERON were the two persons in Pitt most closely associated with MICHAEL and his son, THOMAS.

On 6 of June 1762, the Earl of Granville granted to WILLIAM MOORE of Pitt Co. a tract in that county on the South side of Tar River on both sides of Ward's Run at MICHAEL WARD'S line. (D. Bk. B. p. 322)

In P.A. County Va., WILLIAM, JAMES, GEORGE and EDWARD are favorite names in several generations of MOORES who were closely associated with the MOY family who in turn were associated or connected with the family of THOMAS and ROBERT WARD, 1650 to 1760.

In Tyrrell, JOSEPH MOORE, from THOMAS BRIDGEMAN 1748, (Bk. 2 p. 33) and GEORGE and DRUCILLA MOORE, in 1752, from EDMUND SMITHWICK. (Bk. 2 p. 187)

On 7 Jan. 1763, ELIAS BERGERON was granted land in Pitt Co. on the South side of Little Contentney Cr. on both sides of the fork of Swamp land bounded by BERGERON'S and JOHN WARD'S lines. (D. Bk. B. p. 537)

Since JOHN and MICHAEL WARD received adjoining land in the Beaufort deeds from their father, JOHN, of Tyrrell, this land to BERGERON would also have been very near to MICHAEL.

On 21 Nov. 1764, WILLIAM MOOR and THOMAS WARD of Pitt Co. for the good will we bear to our loving friend, MICHAEL WARD, and for his preferment, give, grant etc to MICHAEL WARD an earlier dividend of about 150 a. being part of a land grant to WM. MOOR by the Earl of Granville.

Witnesses: ELIAS BERGERON and DAVID WARD.

We know that at this time DAVID WARD, brother of MICHAEL I) and uncle of THOMAS, was living in Halifax Co. but we know of no DAVID living closer so this witness may be he.

In February 1764, MICHAEL WARD was deceased and admx. of his estate was granted to FRANCIS WARD, his relick, with ELIAS BERGERON her security.

Later in the same year, the tax-list records, FRANCES WARD, widow with one poll. MICHAEL WARD (JR) (1), JOHN WARD (1), SAM'L WARD (1), EDWARD and ROBERT WARD one each. THOMAS is not listed here but is living on the homes place still.

We believe that ROBERT WARD, son of DAVID was living in Halifax and unless he was an absentee owner of land in Pitt Co., this was another ROBERT WARD.

The dates on the appointment of FRANCES as admx. and the deed by WILLIAM MOORE and THOMAS WARD to MICHAEL prove that he was MICHAEL JR., son of MICHAEL and FRANCES and suggests that WILLIAM MOORE was married to a sister of THOMAS and MICHAEL WARD or at least to a relative of theirs.

On 27 Nov. 1766 THOMAS WARD, "for the love I bear to my mother, FRANCES WARD, the hall and manor plantation where my father, MIKEL WARD, lived and as much woodland as will maintain the said plantation during her life, to be her third part."

Witness: DAVID WARD, ELIAS BERGERON. The second appearance of DAVID WARD in these Pitt Co. records prompts us to wonder if he was not another son of MICHAEL I) dec'd.

The documents recounted above indicate that THOS. WARD, son of MICHAEL I) was admx. of his father and therefore probably the heir and eldest son.

On the 28 Nov. 1766, THOMAS WARD to his brother, JOHN WARD, for £20, a tract of land being part of the plantation of my father lying on the north side of Little Contentne Creek 160 acres-

Witness were ZILPHA BERGERON and ELIAS BERGERON. (Deed Bk. C. p. 452 Pitt Co. N.C.)

Eleven years later on 26 Nov. 1777, JOHN WARD of Dobbs Co. N.C. "for love and consideration for my son, SOLOMON WARD, of county aforesaid 150 acres in Pitt Co. lying on the north side of Little Contentna being part of the land which JOHN WARD bought of THOMAS WARD, the consideration being one silver dollar."

Witnesses: ELIAS BERGERON, JAMES BARY, JOHN WARD (D. Bk. F p. 506)

Was BERGERON also married to a sister or other relative of THOMAS WARD? The name ZILPHA had appeared twice as a given name among the neighbors of JOHN WARD in Tyrrell Co.

The will of THOMAS LEE of Kendrick's Creek, Chowan Co. (later Tyrrell) was proved 16 July 1716.

In it he names his wife, MARY, and his son STEPHEN LEE. He also names his cousins (neices and nephews) WILLIAM, ELIZABETH and EDWARD LEE and left to his brother, WILLIAM LEE a plantation called Cabins Neck on the east side of Kendrick's Creek. Finally he names his step-daughter, ZILPHA BLOUNT. Records prove that at one time she was wife of JOHN EDWARDS.

On July 6, 1714, Capt. THOMAS COOPER of Chowan Co. N.C. sold to THOMAS LEE, also of Chowan, 320 acres of land on the South side of Albermarle or Chowan Sound adj. on east to THOMAS HARRISON and westly to land of said LEE.

Witnesses: WM. MITCHELL, WM. SWINSON, THOS. DARLEN.

In Norfolk Co. Va. in 1660 when EDWARD WARD was made administrator of the estate of his father, WILLIAM WARD, he was requested by the court to continue with the admx. of the estate of a THOMAS COOPER for whom his father was administrator.

There is no record to prove that WM. WARD had made a second marriage to the widow of THOMAS COOPER but in most instances this was the case when a non-relative acted as administrator.

In Norfolk Co. 29 Nov. 1686, THOMAS COOPER II) was granted probate of the L.W.T. of JOHN ANSWELL whose executrix he had married.

And in Princess Ann Co. on 8 Oct. 1703 JOHN PITTS, single man and ELIZABETH PITTS, widow, appointed her son-in-law, THOMAS COOPER and her son, JOHN PITTS, to lease land to RALPH LINSEY and his wife, MARY, for her natural life.

A will of THOMAS LEE in Isle of Wight Co. Va. dated Jan. 19, 1638, named his legatees as MARY LONG, LYDIA SILVESTER, ADAM MURRY, OLIVE and PRUDENCE PITT with Lt. Col. JOHN PITT as executor.

MARY, the wife of THOMAS LEE of Chowan was the widow, first of JOSEPH SCOTT and then of THOMAS BLOUNT, before she married THOMAS LEE.

This explains why ZILPHA BLOUNT is named in the 1716 will of THOMAS LEE. She was his step-daughter and still under the care of LEE, although her mother was deceased, and LEE'S widow was MARY, relick of JOHN BAILEY.

In reviewing the documents pertaining to MICHAEL WARD, son of JOHN of Tyrrell, we have seen that he left a widow FRANCES, and sons THOMAS, MICHAEL II) and JOHN and perhaps at least two daughters, who married WILLIAM MOORE and ELIAS BERGERON. It is possible he also had sons DAVID and ROBERT unless the witnesses of those names to the foregoing documents were DAVID WARD, brother of Halifax Co. with Edgecomb in between or ROBERT may have been ROBERT of Tyrrell Co.

JOHN WARD, son of MICHAEL I), was of Dobbs Co. and we believe THOMAS WARD, the older brother, later lived in Bertie. There are records of a MICHAEL WARD, who died in Colonial Military service about 1772; who could have been MICHAEL WARD JR. of Pitt Co.

JOHN WARD JR., son of JOHN of Terrell, was also a resident of Beaufort and then Pitt counties. His wife was HANNAH, the daughter of JAMES and ELIZABETH SWAIN, his will having been proved in 1762 in Tyrrell and hers after 5 May 1777 in Martin Co. which was cut off of Tyrrell in 1774. In her will of this 1777 date, she names her daughter, HANNAH WARD, and her grandson, SWAIN WARD, son of JOHN WARD.

ELIZABETH SWAIN also names sons, JAMES and JOHN, and JOHN'S three oldest children SARAH, MARY

and WILLIAM:

ROBERT DANIELS' son, SWAIN;

WILLIAM RAYS' son, SWAIN;

Grandsons WM. PRICE, JAMES PRICE and WM. SWAIN;

Granddaughter, ELIZABETH PRICE;

Daus. MARY DANIEL, ANN RAY, SARAH PRICE, HANNAH WARD and ELIZABETH TICE (Is this PRICE?)

A child's part to the three children of ELIZ. TICE.

PATIENCE SMITH, a child's part;

SUSANNAH DUGGAR, a child's part;

Wits: PATIENCE SMITH.

Executors: JAMES SWAIN and EDMUND SMITHWICK.

The relationship to JOHN WARD, his wife HANNAH and son, SWAIN, is further established by a deed from "JOHN WARD SR. of the county of Pitt to SWAIN WARD for the natural love and affection which JOHN WARD SR. hath and beareth to SWAIN WARD and for the better maintenance of said SWAIN WARD, 400 acres on the S. side of Flat Swamp adj. DENNIS GLISSON." d. 15 Oct. 1797 (D. Bk. O. pp. 61 and 62)

In Norfolk Co. Va. in 1679 or before, JOHN SWAYNE and wife, MARY, were executors of L.W.T. of NICHOLAS WISE who had married a daughter of Col. THOS. LAMBERT, who had married in 1643 the widow of WILLIAM BURRUSS; and on 15 Feb. 1675; JOHN SWAYNE, left his name at the court house saying he was ready to depart the county or country. (Norfolk Court Minutes 1666-1676 p. 121A).

In Princess Ann Co. Va., ELIZABETH WHITE in 1691 named her children in her will dated 1691. They were ELIZABETH SWAIN, DINA JONES, RUTH, SOLOMON and PATRICK WHITE. (P.A. Co. Records Bk. I. p. 70)

On Nov. 5, 1694, ROBERT SWAIN of Eliz. River in Norfolk Co. conveyed to Capt. FRANCIS MORSE of Linhaven in P.A. Co., for 6000 pounds of tobo.; 300 acres in P.A. part of a patent to SWAIN.

Wits: WM. ROBINSON, HENRY WOODHOUSE. (D. Bk. I. p. 70).

In North Carolina 26 Jan. 1709/10, THOS. HAWKINS made a deed to THOMAS WILEY for a tract of land on ye South Shore (of Albermarle Sound) betwixt JOHN SWAIN and ye Tarkill Branch and bounded by JAMES LONGS line and JAMES SMITH. (This land was then in Chowan, later Tyrrell Co.)

Wits: LEONARD LOFTIS, JAMES LONG (N. C. Register Vol. I p. 97).

Then in April 1714, JOHN SWAIN deeded to THOMAS SWAIN 130 acres at the head of THOS. HAWKINS land. Test. THOS. LONG, JOHN WORLEY (or WILEY?) (Vol. 1, p. 625 "N.C. Historical and Biography" - Hathaway)

So much for the SWAIN connection.

The home plantation in Terrell and Beaufort of JOHN WARD I) of Tyrrell was on Flat Swamp. The land he deeded in 1748 to his sons MICHAEL and JOHN WARD JR. and his SIL. JOHN OVERSTREET was on Little Contentna. When Pitt Co. was made from Beaufort in 1760 all of that land on Little Contentna and part on the swamp fell in it.

JOHN WARD JR., added to his holdings in that area 21 Oct. 1782 when he received from the State of N.C. 500 acres in Pitt Co. on the north side of the Tarr R. and of Grindall's Creek and on the south side of Flat Swamp beginning at JOSIAH BULLOCK'S line, between said WARD and ARCHIBALD KNOX. (Grant Bk. G p. 155 No. 271).

On Oct. 11, 1785 WARD added another fifty acres on the N. side of Tarr R. and S. side of Flatt Swamp bounded by WATER (or WALTER) SESSONS at WARD'S and GLISSON'S line. This land was surveyed on the date given above but finally granted on 26 Nov. 1793. (Grant Bk. K. p. 338, State of N.C. Grant No. 989)

On Oct. 15, 1797, the date on which JOHN WARD of Pitt Co. conveyed the 400 acres to his son SWAIN, he also conveyed land to JORDAN WARD for his better maintenance some newly entered land not yet surveyed. He speaks of his love and affection to JORDAN. (Deed Bk. O p. 62)

On Jan. 24, 1806, JORDAN WARD and his wife, HANNAH, sold 250 acres lying on the S. side of the Marsh at the Mill Dam, up the marsh to PETER MOYS' to a corner formerly called JOHN WARD'S and pass the corner along agreed line between JORDAN and SWAIN WARD.

JOHN WARD SR. of Pitt Co. made three more conveyances on Oct. 15, 1797 to his children JOHN JR., SUSANNAH and WILLIAM WARD.

He left land adjoining the causeway on the Marsh and KNOX'S line to JOHN WARD JR. (Bk. O p. 65)

To his beloved daughter, SUSANNAH WARD, he deeded, with love and affection, all his personal property and chattle which was listed in the deed. (Bk. O p. 64)

To WILLIAM WARD, for $50., he transferred 115 a. of land adjoining DARLING RAY, EDMUND ANDREWS, and BULLOCKS to WALTER SESSON'S line. (Bk. O p.66)

Though all the wills of Pitt Co. of this period are destroyed, we are certain at least of five children of JOHN WARD of Pitt. Co., son of JOHN WARD of Tyrrell. They were SWAIN, JORDAN, JOHN JR., SUSANNAH and

WILLIAM WARD, all receiving bequests from JOHN of Pitt on 15 Oct. 1797.

WILLIAM WARD, son of JOHN, of Pitt, received by deed from WM. CROFFORD in August 1805 for $100, a tract of land beginning at Trantrough's Branch where BULLOCK'S line crosses said line, then east on BULLOCK'S line to SESSON'S Line. (Pitt Co. Deed Bk. Q p. 143)

We recognize some of the land marks of JOHN WARD'S property but Tranters Branch or Creek is new. Perhaps it was formerly called by another name and had been renamed for a family who lived on it.

There was a TRANTER family living in Princess Ann Co. Va. more than a hundred years before the date of this 1805 deed. In January 1695/6, MARY RAVENS or (RAVINGS or RANDING or RAWLINGS) made her will in which she named her grandchildren: HUGH, JOHN, MARY, ELIZABETH and HENRY WHITEHURST; ROBERT WHITEHURST; EDWARD, JOHN and WILLIAM TRANTER; JOHN EDMUNDS, HENRY SMITH, HENRY WHITEHURST. Her daughters ELINOR and MARY SMITH. (P. A. Records Vol. I. Part II p. 326)

In April 1702, EDWARD TRANTOR appointed his SIL. HENRY WHITEHURST, attorney. (Vol. I Part II p. 164)

There are a few more documents in Pitt Co. concerning a group of WARDS whom we cannot identify who are closely associated with a GLISSON or GIBSON family.

One of these is EDWARD WARD and we assume that EDWARD of Pitt is the same as EDWARD WARD and his wife ELIZABETH of Beaufort Co. 1731 and the EDWARD WARD who was grantee in 1744 of property from DENNIS GIBSON or GLISSON in Tyrrell Co. This was while Pitt was still Beafuort and as we have seen, boundries of counties were not always accurately placed.

A deed in Pitt Co. dated 30 Dec. 1761 from DENNIS GLISSON to WM. LEWIS of Terrell Co. for $40. a tract of land on the s. side of Flatt Swamp bounded by WM. KNOX, WARD and JAMES GLISSON. (D. Bk. B. p. 30) This deed was witnessed by SAMUEL WARD, ROBERT WARD and JAS. GLISSON.

Two days before this on 28 Dec. 1761, DENNIS GLISSON of Pitt Co. conveyed to ISAAC GLISSON 100 a. being the lower part of a tract on the s. side of Roanake R. and Flat Swamp.

Wits: ROBERT WARD, JOSEPH GLISSON, JOSIAH HUTE.

The marrige of an ISSAC GLISSON and MARTHA WHITEFIELD, widow, is recorded in Terrell in 1761.

In the index of wills of Pitt Co., all wills being burned, the will of JAMES GLISSON is shown as registered on 1 May 1763 with ROBERT WARD as executor.

Then on 21 Nov. 1764, EDWARD WARD of Pitt Co. for divers good cuases etc., conveyed to SAMUEL WARD, also of Pitt, a tract of land formerly adj. JAMES GLISSONS line but now ROBERT WARD'S and along DENNIS GLISSONS line - 200 acres. Signed EDWARD WARD and MARY WARD. (D. Bk. C p. 304 Pitt Co.)

This accounts for the ROBERT WARD of earlier signatures in Pitt. Perhaps later ones of DAVID show up in that county's fragmentary records.

If the EDWARD of Pitt is the earlier EDWARD of Tyrrell, twenty years having intervened; ROBERT, DAVID and SAMUEL of Pitt may have been sons of EDWARD. If that be correct, then the recurrence of the names of descendants of JOHN in this family would be a strong indication that JOHN of Tyrrell and EDWARD of Tyrrell and Pitt were related.

CHAPTER III - Part B - Other WARDS of Early North Carolina

As early as 1653, some Virginia Colonists began settling in the Albermarle Sound Area. In 1639, ROBERT HEATH had been given a grant by CHARLES I) and had named the region Carolina in honor of the King. In 1691, the province was called North Carolina and until 1711 was ruled by Deputy governors from S. C. In the latter year, there were three towns in the province, namely Bath, Edenton and New Bern.

After a bloody war with the Tuscarara Indians and a bitter boundry dispute with Virginia, organization was imposed in North Carolina when it became a Royal Colony in 1729.

Among the many Virginians who moved south into the province during the period just described, were a host of citizens of Norfolk and Princess Ann Counties.

As early as 1650, THOMAS LEE was a resident of Norfolk, THOMAS WILEY in 1694, THOMAS GARRETT and RICHARD CHAMPION in 1695 in Princess Ann and in 1691, STEPHEN SWAIN whose wife was ELIZABETH, daughter of PATRICK WHITE and his wife ELIZABETH, was included in the division of the estate of her father. Others who shared in this division were SOLOMON, RUTH and PATRICK WHITE JR. and EVAN JONES, husband of their sister DINA WHITE.

Before 1660, THOMAS COOPER'S estate was administered by WILLIAM WARD I) of Linhaven in Norfolk Co., later Princess Ann, and after WILLIAM'S death by his son, EDWARD WARD.

WILLIAM died in 1660 and in 1665 a court record states that EDWARD WARD had moved out of the county. This we suppose was EDWARD, son of WILLIAM, who was born in 1639 and was barely of age when he was called upon to administer the estate of his father and THOS. COOPER.

In 1679, an EDWARD WARD in North Carolina gave his age as about 38 which would mean that he was born in 1641 and would leave a difference of three years between the dates given for WILLIAM'S administration and that of

this testimony in North Carolina. (Vol. III p. 45 of Hathaway's Historical and Biography of N.C.) However, this seeming difference may not have been actual and does not preclude the possibility that this was the same man. On the other hand, both EDWARDS may have been EDWARD, son of EDWARD I) of P.A. Co. Va.

On 25 Feb. 1694, "ANN WARD peticuns for the admx. of ye goods and chattle of FRANCIS, her decd. husband with WILLIAM BRAY and JOHN DAN———, her securities." (N. C. Colonial Records Vol. I p. 442)

The first reference that we have to JAMES WARD of Chowan Co. N.C. was of date 13 Nov. 1694/5 when he, WM. BRADFORD and THOMAS SOLLY witnessed in Albermarle Precinct N.C., Power of Attorney from JOHN PORTER SR. of Albermarle N.C. to JOHN PORTER JR. of Eastern Branch of Elizabeth River in Princess Ann Co. Va.

We find here JAMES WARD co-signer, with two representatives of prominent P.A. Co. families, JOHN PORTER and THOMAS SOLLY.

The sale for which this attorneyship was intended was consumated in P.A. Co. on 24 Dec. 1695 when JOHN PORTER JR., on behalf of his father, sold to JOHN SHIRLEY SR. of Elizabeth River, a tract of land formerly in possession of JOHN ACKISS. This deed was witnessed by JOHN SOLLY, THOS. HALL and BEN BURRUSS.

A search of P.A. Co. Records reveals that as of 13 Jan. 1691/2 JOHN PORTER SR. made a deed of gift to the children of THOMAS SOLLY and my daughter, MARY, his wife, JOHN, THOMAS JR. and MARY SOLLY JR. (Bk. 1 p. 32 P.A. Co. Records)

On the same date JOHN PORTER SR. conveyed by deed of gift, property to WILLIAM CORNISH and his wife, ALICE, and her two children, LEMUEL and ALICE. These were children of ALICE by an earlier marriage to ———IVY.

In Norfolk Co., as early as 15 Dec. 1649, an EDWARD SOLLY of Elizabeth River, conveyed to WILLIAM AYRES of Upper Norfolk a tract of land originally patented to RICHARD JENNINGS on W.B.E.R. W. MATTHEW SHARP and THOMAS HOWELL. (p. 132 Norfolk Records 1666-1676)

A suggested relationship in the WARD - WORKMAN records is a will recorded in Norfolk Co. Va. 7 May 1654 in Bk. C. p. 107, in which JOHN PORTER (or PARKER?) of Little Creek devised all and every part of his goods and chattle unto THOMAS WORKMAN, son of THOMAS WORKMAN SR., who was brother-in-law to THOMAS WARD I) of Norfolk Co. WARD was named executor.

THOMAS SOLLY SR. of the Albermarle Co. witness and JOHN SOLLY Of the P.A. Co. deed, were evidently sons of THOMAS SOLLY SR. and his wife, MARY, and so were grandchildren of JOHN PORTER SR. If there is also a relationship to JAMES WARD, it goes further back into Virginia history.

The will of THOMAS SOLLY SR. was probated 21 Sept. 1700 in P.A. Co. at which time his relick was FRANCES, who soon married RICHARD CORBITT, grandson of RICHARD POOLE, who was stepfather to THOMAS WORKMAN JR. SOLLY'S children mentioned in his will were, son JOHN and daughters ELIZABETH, ANN, LIDIA, SARAH and MARY, and son-in-law, RICH WICKETT. Another daughter married before 30 Jan. 1704/5 JOHN (or GEO.?) KEMP. Although THOS. JR. is not mentioned, we are confident this is his family.

Besides JOHN WARD of Tyrrell Co. and those associated with him in that vicinity, other early WARDS of N.C. included JAMES, MICHAEL and JOHN WARD of Chowan Co. and WM. and PHILIP of Bertie.

I JAMES WARD OF CHOWAN

The records of Chowan Co. N.C. offer proof that JAMES WARD of that county married before 22 March 1701, the daughter of RICHARD STIBALL of the same county. ROBERT MURRAY, who had married the widow of said STIBALL, conveyed land to JAMES WARD as marrying the daughter of STIBALL.

STIBALL'S will dated 15 Sept. 1695, was proved April 1696 in Perquimons Co. N.C. and in it he named his daughters MARY, (who married WARD), PATIENCE (or CONSTANCE) and MARTHA.

The will was witnessed by WILLIAM CARLETON and ARTHUR CARLETON. This name CARLETON, pops up in many subsequent WARD documents of the next few years.

Shortly before the death of STIBALL, his daughter, ELIZABETH, who was married and called herself CROSLAND, died before April 1694 and devised all her property to her father, RICHARD STIBALL. This will was witnessed by CHRISTOPHER and ANNARITA BUTLER. We know too, that STIBALL'S daughter CONSTANCE (or PATIENCE?), married about 1703, at the home of JAMES WARD, Mr. THOMAS SNOWDEN, son of CHRISTOPHER SNOWDEN of Pennsylvania or the Jerseys and that the SNOWDENS, after living with THOMAS WARD and his wife, MARY, about six months "went to live on a plantation he purchased in the adjoining county called Perquimans, on a creek called Yahpien about ½ mile from JAMES WARD'S." (Testimony of LUKE MIZELL, aged sixty, who was at WARD'S house the day of the wedding. Also the testimony of CONSTANCE STIBALL SNOWDEN WILLIAMS, aged 56, concerning her own first marriage. (Craven Co. N.C. Records 1741-175p. 19, dated 19 July 1743) CONSTANCE was 16 years old when she first married.

An entry of Chowan Co. recorded in Bk. W. p. 85 shows that as of 1 Apr. 1706 a deed of conveyance by CHRISTOPHER BLY of the colony of Virginia transferred to THOMAS SNOWDEN of Perquimans in the Province of N.C. a tract of land. Witnesses were JAMES WARD and JOHN ALCOTT.

There are other relationships to THOMAS WARD indicated in the records of Chowan Co. N.C. and vicinity.

Power of attorney was granted from SARAH BLY of the county of I. of W. in Va. to JOHN WARD of Albermarle Prect. to acknowledge a sale of land by my husband CHRISTOPHER BLY to Mr. THOS. SNOWDEN of this county. (Bk. W. p. 102 Chowan Co.)

Albermarle Prect. included part of Perquimans which later became Tyrrell Co., and this could mean that the reference here was to JOHN WARD of that county. If so it would place him there more than twenty years earlier than the 1729. It probably referred to JOHN WARD of Chowan. Chowan Co. records of 1705 make reference to JAMES and JOHN WORDE who moved there that year.

On 23 April 1719, CHRISTOPHER BUTLER, son and heir of CHRISTOPHER BUTLER, late of Chowan Prect., to JAMES WARD and heirs of Chowan, planter, a certain tract or plantation whereon my father aforementioned dwelt in Chowan Prect., 240 acres on the west side of the Yawpin River adj. lands belonging to RICH, STIBALL and WM. BRETHETT.

Wits: by JOHN WILLIAMSON, JNO PORTER and DAVID BUTLER.

In 1703 CHRISTOPHER BUTLER SR. and his wife, ANNARITA, sold land in N.C. to Col. WM. WILKERSON and when JAMES WARD made his will in 1753, he named his wife MARY, his son THOMAS, his grandson, JOSEPH MING JR., son of JOSEPH and REBECCA MING. He also named children of his son, THOMAS WARD, as JAMES, ANARITA, PENELOPE and RACHEL WARD. This will was witnessed by DAVID BUTLER, THOS. JENNINGS and J. BUTLER.

The name ANNARITA is not common so we believe that JAMES WARD or his wife MARY, the daughter of RICHARD STIBALL, was related to BUTLERS. We found in Tyrrell Co. JOHN BUTLER'S and his wife's signatures as witness of the will of JOHN WARD I) of that county, father of DAVID, grandfather of ROBERT and great-grandfather of NANCY who married DAVID HODGES about 1790 or a bit earlier.

When JOSEPH MING wrote his will 1 Dec. 1750, P. April 1751, he identified his wife as RACHEL (dau. of JAMES WARD), his sons as THOMAS and JOSEPH and his daughters as SARAH WILKINS, ANNARITA COLLINS and MARY MING. He also named his grandsons JOSEPH WILKINS and JOSEPH COLLINS.

The executors were THOMAS WARD and JOSEPH MING JR. He added a codicile providing for three years schooling for his son, THOMAS MING.

This will was witnessed by RACHEL CAMBEL, THOS. WARD and THOS. CALLOWAY. (Wills of N.C. p. 249 by GRIMES)

In 1722, JAMES WARD had conveyed 108 a. on the westward side of Yoppin River bridge, also 200 acres where MING now lives to JAMES MING and RACHEL, my daughter, 17 Oct. 1722. (p. 284 Vol. II Historical & Biography of N.C.) This land lay in Chowan Co. in its' eastward part. Wits: JACOB BUTLER and DAVID BUTLER.

Since WARD'S wife was MARY STIBALL, it would seem that the JAMES WARD - BUTLER relationship, indicated by the recurrance of the name ANARITA, must have come either through the mother of JAMES WARD or wife who was mother of his two children THOMAS and RACHEL, the only two children mentioned in his will. It would be unusual in that day of large families if JAMES WARD had only these two children but there is nothing in the tone of his will or other documents in Chowan to indicate that he had others or had been married twice. However, MARY STIBALL MURRY or an earlier wife of STIBALL, may have been a BUTLER.

The will of THOMAS WARD, son of JAMES, recorded in Will Bk. A on page 188 of Chowan Co. N.C. was dated 19 Feb. 1772 and is extracted below:

Wife, MARY WARD,
Wife's dau. FANNY WARBURTON,
My dauts.; PENEOPY McVIDAR, RACHEL WILDER and MARY WILKERSON,
Son, THOS. WARD (only one son?)
Grandsons; JAMES McVIDAR, FRANCIS WILDER, THOMAS STANDING (must be son of ANNARITA)
Son-in-law; THOMAS McVIDER or (NIDER)
Son-in-law; MICHAEL WILDER and nephew, THOS. MING executors.
Wits: ANDREW KNOX, JAS. McCONNELL, JACOB SIMONS.

To go back a bit and review other documents pertaining to JAMES WARD of early North Carolina, we find first, that JAMES WARD, as executor, and MARGARET EULTER, daughter of DORCAS, were named in the will of THOMAS SMITH which was dated Nov. 1706. The Wits. were JOHN ALLCOCK, STEPHEN SWAIN, and ————CARLTON. (p. 346 "Wills of N.C." by Grimes)

Aug. 24, 1700 JAMES WARD bought of DAVE PERKINS Of Chowan Co. a plantation.

In 1716 JAMES WARD and JAMES WILLIAMSON test. deed ROBERT DOUGLAS and wife ANN, to ARTHUR CARLETON. (p. 295 Hathaway's N.C. Historical and Biographical)

The 1717 tax-returns of Chowan Co. lists JAMES WARD with 1644 acres of land and 2 tithes; PHILIP WARD with 200 acres and 1 tithe; JOHN WARD 250 acres and 2 tithes; THOMAS WYLEY 100 a. and 1 tithe; JOHN WHITE SR. 200 a. and 2 tithes; LUKE WHITE 350 a. and 1 tithe; ROBERT LANIER with 500 a. and 1 tithe.

A deed dated 1718, from WILLIAM HOVET to MARY WOOD, daughter of Mrs. MARY CLARK, widow of THOMAS, was witnessed by JAMES WARD and GEO. DEAR.

On 18 Dec. 1721, HENRY and PATIENCE SPELLER and JAMES SWAIN made a joint deed to JAMES WARD for a certain plantation, 90 acres on the south side of the Yoppin River, formerly belonging to STEPHEN SWAIN dcd. (Chowan D. Bk. No. C 1 p. 288) Wits: CHRISTOPHER BUTLER and THOS. HARVEY.

STEPHEN SWAIN, we have seen, was married, before 1691, in P.A. Co. Va. to the daughter of PATRICK and ELIZABETH WHITE and evidently was the father of JAMES, later of Tyrrell, and of PATIENCE SPELLER.

CATHERINE CARLETON, widow, to JAMES WARD, 38 acres on south side of Yoppin River bought of ROBERT DOUGLAS 7 April 1724. Test. ELIJAH JONES, DAVID BUTLER, SUSANNA AUSTIN, JOHN STANDIFER.

The price of this tract was £15 Sterling and it adjoined Carleton's Creek and other lands of ROBERT DOUGLAS. (D. Bk. W. Chowan Co. N.C. p. 404 d. 7 Feb. 1724/25)

In the same Volume; p. 543, under date of 5 Dec. 1726, JAMES WARD assigns the 38 acres from CATHERINE CARLETON to DAVID BUTLER.

Then on June 30, 1755 JAMES SWAIN of Bertie conveyed to JAMES WARD of Chowan a tract of land in Chowan on Yeopin River 60 acres.

II PHILIP WARD of Bertie Co.

The early record pertaining to PHILIP WARD who owned land in early Tyrrell seem to overlap with that of JAMES on the CARLETON references and with those of WILLIAM and ANN.

As early as 19 Dec. 1714, WILLIAM CARLETON of Chowan Co. conveyed to PHILIP WARD 200 acres on the north side of Marratuck River adjacent LUKE MEAZEL. (Hathaways N.C. B & H. Vol. I p. 292) W. LUKE MEASEL and STEPHEN ALDEN.

On 17 Jan. 1708, EDWARD or EDMIND SMITHWICK and wife, SARAH, sold to Mr. WILLIAM CARLETON for £50 Sterling "Dogwood Neck Plantation" out of a patent to THOMAS GREGORY and wife, land bounded by Hogg Branch. (D. Bk. W p. 82 Chowan Co.) Wits: THOMAS GARRETT and STEPHEN SWAIN.

The description of the plantation is not definite enough to determine whether it was part of, or included the land later deeded to PHILIP WARD.

On page 90 of the same Deed Bk., is recorded a deed from WILLIAM CARLETON to LUKE MIZELL and his wife SARAH, son and dau. of said CARLETON, a tract of land on Morratuck River at the mouth of Poplar Creek. This deed no doubt was also dated 1708 and LUKE MIZELL is the same who gave affidavit that in 1703, he was at the home of JAMES WARD and witnessed the wedding of Miss CONSTANCE STIBALL, sister-in-law of WARD, to Mr. THOMAS SNOWDEN. In the affidavit dated 19 July 1743, MIZELL swore he was about 60 years of age so in 1708 he was 25 years old, already married to SARAH CARLETON, daughter of WILLIAM, who was a neighbor of JAMES WARD on Yawpin River.

There is nothing in the deed to PHILIP WARD to indicate that he, too, had married a daughter of WILLIAM CARLETON, but the fact that he and JAMES WARD were both associated with that family could indicate a relationship between them, the WARDS.

The land from CARLETON to PHILIP WARD and to LUKE MIZELL was in what was Tyrrell Co. after 1729, but the land on which CARLETON SR. lived neighbor to THOMAS WARD was on the eastern side of Chowan Co. very near the Perquimans boundry.

In the index of Bertie County Deeds, PHILIP WARD is shown to have received property from WM. WARD in 1753 (Bk. H. p. 243) and in 1757 he appeared in the Bertie tax-list with two white polls.

This PHILIP WARD I) of Chowan and then of Bertie Co. N.C. was born not later than 1693 for he was of age in 1714. He was therefore 84 years of age or more in 1777, if he was the PHILIP of the will proved in Bertie County of that year.

It is possible of course that this is the will of another PHILIP WARD, perhaps his son, but there is no record of an earlier will or estate settlement in the intervening years. However, there remains that possibility.

He made his wife, MARY, EXECUTRIX of his estate, and named his children JAMES, DANIEL, GEORGE, MICHAEL, MARY, MILLICENT, SARAH PHILIPS and ELIZABETH.

In the early records of Tyrrell there are two wills in which a daughter, MARY WARD, is named, one of whom was likely MARY wife of PHILIP.

The first of these is the will of DANIEL GARRETT of Tyrrell Co. in the Province of North Carolina which was recorded in Book 1 on page 19 about 1736.

GARROTT had sons THOMAS, JAMES and JOHN GARROTT and daughters MARY WARD and ELIZABETH RHODES. He also named his grandsons, THOMAS and DANIEL, sons of his son JAMES, and STEPHEN COOPER. His sons DANIEL GARROTT JR. and JOHN GARROTT were made executors.

In Chowan Co., before Tyrrell Co. was established, DANIEL GARROTT was devisee of deeds made by STEPHEN LEE (Bk. C. p. 617) and by ARGELE SIMMONDS, et. ux. in Bk. W. p. 136)

And still earlier on Jan. 17, 1708, THOMAS GARRETT and STEPHEN SWAIN both formerly of Princess Ann Co. Va. witnessed the deed ED and SARAH SMITHWICK to WM. CARLETON, "Dogwood Neck Plantation."

DANIEL GARRETT was not mentioned in the will of a THOMAS GARRETT of Chowan Prect. dated 30 Jan. 1733 and P. 31 Jan. 1731 so we presume they were brothers.

THOMAS named his sons HUMPHREY and THOMAS JR. and his daus. CATHERINE WHITE, SARAH GARRETT, ANN LASSITER, JANE, MARY, LETTES and PRUDENCE GARRETT.

A THOMAS GARRETT, perhaps a son of DANIEL was witness with FRANCIS WARD in Tyrrell Co. N.C. to a deed, dated 19 Mar. 1759, from ROBERT WARD late of the county of Tyrrell, carpenter, to ALEXANDER MACK LENDON, taylor, of same, a plantation where MACK LENDON now lives - 190 a. in the Co. of Tyrrell by a patent to STEPHEN LEE, LEE conveyed to SAM'L DURANCE and by deed of sale dated 1741 conveyed to ROBERT WARD by JOHN HOOKER, Sheriff. (Deed Bk. 2 p. 371)

The recurrance of the references to STEPHEN LEE and to THOMAS GARRETT are promising but apparently neither ROBERT WARD or his brother FRANCIS m. MARY GARRETT dau. of DANIEL.

On 15 Dec. 1770, ROBERT WARD, still spoken of as of Tyrrell Co., sold for £100 - 550 acres in Tyrrell Co. on s. side of Morratuck R. adj. JOHN BAILEY'S corner, formerly granted to FREDERICK JONES but purchased by WARD of BENJ. MANNING, to JOSEPH BALLARD.

The will of FRANCIS WARD of Tyrrell Co. was proved 11 July 1771. He named his wife, RACHEL, who was the daughter of JOHN HASSELL of the same county according to his 1734 will recorded in Bk. I p. 114) WARD names a daughter, DEBORAH WARD, his son, FRANCIS, and his brother, ROBERT WARD. Later in the year 1771 RACHEL WARD is spoken of as wife of ROBERT WEBB and SARAH, FRANCIS and ROBERT WARD, presumedly children of RACHEL are mentioned in the same document. FRANCIS WARD was first county clerk of Tyrrell Co.

FRANCIS WARD also mentions his sisters DEBORAH HALLS, MIHITIBELL FAUT and MARY WILEY and states that EDWARD COOPER lives on one of his places.

The records for FRANCIS end in 1747 with a deed from WILLIAM BAMBURY. Those for ROBERT end in 1763 with power of attorney from ABRAM LOPEZ to ROBERT and SALLY ANN WARD, except for the 1770 grantor conveyance.

ROBERT is likely the ROBERT WARD who shows up in Pitt Co. about this time or a little later.

The best indication that PHILIP WARD might have married MARY GARRETT, daughter of DANIEL GARRETT, beside the fact that he named wife MARY, and son, DANIEL, in his 1771 will, is to be found in the 1757 tax list of Bertie County where PHILIP WARD and JAMES RHODES are found listed jointly. There are also a THOMAS RHODES and JOHN RHODES in this enumeration.

Since DANIEL GARRETT names only two daughters MARY WARD and ELIZABETH RHODES in his will in 1736, this bit of information adds some weight to the possibility that PHILIP WARD married his dau. MARY.

The other will which names a daughter, MARY WARD, is that of THOMAS DANIEL and his wife ELIZABETH and probably refer to MARY, the wife of JAMES WARD, son of DAVID and MARY WARD of Halifax Co. N.C.

III WILLIAM WARD of Bertie, son of JOHN of Chowan.

WILLIAM WARD and his wife ANN, who owned property in Tyrrell from 1740 to 1760 never lived there.

We know from deeds recorded in Chowan Co. N.C. that WILLIAM with wife ANN, was a son of JOHN WARD of Chowan and his wife CATHERINE, probably CATHERINE, the daughter of JOHN WHITE and his wife SARAH.

Before the death of JOHN WARD in Dec. 1748 he and his wife, CATHERINE, conveyed land to their numerous sons, one of whom was WILLIAM.

Several of these deeds were dated 18 Aug. 1748. The one to WILLIAM was witnessed by WM. COPELAND JR. JOSEPH WARD and JAMES WARD.

The ones to sons JOSEPH WARD and JAMES WARD were witnessed by both WILLIAM and ANN WARD.

In JOHN WARD'S will he names, among others, these three sons and makes WILLIAM his executor.

The identity of ANN, wife of WILLIAM WARD, is to be found in the records of Tyrrell Co.

On May 22, 1741, THOMAS SPELLER and SARAH SPELLER and WILLIAM and ANN WARD, all of Bertie, conveyed land in Tyrrell to THOS. DUGGAN of that county. (D. Bk. I p. 196 Tyrrell Co. N.C. Records)

A bit later, and recorded on p. 213 of Deed Bk. I, RICHARD SWAIN, THOMAS SPELLER and WILLIAM WARD, all of Bertie, made a conveyance to HIGINSON KING.

The wills of HENRY SPELLER and his wife, PATIENCE, of Bertie Precinct N.C. are recorded in "Wills of N.C." by Grimes.

The will of HENRY was dated 5 April 1727. He left a plantation on Morratuck River to his son THOMAS SPELLER and to his daughter, ANN, land on Smithwick Creek. He names his wife, PATIENCE, and his brother, THOMAS PARRIS of Edenton. (p. 354)

The will of PATIENCE SPELLER, dated 3 Feb. 1738/9, names her sons THOMAS SPELLER and RICHARD SWAIN, her daughters PATIENCE RAY and ANNE WARD.

Grandchildren: SARAH, JOHN and ELIZABETH SMITHWICK and WILLIAM SWAIN.

The executors were JAMES SWAIN and THOMAS SPELLER and the witnesses were CARLETON MIZELL and PHILIP WARD.

CARLETON MIZELL here is the son of LUKE MIZELL and SARAH, dau. of WILLIAM CARLETON.

The SMITHWICK grandchildren establishes the fact of another daughter probably married EDMUND SMITHWICH who has been mentioned in the documents herein reviewed.

IV JOHN WARD of Chowan Co.

One of the confusing things concerning JOHN WARD, of Tyrrell Co. N.C., is that he had a contemporary of the same name in Chowan Co. and that many of the records of the Tyrrell Co. area were recorded in Chowan up until Bertie was made from it in 1722, and then in Bertie until Tyrrell definitely begun to function independently in 1735-39.

It is only when the signatures of the wives (SARAH of JOHN of Chowan, and ELIZABETH, of JOHN of Tyrrell) appear on documents or the names of waterways mentioned in them that we can distinguish one from the other in the period 1700 to 1740.

Tyrrell lay south of Albermarle Sound and Chowan, north. Tyrrell's chief Rivers were the Morratuck, Scupernong and Roanoke while those of Chowan were Yawpen and Chowan.

Swamps had various names which seemed to change from time to time as ownership of adjoining property changed but, in the era of which we are interested, we have determined that Flat Swamp was in Tyrrell and Bear Swamp in Chowan.

We have reviewed in detail the will of JOHN WARD of Tyrrell written in 1748 and registered 14 May 1750 in that county. We have also observed that most of the land of which he disposed by deed in 1748, and in his will lay in the county of Beaufort on Little Contentna Creek and on Flat Swamp.

The will of JOHN WARD of Chowan Co. N.C. was dated 9 May 1747 and proved 16 Dec. 1748. He made his wife CATHERINE WARD, executrix.

The witnesses were THOMAS ROUNDTREE, CHARLES COPELAND and JOHN COPELAND. (There are many COPELAND records in I. of W. Co. Va.)

He named his sons: THOMAS, JAMES, JOSEPH, WILLIAM, JOBE and AMOS and his daughters ELIZABETH THOMPSON, CATHERINE EVANS, HANNAH, SARAH and JOHANNA WARD.

He also had a son JOHN WARD JR. or we suppose that it was he who, as JOHN WARD SR., of the Province of N.C. county of Chowan deeded to JOHN WARD JR., of the same province and county, for £20, the land where he now lives with the plantation and land belonging to it which was formerly surveyed by Col. EDWARD MOSELEY. Wits: JOHN PARKER, PETER PARKER and dated 19 Oct. 1743.

It is indeed unfortunate that no names of Waterways are given in this description of land. We do know that Col. EDWARD MOSELEY appears in the records of Tyrrell and the deed is signed with the Sprawling E of JOHN WARD of W.B.E.R. and also of JOHN WARD of Tyrrell Co. N.C. but the deed was dated 19 Oct. 1743, at which time boundries between the two counties should have been fixed and the grantor was spoken of as Chowan Co.

In his will, JOHN Of Chowan Co., designated land bought of GEO. TURNGRIDGE, to his son JOBE, and the plantation known by the name of Indian Creek to his son, AMOS.

By Deed, he conveyed property to his other sons shortly before he died.

A deed recorded in Chowan Co. D. Bk. E p. 341 from JOHN and CATHERINE WARD to JOSEPH WARD conveyed a tract on Bear Swamp adj. corner of JOHN WARD SR., to another corner marked by a black oak, the corner of JOHN WARD SR., JOHN WARD JR. and JACOB HINTON, to the head of Tarkill Branch - 100 acres. This deed was witnessed by WILLIAM and ANN WARD no doubt the same as those who owned land in Tyrrell for 20 years.

The deed to JOSEPH WARD from JOHN and CATHERINE WARD, was dated 18 Aug. 1748, as was one from the same parties to JAMES WARD on the same day and recorded on page 343 of D. Bk. E Chowan Co. This latter instrument conveyed to JAMES WARD 80 acres in Chowan at ye mouth of a branch called Tarkill adjacent JOSEPH WARD and ALEXANDER MACKLALAND, JOHN WARD JR. and THOMAS WARD. It, too, was witnessed by WILLIAM and ANN WARD and JOHN JORDAN SR.

In making mention of Tarkill Branch and ALEXANDER MACKLALAND, the property of JOHN SR. of Chowan and that of JOHN WARD of Tyrrell are in danger of overlapping in the latter county. We know that in 1757 ROBERT WARD of Tyrrell conveys land in that county, as adjacent to ALEXANDER MACKLALAND and Tarkill Branch.

However, the land on Bear Swamp conveyed by JOHN to JOSEPH was, with out doubt, part of the 400 acres on

that SWAMP granted to JOHN WARD of Chowan on Mar. 10, 1740/41 at which time it was said to be in Chowan Co. as it still was in 1748.

We believe these adjoining tracts conveyed by JOHN WARD of Chowan to his sons JOSEPH and JAMES, THOMAS and JOHN JR., take care of the grant of 400 a. in 1740.

ALEXANDER MACKLELAND is probably another Princess Ann Co. Va. resident trying to put down new roots in North Carolina.

MACKLELAND is a name of that area and in 1691-7 ALEXANDER WILEY and wife, MARGARET, conveyed all their property to JOHN MACKLELAND. (P. A. Co. Va. Records Bk. I p. 82)

Still another deed, dated 18 Oct. 1748 and recorded on page 344 of Bk. E. Chowan Co. N.C., in which JOHN WARD and his wife, CATHERINE, are grantors, conveyes to WILLIAM WARD a 100 acre plantation in Chowan Co. on Sandy Branch.

It was witnessed by WILLIAM COPELAND JR., JOSEPH WARD and JAMES WARD.

Once again we see the interchanging signatures of grantees of deeds from the same persons, conveyed the same day and to persons of the same family name. Even without the 1748 will of Chowan, this is enough evidence to place them in a family group.

WILLIAM and ANN'S witnesses to the deeds to JAMES and JOSEPH and they to the one to him, all granted 18 Oct. 1748, is strong evidence and in JOHN'S will, not only is WILLIAM named as a son, but he is made executor of the estate. We strongly believe that this WILLIAM with wife ANN, is the same couple who owned land in Tyrrell Co. and who lived in Bertie Precinct and that ANN was the daughter of HENRY SPELLER and his wife, PATIENCE, while WILLIAM was son of JOHN and CATHERINE WARD.

The land on Indian Creek which JOHN of Chowan devised to his son AMOS in his 1748 will is probably all or part of the 200 a. which he bought from JONATHAN SHARWOOD of Perquimans Co. N.C. on 13 Oct. 1747 which was described as adjacent JOHN JORDAN SR. and JR. and Indian Creek.

The documented references to JOHN WARD of Chowan, start in 1712 and on 30 Aug. 1714 he was grantee of a deed from JOHN and SARAH WHITE who were parents of CATHERINE, his wife.

We have noted the name of COPELAND appearing several times in the documents pertaining to JOHN of Chowan and a more significant document, a deed JOHN COPELAND to THOMAS WARD JR. for 220 acres on Sandy River and Bare Swamp land that formerly belonged to WILLIAM COPELAND

There are indirect connections implied in the documents of Princess Ann Co. between members of the SHEREWOOD and WARD families of that area.

V MICHAEL WARD of Va. and Chowan Co. N.C.

The last of the early WARD'S of North Carolina, about whom there are adequate documents for discussion, is MICHAEL WARD of Chowan Co.

The first record of a MICHAEL WARD which is available to us is to be found in the will of RICHARD BENNETT of Nancemond Co. Va. which was dated 15 March 1674 and proven 3 Aug. 1676. The documents of BENNETTS' home county are destroyed, but his will was recorded in England and so is preserved.

He left to MICHALE WARD and the wife of JOHN LEWIS each 1000 lbs. of tobacco, as well as several other small legacies to various persons.

RICHARD BENNETT was, briefly, Quaker governor of Va. during the Round Head government of Cromwell in England and it was not unusual for a well-to-do Quaker to make bequests to orphans of his Society or to various members, as well as to his relatives.

In a deed in Norfolk Co. about this same time he conveyed to JAMES GITTERY JR. of Norfolk Co. son of deceased JAMES GITTERY and his relick, MARY BOWLING GITTERY, a calf.

Because there are indications or proved connections between MARTHA WARD, wife of THOMAS WARD of P.A. Co. Va. and JOHN LEWIS, JOHN SHEREWOOD, and wives and by THOMAS WARD and the family of RICHARD BOWLING SR. of Norfolk Co. in 1669, we believe that there is the possibility of a relationship indicated perhaps through an early PHILIP BENNETT of Norfolk Co. This possibility is discussed more fully in the Virginia Part of this Chapter.

Nansemond Co. Va. adjoined Norfolk County on the west and until 1646 was a part of it, being called Upper Norfolk. BENNETT'S Creek in Nansemond was no more than two to three miles distance from the Western Branch of Elizabeth River in Norfolk which was the dividing line between the two counties and on which a THOMAS and JOHN WARD lived.

Among the WARD'S of early North Carolina, MICHAEL WARD has the most definite tie to the adjoining Va. counties, partly because his given name MICHAEL, is better identity than the more common ones of JOHN, THOMAS and WILLIAM.

In Norfolk Co. the 1714 will of JOHN GRAHAM is witnessed by MICHAEL, ANN and HANNAH WARD, and documents of that county in the same year offer proof that MARY, daughter of GRAHAM, was the wife of DANIEL

GLASGOW of the province of N.C.

On July 10, 1718 in Chowan Co. N.C. THOMAS GARRETT SR. and wife BETHIA to WILLIAM FREEMAN, all of Chowan conveyed, for £80 - 250 acres on the south side of Catherine Creek adj. WALTER DRAUGHAN to a corner tree of MICHAEL BRINDLEY. This deed was witnessed by MICHAEL WARD and JOHN GORDON.

The next day, 11 July 1718, WILLIAM FREEMAN and wife, MARY, deeded to MICHAEL WARD, all of Chowan Co. N.C., for £40 - 100 acres on the south side of Catherin's Creek to a mulberry tree where FREEMAN and WARD now live adjacent WALTER DRAUGHAN. Wits: THOMAS GARRET SR. and JR. and JOHN GOODWIN. (Bk. I p. 607 Deeds Chowan Co. N.C.)

We know from deeds in the family of JOHN WARD of Chowan that Bear Swamp and Sandy River both flowed out of Catherine Creek in that part of Chowan which adjoined Tyrrell before Bertie was definitely surveyed and that Tarkill Branch seemed to border on each county. (Deed JOHN COPELAND to THOS. WARD JR. Chowan Co. Book E. Part I p. 280)

In Norfolk Co. Records we find that in or before 1683 a DAVID FREEMAN married SARAH, relick of WILLIAM WHITE, and that in 1690 SARAH was again a widow having been granted admx. on DAVID FREEMAN. (P. 189 Bk. 5 Norfolk Co.)

From Norfolk Co. Va. records we also know that MARY, wife of WILLIAM FREEMAN, in 1714 was the daughter of THOMAS CORDING.

In Norfolk Co. too, is recorded a deed on page 5 of Court Orders etc., of 1719-1722 in which WILLIAM FREEMAN and wife, MARY, of Chowan Co. N.C. convey to WILLIAM PERKINS of the western branch of Eliz. River, land in Norfolk Co. adjacent to said River and to FRANCIS HODGES and THOMAS FREEMAN. Date of deed 17 Mar. 1719.

As far as the FREEMAN family is concerned, these documents give definite proof across the interstate boundry and there is no question but that the FREEMANS of Chowan Co. in the early eighteenth century were from Norfolk Co. Va.

On Nov. 15, 1721 EDWARD WOOD and MARY, his wife, and JOHN WOOD and MARGARET, his wife, of Chowan Co. N.C. for £30 conveyed to THOMAS FREEMAN and wife, SARAH, of Elizabeth Parish in Norfolk Co. Va. land bounded by JOHN EASTWOOD, ROBERT COTTLE and ED. WINGATE. (Norfolk Co. Deed Bk. F p. 8) Wits: THOS. HOBGOOD, THOS. COTTLE.

The will of JOHN FREEMAN of Chowan Prect. in N.C. dated 19 Feb. 1729/30 names as executors his brother, WILLIAM FREEMAN, his son, JOHN FREEMAN, and MICHAEL WARD.

The witnesses were EDWARD WOOD, GEO. WHITE and THOS. ROUNDTREE. (N.C. Wills - Grimes)

On 16 Jan. 1744 in Chowan Co. JOHN FREEMAN for the natural love etc. for his brother WILLIAM FREEMAN JR., 75 acres on the south side of Catherine's Creek————. The will of the father, WILLIAM FREEMAN, decd., to his two sons was mislaid or lost ———— inheritance descended to JOHN FREEMAN eldest son, who makes this sale to his brother, WILLIAM FREEMAN. W. THOS. ROUNDTREE SR., RICHARD FREEMAN.

It seems evident from the foregoing documents that MICHAEL WARD and WILLIAM and JOHN FREEMAN were related, the strongest evidence being that WARD and WM. FREEMAN were living together in 1718 when FREEMAN shared with WARD a tract of land he had just bought from THOS. GARRETT and that JOHN FREEMAN made MICHAEL one of his executors with his brother, WILLIAM, and his son, JOHN, when he made his 1729/30 will in Chowan.

We believe that ANN, the wife of MICHAEL WARD, was the sister of JOHN and WILLIAM FREEMAN II) and that they probably migrated to N.C. together.

Was THOMAS or DAVID FREEMAN of Norfolk their brother or father?

In late 1731 MICHAEL WARD of Chowan began to acquire property:

On 20 Dec. 1731, for £30, 250 acres between the head of Catherine Cr. Swamp and Warrick Swamp in Chowan from JOHN ARLINE of Albermarle Precinct. (Deed Bk. No. II p. 659)

THOS. HYTER, King et al Chiefman of the Chowan Indians, 200 acres to MICHAEL WARD on Catherine's Creek 3 Aug. 1733. Wits: JOHN FREEMAN, HOBERT HICKS. (N.C. Register Vol. II p. 609)

On 14 Jan. 1740/41, MICHAEL WARD of Chowan Co. and ANN, his wife, conveyed to THOMAS WALTON JR. of same for £44, 350 acres in Indian Neck on the westward side of a creek called Catherine's Creek this 350 acres being part of two deeds to MICHAEL WARD from the Chowan Indians - one for 200 acres 4 Aug. 1733 and the other for 600 acres 7 Nov. 1734.

On 1 Mar. 1740 MICHAEL WARD and wife, ANN, of Chowan Co. to WM. BLY of Bertie Co. for £200 - a tract of 100 acres on the south side of Catherine's Creek - to a mulberry tree standing in the place where MICHAEL WARD and WM. FREEMAN did live adjacent to WALTER DRAUGHN. Wits: JOHN PARKER, JOHN CHAMPION.

This is the last entry we have of MICHAEL WARD in the records of N. C. We do not know if his will was lost in that state or whether he returned to Va. and it was lost there.

The Bertie Co. Tax-list of 1757 enumerates, among others, MICHAEL WARD JR. If he was the son of

MICHAEL I) of Chowan Co. this would indicate that the latter was still living. But where?

There are two wills recorded in Chowan Co. which, while they are not direct information, do serve to tie some of these people together.

The first is the will of JOHN CHAMPION who witnessed one of the WARD documents. It was dated 10 Oct. 1749 and recorded April 1751.

He left 250 acres each to his grandsons CHAMPION SPIVEY, son of NATHANIEL SPIVEY and his wife MARTHA; JAMES BLY, son of WILLIAM and ELIZABETH BLY SPIVEY, PETER COPELAND, son of WILLIAM and SARAH COPELAND.

He also left 250 acres to his daughter, MARGARET WARD.

He named his wife, SARAH CHAMPION, and son-in-law, NATHANIEL SPIVEY, executors.

Witnesses: JOHN ARLINE, MARY ARLINE, ROBT. ELLIOTT.

(A WM. WARD of Currituck Co. N.C. left wife, MARGARET, sons JOHNATHAN and TIMOTHY and a son-in-law CHARLES WATERMAN of Princess Ann Co. Va.)

The will of JOHN ARLINE, who conveyed land to MICHAEL WARD in 1731 and who witnessed the will of JOHN CHAMPION given above, was recorded in Chowan Co. in 1757. He named his cousin, JACOB ODOM, ELIZABETH GOODING (GORDON?), dau. of REBECCA GOODING, and her brother JOHN GOODING; MARY WARD, wife of JOBE WARD (Son of JOHN WARD I) of Chowan).

His well beloved wife SARAH, and ED. GARRETT were named executors.

Wits: SARAH COPELAND, JOHN COPELAND, SILBRELLARS GARRETT. Was ARLINE'S wife SARAH the relick of CHAMPION? If so, the MARGARET WARD of one, may actually be the MARY WARD of the other document one of them miscopied, or they may have been sisters, both married to WARDS.

SUMMARY:

There is no legal way to tie the early WARD'S of N.C. together but if we go by given names, which were important in that day, they seem to fall into two groups. MICHAEL I) of Chowan, JOHN I) of Tyrrell and PHILIP WARD of Bertie all used the name MICHAEL in naming their sons, while JAMES WARD I) of Chowan and JOHN WARD I) of Chowan named their eldest sons, THOMAS.

There was also a THOMAS WARD of Chowan whom we have not discussed who died in 1751 and names only his wife and executrix, CHRISTIAN, and a son MICHAEL, to whom he left a plantation and shop.

Was this the THOMAS WARD who was grantee of a deed from THOMAS GARRETT in 1714? (Bk. F. p. 89)

We believe that all of these WARDS were from near-by counties of Va. with perhaps JAMES and JOHN I) of Chowan sons of THOMAS WARD of Lynhaven, while JOHN I) of Tyrrell, PHILIP of Bertie, MICHAEL of Chowan and THOMAS of the 1751 will of Chowan who used the name MICHAEL, probably came from the W.B.E.R. in Norfolk or perhaps some of them from Nansemond, but all having a common ancestor named MICHAEL.

Was this MICHAEL WARD who was left a legacy in 1674 by RICHARD BENNETT? We do not know how old he was at that time but we believe that he would have been old enough to have fathered these early WARDS of N.C. whose sons bore his name.

EDWARD WARD of Tyrrell is unidentified while FRANCIS and ROBERT, brothers of the same locality could, logically have been descended from FRANCIS, who died in 1694 in N.C. and left a widow, Ann.

Records of Norfolk Co. Va. are inconclusive but there are entries which indicate that ANN, the relick of FRANCIS WARD in 1694 may have been the daughter of THOS. KEELING and the wife, first of WM. JEREMY before 1666, and then of ———Bray.

On 15 Oct. 1666 JOHN LAWRENCE and wife, KATHERINE, granted adm. of THOMAS KEELING decd., assign rights in estate to ANN JEREMY, widow. (Records of Norfolk 1666 - 1676 p. 8)

In 1690, a notation states that FRANCES WALKER, wife of GEORGE, is dau. of ANN BRAY, relick of WM. JEREMY.

The 1694 inv. of FRANCIS WARD was signed by WM. BRAY and JOHN DAN——— probably DANIEL.

If this is not ANN KEELING JEREMY BRAY, probably ANN WARD is her daughter.

CHAPTER III - Part C

Pioneer WARDS of Southeastern Virginia

In an effort to unravel the genealogy of NANCY WARD, born in 1771, daughter of ROBERT WARD of Halifax Co. N.C. and later the wife of his neighbor, DAVID HODGES of Fishing Creek, we have reversed the process used in the previous chapters by beginning with NANCY and tracing back from her father, ROBERT, to his father DAVID WARD of Tyrrell and Halifax Counties N.C., to DAVID'S father, JOHN WARD, of Tyrrell Co. N.C., from 1729 to his death in 1750.

A further study of documents pertaining to all early WARDS of N.C. up to the years 1765-70 did not answer the question as to where JOHN WARD of Tyrrell Co. came from, nor who his progenitors were. In this search however, the fact seemed clear that the various WARDS of Colonial N.C. were from their neighboring colony and the counties of the extreme southeastern corner of Virginia which is made up of Norfolk, Nansemond, Isle of Wight and, after 1691, of Princess Ann Counties.

In pursuing this search in Virginia, we add another 100 years of documents, beginning with the immigrants and moving forward, hoping to join hands with the first generation of WARDS in N.C. who would have been the third or fourth in Va., before they migrated south.

Nansemond Co. Va, formed from Norfolk Co., in 1642, lost all of its' records. Since it forms a wedge between Norfolk and Isle of Wight Cos., that loss has been felt in both of the latter. Especially is that true for the families of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River in Norfolk which lies adjacent to Nansemond and this is the portion in which some of the WARDS resided in the second generations before moving to North Carolina.

Furthermore, this block of three counties, with the addition of Princess Ann, created from Lower Norfolk in 1691, being adjacent to the North Carolina boundary, their people and sometimes their records overflowed into the adjoining state. In 1749 Southampton replaces its' mother county, Isle of Wight, on the North Carolina border but by then the Virginia WARD connection, with which we are concerned, had already established itself in the colony to the south. This is the same setting and the same circumstances of the early research on the HODGES family.

We have found that the WARD documents in the counties in which the records are preserved, are not as complete as one would desire. This is due, no doubt, to the fact that they were early comers and that some of the first records in these counties are lost.

The answers to the relationships of the earliest WARDS in the Norfolk vicinity no doubt lies in England but the best clues found in the Virginia records are centered around THOMAS WARD and his predecessors, CHRISTOPHER WARD and CHRISTOPHER BURRESS and JOHN HOLMES, "father-in-law" of THOS. WARD There were also JOHN, WILLIAM and EDWARD WARD of this first generation.

Nugent's "Cavaliers and Pioneers" lists immigrants in the form of headrights for land allowed by the Virginia Colony, to the year 1669. The Norfolk vicinity was a part of Elizabeth City Co. until New Norfolk was formed about 1638. Although headrights began with the acquisition, in 1619, of Va. by the crown, many of the earlier colonists did not receive the patent for their land until about 1638.

From this valuable volume, we learn that THOMAS MARTIN, JOHN HOLMES and CHRISTOPHER WARD all came as headrights of JAMES VANERIT in 1636, and that VANERIT received land in Elizabeth City Co. to the amount of 1,000 acres, so we know they were part of a group of 20 immigrants. (p. 50)

On page 38 is recorded an item which states that on May 4, 1636, CHRISTOPHER BURROUGHS was granted 200 acres in Elizabeth City Co. for his personal adventure and the importation of his brother, WILLIAM BURROUGHS, and his sister, ANN BURROUGHS. This land was situated in what was a little later New Norfolk on the Linhaven River adj. Capt. ADAM THOROGOOD.

In fact, WILLIAM and ANN BURRUSS came to Va. before 24 June 1635 as headrights of Capt. ADAM THOROGOOD and this claim was no doubt transferred by him, to their brother.

Page 37 states that THOMAS NORMANTON received 250 a. in Elizabeth City Co. 11 April 1635, by transfer from JOHN WARD to whom it was due for importation of ANN WARD, three others and himself.

There are several accounts of the entry into the colony of a THOMAS WARD, one or all of which may concern the THOMAS WARD I) who is later identified with these immigrants we have already named.

The dates of these patents are not necessarily the date of the first coming of these colonists. They were entitled to a tract of 50 acres each time they re-entered the colony, even though they were born there.

To go back to the 200 acres granted to CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS in 1636: On March 20, 1642, CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS of Linnhaven in the County of Lower Norfolk, planter, transferred this same land to JOHN WARD and ANDREW BODENAM for a certain sum of tobacco, (Norfolk Records Book B. p. 65) and on the last day of May 1645, JOHN WARD and ANDREW BODENAM assigned the title to same, to WM. SMYTH of Lynnhaven, planter. (Bk. B. p. 65)

JONATHAN LANGWORTH, chyrurgeon, patented 1200 a. in the Upper Co. of New Norfolk, 18 Dec. 1637, on W.B.E.R. butting on the Main Branch, 600 a. by assignment from PATRICK KENNEDY, mariner and 600 acres for transfer of 12 persons including THOMAS WARD. Upper New Norfolk became Nansemond in 1642.

On Sept. 29, 1643, THOMAS WARD was one of four persons transported to Va. by Lt. FRANCIS MASON who

received 150 a. of land in Linhaven on a creek to the west of JOHN HOLMES house, also 50 acres, being three small hummocks of land joined together upon Hogg Island, in Little Cr. in Linhaven. ("Cavaliers and Pioneers" p. 151).

HENRY BRAKES received 250 a. in Lynhaven Parish up a little creek against Hogg island on 13 Mar. 1649 for transfer of 5 persons including THOMAS WARD, SARAH WALKER, DOROTHY WYNNSFORD and ROBERT RUSSELL. ("Cavaliers and Pioneers" p. 187).

From subscquent records which tie THOMAS WARD I) to the persons herein named, we believe that these entries all concern one man, THOMAS WARD I) of Little Creek in Norfolk Co., Va. who died in Jan. 1655 and who was preceeded to Va. by JOHN WARD, who eame in 1635.

Now begins a transfer of property which is puzzling, partly because the records are more than 300 years old and very difficult to read, when it's possible to do so at all. They do however, indicate some tie between these parties: "20 -- 1643. (Book A p. 36 of Norfolk Co. Records) THOMAS WARD of Lynnhaven in Norfolk Co., chyrurgeon, (medical title akin to surgeon) . . did by the deposition of THOS. WILLOUGHBY -- in an expedition against the Indians -- therefore, I, the said THOMAS WARD, for the love and affection which I have for CHRISTOPHER BURRESS of Lynnhaven -- WM. WILLOUGHBY, JOHN WILLOUGHBY." This deed was witnessed by JOHN DYER and JOHN RICHARDSON.

On page 30 of the same book on Nov. 6, 1643, CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS of Lower Norfolk to JOHN MARTIN of same -- THOS. WILLOUGHBY -- my plantation which I hereby grant unto said JOHN MARTIN w. FRANCIS LAND and ——— MORGAN. This is probably the same land from WARD to BURRUSS.

This JOHN MARTIN was aged 43 on 15 Aug. 1661, so was born in 1618. We can assume that he was the son of THOMAS MARTIN who came to Va. with JOHN HOLMES and CHRISTOPHER WARD in 1636.

On page 35 of Bk. A. Norfolk Co., just preceeding the deed, THOMAS WARD to CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS, is recorded a document of some kind between JOHN MARTIN and THOMAS WARD but it is in poor condition and little of it is discernable. The date no doubt is 1643. "THOMAS WARD, chyrurgeon, hath admini -- unto JOHN MARTIN and sd. WARD unto sd. MARTIN -- it appears unto sd. court that sd. MARTIN payed unto sd. WARD -- hundred pounds of tobo infull satisfaction of all --. Now sd. MARTIN to WARD -- sd. MARTIN to RICHARD BONNER (or BONNY) 2000 lbs. of tobo -- sd. MARTIN, his wife and WARD -- MARTIN to pay costs of court."

Bk. A p. 30 "The court doth order that THOMAS WARD and Mr. CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS ----."

It appears in these several conveyances that THOMAS WARD, perhaps acting as administrator of some estate, is making a division of the property in which BURRUSS and MARTIN and possibly RICHARD BONNEY have a part, a group intimately associated for two generations in early Virginia.

On Oct. 2, 1654, JOHN MARTIN of Linhaven in Lower Norfolk Co. received a patent for 1400 acres bounded by SYMOND BARROWS and on N.W. by Bennett's Creek and adj. land of ADAM THOROGOOD; containing 400 acres granted to JONATHAN LANGWORTH, chyrurgeon, and by him assigned to JOHN HOLMES who assigned same to MARTIN."

WILLIAM BURRUSS, brother of CHRISTOPHER, was dead by 1643 and THOMAS LAMBERT acted as his administrator. We presume that he was married to BURRUSS' widow. She was dead by 1661 when he married DOROTHY MASON. (p. 301 Bk. D)

On Feb. 16, 1646, CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS gave power of attorney to RICHARD SMITH in a suit against JOHN HOLMES.

Before 18 April 1654, C. BURRUSS was deceased and "JOHN SIDNEY, THOMAS BRIDGER, LANCASTER LOVETT and ROBERT POWELL were ordered by the court to make an inventory of his estate at the house of WM. SMYTH who had married his relick." (Bk. C)

His widow later married SAVIL GASKIN. On June 12, 1662 "THOMAS JARVIS, who had married a daughter of CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS, vs. SAVIL GASKIN, who married ye relick, all property belonging to JARVIS' wife by appraisment of her father's estate." He, CHRISTOPHER, also had sons BENJ. and CHRISTOPHER, JR.

We believe that JOHN WARD and ANDREW BODENAM also were probably related to the BURRUSS trio because of assignment from C. BURRUSS to them.

We do not know for whom THOMAS WARD was acting as administrator in 1643 when he deeded property to CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS, JOHN MARTIN and perhaps RICHARD BONNEY. WM. BURRUSS and Capt. ED. WINDHAM both died that year but there is nothing to prove it was either.

We do know, however, that after the death of THOMAS WARD, an attachment was made on his estate by Lt. Col. THOMAS LAMBERT who was administrator of the estate of Mr. WILLIAM BURRUSS. (Bk. D. p. 29 Feb. 16, 1656)

JNO. MARTIN died in 1666, leaving a wife, ANN. From these records we believe that his wife was ANN BURRUSS who came to Va. in 1636, with her brother CHRISTOPHER. Or it is possible that she was ANN WARD, who was claimed as headright of JOHN WARD before 1635.

It seems evident, therefore, that this settlement involved the BURRUSS trio or their descendants who were also related to JOHN WARD and ANDREW BODEMAN whose wife was MARY. THOS., JOHN and WILLIAM WARD seem to have been of a comparative age with the BURRUSSES, so the most likely answer seems to be THOS, was

half or step-brother to the BURRUSS brothers and sisters, or he may have been their brother-in-law.

Early court minutes of Norfolk Co. state that on June 15, 1666, administration was granted ANN MARTIN, relick of JOHN MARTIN and before Sept. 15, 1666, ANN had become the wife of JOHN OKEHAM.

On June 15, 1669, ADAM KEELING, who had married ANN MARTIN, daughter of JOHN and ANN, was appointed guardian to JOHN MARTIN'S orphans.

ADAM KEELING d. 1683 and in his will names his wife, ANN, sons THOMAS and JOHN, the latter to receive 1400 acres formerly belonging to JOHN MARTIN, KEELING'S father-in-law. He also names daus. ELIZ. and ANN, his friend MALACHI THRUSTON, and brother-in-law, Lt. Col. ANTHONY LAWSON. (Bk. 4 p. 155) Before 1690 ANN MARTIN KEELING was the wife of JOHN RICHARDSON.

JOHN MARTIN, JR., died before April 17, 1671, and his widow, FRANCES, was then married to MOSES LINTON, JR. Before he married FRANCES, JOHN MARTIN, JR. had been married in 1669 to GRACE.

JONATHAN MARTIN died before Oct. 15, 1671, and his widow, KATHERINE CHAMPERNOWNE, of Plymouth Co. of Devon Eng., mothe;of JOSEPH and ANN MARTIN was sueing the estate of JOHN OAKHAM through her attorney ROBERT HODGE of Modebury, County of Devon. (KATHERINE CHAMPION)

In 1671, ANN, the relick of JOHN OAKHAM, was wife of ANTHONY LAWSON and either he or a grown son had married MARY, the relick of WM. MOSELEY and daughter of JOHN GOODKIN some time during the following year, 1672.

On August 15, 1672, the estate of the GRACE MARTIN was in the hands of ADAM KEELING, her brother-in-law. ROBERT BRAY, KEELING'S step-father, and ANTHONY LAWSON, last husband of ANN MARTIN, were his securities.

At the same time the estate of JOEL MARTIN, WM., MARY and JOHN OAKHAM was put in the hands of ROBERT BRAY. ADAM KEELING and P. BRAY were his securities.

ROBERT BRAY d. 1671. His wife was ANN, and she was certainly the mother, not mother-in-law, of ADAM KEELING. (In their wills, his sister, ELIZ., and brother, THOROGOOD both speak of their father, BRAY.) He mentions MARY, JOHN and WM. OAKHAM, leaving to each, negro slaves. To JOEL MARTIN he willed a silver tankard formerly belonging to his father, a good gun and a horse. He left his land to his bro., PLUMER BRAY, and two spoons each to the children of ANTHONY LAWSON. (Bk. 4 p. 101).

Earlier in this chapter we have seen that JOHN MARTIN received land from both CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS and THOMAS WARD in 1643. This would have been after or about the time of his marriage to ANN for by 1671, they had three grown and married children and at least two grandchildren.

When we recall that CHRISTOPHER WARD, THOMAS MARTIN, and JOHN HOLMES came to Virginia together in 1636 and consider that CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS, within a few years thereafter, assigned or granted land to JOHN WARD and JOHN MARTIN; that THOMAS WARD granted land to both CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS and JOHN MARTIN, tagging the gift to BURRUSS "with love and affection," that JOHN MARTIN, whose wife was ANN, also received by grant from JOHN HOLMES more than 400 a. of land, all this transferring in a short span of years, we must conclude that these WARDS and MARTINS were descendants or kinsmen of CHRISTOPHER WARD and THOMAS MARTIN who came to Norfolk Co. with JOHN HOLMES in 1636, and that they were all in some way related.

THOMAS WARD'S will dated 10 Dec. 1654 and probated 25 Jan. 1654/55 is recorded in Bk. C. p. 121 Norfolk Co. records and was witnessed by JOHN BANKS and WM. OELPHANT.

He does not call his wife by name but he leaves to her all he had through her and all his horses, cattle, calves, goods, hogs and crops.

He mentions only one child, a daughter, to whom, "I give all the female cattle I had before I married my now wife and feather bed and furniture on day of marriage." (This item indicates that the daughter was of a former marriage and that WARD'S last marriage was not of long duration.)

He mentions HENRY HOLMES.

"To my sister WORKMAN'S son, THOMAS, (I give) a cow and calf the first that shall fall."

"Lastly I do make my wife my whole and sole executor of this my last will and testament and do desire my father-in-law, JOHN HOLMES, and JOHN (F.) WORKMAN, to act as trustees out of Christian duty."

The will of THOMAS WORKMAN, brother-in-law of THOMAS WARD was dated Nov. 8, 1654. The date of its' probation is 25 Jan. 1654/55, the same time of that of THOS. WARD. WARD'S will is recorded on p. 121 and WORKMAN'S on p. 122 of Bk. C. Norfolk Records. Let's analyze these wills:

First, WARD had been married at least twice, and had a daughter by the first marriage. One wife was ---- WORKMAN, or, less likely, WARD'S sister was married to THOS. WORKMAN or the two had married sisters.

We have little help on this beyond the fact that WARD names three WORKMAN'S in his will, THOMAS, JOHN and THOMAS, JR. The fact that he mentions both THOMAS, SR. and JOHN F. leads us to believe that one wife, mother of his daughter, was sister of the two WORKMAN or their half-sister.

The will of THOMAS WORKMAN strengthen's this belief:

1. He left to his son, THOMAS WORKMAN, half of his cattle, male and female.

2. To his brother, JOHN WORKMAN, one sorrell horse by name of ——————, one yearling heiffer.
3. To his brother, NATHANIEL (m. ALICE, dau. of JOHN HOLMES d. 1664). One of her many husbands.
4. Brother, ADAM (m. SARAH, died before 15 Dec. 1661).
5. My brother WARD'S daughter, a cow and calf, the first that is fallen.
6. My brother, JOHN WORKMAN, and my brother, THOMAS WARD, to be trustees of this my last will and testament."

The will of ANNE HAYES throws further light on those named in the WORKMAN will.

This will is recorded 26 Mar. 1650 in Bk. B. p. 145 Norfolk Co. Records and in it she mentions her late husband, ROBERT HAYES, dec'd. and her four sons, NATHANIEL and ADAM HAYES and THOMAS and JOHN WORKMAN. This will was witnessed by JOHN HOLMES, JOHN MARTIN and W. H. JEREMY. No daughters are mentioned but this doesn't necessarily prove that THOMAS WARD'S wife was not her daughter.

The JOHN HOLMES who witnessed this will was said to be the father-in-law of THOMAS WARD who had an undefined connection to JOHN MARTIN.

It is difficult to know whether NATHANIEL and ADAM HAYES are sons or step-sons of ANNE HAYES but since she calls them "sonne" and THOMAS WORKMAN speaks of them as brother, we will consider them her sons and his half brothers.

There are three Norfolk documents dated 1754 which concern THOMAS WORKMAN:

1. One is a bond dated 4 April 1653 and executed 20 jan. 1654 from RICHARD GARFORD (or CRAWFORD) of London to THOMAS WORKMAN of Little Creek in Va., planter, for 1 pound lawful money of England. (Bk. C. p. 86 Norfolk Co.)

2. The hardly legible will of JOHN CUBBIDGE recorded Nov. 16, 1654 devises to THOMAS WORKMAN'S son a two year old heifer; to JOHN DAVYS' , unto ROBERT GUY, etc. (Bk. C. p. 107 Norfolk Co. Records)

3. On May 7, 1654 JOHN PARKER Of Little Creek in Lynhaven made THOMAS WORKMAN, son of THOMAS WORKMAN his heir, all and every part of my goods and chattle. He made THOMAS WORKMAN, SR. his one and only executor.

This is also recorded on page 107 of Bk. C.

It is difficult because of the age and dimness of these records to determine whether this is PARKER or PORTER.

Before 15 Feb. 1656, RICHARD POOLE had married the widow of THOMAS WORKMAN, who was MARY.

Before 16 June 1658, RICHARD POOLE married the widow of JOHN MOY and the division of the estate of MOY is recorded in Norfolk Co. Records Bk. D. pp. 155 and 156 and divided among the following:

1. Lt. Col. THOS. LAMBART (who was at that time m. to the widow of WM. BURRUSS).
2. To GEORGE ASHALL (ASHALL appears in many of the documents relative to the WARD-HOLMES connection. Had wife MARY).
3. To the estate of JOHN POWHER (POWER, POWELL, POOR).
4. To Mr. JOHN MARTIN (married to ANN BURRUSS or ANN WARD, we believe the former).
5. Reserve to ADAM HAYES (youngest son of ANNE HAYES and half brother to THOMAS and JOHN WORKMAN).
6. Reserve to JOHN DAVIS. (recall the will of JOHN CUBBIGE, which made THOS. WORKMAN, JR. his heir and mentioned JOHN DAVYS, ROBERT GUY and HENRY BRAKES. JOHN HOLMES and ROBERT RUSSELL were witnesses.)
7. Mr. HARDING.

WM. CAPPS was to be guardian to JOHN MOY, JR. HENRY NODHAM and HENRY HALL witnesses to the division of JOHN MOY'S estate.

Later we know that POOLE had wife, FLORENCE, but we do not know that she was not a later wife than the widow of JOHN MOY.

In Isle of Wight Co. on 13 Oct. 1665 a marriage contract was made between POOLE and MARY, relick and admt. of JOHN DAVIS. (17th century Isle of Wight Co. p. 544).

RICHARD POOLE'S will was dated 27 May 1674. He mentions his son GEO., daus. SARAH CORBITT and BLANDINA POOLE and a wife, but not by name. His relick married MALACHI THRUSTON at some later date.

Evidently JOHN MOY, minor, of this estate division was the one age 23 on 15 Oct. 1663/4 and so born 1640. (Bk. D. p. 385 Norfolk Records). He was the grandson of the JOHN MOY whose estate was being divided, and no doubt, the son of JOHN MOYE whose inventory was filed in Norfolk Co. 1644.

The first JOHN MOY was in Va. in 1618 according to a deed which JOHN MOY III) made to MARTIN GRINTO 15 June 1664 and recorded in Bk. D. Norfolk records p. 406.

This land to GRINTO was from "a patent of land to JOHN MOY, 300 a. in Lynhaven adj. HENRY WOODHOUSE for his own adventure and transfer of himself and wife, DOROTHY' and four others into this colony, whose names are in the records pertaining to this patent, bearing date of 18 Dec. 1618 and later given under my hand 5 May 1683." JOHN HARVEY, governor.

There is another will which relates to the MOYS which we should examine before going on to another family associated with THOMAS WARD. This is the will of ROBERT JARVIS dated 17 June 1662 and recorded Bk. D. p. 346 Norfolk Records. He left one-third part to his widow, EDY, whom we believe to have been the widow of JOHN MOY II) of the 1644 inventory. He names MARY, the wife of PLOMER BRAY, and his god-sonne EDWARD COOPER. He left to JOHN MOY, wearing clothes.

He provides that his wife is to live on the plantation until RICHARD MOY shall return to Va. and if he does not come one-half (½) of his part of the land is to go to PLOMER BRAY whose wife, MARY, was perhaps MARY MOY, dau. of JARVIS' wife. The other half is to go to EDWARD COOPER and PETER MALBONE, if RICHARD doesn't return.

He also mentions JOHN DURST, PETER MALBONE, Mr. ANTHONY CLEWKE and ED. PENNINGTON and makes small bequests to ROGER FOUNTAIN JR. and Mr. ED. HALL. The will is witnessed by JOHN ROBINSON and THOS. BRANTON, JOHN MARTIN, ED. HALL. THOS. KEELING and WM. CAPPS appraise the estate.

Before Feb. 1663/4 the widow of ROBERT JARVIS has married NOAH PAWKER, (p. 375 Bk. D.) who deeds wife's part of her late husband's estate to PETER MALBONE, one time son-in-law of SARAH GODFREY, wife of JOHN.

At the Dec. 20 court 1662 (Bk. D. p. 360-363) the executor of ROBERT JARVIS was ordered to deliver to JOHN MOY all ye cattle belonging unto him and his bro., RICHARD MOY, according to JARVIS' will.

In Dec., RICHARD MOY and PLOMER BRAY were executors of the estate of ROBERT JARVIS and in Feb. 1663/4, because of a difference between RICHARD MOY and PLOMER BRAY, JOHN KELLY and PETER MALBONE, instead of Mr. ADAM THOROGOOD and Mr. JOHN MARTIN, are instructed to examine the estate of ROBERT JARVIS in the hands of PLOMER BRAY.

In 1663 NOAH PARKER and JOHN MOY are joint defendants in a suit by THOS. WILLIAMS and on 2 Oct. 1665, JOHN MOY is granted an attachment on the estate of NOAH PARKER. (Bk. D. p. 430).

From this latter will and all of the court records we deduct that the widow of ROBERT JARVIS, later wife of NOAH PARKER, had first of all been the wife of JOHN MOY II) who died 1644 and that RICHARD and JOHN MOY, MARY the wife of PLOMER BRAY who was first the wife of SYMOD BARROWS (Bk. D. p. 308), were brothers and sisters and children of JOHN MOY II).

From the division of the estate of JOHN MOY I) whose widow married RICHARD POOLE in 1658, we deduct that the mother of WILLIAM, CHRISTOPHER and ANN BURRUSS, MARY, the wife of GEO. ASHALL, the wife of JOHN POWER or POWELL and ANNE, the mother of ADAM HAYES were all relatives of JOHN MOY I) who also had a son, JOHN.

JOHN DAVIS, who was named with THOMAS WORKMAN in the will of JOHN CUBBIDGE 1654 is also named in this division of JOHN MOY'S estate and is likely the JOHN DAVIS, deceased in Isle of Wight Co. in1665, whose widow MARY, married RICHARD POOLE of Norfolk.

JOHN MOY, JR. or III), to whom WM. CAPPS is guardian, is the grandson and heir of JOHN MOY I), RICHARD, the other son being heir to JOHN MOY II).

We have now explored the WORKMAN relationship.

There is another definite statement of kinship given in the 1654 will of THOMAS WARD and that is the statement that JOHN HOLMES, then living was his father-in-law, presumedly the father of his wife.

There are records of two JOHN HOLMES in the early archives of Norfolk Co., Va. The first of these died 1648; Perhaps, the source of the WARD-BURRUSS-LOVETT-HOLMES relationship

On 15 July 1648 the administrix of JOHN HOLMES I) was ordered to pay his debts (Bk. B. p. 83 Norfolk Records); and on 15 Mar. 1654 it is ordered that Mrs. MARGARET HOLMES, admx. of JOHN HOLMES of London, merchant, make satisfaction in Nansemond Co., Va. Mr. EDWARD LOYD was to make satisfaction in Maryland, so we presume he was executor in that colony.

Before this, on 16 Feb. 1646, CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS gave power of attorney to RICHARD SMYTH in suit with JOHN HOLMES (I or II) (Bk. B. p. 26).

GEO. SPORLEY (?), CHAMBRAY LIGON and WM. BASSETT get satisfaction for the estate of JOHN HOLMES, all former orders being satisfied by the oath of CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS. (Nov. 15, 1648 Bk. B. p. 91).

Before Oct. 17, 1658/9, MARJORIE, the widow of JOHN HOLMES I) was the wife of GEO. BOWMAN, or we suppose that the MARJORIE BOWMAN who is executor of JOHN HOLMES on that date is the same as MARGARET of the 1654 document. Bk. D. p. 221 Norfolk Records) JOHN HOLMES II) is deceased at this later date, but his widow is HESTER.

Before April 25, 1651, THOMAS WARD had married the widow of ----- HAWKINS who had a son HENRY HAWKINS by her first marriage. On the date given above, CORNELIUS LOYD of Eliz. River in ye Co. of Lower Norfolk in ye colony of Va. with the affirmation of EDWARD LOYD, his brother, who is guardian to ----- HAWKINS' an orphan, to THOMAS WARD of Little Creek in Lower Norfolk, a tract of land called by the name of Walnut Woods, on Little Creek, to have and to hold unto the said THOS. WARD,from this day until the said ----- HAWKINS shall attain unto the full age of one and twenty years." (Lower Norfolk Records Bk. C. p. 5) THOMAS

WARD was acquainted with both of the LOYDS having served with them, JOHN SIBSEY, THOS. LAMBERT, FRANCIS MASON on the court in 1646 and later.

In spite of the fact that both GEORGE HAWKINS and then his son, JAMES, lived in the immediate neighborhood with THOMAS WARD and there are connecting links, we believe that the son, hereunto referred, was HENRY HAWKINS, perhaps a younger brother of GEORGE HAWKINS of Norfolk or a nephew.

A deed "HENRY HAWKINS of ye Eastern shore of the province of Md. in consideration for 5000 lbs. of tobo by GEO. ASHALL of Little Creek in Linhaven, all ye tract of land commonly known by the name Woolf's Wood on a branch of Little Creek in ye county of Lower Norfolk, 300 acres." Wits: NICHOLAS WISE, THOS. BRIDGER. (Court of 15 Aug. 1665 p. 428 of Court orders 1660-1673.)

We believe that Woolf's Wood and Walnut Woods are one and the same place, misread by one or the other readers. GEORGE ASHALL left it to his son, calling it "Wolf's Neck."

Many records in Norfolk, testify to the fact that EDWARD LOYD resided in Maryland but he also operated extensively in Va. In 1650 he was married to the relick of JOHN WATKINS of Norfolk.

HENRY HAWKINS, who was at least 21 in 1665, would have been seven years of age in 1651 when the property on Little Creek was given into the hands of THOMAS WARD until HAWKINS came of age, may not have been the child of WARD'S wife, but of her husband by a former wife. WARD, grown in 1637, was around 40 when he died and may have been married several times.

Although the estate settlement of JOHN HOLMES I) speaks of him as a merchant of London, we think that the early records in Norfolk relate to him and that he, in like manner to CORNELIUS LOYD, to whom the same term was applied, was in process of a definite move to the New World, at the time he was still in business in London.

We know that HOLMES' widow resided in Va. after his death.

JOHN HOLMES II), neighbor of THOMAS WARD and mentioned in WARD'S will was married at least twice. One wife was AGNES who appears in a document recorded on page 15, B. Norfolk Records date 1640-1645.

Because it is of interest and in order to remind Twentieth Century America that there was a time when to destroy the good name of a person was considered a crime, the report of that verdict is quoted below:

> "Whereas, AGNES, the wife of JOHN HOLMES, hath spoken certain slanderous words -- for the great disparagement of Capt. THOMAS WILLOUGHBY, as disproved by the depositon of ——— LOWRY and THOMAS ———. It is ordered hereupon that the said AGNES HOLMES shall receive in this Court --- five lashes on her bare back and also -- upon her head these words written in capitol letters, 'FOR SLANDERING CAPT. WILLOUGHBY,' all to be paid on the Lord's Day at the Parish Church and at the Public Gaol in Elizabeth River, one hour in each place. Said AGNES to pay all charges."

Evidently, AGNES HOLMES died before May 1655 for on that date JOHN HOLMES conveyed to his "Now" wife, HESTER HOLMES, a tract of land, late in possession of JAMES THELABALL one place called Hogg Island. (Bk. C. p. 191).

Before Oct. 20, 1658, JOHN HOLMES, himself was deceased, Mrs. HESTER HOLMES, his executrix petitioning the court for an injunction against THOMAS SMITHERS for unfinished cupboards, not yet delivered.

Before February 1659 HESTER HOLMES married Mr. GEO. BATEMAN. During her marriage to him, HENRY HOLMES mentioned in THOMAS WARD'S will made LAWN BUTLER his guardian and Mr. BATEMAN was ordered to deliver the estate.

On Dec. 15, 1659, WM. WARD, brother or son, of THOMAS WARD, was granted an attachment against Mr. GEO. BATEMAN. (Bk. D. p. 239) (JOHN HOLMES was one of the executors of THOMAS WARD).

An attachment was also granted EDWARD HOLMES against BATEMAN about this same time.

There is abundant evidence that ALICE HOLMES was the daugher of JOHN HOLMES II) and the sister of HENRY HOLMES.

After BATEMAN'S death about 1660, HESTER HOLMES BATEMAN married Mr. THOMAS BRIDGER, a member of the Court.

The family then of JOHN HOLMES II) consisted of:

1. ALICE HOLMES m. (1) LAWN BUTLER before 1656, who died before Oct. 1659; m. (2) before 15 Dec. 1659 HENRY BRAKES who died before 15 Jan. 1661; m. (3) before 20 Dec. 1662 JOHN GRAY; m. (4) before June 15, 1663 NATHANIEL HAYES, half brother of THOMAS and JOHN WORKMAN. HAYES d. before 1644. (All reference in Bk. D. Norfolk Records.)
2. HENRY HOLMES, who with his father JOHN HOLMES, is named in the will of THOMAS WARD and who claimed, after the death of his father in 1657, all of the successive husbands of his sister (except JOHN GRAY) and both subsequent husbands of his step-mother, HESTER HOLMES; as he guardian before the end of 1664.
3. EDWARD HOLMES granted an attachment against Mr. GEORGE BATEMAN when he was the husband of HESTER, last wife of JOHN HOLMES. Married JANE ———, who in 1673 was heir with her children of the estate of WILLIAM OLIVANT, one of the witnesses of THOMAS WARD'S will. At that date, EDWARD HOLMES and JANE had; WILLIAM, ROBERT, LEMUEL and JANE and perhaps a married

dau., ANN POOLE.

4. Of course, if JOHN HOLMES was truly the father-in-law and not the brother-in-law, then one wife of THOMAS WARD was his dau., not his sister.

The name of GEO. ASHALL, husband of MARY, appears consistantly in these records and that of THOMAS SMITHER is also often seen.

THOS. SMITHER m. 1656 or 57 ANN,, the relick of HENRY SNAIL SR. There are also many connections between the HOLMES connection and the husbands of KATHERINE, relick of RICHARD HILL, JOHN REINS in 1658; ROGER HOWARD and MORRIS FITZGERALD. WM. WARD I) and LOVETT divided cattle at JOHN REINS.

EDWARD HOLMES appears older than ALICE and certainly than HENRY and is not mentioned in the many reference to them so it is quite possible that he was brother, rather than son of JOHN HOLMES II).

ALICE HOLMES, m. (2) before the death of her father, JOHN HOLMES II), LAWN BUTLER, who was plaintiff at the court of 16 Feb. 1656 at which LANCASTER LOVETT testified that he "did find that a heifer was given by Mrs. SOWELL to ye daughter of JOHN HOLMES named ALICE HOLMES" who was then the wife of LAWN BUTLER. (Bk. D. p. 200 Norfolk Co. Records)

Mrs. SOWELL was evidently the same as the mother of the wife of Col. LEMUEL MASON who also had a daughter, ALICE, and her husband was HENRY SOWELL SR., no doubt for whom HENRY HOLMES was named.

The brief will of GEORGE HORTON dated Aug. 1650 speaks of his "cozens'. (or nephews) JOHN HOLMES and Mr. LEMUEL MASON and makes them overseers of his estate. It appears then that HORTON might have been the brother of Mrs. SOWELL, and JOHN HOLMES II) and MASON were both married to her daughters, who were his nieces, making their husbands' his nephews. In that case, ALICE and HENRY HOLMES would have been the grandchildren of the HENRY SOWELLS and cousins to the children of Col. LEMUEL MASON, son of FRANCIS MASON of earlier records.

After JOHN HOLMES' death preceeding Oct. 1658, and his widow, HESTER HOLMES' marriage to GEORGE BATEMAN in 1659, "HENRY HOLMES hath in open couurt made LAWN BUTLER his guardian. It is therefore ordered that Mr. BATEMAN, his father-in-law (step-father– deliver his estate to BUTLER, GEORGE BATEMAN having married HESTER HOLMES, widow of JOHN HOLMES." (Bk. D. p. 216 Norfolk Records)

In Oct. 1659, "ALIAS" BUTLER, widow of LAWN BUTLER, was granted admt. on his estate. (Bk. D. p. 237) JOHN SIDNEY and GEO. ASHALL to appraise the estate.

Two months later, 15 Dec. 1659, HENRY HOLMES hath made HENRY BRAKES his guardian. (Bk. D. p. 239)

This, no doubt, is the HENRY BRAKES who received a patent 13 March 1649 for 250 a. on Little Creek against Hogg Island for the importation of five persons including THOS. WARD and ROBERT RUSSELL whose will he proved Nov. 5, 1660.

ALICE HOLMES is having tragic luck with her husbands and 15 Jan. 1661 ALICE BRAKES, widow of HENRY, was executor of his estate which was appraised by GEO. ASHALL, THOS. SMITHER, JOSEPH ––––– and NICHOLAS MASON. (p. 296 Bk. D.)

On 7 Mar. 1660, HENRY HOLMES chose THOMAS BRIDGER his guardian. GEO. BATEMAN was dead and HESTER HOLMES BATEMAN was married to BRIDGER, a member of the court. (p.287)

20 Dec. 1662 (Bk. D. p. 312) "Whereas ye estate of Mr. GEO. BATEMAN stood indebted to JOHN GRAY as marrying the relick and executor of HENRY BRAKES, two cows and two calves. Ordered that THOS. BRIDGER make payment as marrying ye relick of Mr. BATEMAN."

"HENRY HOLMES, an orphan hath made claim of Mr. THOS. BRIDGER his guardian and HOLMES appearing in this court hath discharged sd. BRIDGER and hath requested court to make change to NATHANIEL HAYES, who intermarried with his sister, for his guardian." (Bk. D. p. 373 June 15, 1663 Norfolk Co.)

15 Dec. 1664 Upon petition of ALICE HAYES admx. is granted her on estate of NATHANIEL HAYES, her late husband. GEO. ASHALL, GILES COLLINS, JOHN WORKMAN and THOS. SMITHERS appraise estate.

When HAYES died in 1664, his widow had had a total of four husbands. This is testimony to the shocking mortality rate among the people who pioneered the development of this continent. This condition was also true among women, where child birth took a heavy toll.

However, ALICE HOLMES seems to have been an exception to this rule for we believe that she lived a normal life span and died between 1685 and 1693, as the wife of JAMES PETERS, after having been married several times in the intervening twenty-five years. PETERS also lived in that part of Norfolk which was later Princess Ann.

On page 277 of Norfolk Court Records 1676 - 1686 on 15 May 1685 ALICE PETERS is shown as having presented a petition to the court, and on page 306 of the same as of 2 Jan. 1685 JAMES PETERS gdn. to HENRY HOLMES II) petitioned the court for a order for the division of the land of MICHAEL LAWRENCE, grandfather of said HOLMES" and son of ELIZABETH LAWRENCE, who was relick of HENRY HOLMES, the brother of ALICE.

The will of MICHAEL LAWRENCE proved 16 Aug. 1679 names his wife MARGARE, his daughters ELIZABETH HOLMES and HESTER GUY and his grandchildren HENRY HOLMES, JAMES GUY and others. It was witnessed by Col. LEMUEL MASON. WM. NEARN and THOS. MASON. (Norfolk Records Bk. 4 p. 58)

On 15 May 1693 WILLIAM ARCHER, petitioned the court in behalf of ELIZABETH HOLMES, one of the orphans of HENRY HOLMES now living with JAMES PETERS. (p. 281, Bk. 5)

JAMES PETERS SR. was decd. before 14 July 1697 on which date THOMAS BANKS and wife ANN of P. A. Co. Va., reviewed the now familiar story of two BOULINGS decd., attesting that ANN was the daughter of one of the three sisters late wife and widow of JAMES PETERS, deceased. This daughter could only have been ELIZABETH since ROGER BRIANT survived both DOROTHY and MARY. It was JAMES PETERS JR. who married ELIZ. ASHALL, who sold land to THOS. WARD and who died 1709.

We realize that the matrimonial experience of ALICE HOLMES must have been some kind of record for multiple marriages.

The evidence is that it is a fact and it certainly was not an impossibility, since in 1690 ALICE HOLMES cct. would have been no more than 60 years old.

An EDWARD HOLMES, of this generation was granted an attachment against Mr. GEORGE BATEMAN when he was the husband of HESTER, last wife of JOHN HOLMES. He married JANE ––––––, who in 1673 was heir with her children of the estate of WILLIAM OLIVANT, one of the witnesses of THOMAS WARD'S will. At that date, EDWARD HOLMES and JANE had: WILLIAM, ROBERT, LEMUEL and JANE and perhaps a married dau., ANN POOLE.

There are other relationships which appear after the death of some of these early settlers which strengthen clues that we find in the very earliest county records.

A labyrinth of documents and unresolved confusion surrounding MARY, who was in succession the wife and widow of JAMES STERLING, JAMES LOPHAM and RICHARD ABRALLS, during which the current husband, as admt. of the former, conveyed property to most of the members of the WARD-BURRUSS connection. No certain knowledge has been forthcoming but the best inference is that she was either widow or daughter of Capt. EDWARD WINDHAM who may have married a dau. of JOHN HOLMES I). It is probable, too, that before her marriage to STERLING, Capt. RICHARD FOSTER was administrator of the estate to which she was heir.

Both THOMAS WARD and a WILLIAM WARD, who now appears on the scene, received land from Capt. RICHARD FOSTER; THOMAS in 1650 and WILLIAM in 1652, but this fact is deceptive for there is nothing in the will of FOSTER to indicate any relationship. Therefore, we conclude that he was acting in the capacity of administrator of another.

The deed which concerns WILLIAM was later verified by JAMES LOPHAM, admt. of JAMES STERLING and was for 250 acres, half of a dividend of 500 a., patented Feb. 13, 1637 by JOHN HOLMES and sold to WM. WARD 28 Oct. 1652 by RICHARD FOSTER. "JAMES STERLING promised to give to WM. WARD a bill of sals, now I, JAMES LOPHAM, do same" Mar. 20, 1654. (Bk. C. p. 130)

The deed FOSTER to THOMAS WARD was dated earlier, in 1650, but the deed itself is lost. However, after his death in 1655, an attachment was granted Mr. JOHN PORTER, sheriff against the estate of RICHARD ABRILLS at petition of WARD orphans Nov. 17, 1656. Were these theorphans of THOMAS or JOHN WARD?

On Aug. 25, 1654, LOPHAM and STERLING to SAVIL GASKIN. The land to GASKIN was 140 a., part of a tract of 250 a. sold by Capt. ED. WINDHAM to JAMES STERLING Aug. 8, 1643, the 250 a. being half of a dividend of 500 patented to JOHN ––––– (looks like LANOXFIELD) 10 Feb. 1637. (Bk. C. p. 123 A.) This could be JONATHAN LANGWORTH.

RICH. ABRALLS married ye widow of JAMES STERLING and JAMES LOPHAM before Nov. 1655. On 14 Nov. 1655 RICHARD ABRILL, admt. of JAMES LOPHAM, admt. of JAMES STERLING to GEORGE HAWKINS of Linhaven, one plot of land by estimation 60 acres adj. plantation of GEO. HAWKINS and also land of Col. SAVILL GASKIN, beginning at ye mouth of SAM BENNETT'S Creek part of a dividend of 250 acres to JAMES STERLING by Capt. ED. WINDHAM, late of Norfolk, in 1647; sold unto GEO. HAWKINS for 1200 lbs. of tobo; verified 1652 (Bk. C. p. 178)

It can be seen that GASKIN and HAWKINS received adjoining parts of the same 250 acre tract and in 1656 Mr. ROBERT POWERS and Capt. RICHARD FOSTER (still living) were called upon by the court to run the boundry line between the two. (Bk. D. p. 8)

On 4 April 1656 RICHARD ABRIL to WM. SMITH and LANCASTER LOVETT. (Bk. D. p. 41) WM. SMITH was at this time married to the widow of CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS and we are convinced that ANN, the wife of LOVETT, was also a member of this WARD - BURRUSS connection.

"Mrs. MARY BATTS, relick of HENRY WOODHOUSE against the estate of RICHARD ABRALLS for payment - - four parts," one for each of her children.

There is a document of importance concerning LANCASTER LOVETT, SR., an earlier document, recorded June 1654 on page 84a of Book C. Norfolk Records.

"Know all men that I, LANCASTER LOVETT, doth acquit and discharge JAMES LOPHAM from all debts, bills, interest and bonds both from himself and the estate of JAMES STERLING from the beginning of the world unto this day, 4 April 1654."

The deeds 4 April 1656 recorded in Book D. p. 41, two years after LOVETT'S release were evidently the final part of a temporary arrangement made two years earlier.

The index of deeds to Norfolk Co. verifies the fact that a deed, JAMES STERLING to JOHN MARTIN, is recorded on page 80 of Book B. And in Bk. C. page 223 RICHARD ABRALLS to COOPER, perhaps THOMAS COOPER whose estate was in the hands of WILLIAM WARD at the time of his death.

In 1651, Gov. BERKELY of Va. granted jointly to JOHN MARTIN and LANCASTER LOVETT "600 acres in Lynhaven in county of Lower Norfolk beginning at Piney Point at ye mouth of Eastern Branch which is at ye head of Bennett's Creek. (p. 411 Bk. D.) On July 10, 1663 MARTIN and LOVETT assigned this tract to THOMAS and ROBERT BRINSON who assigned same on 15 Oct. 1664 to JOHN PEARCE, who shortly thereafter died and left widow SUSAN who had been married before to several including THOS. WATKINS, CHAS. WILDER, etc.

On 20 of Sept. 1669, LANCASTER LOVETT and his wife, ANN of Linhaven, in suit for lands between JOHN MARTIN and RICH POOLE ------ "Ye lands of LOVETT in hands of Renatus Land to MALI THRUSTON. WM. MOSELY and RICHARD POOLE witnessed this deed. (p. 85 Bk. E. Deeds & Wills)

The will of LANCASTER LOVETT dated 17 Oct. 1672 and probated 15 April 1673 names his wife ANN. LANCASTER, born in 1609 was 64 at the time of his death. He left land - a good quantity, to his sons, LANCASTER JR., JOHN, THOMAS and RANDOLPH, who was a minor.

These, three hundred acre tracts, except for that left to RANDOLPH, seem to have been parts of a block of land adjacent to property of RICHARD POOLE, JOHN MARTIN decd. and MALACHI THRUSTON. THRUSTON m. ye relick of R. POOLE.

The land to RANDOLPH lay between the lands of RICHARD BONNEY and GEO. MINCHIN. RANDOLPH was also to have had the cattle at BENJ. BURRUSSES (son of CHRISTOPHER) "but if he dye under age give cattle, stock and use of plantation THOMAS LAMBERT lives on, to my two daus. MARY and ELIZABETH." He also mentions his dau. BETHSHEBA, wife of JOHN LADD and he makes his son LANCASTER, JR. and his wife, ANN, exetrs. The will was witnessed by THOS. BRIDGER aged 57 (born 1615) who was married to HESTER, widow of JOHN HOLMES' II); ADAM KEELING, husband of JOHN MARTIN'S dau. ANN; and MALA THRUSTON, to whom LANCASTER and his wife had deeded land in 1669.

If documents of Norfolk did not conclusively prove that both ANN, widow of JOHN MARTIN SR. and ANN, their daughter, were married to others, we would say that LANCASTER'S wife, ANN, must be one or the other of them. We can only suggest that this being impossible, that perhaps MARTIN married ANN BURRUSS and LOVETT, ANN WARD, of early records of importation or visa-versa, or that ANN LOVETT was the daughter of ANDREW and MARY BODENAM, the latter of whom must have been a sister to the BURRUSS group.

In review: there seems to be no doubt that JOHN, THOMAS, WILLIAM and an EDWARD WARD I) were related and that both JOHN and THOMAS were also related to CHRISTOPHER, WILLIAM and ANN BURRUSS. As we follow each of these early pioneers through the ancient records of Norfolk Co., which are dim, incomplete and fragile, we are further convinced of that relationship.

From the court records, saddened and amazed at the death rate, we learn of resultant succeeding marriages, the names of surviving spouses and their involvement with the same people or their successors. Therefore, we are convinced that ANDREW BODMAN, JOHN MARTIN, LANCASTER LOVETT and perhaps RICHARD BONNEY should also be included in this relationship.

Before we close this chapter we will briefly restate the main facts about each of the major actors in this first generation of WARDS of Norfolk Co., Va. and vicinity:

1. JOHN WARD came first to Va. in 1635, transporting himself and four others including ANN WARD, to the new world and thereupon receiving a grant for 250 a. of land.

ANN was either wife or sister of WARD. In 1642 JOHN WARD was grantee with ANDREW BODENAM of an assignment of 200 a. from CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS which they reassigned to WILLIAM SMITH in 1646.

There are two early items in Norfolk Co., one of which definitely refers to JOHN WARD unless it is mis-copied, the other of which refers to "Woard orphans" and may refer to those of either THOMAS or JOHN because by 17 Nov. 1656 both THOMAS and JOHN were deceased.

On 16 Feb. 1656 a court order was granted unto ye widow of JOHN WARD against GEO. JOHNSON for 300 lbs. of tobo. (Bk. D. p. 47 Norfolk Va.)

On 17 Nov. 1656 an "attachment is granted Mr. JOHN PORTER, sheriff against the estate of RICH ABRALLS at ye ------ of WOARD orphans." (Bk. D. p -- Norfolk Co.)

A later record in the same book, dated 6 April 1660, states that JOHN WARD, having obeyed a court order for building a church payment is now due him.

If the item concerning the widow of JOHN WARD in 1656 is properly copied and this was, in reality, JOHN WARD who was deceased, the builder of the church was JOHN WARD II) a grown man in 1660, and it was also he who received a grant of 100 acres in 1666 for transportation of himself and wife from the BARBARDOS.

2. THOMAS WARD was transported to Va. three times between 1637 and 1649. Future records indicate that this was one and the same person crossing and recrossing the Atlantic on trips back to the homeland. In 1643 he was serving in the capacity of "chyrurgeon" which was a medical title akin to surgeon. In 1646, Mr. THOMAS WARD was a member of the Court. This was an honorable position and he probably continued in it until his death in either

Dec. 1654 or Jan. 1655. WARD spoke of CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS with "love and affection," also making some kind of property settlement with JOHN MARTIN at the same time, (1643). He married (1) the sister of THOMAS WORKMAN, daughter of ——— WORKMAN and ANNE, later the wife of ROBERT HAYES; m. (2) the daughter of JOHN HOLMES, m. (3) ANN HAYES or WORKMAN who, after his death m. WM. CORNISH. In 1650 THOMAS WARD was grantee of a deed from Capt. RICHARD FOSTER which is lost. His will dated 10 Dec. 1654 and probated Jan. 1655, mentions a daughter and a wife without calling the names of either; his sister WORKMAN'S son, THOMAS, his father-in-law, JOHN HOLMES, HENRY HOLMES and JOHN WORKMAN. There is an item in the 1656 reeords of Norfolk that definitely refers to the estate of Mr. THOMAS WOARD and another which may refer to his orphans.

A. The first of these states "attachment is granted Lt. Col. THOS. LAMBERT (admt. of Mr. WILLIAM BURRUSS) against the estate of Mr. THOMAS WOARD." (Bk. D. p. No. not discernable)

B. 17 Nov. 1656 an attachment is granted Mr. JOHN PORTER, sheriff, against the estate of RICHARD ABRALLS at ye ——— of WOARD'S orphans. (Bk. D. p. ——)

If JOHN WARD is also dead as of this date this reference could refer to either him or to THOMAS, but we believe it was to THOMAS.

It is not impossible that the reference in 1656 to the widow of JOHN WARD, in her action against GEORGE JACKSON, is in reality a reference to the orphans of THOMAS. In early records, frequently, the clerk of the court miscopied a common first name especially if there was one living in the county who bore the incorrect name and was known to the clerk, but in Feb. 1656 THOS' widow was wife of WM. CONNISH.

3. WILLIAM WARD was either brother or son of THOMAS WARD and sinee he is not mentioned in the will of WARD we believe he was a brother although there are cireumstanees which could indicate he was a son. If so, THOMAS WARD was born about 1585 and eame to Va. as a middle aged man with almost grown ehildren. On Jan. 22, 1654, WM. WARD, LANCASTER LOVETT, THOS. HARRIS, SAVILLE GASKIN and JAMES LOPHAM appraised the estate of JAMES STERLING. Later that year LOPHAM married STERLINGS widow, MARY, and WM. WARD was witness of a deed JAMES LOPHAM admt. of JAMES STERLING to SAVILLE GASKIN. Within less than two years LOPHAM was deeeased and his widow was married to RICH ABRALLS. One of the first referenees to WILLIAM WARD is in a deed dated 1652 to him from RICHARD FOSTER, for land patented 13 Feb. 1637 by JOHN HOLMES and confirmed to WARD 15 Feb. 1655 by JAMES LOPHAM, admt. of JAMES STERLING whose widow LOPHAM had married and who later married RICHARD ABRALLS. THOMAS WARD also was grantee of deed from RICHARD FOSTER and he, GEORGE HAWKINS, SAVILLE GASKIN and LANCASTER LOVETT who in 1654 had wife ANN, all were grantees of property from the various administrators of the estate of the first husband of MARY STERLING LOPHAM ABRALLS.

Non-admt. was granted 15 Dec. 1659 to WILLIAM WARD on the estate of THOMAS COOPER (Bk. D. p. 239). In May 1658 WM. WARD and LANCASTER LOVETT were ordered by the court to meet at house of JOHN REINS to make a division of the cattle belonging to the estate of THOS. DAVIS decd. JOHN LAWREY, who m. one of daus. of DAVIS making appeal. (Bk. D. p. 147-153). On the 15 Dec. 1659 at the request of WM. WARD an order was granted him against the estate of Mr. GEORGE BATEMAN (concerning estate of JOHN SMITH).

JOHN REINS' wife, was KATHERINE, later wife of ROGER HOWARD, perhaps also former wife of THOS. DAVIS (or JARVIS) and dau. of CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS, SR.

WILLIAM WARD died before 13 June 1660 on which date EDWARD WARD born 1639 was made administrator of his father, WILLIAM WARD. (Bk. D. p. 352) EDWARD also inherited from his father, WILLIAM, the admt. of the estate of THOMAS COOPER. (Bk. D. p. 357)

17 Dec. 1662. Upon petition of EDWARD WARD, it is ordered by this court that ye NATHANIEL HAYS fulfill and pay unto sd. WARD admt. of WM. WARD, his father, who was admt. of THOMAS COOPER the sum of 250 lbs. of tobo. (Bk. D. p. 363)

An EDWARD WARD was reported moved out of the county at the March Court 1665. (Bk. D. p. 420) We do not know whether this was EDWARD, the son of WILLIAM WARD or EDWARD, son of EDWARD I) of Norfolk.

On 17 Oct. 1664 WILLIAM WARD received pay for appearing as a witness for 8 days for Capt. WM. ODAM, now to rceeive 80 lbs. of tobo from FRANCIS SAYER, exet. of ODAM.

WILLIAM WARD I) had been dead for more than four years in 1664 so we can reasonably assume that this WILLIAM II) is his son, brother of the eldest son, EDWARD, who was born 1639.

4. EDWARD WARD I) of Norfolk Co. died between 3 Jan. 1668 and 1 April 1669 which are the datcs of his will and probation of same. At the time of his dcath he had a wife, ELIZABETH, a son EDWARD WARD, JR. a God-son EDWARD BOEDY and two daughters, FRANCES, the elder, and ELIZABETH, the younger. Because EDWARD WARD, son of WILLIAM, was born in 1639 and was only 30 years old at this time and becausc in 1666 there was another EDWARD WARD, a married man, who was ehildless and cvidently had been for a few ycars at least, we do not believe that EDWARD WARD I) was the son of WILLIAM. The EDWARD WARD and his wife ELIZABETH, who on 15 June 1666 were childless and were the grantees in a deed from OWEN HAYES "for 100 acres for the duration of thcir lives and then to their children, if they should have any; if none the land to return to

doner," were not EDWARD WARD I) and his wife, ELIZABETH because in Jan. 1668 they were the parents of three children including EDWARD, JR. Furthermore, this EDWARD WARD and his wife, ELIZABETH, were still childless in 1672, since in the will of OWEN HAYES, dated 8 December of that year, he devised to his son-in-law, JOBY SYLLMAN, 200 acres formerly given to EDWARD WARD. Only if ELIZABETH, wife of EDWARD WARD I), was a second wife, who bore no grandchildren for her father, OWEN HAYES, and he was heartless enough to take the 200 acres from her and her husbands orphans by another marriage, could this apply to them.

We feel confident that EDWARD WARD, son of WILLIAM, was the one who moved out of the county in 1665.

He was only 26 years old when the first stipulation was made by HAYES in 1666. Quite young to have married once; fathered at least three children by a first wife; remarried and waited a discouraging length of time for children by the second marriage. Therefore we hesitate to believe that EDWARD WARD, son of WILLIAM, EDWARD WARD I) of the 1668-69 will, and EDWARD WARD of the 1666 deed from HAYES were all one and the same person. We believe there were at least two and perhaps three EDWARD WARDS, grown and living in Norfolk 1660-1665.

5. CHRISTOPHER WARD came to Va. with JOHN HOLMES and THOMAS MARTIN in 1638 and although THOMAS WARD, who came first in 1637, was afterward closely associated with the HOLMES and MARTIN families, this is not true of CHRISTOPHER. In fact, there are only two later references to him in the records of Norfolk Co. and vicinity.

On 15 Feb. 1658, CHRISTOPHER WARD was granted suit at the next court against JOHN HADDEN. (Bk. D. p. 189 Norfolk) This was twenty years after WARD'S arrival in Va.

In I. of W. Co. Va. in August 1683, CHRISTOPHER WARD was one of those who appraised the estate of JOHN ASKEW. He was assisted by HOPKINS HOWELL. This was 45 years after his importation so, if this is the same person he must have been a young man when he came to Va. in 1638. Even so, he would, in 1683, be about 70.

Because of these two references to him, one recorded in Norfolk and one in I. of W. Co. and because there are no others in either of these two counties, it is probable that he lived in Nansemond the intervening Co. It's entire archives were lost many years ago.

The fact that there were a CHRISTOPHER WARD and a CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS who came to the Royal Colony of Virginia at about the same time and that THOMAS WARD spoke of CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS with love and affection are the most direct clues of the relationship of the WARD'S and BURRUSS' groups.

English WARDS of the Early Seventeenth Century

There are several interesting wills of English WARDS, who were contemporaries of the WARDS who migrated to Virginia. These have been extracted and published in Water's "Genealogical Gleanings in England."

1. One of the more important of these is the will of ROBERT WARD of Lexdon, within the liberties of Colchester, dated 8 Jan. 1616; proved 9 May 1617.

(1) Wife, PARNELL, to bring up three younger children including SAMUEL, who is to be fitted for the Univ.
(2) Wife of my father, LANCELOT WARD, who is my step-mother.
(3) Son JOHN.
(4) Son ROBERT.
(5) Daughters: A. MARY, B. MARTHA, C. SARAH
(6) To Rev. RICHARD ROGERS of Weathersfield.
My brother JOHN WARD, my loving Uncle ROBERT SPRING of Weathersfield, my brother-in-law, GEO. SEWELL of Halstead, executors.
THOMAS COLE and SAMUEL SPRINGE, supervisors.
Witnesses: ISAKE FORD, THOS. COLE and PHILLIP SHEARMAN.

It is interesting to find here the name LANCELOT WARD, father of ROBERT, who was probably deceased in 1616, and also his uncle, ROBERT SPRING, evidently brother of ROBERT'S mother.

We have found in Norfolk Co. Records before or around 1650 a ROBERT SPRING, who in 1652 was a devisee of the will of PETER RIGGLESWORTH; HENRY SEWELL, whose dau. ANN, married Col. LEMUEL MASON and whose wife gave a heifer to ALICE HOLMES, dau. of JOHN HOLMES II) about 1650 and LANCASTER LOVETT (sometimes recorded as LANCELOT LOVETT) whom we are convinced was related to the first generation of WARDS in Norfolk Co.

We note, too, that ROBERT WARD had brother with the familiar and common name of JOHN and we recall that JOHN WARD who arrived in Va. in 1635 was the first to come to Norfolk and could have reasonably been the brother of ROBERT, if he was an older man with adult sons and daughters. (p. 1442)

2. The will of WILLIAM WARD probated at St. Savior of Southwarke 2 April 1624. (p. 131)

(1) Wife ROASE (probably ROSE b. 1590, dau. of THOS. ROGERS.
(2) Son, EDWARD
(3) Daughter ROASE (both minors)
(4) Aunt MARGARET WOOD.
(5) Brother, Mr. ROBERT HARVARD (founder of Harvard Univ. also married to dau. of THOMAS

ROGERS of Stratford on Avon).

(6) Cousin ELIZABETH, wife of WM. SHARWARDEN. Admx. granted Mrs. ROASE WARD, widow 5 Oct. 1624. (THOMAS WARD of Princess Ann Co. Va. about 1695 and a later JOHN WARD of N.C. were connected or associated with SHEREWOODS.)

The ROGERS family of this volume is descended from JOHN ROGERS, the Martyr.

3. The will of JOHN WARD, clothier, of Stratford.
D. 19 Oct. 1629 P. 18 May 1631; p. 1104
(1) Wife ANNE
(2) Son, JOHN WARD
(3) Son, SAMUEL WARD (both minors)
(4) Children of first wife, (who were they?)

4. Will of ANNE WARD, widow, of Suffold Co.
Proved 7 Nov. 1634.
(1) Sons JOHN and SAMUEL, both still under age, the Ship "Unity" and provisions for their education.
(2) 40l/ to Mr. JOHN ROGERS lectern of Dedham. (Recorded p. 587)

This Mr. JOHN ROGERS was also a grandson of JOHN the Martyr and his g. son JOHN ROGERS was fifth president of Harvard, Univ.

5. The will of RICHARD WARD, gentleman, of Cannons Ashbye in the county of Northampton.
D. 12 Sept. 1630; Cod. 19 Sept. 1631; P. 11 Nov. 1631.
(1) To many clergymen
(2) My brother WM. WARD, minister of London.
(3) My brother, THOMAS, of Middle Cherry.
(4) Sister, MARTHA FOSSON.
(5) Sister, TAYLOR alias PARRIS.
(6) Sister, HALL, of Cropready
(7) Sister WARDE, my eldest brother's wife.
(8) My brother, RICHARD TAYLOR, alias PARRIS.
(9) My brother, RICHARD FOSSON.
(10) My brother, ELISHA HEDGE of Adson and my Aunt HEDGE, his mother.
(11) Cousin ABRAHAM HEDGE her son.
(12) To the 8 children whose baptisms, I have witnessed (god-children)
(13) THOMAS TAYLOR, my brother TAYLOR'S eldest child.
(14) Sister FOSSENS children by both husbands.
(15) Mother, FRANCES WARD, executrix.
Overseers: Bro.-in-law Mr. WILLIAM HALL of Cropreadye and Mr. WM. SPRIGG (SPRING?) of Bandbury.
Codicil:
(16) To THOMAS COTTON, wife's son at Cambridge.
(17) To son JOHN?
(18) To Mr. JOHN ROGERS of Dedham.
(19) Cousin THOS. HAWTEN. (HORTEN) (p. 1442)

One RICHARD TAYLOR was in Norfolk Co. Va. even before the date of this will and one GEORGE HORTON of Norfolk Co. Va. speaks in his will of Aug. 1650 of his cozens (or nephews) JOHN HOLMES and Mr. LEMUEL MASON, and makes them overseers of his estate. This was JOHN HOLMES II) for his father JOHN HOLMES I) was deceased in 1648.

From the description of tracts of lands allowed in original patents recorded in "Cavaliers and Pioneers," we know that the original JOHN HOLMES and Lt. FRANCIS MASON owned adjoining lands in Lower Norfolk County, one grant to MASON including 50 acres for the importation of THOMAS WARD.

Of the several ways in which JOHN HOLMES and Mr. LEMUEL MASON might have been related, we have clues to two:

It is thought that the second wife of Lt. FRANCIS MASON was ALICE GANEY, who with MARGERIE GANY were among the first, named by Lt. FRANCIS MASON'S headrights, in 1622. ALICE, then, would have been mother of Col. LEMUEL MASON and his sister, ELIZABETH THELEBALL of Norfolk Co. Va.

This theory is strengthened, if not proved, by the will of ELIZABETH CHESSMAN of St. Mary Magdalene Bermondsy, England, recorded 21 July 1680 and published p. 691 of "Gleanings." She names her kinsmen, Mr. LEMUEL MASON and her cousin, ELIZABETH THELEBALL of Virginia, also her kinswoman, ANNE GAYNEY.

The muster of the inhabitance of Basse Choice in Va. on 4 Feb. 1624 include FRANCIS MASON aged 40 who came in the "JOHN and FRANCIS" in 1613, ALICE MASON, aged 26 who came in the "MARGARET and JOHN"

in 1622 and FRANCIS MASON, JR. born in Va. (son of MASON'S first wife)

We have seen in our study of HOLMES that the wife of JOHN HOLMES I) was MARJORIE or MARGARET, who could have been MARJORIE GAYNEY, making JOHN HOLMES II) and LEMUEL MASON, cousins and possibly both nephews of GEORGE HORTON who was in some way related to members of the GAYNEY tribe, a good number, including WILLIAM, HENRY and ANNE, having also migrated to Va. about the same time that ALICE and MARJORIE came.

The second way in which HOLMES and MASON may have been related was through the SEWELL connection. About 1650 or a little earlier, Mrs. SEWELL gave to ALICE HOLMES, dau. of JOHN HOLMES II), a heifer. We know that ANN, the wife of Col. LEMUEL MASON was a daughter of HENRY SEWELL, SR. and his wife and it seemed was the only surviving heir of her father and her brother, HENRY SEWELL, JR. However, if she did have a sister who was the first or early wife of JOHN HOLMES II) then if Mrs. SEWELL was the sister of GEORGE HORTON, both HOLMES and MASON would have been his nephews by marriage.

We realize that many of these relationships are not conclusive but neither are the records conclusive, but there is enough circumstancial evidence here for us to conclude that these WARDS of England who were related to the SPRINGS, SHEARWOODS, HORTONS and SEWALLS were the foreparents of the WARDS of Norfolk Co. who had neighbors and connections of these same family names.

Second and Third Generations

JOHN and THOMAS WARD of Western Branch of Elizabeth River

After the death of THOMAS WARD of Little Creek in January 1655, and possibly that of JOHN in 1656, followed by that of WILLIAM in 1660 and EDWARD in 1669; there is a brief silence in the WARD Records in Norfolk Co. before the second generation clearly emerges.

THOMAS WARD I) named no sons in his brief will, JOHN WARD I) left no will, court records prove that WILLIAM I) had sons EDWARD born 1639 and WILLIAM JR. b. about 1641 who last appear in Norfolk Record in 1664. EDWARD WARD I), not son of WILLIAM, names only one son EDWARD JR. and one of these second generation ED. WARDS' signature appears on a document in 1672.

In North Carolina Records in 1700 and 1735, a WILLIAM WARD of Nansemond County Va. sold land in N.C. (N.C. Register Vol. III p. 130 and Vol. II p. 299) In the first generation, we lost CHRISTOPHER WARD in that same county and there is no way of determining whether these WILLIAM WARDS are his descendants or those of WILLIAM JR., son of WILLIAM I) of Norfolk, if either.

Surprisingly enough, the next WARDS to appear in the Norfolk Records are THOMAS and JOHN WARD of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River.

As we are certain that the first WARD'S were grown and of age when they appear on the Va. scene in 1635, 1637 and 1652, so, too, from succeeding records, we are able to establish the approximate age of JOHN II) and THOMAS II) by the documents pertaining to them which prove that JOHN II) was born not later than 1639 and THOMAS II) not later than 1649.

After the 1660 court order to JOHN WARD to build the church and the grant of 100 acres to him 15 June 1666, the next WARD entries concern THOMAS WARD II) and his neighbors, RICHARD BOULING and WILLIAM ELLIS who were brothers or bros.-in-law to one another.

This nest of Norfolk Co. citizens were all of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River, adjoining Nansemond Co.

On Oct. 4, 1670, THOMAS WARD, THOS. SMITHER II), MICHAEL WAYBOURNE and WM. NEMONS were ordered to divide the estate of RICHARD BOWLING SR. decd.

In 1672, EDWARD SHOLDERS, petitioned THOS. WARD for 50 acres, his by right of his wife, daughter of RICH. BOULING, decd.

On 15 April 1674 JAMES GITTERY, petitioned the court that it order THOS. WARD to deliver what is due him, in right of his wife, who is sister of RICHARD BOULING, decd.

In his will, BOWLING named his brother, WILLIAM ELLIS and on 19 Aug. 1684, THOS. WARD was occupying a tract of land that belonged to the heirs of WILLIAM ELLIS who let it to WARD before his death in 1670.

The will of RICHARD BOULING SR. was probated in Norfolk Co. Va. in 1669 and an appraisal of his estate was ordered by the court on 18 Jan. 1670.

In his will he names his wife, ELIZABETH, and his youngest daughter, ELIZABETH, who was a babe in arms.

Then he provides that his son, RICHARD BOULING JR., was to inherit a 300 acre tract of land when he came of age and in case he did not, the land was then to descend to his sisters; MARY, DOROTHY and another ELIZABETH who was BOULING'S eldest dau.

Because there are other connections between the second generation WARDS and members of this family, it seems necessary to include a detailed documented record of each of the BOULING family

ELIZABETH, BOULING'S widow, was evidently his second wife since both his eldest and youngest dau. were named ELIZABETH.

1. The younger ELIZ. was babe in arms at time of will's writing.

2. Eldest daughter ELIZABETH who m. (1) before 1672, EDWARD SHOULDERS; m. (2) after 1691, JAMES PETERS of Princess Ann Co. In 1672, ED. SHOULDERS petitioned THOMAS WARD for 50 a., his by right of his wife, daughter of RICH BOULING dec'd. (Court records 1666-1695). On Sept. 15, 1691, EDWARD SHOULDERS, ROGER BRIAN, and THOMAS TURLEY were in a suit over land lately belonging to RICH BOWLING dec'd. He, SHOULDERS m. ELIZ., one of the daus. of BOWLIN. (p. 239 Court Records of Norfolk Co.) TOURLEY was husband of BOULINGS' widow. "THOS. BANKS and wife ANN, of P.A. Co. Record, of 1697 "RICHARD BOULING of Lower Norfolk Co. Va. devised to his son RICHARD, JR. 300 a. on W.B.E.R. He also died and left same to three sisters, ELIZABETH, DOROTHY and MARY, co-heirs of said brother. One of the daughters of RICH BOULING, the elder dec'd, was late wife and widow of JAMES PETTERS dec'd. W. ELNATHAN TART, MALI THRUSTON." This document fixes the deaths of both ELIZ. BOWLING and her last husband, JAS. PETERS, before 1697.
3. RICHARD BOULING JR. dec'd before 1672, died intestate before marriage.
4. MARY BOULING m. (1) in 1664, JAMES GITTERY; m. (2) JOHN ARNOLD before 7/10/1674; m. (3) 11/25/1677 ROGER BRIANT. Inventory of JAMES GITTERY, dec'd made 30 Sept. 1674, by JOHN WORKMAN, THOS. SMITHERS, JOHN TURNER, PAUL TRIGG, (p. 126 Court Records 1666-1675) (THOS. SMITH is name signed to inventory and Sale of Property of GITTERY, sworn to be by MARY GITTERY, relick; on 7/10/1674, EDMOND ROBERTS and JOHN ARNOLD were securities for estate of JAMES GITTERY dec'd, ARNOLD having married the relick of GITTERY, (p. 113 a. Court Records 1666-1675); Petition of JOHN ARNOLD who m. relick of JAMES GITTERY to take ANN GITTERY, orphan of JAMES into custody until she is of age, (Ibid p. 118a); Petition of THOMAS SMITHERS, that JAMES GITTERY, an orphan continue with him until 21, he to take his part of estate, (p. 120 Norfolk Court Records date 12/15/1674); JAS. GITTERY, JR. was born in 1665, (Princess Ann Records). On 9/30/1674, RICHARD BENNETT gave to JAMES GITTERY a cow; RICHARD BENNETT lived in Nansemond Co. Va. 2 to 5 miles from the W.B.E.R. In his will dated 1674, he devised small legacies to MICHAEL WARD, to the wife of JOHN LEWIS and CHAS. HOWARD, who had undisclosed relation to WARDS. Before his death JAMES GITTERY petitioned the court on 4/15/1674, that it order THOMAS WARD to deliver what is due him, in right of his wife, who is sister to RICHARD BOULING, JR. dec'd, (p. 79a. Court Orders 1666-1675); JAMES HARRIS and WM. GREEN were arbiters. A record of 11/25/1677 states, "RICHARD BOULING died and willed 300 a. to his son RICHARD, JR. who died in his minority, then to the co-heirs, his sisters MARY and DOROTHY BOULIN, ROGER BRIAN who m. MARY, claiming also DOROTHY'S part. Court orders divide land between ROGER and MARY BRIANT and THOMAS TURLEY who m. relick of RICHARD BOULIN SR." On 3/18/1689, ANN GITTERY petitions against ROGER BRIANT for her 1/3 part of property in his custody.
5. DOROTHY BOULIN m. before 2/16/1674, ROGER BRIANT ("Whereas RICH BOULING, SR. dec'd by his last will and testament gave tract of land to RICHARD, JR. also dec'd and provided that ELIZ., his relick, enjoy same until JR. attained age of 21 years, but RICHARD, JR. dying under age now difference between ROGER BRIANT who m. one of the daus. of RICH BOULING SR., dec'd and THOMAS TURLEY who m. relick of BOULING, SR. Court in favor of TURLEY." (p. 104a. Court Records 1666-1675) This daughter of RICHARD BOULING, SR. was DOROTHY, because as of this date ELIZABETH was the wife of EDWARD SHOLDERS and MARY was married to JAMES GITTERY who did not die until after 15 Apr. of that year. It was also evidently DOROTHY BOULING BRIANT who was the wife of ROGER BRIANT at the time he was transacting business with RICHARD STONE and his wife SUSAN and THOMAS WORKMAN on the southern Branch and ——— Creek in Linnhaven, Norfolk Co.; certainly when the final conveyance was made on 13 Aug. 1674 and her signature was required.
   BRIANT, at the time of his death in 1708, had a son, ROGER, JR. and a daughter DOROTHY WAKEFIELD who gave deposition in 1711 that she was 43 years old. That means that she was born in 1668 and makes it possible that she was not the daughter of DOROTHY BOULIN, though they had the same name. Beside his children, RICHARD BOULING mentions in his will his brother, WILLIAM ELLIS, his friends, THOMAS and JOHN SMITH, ELIZABETH BUNTING and the children of JOHN GREEN.

On Aug. 15, 1670, ELIZABETH ELLIS, relick of WILLIAM, appointed THOMAS SMITH, MICHAEL WAYBORNE, ED SHOLDERS, and WM. NEMON to appraise estate of her dec'd husband.

RICHARD PINNER, in his 1666 will, had named WM. ELLIS as his "cousin" and mentions his two sons WILLIAM and PHILIP ELLIS. On Feb. 15, 1666 WM. ELLIS, RICH BOWLIN, JOHN LOWNES and HENRY CULPEPER appraised the estate of RICHARD PINNER.

On that same date, Feb. 15, 1666, WM. ELLIS was ordered by the court to deliver to RICHARD POWELL land belonging to him. Twenty-one years later in his 1687 will, JOHN POWELL, brother of RICHARD made a small bequest to WM. ELLIS, JR. and in 1717, and 1728, when THOMAS and JOSEPH WARD, sons of JOHN WARD, sold their portion of the land which ROGER BRIAN assigned or sold to THOMAS and JOHN in 1687, it was to this

WILLIAM ELLIS JR. of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River.

ELIZABETH, widow of WM. ELLIS SR., had married JOHN FEREBEE before April 17, 1671, and the name of FEREBEE, until his death about 1715, appears often in the court records of both the SMITHS and POWELLS of this vicinity. WM. ELLIS had daughter, MARY ELLIS, who in 1676 ask of her step-father, JOHN FEREBEE, her portion of her father's estate.

On August 19, 1684, "PHILLIP ELLIS, lawful heir of his father WILLIAM ELLIS, late of Norfolk Co., a parcel of land on SE side of Symonds Cr. to corner to THOMAS SMITH, to corner of HENRY BRANTON and along the creek of THOS. SMITH, now in occupancy of THOMAS WARD, to my brother WILLIAM ELLIS, his portion of estate of inheritance, the same being to fulfill ye will of my father who let said land formerly unto said THOS. WARD." This land was a portion of a tract, part of the estate of JOHN SMITH dec'd. father of THOMAS SMITH of these records, who, after his fathers death assigned it to WM. and JOHN GRANDBURY who, in turn assigned it to WM. ELLIS.

Since ELLIS SR. died in 1670, THOMAS WARD had been occupying the land in question now for 14 years or more which would mean he would have had to have been born 1645-1650 to be of age when he transacted business with ELLIS. This fits in with the life span of THOS. I) or of JOHN WARD I) of Norfolk Co.

The name, PHILIP, which was bestowed on the eldest son of WILLIAM ELLIS may be a key to unlock the door of the very early relationship of a number of families who seem to be loosely connected to the WARDS of Norfolk.

Beside WILLIAM ELLIS and his brother, RICHARD BOWLING, and their associate, THOMAS WARD, these would include the parents of PHILIP HOWARD, MICHAEL WARD and the wife of JOHN LEWIS.

In the will of RICHARD BENNETT, Quaker governor of Va. during the CROMWELL regency in England, we find the possible link connecting the early citizens of Norfolk Co. Va. BENNETT lived in Nansemond Co. and had not a copy of the will, dated 30 Sept. 1674, been filed in England it would have been lost with the other Nansemond records.

He left a small bequest to CHARLES HOWARD, probably brother of PHILIP HOWARD grown in 1673 and perhaps son of ROGER HOWARD by an earlier wife than KATHERINE HILL REINS, twice widowed before she married HOWARD in 1660.

He also left legacies to MICHAEL WARD and to the wife of JOHN LEWIS perhaps the same who was associated with MARTHA, wife of THOMAS WARD in Princess Ann Co. in 1695.

We have just noted his gift of a cow to young JAMES GITTERY, grandson of RICHARD BOWLING SR. and that WILLIAM ELLIS, brother of BOWLING named his heir and eldest son, PHILIP.

While records of Nansemond Co. are non-existant, we find in the land patents of early Va. to 1669, which are extracted in Nugent's "Cavaliers and Pioneers," several references to Mr. PHILIP BENNETT who lived in Upper New Norfolk Co. (after 1642 Nansemond) before 1638 and who was preceeded by ROBERT BENNETT who came 12 Feb. 1637 with Capt. ADAM THOROGOOD of Lower New Norfolk Co.

This was a return trip home from England for ROBERT who had patented 700 a. on 26 June 1635. This land lay about 1½ miles up a creek near the mouth of Nansemond River, beginning at a pine marked with the letters of his name and bordering land marked by ROBERT NEWMAN. (p. 23) On page 66 this grant of 700 acres is repeated and is then said to have been located in Upper New Norfolk Co.

On 18 Feb. 1638 Mr. ROBERT BENNETT was granted 200 a. in Upper New Norfolk Co. (p. 101)

On 16 Aug. 1648, Mr. PHILIP BENNETT received a grant for 1250 acres in Nansemond Co. He had not moved his residence but in 1642 Upper New Norfolk became Nansemond Co.

The next patent to PHILIP BENNETT indicates that he was either son or brother of ROBERT.

On 5 Nov. 1648 PHILIP BENNETT, gent. received a patent by confirmation, in Nansemond Co. Va.; 200 acres on the head branches of ROBERT BENNETT'S Creek, due by virtue of a grant made unto ROBERT BENNETT 18 Feb. 1638 and by said PHILIP BENNETT adm. of the said ROBET resigned into his office, in his place." (p. 162 "Cavaliers and Pioneers")

On 20 Dec. 1643, Mr. PHILIP BENNETT, in his own right, obtained a patent for 515 acres in Upper Norfolk Co. lying on the east side of Bennett's Cr. near land of RICHARD BENNETT and EPHRIDITUS LAWSON for transfer of 11 persons including JOHN HODGES and WILLIAM HARRIS. (p. 150 "Cavaliers and Pioneers")

Although Upper Norfolk Co. officially became Nansemond Co. in 1642 in this patent it is still referred to by its' former designation.

If PHILIP BENNETT lived on this land, which he acquired in 1643, on the east side of Bennett's Creek near RICHARD BENNETT, then both he and RICHARD were fairly close neighbors of RICHARD BOWLING, THOMAS WARD and WILLIAM ELLIS. We believe that all of the latter married daughters or sisters of PHILIP BENNETT and that RICHARD was a brother of PHILIP and so was uncle to the wives of these neighbors, great uncle to their children.

Or it is possible that THOMAS WARD and RICHARD BOWLING were both m. to sisters of WM. ELLIS and their mother was responsible for the BENNETT relationship. There is an early entry in "Cavaliers and Pioneers" which refers to MICHAEL ELLIS.

There arc also records in "Cavaliers and Pioneers" of widows of two BENNETTS. The first of these was JOANE BENNETT, widow who patented on 6 May 1636, 450 acres in Charles River Co. (p. 30 "Cavaliers and Pioneers") At this early date, we do not know the exact bounds of Charles River Co. for as Elizabeth City Co. included Norfolk until 1537, so Charles River, which adjoined Elizabeth City, no doubt also had extensive boundries.

On May 21, 1638, RICHARD BENNETT and JOHN HOLLIS received, jointly 200 acres of land in Charles River Co. (p. 88 "Cavaliers and Pioneers") Other deeds in Norfolk Records prove that these grants said to be in Charles River Co. were in Nansemond.

JONE BENNETT, (probably the same returning to Va.) came with 40 persons on 28 June 1658 as headright of JOHN LEWIS and ROBERT JONES who received land in Westmoreland Co. Va. In RICHARD BENNETT'S will he left a legacy to the widow of JOHN LEWIS and in Norfolk Co. there is evidenee of a connection between the WARDS and RUSSELL which includes a RICHARD JONES.

If JOANE BENNETT, widow, lived in Nansemond Co. the mother of 'RICHARD, ROBERT and other' members of that family, it will be impossible to definitely place her, but when THOMAS WARD II) conveyed 25 acres on the W.B.E.R. in 1693 his wife was JOAN.

The other BENNETT widow was ALICE and she lived in I. of W. Co. or in the Western part of Nansemond near the boundry of I. of W.

On 10 June 1642 GEORGE HARDING patented 300 acres in I. of W. Co. adjacent Mr. TUCK and widow BENNETT. Two months later on 25 Aug. 1642, ROBERT LAWRENCE was granted 200 acres in I. of W. Co. west of Lawns Cr. adj. Mr. HARDING and ALICE BENNETT'S land. (p. 140 and p. 130 "Cavaliers and Pioneers")

MAULDINE BENNETT came to Virginia in August 1642. (Ibid p. 134)

There are land records in Norfolk Co. which prove that there was a waterway in Lynhaven called SAMUEL BENNETT'S Creek. The use of the double name for these creeks, the one in Nansemond Co. being called Robert Bennett's Creek, was necessary because they lay so near to one another and at first were both in the same county - Norfolk. (p. 80 Norfolk Co. Records 1666-1676)

The first official recognition of THOMAS WARD was his appearance in 1670 as one of those appointed to divide the estate of RICHARD BOULING SR. and it was this same ycar, or earlier, that he leased land from WILLIAM ELLIS SR. (Norfolk Records p. 82, Oct. 4, 1670)

PHILIP HOWARD makes his entry in the archives of Norfolk Co. in 1673 as attorney, a role in whieh he appears in many subsequent records. In 1674 he married SARAH GREEN, the relick of WILLIAM GREEN and dau. of THOMAS HALLOWELL.

ELIZABETH ELLIS, last wife of WILLIAM ELLIS, who died shortly before his estate was appraised 15 Aug. 1670 married before 17 April 1671 JOHN FEREBEE. WILLIAM ELLIS was the father of PHILIP ELLIS according to the 1684 deed from PHILIP to WM. ELLIS JR. in which he describes himself as heir, in conveying to his younger brother land which THOMAS WARD was occupying.

ELIZABETH ELLIS FEREBEE, or a second wife of JOHN FEREBEE, was still living on 14 Feb. 1704 when she and her husband made a deed of gift to their son THOS. FEREBEE and conveyed to son, JAMES FEREBEE, then only 11 years of age, a like amount of land, (200 acres) from the same patent granted to FEREBEE SR. 4 April 1685 and provided if JAMES dies without issue his part to go to his sister, MARY.

A wife of WILLIAM ELLIS had formerly been the wife of RICHARD POWELL SR. and according to court records of Norfolk, RICH POWELL JR., reached his majority in 1666 and so was born not later than 1645 making his mother's birthdate necessarily to fall in the middle or late 1620's. If JOHN FEREBEE'S wife of 1704 was ELIZABETH, whom he married in 1671, whosc son, JAMES, was born in 1693, she could not have been the mother of RICHARD POWELL, JR. b. 1645. RICHARD POWELL JR. b. 1645, WM. ELLIS JR. b. 1663 and JAMES FEREBEE b. 1693, represent a child bearing era of 48 years which even in that day of early marriages and big families was impossible.

Actually, probably, ELIZABETH ELLIS was the second wifc of ELLIS and the first of FEREBEE, and perhaps was the mother of his young child born 1693; ELLIS' first wife being the mother, not only of the POWELL heirs, but also of the three children of ELLIS; PHILIP and WILLIAM JR., both being of age in 1684 and MARY ELLIS claiming her inheritance from JOHN FEREBEE in 1676, probably at age 16 or 18.

Wc believe that, whichever of the wives of WM. ELLIS was the mother of PHILIP ELLIS, born not later than 1663, was the sister or sister-in-law of RICHARD BOWLING, related either to him or his first wife; or vice-versa, the BOWLINGS were so related to the ELLISES.

Whilc it seems evident that THOMAS WARD was in some way related to thcm, his brother, JOHN, does not appcar to have the same relationship, and though his connection is still undetermined, it would seem to be through his wife. Sincc his wife, in 1693, was JOAN, an established BENNETT namc, perhaps he married the younger daughter or nicce of onc of their first generation and MICHAEL of the 1674 RICHARD BENNETT will was his son instead of his brothcr.

However, BOWLING'S cldest daughtcr was born about 1645, thc same age as RICHARD POWELL b. 1645 and THOMAS WARD b. 1645-1649. This comparison of ages places THOMAS WARD in the generation of the oldest

children of these neighbors, and makes it possible that his relationship to them was through his own mother or father. A MICHAEL ELLIS was an early immigrant to Va. and it is possible that both BOWLING and WARD'S father, married sisters of ELLIS, or that both ELLIS and BOWLING married Aunts of THOS. WARD of W.B.E.R., sisters of his mother or father.

The evidence is that THOMAS and his brother, JOHN WARD of W.B.E.R. were sons of JOHN WARD II) of Norfolk Co. Va. and we believe were grandsons of THOMAS WARD I).

JOHN WARD I) of Norfolk Co. came to Va. in 1635 accompanied by ANN WARD, presumedly his wife. According to Norfolk Court Records he died and on 16 Feb. 1656, his relick petitions the court to reclaim 300 lbs. of tobo. in the hands of GEO. JOHNSON (Bk. D. p. 47)

In the same book on 17 Nov. 1656 an attachment was granted the high sheriff of Norfolk Co. against the estate of RICHARD ABRALLS on petition of WARD orphans (children under age).

Perhaps that these references are to the family of JOHN WARD I) because as of the earlier date, 16 Feb. 1656, the widow of THOMAS WARD was the wife of WILLIAM CORNISH or CORNICK), appearing in the records for the first time, as such. CORNISH, her executor, is not mentioned in connection, with either orphans or widow.

In 1656, both THOMAS WARD I) and JOHN WARD I) of Norfolk Co. had been in Va. for about twenty years so no doubt had grown children, who may have sued the estate of ABRALLS.

The first record pertaining to JOHN WARD II) as of 1660, proves that he was born before 1640 and one relating to THOMAS that he was born before 1650.

Actually because of succeeding records, we believe that JOHN WARD II) of W.B.E.R. was the son of THOMAS WARD I) and THOMAS WARD IV) of W.B.E.R. was his son, the grandson of THOS. WARD I) of Norfolk Co. Va.

JOHN WARD I) of Norfolk, was dead in 1656 so it was JOHN WARD II) of W.B.E.R. who built the church in 1660 and received in 1666 a patent for 100 acres for transporting himself and his wife from Jamaica to England.

There are three deeds recorded in Norfolk Co. Va., all of which are concerned with THOMAS WARD of W.B.E.R. and all very difficult to decipher. They also pertain to JOHN WARD II.

The first of these, dated 6 Jan. 1683 was from WILLIAM MAMOX of Lower Norfolk Co., planter, to THOMAS WARD of same, planter, in consideration of ——— hundred pounds of tobo and cash in hand, to said WARD, a tract or platt of land on W.B.E.R. with all minerals, hunting privileges, etc., - 1682.

Wits: JOHN KNOTT, THOS. RAYBEE.

Acknowledged 25 May 1683 and recorded p. 138, Bk. 4 Norfolk Co. Records.

A second deed involved the same persons was recorded in Bk. 5 p. 37 Norfolk Records but is of an earlier date or refers to an earlier date.

THOMAS WARD of Lower Norfolk Co., planter, to WILLIAM MAMOX of same, planter; for 2000 lbs. of tobo., a plantation on the east side of the W.B.E.R. in Lower Norfolk Co. known by the name of "Mamox Place" that now is in the occupancy of WM. MAMOX and adjacent to JAMES RIGHT and JOHN ROBERTS. -- 1 Nov. 1680 --

The third deed relates to ROGER BRIENT of W.B.E.R. and refers back to one of the earlier transactions.

ROGER BRIENT of Norfolk Co. planter send greetings, whereas THOMAS WARD of this Co. ——— pool or tract of land ——— acres for M———, wife of WM. MAMOX late of Lower Norfolk, was Norfolk Co. being part of a tract of about ——— acres the said WM. MAMOX bought of JOHN JOANES late of same Co. and by sd. MAMOX sold unto JOHN ROBERT SR. by deed dated 28 July 1696 and recorded in Norfolk Co. 20 Sept. 1696. Now said land is sold unto WALTER BAYLEY of Eliz. City Co. ——— JOHN the son of sd. THOS. WARD who by his deed dated Nov. 1, 1680) (See second deed)——— acknowledged the same in court 15 Sept. 1687 - deed for 40 acres more or less, - unto the sd. WM. MAMOX who by his last will and testament gave the said 40 acres to his wife, MARGARET MAMOX SR. and MARGARET intermarrying with JOHN OWEN of Norfolk, now Princess Ann Co., the said JOHN and MARGARET OWEN did sell land unto BRIEN CAHILL by deed dated 15 Nov. 1688 and said CAHILL by assignment to ROGER BRYAN 20 Feb. 1692 (recorded in Norfolk 16 May 1693). Now I, ROGER BRYAN, for the sum of £18 to WALTER BAYLEY sd. 40 acres on W.B.E.R. in Norfolk Co. Va."

W: THOS. HODGES, THOS. TOBIN, FRANCIS ———. Evidently the reference above should read "JOHN WARD, father of THOMAS WARD," for THOS. is the one still living. (Norfolk Co. Records Bk. 6 p. 81)

This is probably the nearest an estate settlement that is available of the father of THOMAS IV), JOHN WARD III) of the W.B.E.R. The records of these early books are hardly discernable but evidently MARGARET MAMOX was the sister of THOMAS and JOHN WARD who receive the 350 acres in 1687 and the MAMOX were neighbors of THOMAS who deeded 25 acres to the daughter of ROGER BRIEN on 16 May 1693, part of "JOHN WARD'S Old Plantation."

The exchange of property between WARD and MAMOX, is evidently a means of equalizing a part of the estate of WARD'S father and the second one in which WARD conveys 40 acres to MAMOX and cites the date Nov. 1, 1680 is an acknowledgment on the part of THOMAS WARD of the conveyance by his father, JOHN WARD, to MAMOX for his wife, MARGARET MAMOX, who was probably a daughter of JOHN WARD II), sister of THOMAS.

For other reasons already stated in this chapter, and because the land from THOMAS WARD 1693 to

DOROTHY BRIANT adjoined that of MAMOX and was called "JOHN WARD'S Old Plantation, it would seem that the 40 acres to MAMOX was also from JOHN WARD, father of THOS. who was living and negotiating business between 1680 and 1683. We know that THOS. WARD of 1670 was still alive in 1684 from the deed PHILIP ELLIS to WM. ELLIS.

On May 16, 1693/4, THOMAS WARD formerly of W.B.E.R. (name of Parish had been changed) confirmed to SARAH and SUSANNAH HARRIS, daus. of THOS. HARRIS dec'd., to whom he had conveyed, 30 Oct. 1686, twenty-five acres on the southmost side of ye W.B.E.R., known by the name of "JOHN WARD'S Old Plantation," adjacent on east to CRANE COLLINS, on south to THOS. KING and on the north to the plantation where WM. MAMOX lives. DORETHEA HARRIS, ye relick fo THOS. HARRIS, dec'd., to have same during natural lifetime.

This deed, signed by THOMAS WARD and his wife JOAN is the last document pertaining to THOMAS of W.B.E.R.

DOREATHY WAKEFIELD and ROGER BRIAN JR. were the only children of ROGER BRIAN named in his 1708 will and a series of court entries in Norfolk prove that DOREATHEA HARRIS of 1693 was DOROTHY WAKEFIELD of 1708: (The inventory of THOMAS HARRIS 16 Nov. 1693, signed by ELNATHAN TART, ROGER BRIAN, JAMES SMITH, WILLIAM LOVETT, (p. 4 Norfolk Records 1692-1695); admt. granted HENRY WILDER on estate of THOS. HARRIS dec'd. 16 Mar. 1694, (p. 293 Records 1692-1695); DOROTHY WILDER, relick of HENRY granted admx. 15 Sept. 1704, (p. 47 Court Records 1703-1710); ROGER BRIAN had dau. DOROTHY WAKEFIELD in 1708; probate granted DOROTHY WAKEFIELD on THOS. WAKEFIELD, (1713- p. 266 Court Records); in 1711 DOROTHY WAKEFIELD, age 43, gave deposition concerning noncupative will of HENRY BOWES. In 1721, SUSANNAH ELLIS vs. DOROTHY EADINS, exctr. of PHILIP EADINS, for her part of the estate of her father, THOS. HARRIS, dec'd.)

These several documents, with their information and implications are the basis of our belief that THOMAS and JOHN WARD of the following deed from ROGER BRIANT, were sons of JOHN WARD II) whose sister or dau. evidently married ROGER BRIENT, being his first wife.

This very significant document in poor condition but mostly readable from ROGER BRYAN to THOMAS and JOHN WARD is recorded in Book 5 p. 46 of Norfolk Co. Records. On the 12 of Nov. 1687, BRYAN conveyed to the WARD brothers 350 acres of land. To get the full meaning of this conveyance we will quote directly from it.

> "Know all men that I, ROGER BRYAN, for obligation of my rights as herein recorded, together with 350 acres with all privileges to THOMAS WARD and JOHN WARD for acknowledging to have received good caution for same fortune and to acknowledge this obligation in open court -- that it is clearly toward their heirs and from me, the said BRYAN." Sept. 16, 1686.
> Wits: JOHN FEREBEE, ELIZABETH FEREBEE. (ELIZ. was widow of WM. ELLIS)

By any standard this is an unusual deed, and it introduces to us, JOHN WARD evidently the younger brother of THOS. WARD of W.B.E.R. The best explanation of this transaction, although it leaves much unanswered, is contained in a deed JOSEPH WARD, son of JOHN, made in 1717, conveying part of this tract to WILLIAM ELLIS, "A certain tract of land, 106 acres situated and being on the south side of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River -- it being part of a patent of 350 acres of land formerly granted to ROGER BRYAN, the elder dec'd dated 1686, and by the said BRYAN sold and assigned unto THOMAS and JOHN WARD the elder, by a deed on the back side of patent bearing date of 12 of November 1687, and by the said JOHN WARD the elder dec'd was given to the said JOSEPH by a will bearing date of 18 Sept. 1710, it being the middle-most part of the said tract bounded on each side by a line of marked trees dividing said land from the land of THOMAS and JOHN WARD."

We were introduced to ROGER BRYAN in the documents pertaining to the family of RICHARD BOWLIN, for he married both DOROTHY and MARY, two of BOWLIN'S daughters by his first wife and have seen in the documents already reviewed that he was also closely associated with THOMAS WARD of W.B.E.R. whom we shall also designate as THOS. WARD IV).

Another earlier document dated 1674 indicates a connection between ROGER BRIENT and THOMAS WORKMAN, nephew of THOMAS WARD I), son of his brother WORKMAN, THOMAS SR.

"JOHN HOLDON'S sold to THOMAS WORKMAN and ROGER BRIANT, a tract of land, 420 acres, to each of you and to your heirs forever, said land lying and being at the Southern Branch and ——— creek in Linnhaven, and said land being on sd. creek, you THOMAS WORKMAN on the one part and the said ROGER BRIANT and his wife, DOROTHY, on the other part, have bargained and agreed on a line of marked trees as you laid out, from MARMADUKE HOLLAND and to ye lands of RICHARD POOLE, late deceased, shall be the division of ye land between said WORKMAN and said ROGER BRIANT -- and ye said WORKMAN to have profit and enjoy all above sd. line sd. acres, and ye said BRIANT'S part being about 70 acres and ye WORKMAN all ye rest, in agreement whereof said THOS. WORKMAN on his part and sd. ROGER BRIANT and DOROTHY his wife, on your part have hereunto set your hands and seals this 13 day of Aug. 1674." Signed by THOS. WORKMAN, ROGER (R.B.) BRIANT, DOROTHY BIRANT. Wits: MARMADUKE HOLLAND and MALICHI THURSTON.

This was the culmination of a series of deeds which preceded it. In the deed from RICHARD STONE

4/17/1671 to MARMADUKE HOLLAND, he reviews the ownership of this 600 acre tract of land which WILLIAM SIMPSON divided between JOHN HOLDON and himself in these words.

"RICHARD STONE of Eastern Branch of Elizabeth River -- LANCELOT LOVETT and JOHN MARTIN did formerly patent (10/20/1651) land in Linhaven sold to THOMAS and ROBERT BRINSON, they to JOHN PEARCE deccased (one of the husbands of SUSAN STONE) and afterwards to WM. MOSELEY and in behalf of wife, ELIZABETH, to WM. SIMPSON (SIMPSON'S wife ELIZABETH) and he to JOHN HOLTON, - part of it and part to me and my wife SUSAN and we to MARMADUKE HOLLAND."

On Jan. 15, 1669, "WILLIAM SIMPSON of Linhaven sold unto JOHN HOLDEN ye full half of one dividend of 600 acres lying at ye head of SAM BENNETT'S Creek which I WILLIAM SIMPSON, bought of WM. MOSELEY. Ye above said JOHN HOLDEN is to have ½ of estate to him and his heirs forever. Recorded May 16, 1670 and witnessed by RICHARD STONE and MARMADUKE HOLLAND.

WILLIAM SIMPSON had recently married ELIZABETH, relick of JAMES JACKSON.

RICHARD STONE has but recently married SUSANNAH, the relick of THOMAS WATKINS, who married SUSANNAH, relick of JOHN PEARCE who married relick of CHARLES WILDER, who left orphan EDWARD WILDER. With so many consecutative marriages it becomes very difficult to pin a relationship down.

On June 16, 1673, RICHARD STONE assigned rights in land to ROGER BRIAN and he to JOHN HOLDEN. All of this transpired before the final deed dated 13 August 1674, for a tract of 420 acres of which 70 acres was to go to ROGER BRIANT and the rest to THOMAS WORKMAN.

Since the will of WILLIAM KNOTT of Norfolk Co. identifies JAMES JACKSON as the son-in- law of THOMAS BRIENT and ELIZABETH, JACKSONS' widow was in 1669, the wife of WILLIAM SIMPSON, we presume that these documents represent the division of the estate JAMES JACKSON or his wife ELIZABETH.

THOMAS BRIENT married the widow of JOHN ADAMS and the will of ALICE NEWMAN 1688/9 names both her dau. ALICE BRIANT, and THOMAS BRIENT in her will.

JAMES JACKSON witnessed the will of ADAMS and evidently married either ADAMS' dau. or THOMAS BRIENT'S.

ELIZABETH JACKSON SIMPSON could have been a later wife of JACKSON and the 600 acres of land may have been her own legacy.

But since THOMAS and ROGER BRIENT are both involved, it is possible that it also included the BRIENT family as they were surely related.

The most plausable explanation of this legal conundrum, would be that ROGER BRIENT had married first of all, the daughter of THOMAS WARD I) of Norfolk Co. who was named in the will of both THOMAS WARD I) and THOMAS WORKMAN I), as was her cousin, THOS. WORKMAN JR. However, JOHN HOLDER was not husband of either relick of THOS. WARD or his bro. THOS. WORKMAN nor of their executors.

And, unless the designation in the 1693 deed from THOMAS WARD to DOROTHY HARRIS, as a "part of JOHN WARD'S Old Plantation" is in error and THOMAS WARD of W.B.E.R. is one and the same as THOMAS WARD of the JOHN BRAKES 1687 will who was later THOMAS WARD of Princess Ann Co.; THOMAS and JOHN WARDS, the first in W.B.E.R.,could not have been sons of THOMAS WARD I) of Norfolk, whose nephew THOMAS WORKMAN, was included in WARD'S 1655 will and also, with ROGER BRIENT, in the 1674 dced JOHN HOLDER, grantor.

We believe that THOS. and JOHN were grandsons of THOS. WARD I), sons of his son, JOHN WARD II) of W.B.E.R.

Therefore, the most logical explanation of the BRIENT-WARD relationship is that BRIENT had married, before his later marriages to DOROTHY and MARY BOWLIN, the sister of THOMAS and JOHN WARD of W.B.E.R. who received 350 acres from ROGER BRIENT in 1687 after their father, JOHN WARD II) died in 1682.

The fact that THOMAS WARD, evidently the older of the two, was named first and that this same circumstance prevailed in the division of the estate of JOHN WARD II) of W.B.E.R., brother of THOMAS, strongly indicates that these two brothers were descendants of THOMAS WARD I) of Norfolk.

Naming of children, "now-a-day" is haphazard and meaningless, sometimes parents even naming their children for movie actors, but there was nothing meaningless or haphazard about the naming of children of the past generations. The first or second son was usually named for the paternal grandfather and the other for the father of the child. The second or third son was named for his maternal grandfather and the others of the large families of that day, were named for their uncles. (Sometimes a help and sometimes a hindrance for geneologists.) The same general pattern was followed in the naming of daughters.

Probably THOS. WARD of W.B.E.R. lived in Nansemond Co. Va. after the 1693 deed.

JOHN WARD III) of W.B.E.R.

JOHN WARD III) was later in complete possession of the 350 acres which he and THOS. received jointly from ROGER BRIAN and there is no intervening deed which explains this transaction. Why if, as we believe, THOMAS continued to live in Norfolk Co. for some years? Perhaps he traded his interest in it for land which he later gave to THOMAS HARRIS, part of the 100 acre tract which was granted to JOHN WARD in 1666 and so called "JOHN

WARDS' Old Plantation."

We have been following the story of THOMAS WARD IV) only, because until JOHN appears as joint grantee of the 1687 deed, ROGER BRIANT to THOMAS and JOHN WARD, we had found no documents of JOHN WARD in Norfolk records, since 1666. That was JOHN II) while JOHN of the deed was his son, JOHN WARD III).

In 1702, on May 20, JOHN WARD III) of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River, in Norfolk Co. planter, for 4000 pounds of tobacco "sold to JAMES SMITH 50 acres of my patent situated lying -- beginning at the lands of ROGER BRYAN, south-easterly along the line of JOHN SMITH to ye lands of THOMAS SMITH and then northeasterly along a line of marked trees to the land of JOHN BRUCE and ROGER BRYAN to the lands of Champion Stark being the first station.

On the same page but of a later date, Sept. 15, 1702 or 1703, "JAMES SMITH for myself and my executors or administrators for a valuable consideration paid by JOHN WARD of Norfolk Co. -- acknowledge, reaffirm sold and make over all my rights, title, interest, etc., in this bill of sale to him, his heirs, etc. -- forever, as full payment -- granted unto me by the said WARD and J------, THOMAS and ISAAC SMITH." Signed by JAMES (F) SMITH and MARY (M) SMITH.

JOHN WARD gives bond for self and executors in sum of 8000 lbs. of tobo not to molest JAMES SMITH. Witnessed by ELEAZAR TART SR. and JR. deed acknowledged in the June 1702, court by JOHN WARD and his wife ELIZABETH WARD (Bk. 7, p. 6).

From these deeds, it is not difficult to deduct that ELIZABETH, wife of JOHN WARD, was ELIZABETH SMITH, sister of the "SMITH Brothers" named above and that her husband, JOHN WARD III) may have been an executor or admt. of her father's estate.

On July 18, 1703/4 JOHN WARD of the Western Branch of Elizabeth River in the Co. of Norfolk Va. with the voluntary consent of ELIZABETH his wife, for 2200 lbs. of tobo to HENRY BOWES, a small parcel of land on the southwest side of the branch, aforesaid being part of a parcel of land I bought of ROGER BRYAN containing 350 a. -- by patent 1686 -- said tract containing 30 acres bounded by head line of SPARROW and side line of JOHN SOLLY -- and THOMAS SMITH and along side line of THOS. BOORMAN -- as by sd. patent -- HENRY BOWLS." (Bk. 7, p. 40) Signed JOHN (E) WARD, ELIZABETH (Q) WARD. Witnesses: MATHEW SPIVEY and THOS: PRICE.

With this deed of thirty acres the 350 acres from ROGER BRYAN became 320 all of which were taken care of in the will of JOHN WARD III) which, along with many others of the same era, were not recorded before they were lost or destroyed. Note the mark with which ELIZABETH WARD signed this document. Her son JOHN was to marry another ELIZABETH who used a different mark on her signature. The first signed with an open capital Q. The latter an upside down E.

NOTE: THOS. WARD I) of Norfolk d. 1655; THOMAS WARD II) of I. of W. Co. son of THOS. I) d. 1681; THOMAS WARD III) of Princess Ann m. 1695 MARTHA SAVILLE was a second son with same name of THOS. WARD I); THOMAS WARD of W.B.E.R. (IV) son ofJOHN WARD II); THOMAS WARD V) son of IV) and THOMAS VI) his son. Later THOS. of I. of W. Co. and Princess Ann are not numbered with these.

At a court held in Norfolk Co. 15 Nov. 1710 probate was granted THOMAS V) and JOHN WARD IV) on the last will and testament of JOHN WARD III) dec'd. (Bk. 9, p. 266). According to the deed of JOSEPH WARD to WM. ELLIS (Bk. 9, p. 642) it was dated 18 Sept. 1710. The will itself is lost. THOMAS WARD and JOHN WARD executors were sons of JOHN WARD III).

From our gleanings of subsequent Norfolk Co. documents we can identify five of the children of JOHN WARD III) and his wife ELIZABETH SMITH. We do not know if there were others:

1. THOMAS WARD V) was co-executor of his father's estate. On April 8, 1726, he sold, for five shillings, his one third part of his father's tract of 320 acres, a plantation of 107 acres. This property was sold to WM. ELLIS and was adj. to ELLIS' formerly JOSEPH WARD'S land, adj. JOHN SMITH formerly BOSWELLS, to land of DEALS and BRUCE which was formerly BOWMAN'S. (Deed Bk. G., p. 35).
   THOMAS WARD'S will dated Dec. 8, 1739, P. Mar. 15, 1744/5 named his wife, SARAH, his son THOMAS WARD VI) and his other children. This will was witnessed by LEMUEL POWELL, THOS. GRIMES and BENNETT BRITIAN.
2. JOHN WARD IV) acted as executor, with his brother, THOMAS of his father's will. With consent of his wife, ELIZABETH, sold for five shillings, to WM. PRICE and RICHARD PRICE his tract of land on the Western Branch of Elizabeth River 107 acres adj. land WM. ELLIS bought of his brother, JOSEPH WARD, 107 acres, being part of a tract of land my father, JOHN WARD, bought of ROGER BRYAN and gave unto the said WARD. This deed recorded in Bk. G. p. 105, was dated June 14, 1728, was signed by JOHN WARD and ELIZABETH WARD and was acknowledged in court by WARD 15 Nov. 1728 and by his wife 26 Dec. 1728. The 1730 Tax List of Norfolk Co. Va. for the Western Branch of Elizabeth River lists JOHN WORDE and THOMAS WORDE the only WARDS in the county. JOHN SMITH married MARY. He died 1711 leaving a will witnessed by ELEAZOR TART, THOS. SMITH, WILLIAM ELLIS and THOS. WARD. His widow, MARY, died in 1734; will witnessed by JOHN WARD and JOHN TART. This was not JOHN WARD IV) if it was he who moved to N.C. in 1729.

The will of JOHN WAKEFIELD dated 1712 was witnessed by THOMAS and JOHN WARD and the will of THOMAS WAKEFIELD was proved by JOHN WARD and ELEAZOR TART. Both WAKEFIELDS had wives SARAH. In 1719, SARAH WAKEFIELD sued JOHN WARD for legacy from father.

3. JOSEPH WARD - his deed already extracted in this chapter was dated Dec. 15, 1717, signed by JOSEPH and SARAH WARD and recorded on 642 and 643 of Bk. 9. JOSEPH was described in the deed as a cordwinder. A subsequent deed suggest that he lived at least temporarily in the Island of Antiqua. (Bk. F. p. 48, Mar. 16, 1724)
   1 Mar. 1724 - JOSEPH WARD and JOHN DENNY of the Parish of St. Michaels in the Island of Antiqua, merchants, appoint JOHN TUCKER in Va. attorney. Deed Bk. F., p. 48. On 21 Sept. 1733 PATRICK FLANAGAN and wife, MARY; JOSEPH WARD and wife ANN; GEO. WRIGHTING and wife, ELIZ.; WM. PEYTON and wife, JANE; and FRANCIS DANIEL, to LEML. LANGLEY tract of land on Tanners Cr. GEORGE and ELIZ. WRIGHTING and ANN WARD sign before SAML. BUSCH JR.
4. WILLIAM WARD - At a court of Norfolk Co. in 1714, it was ordered that WM. WARD be bound as an apprentice to his brother, JOHN WARD IV), until he reach the age of one and twenty years and that he teach him the art of cordwinder, he being 10 years last March (Bk. 10, p. 84). There are records in Norfolk of the estate settlement of a WILLIAM WARD who may have been this son of JOHN WARD III). It is recorded on page 231 Bk. H and dated about 1749, the appraisal signed by JOSEPH WARD and MAT. SPIVEY. After the inventory, payment was made to the following: O'SHEAL, JAMES JOHNSON, ROBERT HATTEN, MARY WILDER, SOLOMON SHEPARD, MARY CHILCOTT, THOMAS SMITH and FRANCIS WRIGHT.
   Signed: ELEAZOR TART, JOHN JOYCE.
5. MARY WARD: It was also ordered that MARY WARD be bound to her brother, THOMAS WARD, until she attain the lawful age, she being 14 years old next March and that he give her a year of schooling. (Bk. 10, p. 84)

There is no certainty that JOHN WARD III) did not have other children. The fact that both THOMAS V) and JOHN IV) sold their portion of the 320 acres, 107 acres, for five shillings, while JOSEPH WARD received for his 106 acres in 1717, 1200 pounds of good, sound marketable tobacco, indicates a possibility that JOHN WARD III) and ELIZABETH may have had two unidentified daughters who married WM. ELLIS and the father of RICHARD and WM. PRICE. JOHN WARD was involved in some kind of legal action with a WILLIAM PRICE, but no description of the court proceedings were recorded.

The 1704 Quit Rent Roll does include a JOHN WARD of Norfolk Co. who was taxed on 320 acres. This would have been JOHN WARD III) and the number of acres tallies exactly with the summation of information from previous findings. There was a JAMES and also a WILLIAM WARD in Nansemond Co. but no WARDS at all in Isle of Wight Co. or Princess Ann, and no record any where of a THOMAS WARD. Actually there was an adult, THOMAS WARD living in both of the latter counties at that time. Neither of them owned land at that date.

JOHN WARD IV) of W.B.E.R. sold his land in Norfolk Co. in 1728. In 1729 a JOHN WARD of Bertie Co., later Terryll, received by deed from JAMES MURRAY, land that later fell in Tyrrell. JAMES MURRAY and wife, ELIZABETH, made deeds on the same day for a like amount of land in the same locality to THOMAS BRIDGEMAN and SAMUEL PRESTON (or PRESCOTT).

This land had been recently conveyed to MURRAY by JOHN EDWARDS and his wife, ELIZABETH.

On 22 Nov. 1744 JOHN WARD of Tyrrell added extensively to his holdings in adjoining Beaufort with a grant for six hundred and forty acres, at Newburn. On the same date both JOHN SMITH and a JAMES SMITH received substantial grants in Tyrrell Co.

About 300 acres of JOHN WARD'S estate fell in Tyrrell including the original land from JAMES MURRAY and his residence.

The name of his wife, like JOHN IV) of W.B.E.R., was ELIZABETH and the mark he used to sign his name was the same W used by his namesake in Va.

WARD-MURRAY

The best clue that we have to the identity of ELIZABETH, the wife of JOHN WARD IV) of W.B.E.R. is not found in Norfolk Co. Va. but in the records of Bertie Co. N.C.

We refer to the deeds of Nov. 10, 1729 from JAMES MURRAY and his wife, ELIZABETH, to JOHN WARD, THOS. BRIGMAN and SAMUEL PRESTON.

These three deeds, with cross-signatures of the grantees, as witnesses, all dated the same day and recorded in succession in the Deed Book 1726-1729 of Bertie are indicative of a division of property and since the names of the grantees are all different, it would seem that WARD, BIRGMAN and PRESTON (or PRESCOTT) were married either to the sisters or daughters of MURRAY.

Another deed dated three months earlier, on 11 Aug. 1729 from JOHN EDWARDS and his wife, ELIZABETH, to JAMES MURRAY for 240 a. at least part of which, made up the total of 300 acres which was represented in the

deeds from MURRAY and his wife to JOHN WARD et al, on 10 Nov. 1729.

In these deeds ELIZABETH MURRAY relinquishes her Right of dower so it is probable that the property from JOHN EDWARDS and his wife, ELIZABETH, went to JAMES MURRAY in right of his wife, ELIZABETH.

We proved through the land records of Tyrrell Co. N.C. that this Bertie Co. land to WARD and BRIDGEMAN fell in the former county after it was firmly established, so there is no doubt that JOHN WARD of Tyrrell and Beaufort counties N.C. is the same as JOHN WARD of Bertie 1729 a. and he, like both JAMES MURRAY and JOHN EDWARDS had a wife whose name was ELIZABETH.

This identical name is one of the strongest clues that JOHN WARD IV) of W.B.E.R. who sold his Norfolk Co. property in 1728 could be the JOHN WARD later of Tyrrell. This coincident is not enough but we have just recounted other circumstances that also contribute to this conclusion.

Working on the premise that ELIZABETH, the wife of JOHN Of Tyrrell, who was a fore-parent of NANCY WARD ancestress of the HODGES-WARD line which we have been following, was ELIZABETH MURRAY or ELIZABETH EDWARDS, we went back to the Norfolk Co. Records for documents in these names and we did find many of them though some were disguised in the spelling as MURRAH, MURROW, MURPHAY, etc.

In a final analysis, however, they proved to be MURRAY, descendant of the original DAVID MURRAY who spelled his name so in his will and also in the record of his immigration into the Colony of Va.

Also, from the beginning, the name of JOHN EDWARDS is interwoven in the Norfolk Records on MURRAY.

Add to that the fact that DAVID WARD, son of ELIZABETH and JOHN WARD of Tyrrell inherited his father's home plantation which we believe came as an inheritance to his wife, ELIZABETH, likely either daughter or granddaughter of DAVID MURRAY of Norfolk and we have more indirect proof of the identity of ELIZABETH, wife of JOHN WARD of Tyrrell and another connection to Norfolk Co.

DAVID MURRAY SR. the immigrant came to Norfolk County first as head-right of RICHARD WHITEHURST on 25 Nov. 1651, one of fourteen persons including his friend MATHEW MATHIAS, and ANN LOVETT probably wife of LANCASTER. WHITEHURST received 700 acres at the head of Indian Creek near a great swamp running by LINTON'S house. (p. 222 Cavaliers & Pioneers.)

A patent of 300 acres on the E.B.E.R. was granted to DAVID MURRAY 22 Nov. 1651 and because the dates of these two patents are so close together, one wonders if the 300 acres to MURRAY could have been a part of the 700 acres which WHITEHURST claimed for the importation of MURRAY and others.

The first reference to DAVID MURRAY in Norfolk Co. Va. pertains to the will of his friend MATHEW MATHIAS. On 16 June 1669 MARY MATHIAS was granted probate on the will of her late husband, MATHEW MATHIAS, and DAVID MORROW (MURRAY) and his son-in-law, MICHAEL MACCOY were securities. (p. ? Court Orders 1666-1676 Norfolk Co. Va.)

The next discernable reference to DAVID MURRAY dated 15 Aug. 1669 alleges that MURRAY and WILLIAMS NICHOLS were security for the estate of THOS. WATKINS. (Norfolk Court Orders 1666-1676 p. 36)

SUSAN, the relick of WATKINS, was soon married to RICHARD STONE and had previously been the wife and widow of CHARLES WILDER and JOHN PEARSE. On 16 Feb. 1674 DAVID MURRAY and WM. NICHOLS complained to the court that RICHARD STONE had absented himself from the country and had in his hands the estate of THOS. WATKINS orphans. They petitioned the Sheriff to get security. (Ibid p. 105 A.)

On 12 Feb. 1672 MORRIS FITZGARRALL, 4th husband of KATHERINE HOWARD brought suit against DAVID MEYROUGH (MURRAY). EDWARD WARD and WM. WYNN, testators.

A Norfolk Co. deed dated 23 Oct. 1673 shows that THOS. WATKINS (JR.), WILLIAM WHITEHURST, WM. ROGERS and DAVID MURRAY were neighbors of MATHEW MATHIAS, JR.

DAVID MORROW (MURRAY) served with JOHN SHIRLEY and THOS. MERCER on the Jury of Norfolk Co. 15 Jan. 1677 and on 16 June 1684 DAVID was security for MARY RAVING on the estate of her husband, ED. RAVING.

The will of DAVID MURRAY SR. of Elizabeth River in ye county of Norfolk in Va. was dated 5 Nov. 1692 and proved 16 May 1695. (Recorded Bk. 5 p. 196)

In this will he names his sons; DAVID MURRAY JR., decd., JOHN MURRAY, and ALEXANDER MURRAY not yet of age and devises land to each of them.

He also names his grandsons, GEORGE and JOHN MURRAY, sons of his son, DAVID JR. decd., and a son of his son, JOHN MURRAY.

The only daughter whom he mentions is ANN BECK, wife of JEREMIAH to whom he left 12 pence in English money.

His wife was MARY, and although he named his son JOHN as executor, probate was granted, on 17 May 1693, to MARY, relick. (Bk. 5 p. 255) The will was witnessed by JOHN EDWARDS, MARY MURRAY and another MARY MURRAY, widow, who proves to have been MARY, the widow of DAVID MURRAY JR. It is a disappointment to find both DAVID MURRAY widows named MARY for Norfolk Co. records show that DAVID MURRY of that Co. had married BRIDGETT, relick of BEN BARNSGROUND some time before 1690 and that the same or alternate DAVID MURRAY had been married in the same vague period to 1690 to HANNAH, relick of GEO. IVY.

Earlier, DAVID MURRAY SR. had had a wife named ANN, but both DAVIDS left relicks, MARY, when they deceased.

The will of DAVID MURRAY JR. who was dec'd. before his father was dated 1691 and proved 1692.

He left five children: JOHN, GEORGE, EVE, ELIZABETH and MARY, all under 16 years old; his wifc was MARY. The will is witnessed by JEREMIAH BECK and JOHN and ELIZ. WILLBORO.

JOHN and GEORGE are the grandsons of DAVID MURRAY SR' sons of his son DAVID, dec'd. named as such in his will, so although the will of DAVID MURRAY JR. is indexed and even written as DAVID MORROW, it is in reality DAVID MURRAY JR.

JOHN MURRAY, son of DAVID JR. was dec'd. before 25 Sept. 1729 on which date EVE ETHEREDGE, MOSES BALL and wife ELIZABETH, RICHARD STANLEY and wife MARY, heirs of JOHN MURRAY dec'd. sold land inherited from their brother, JOHN MURRAY.

Here we have found an ELIZABETH MURRAY but she is the wife of another rather than JOHN WARD. (Bk. 5 p. 142 Princess Ann Co. Va.)

On 1 Feb. 1736, MARY, one of the sisters of JOHN MURRAY, dec'd. and her husband RICHARD STANLEY, sold land formerly granted unto DAVID MURRAY SR. 23 Nov. 1683. Because the land of DAVID MURRAY JR. was left eventually to his daughters, we believe that both of his sons, JOHN and GEORGE, died without issue.

The recurrence of references to the family of THOMAS WATKINS and the association of WM. NICHOLS in these and later documents, indicates a relationship of MURRAY to those families.

In fact, on 17 Mar. 1698, ANN BECK, daughter of DAVID MURRAY JR. prayed AMY ——————, for son, GEORGE BECK, for possession of one of the houses on the land of THOS. WATKINS.

Because she claimed property from the WATKINS estate and because of repeated NICHOLS signatures or references to NICHOLS and NICHOLSON, we come to the conclusion that DAVID MURRAY SR. and WM. NICHOLS were related in some way to WATKINS and to each other.

We suppose that JOHN MURRAY JR. of the 1731 will of Princess Ann Co. Va. is JOHN, the grandson of DAVID MURRAY SR, son of JOHN, who was named executor of his father's estate in 1693.

This will dated 11 May 1731 and recorded on page 355 of P. A. Co. Records 1725-1734, does not name his children but his grandsons CALEB, JOHN, DAVID and RICHARD MURRAY; his wife, MARY, and his cousin WM. NICHOLSON. It was witnessed by JOHN NICHOLS JR., RICHARD BERRY and ANN SIMMONDS.

The Isle of Wight Co. will of JOHN GRAVES which was dated 10 Oct. 1689 and P. 9 June 1691 names among other Legatees JOHN MURRAY and his wife ELIZABETH and MURRAY'S sons JOHN, WILLIAM and GEORGE. Since MURRAY is not said to be of I. of W. Co. and there are no records there of him and since his sons JOHN and GEORGE have the same names as those of DAVID MURRAY JR. it is likely that this JOHN MURRAY of 1689 is JOHN, the son of DAVID SR. of Norfolk Co. When Princess Ann Co. was organized in 1693, his residencc evidently fell in that county.

His last wife was MARY, according to his 1731 will, and she may have been the daughter of RICH. CHURCH and his first wife MARY SAYERS, half-sister of FRANCIS SAYERS of Norfolk (Will of RICHARD CHURCH 1705 Norfolk Co. Va.) CHURCH also had daus. SARAH NICHOLS and grandson RICHARD NICHOLS, dau. ANN TREVATHAN and daughters ABIGAIL and PATIENCE CHURCH. His wife was ELIZABETH, and he had granddaus. ANN and LEADDY SOLLY.

In review, we find that JOHN MURRAY JR. of the 1731 Princess Ann will had a grandson RICHARD MURRAY and a cozen (nephew) WM. NICHOLSON (NICHOLS) and this fact adds to the probability that JOHN'S last wife was MARY CHURCH whose sister, SARAH, married —————— NICHOLS.

The difficulty with these two wills which deal with the family of JOHN MURRAY, son of DAVID SR., is that, we do not have, in either, a full list of the names of his children. No daughters are named in either and in 1689 when the GRAVES will was written although three sons arc named, this was early in MURRAY'S married life and he no doubt had others including perhaps JAMES, who with wife ELIZABETH GODFREE, in 1729 conveyed land in Bertie Co. N. C. to JOHN WARD.

We believe that JAMES must have been a descendant of JOHN MURRAY SR. because the evidence is that the two sons of DAVID MURRAY JR. died without issue resulting in his daughters inheriting his land and although there are many court records pertaining to ALEXANDER MURRAY, youngest son of DAVID SR., there is no record of a son; only three daughters DORCAS, MARY and SUSANNAH. The same condition holds in later records concerning his family as that of DAVID JR.; no mention is made of SUSANNAH but his daughters MARY, wife of WILLIAM FENTRISS, 1716, and DORCAS (1733) MURRAY both disposed of land left to them as daughters of ALEXANDER MURRAY.

This is not the usual situation. If there were sons in a family of average means of that day, usually they inherited the land and the daughters were each given bed-room furnishings or a cow or ewe, etc.

We believe that the wife of JOHN MURRAY SR. was ELIZABETH, the daughter of WARREN and SARAH GODFREE, since in the 1711 will of GODFREE he mentions his daughter, ELIZABETH, the wife of JOHN MURRAY. WARREN GODFREY was the son of JOHN and SARAH GODFREY and his wife was the daughter of

EVAN WILLIAMS to whom in 1671 JOHN EDWARDS was issued probate. (Norfolk Co., Records 1666-1676 p. 62A - 74A.)

JOHN EDWARDS in 1692 also witnessed the will of DAVID MURRAY SR.

On 17 April 1671 a daughter of EVANS WILLIAMS came of age - estate in hands of JOHN EDWARDS who must have married the relick. (Ibid p. 62A)

On 16 June 1672 WARREN GODFREE petitioned the Norfolk Co. Court that it order WILLIAM HANCOCK, BARTH WILLIAMS, BENJ. JOHNSON and RICHARD CHURCH to divide the estate of EVAN WILLIAMS, GODFREES' wife being the daughter of said WILLIAMS. (Ibid p. 103)

In 1708, JOHN EDWARDS and RICHARD and MOSES BALL witnessed a deed RICHARD and MARY WHITEHURST to RICHARD and EVE STANLEY. EVE was one of the daughters of DAVID MURRAY JR. who died 1692. (Bk. 8 p. 74)

We do not want to loose sight of the fact that the land in Bertie Co. 1729 which was conveyed to JOHN WARD by JAMES MURRAY was first deeded to MURRAY by JOHN EDWARDS.

While ELIZABETH GODFREE, wife of JOHN MURRAY received only one shilling as devisee of her father's will, in 1708 the GODFREE'S had already made a deed of gift to their daughter ELIZABETH MURRAY and her husband JOHN MURRAY. (p. 24 Bk. 8)

The other children of GODFREE named in his will were WARREN JR., PETER, MATHEW his sons; JONATHAN and ARTHUR GODFREE, his grandsons; and DANIEL, FRANCES, SARAH, KATHERINE, JANE and ELIZABETH, his children to whom he left one shilling.

We have no further documented record of the known children of JOHN MURRAY, son of DAVID SR., except his son WILLIAM who lived in I. of W. Co.

The will of WILLIAM MURPHRY (MURRAY) was dated 14 Nov. 1717 and recorded 26 June 1721. He names sons MICHAEL, JOHN and WILLIAM; his wife SARAH and daughters MARGARET LAWRENCE, ELIZ. FARROW, ELINOR KIRLE, SARAH and ANN MURPHRY.

The will was witnessed by WM. ROGERS JR., JOSEPH and WM. TARLETON. (Wills and Admt. of I. of W. Co. Va. p. 13)

SARAH, the wife of WILLIAM MURPHEE, (MURRAY) was the sister of JONAS HALLIDAY of Norfolk Co. according to HALLIDAY'S (HOLLOWAY?) will dated 4 Jan. 1713/14.

The will of MICHAEL MURRAY was dated 2 July 1743 and recorded 14 May 1747. He named his son JOHN; and daughters SARAH, MARY and ELENDER MURPHREY and ELIZABETH DIXON; and a grandson MICHAEL MURPHRY. (Wills and Adms. of I. of W. Co. Va. p. 61)

The will of JOHN HAMPTON of I. of W. Co. was d. 19 Feb. 1735 and proved 22 Mar. 1735. In it he names his son (son-in-law?) MICHAEL MURPHRY and MICHALES' children; his son JOHN and daughters MARY, SARAH and ELLENDER MURPHREY and ELIZABETH DIXON. (Wills and Admx. of I of W. Co. Va. p. 95)

JOHN HAMPTON'S dau. was evidently the wife of MURRAY.

There is a deed recorded in I. of W. Co. on 7 Feb. 1714 from DAVID NELMS to MICHAEL MURPHREY and recorded in D. Bk. 22 p. 191.

The records pertaining to these members of the family of WILLIAM MURRAY seem to eliminate the possibility that JAMES MURRAY of Bertie Co. N.C. was from this branch of the family.

ANN MURRAY only daughter of DAVID MURRAY SR. of the 1693 will was at the time of her father's death the wife of JEREMIAH BECK. At least she was the only daughter of MURRAY who was named in his will.

In 1686, after ANN'S marriage to BECK, he is described in a Norfolk Co. document as the bro.-in-law of RICHARD HILL who had wife JANE.

Of course there are many possible sources for a brother-in-law relationship but at least one of them would be that JANE was the daughter of DAVID MURRAY SR. and sister of ANN BECK. HILL'S will was wits by RICH. CHURCH and BRIDGET HALSTEAD.

Before she married BECK, ANN had been the wife of MICHAEL MACOY whose will was dated 8 Feb. 1680 and proved 11 May 1682 ten years before her father died. He named his sons MICHAEL and JAMES MACOY and daughters HANNAH, ANNE and MARY MACOY. He instructed that son JAMES was to be left with his father DAVID MURRAH (MURRAY) and his daughter, ANN, with his sister, ELEANOR SHOLAND. The other children with his wife ANN. (Bk. 4 p. 118 Norfolk Co. Records)

In 1689 JEREMIAH BECK, JOHN MATHIAS and DAVID MURRY witnessed the will of MORGAN MOORE who provided that his son, WM. MOORE be apprenticed to WM. NICHOLSON until age 20.

The repeated association of MURRAY and MATHIAS records as well as to those of NICHOLS or NICHOLSON is suggestive of some relationship.

On 15 July 1693, court records show that there was a difference between JEREMIAH BECK in right of his wife plt. and DAVID MORROW (MURRAY) defendant. (Bk. 5 p. 293)

The will of ANN BECK, dated 16 Oct. 1700, was recorded on p. 492 of Vol. I Princess Ann Co. records. She named her sons GEORGE, BENJAMINE and JEREMIAH BECK JR. and her daughters HANNAH (MACOY)

DOLLAR, ANN (MACOY) EVEREDGE and MARGARET BECK HANNAH.

She also named her son JAMES MAKOY but not MARY or MICHAEL of the MACOY marriage.

The executors of her will were JOSEPH DOLLAR, W. C. COKE (COCKE) and LEMUEL WILSON.

We have already seen that in 1698 ANN BECK apprayed AMY for her son, GEORGE BECK for one of the houses on the land of THOS. WATKINS. We have observed too, that ANN, JOHN and DAVID MURRAY all had sons named GEORGE. We therefore believe that they were full bros. and sisters, children of ANN, probably first wife of DAVID MURRAY SR. and that the given name of her father was GEORGE.

An indicated relationship of some of the later associates of the MURRAY heirs has made us wonder if this fore-parent could have been GEORGE SPIVEY of Nansemond Co., grandfather of MATHEW SPIVEY of Norfolk of this era.

Power of Attorney was granted in Norfolk Co. Va. 29 Nov. 1708 by GEORGE BECK of the county of Bath in the government of N.C., COOPER to his trusty and beloved friend, JOHN MURRAY of Princess Ann Co. Va. to sell to Mr. SAMUEL SMITH land in Norfolktown which formerly belonged to JANE LAWSON.

JOHN MURRAY was not only the beloved friend of BECK, he was his first cousin and this connecting document between relatives in Va. and N.C. strengthens the possibility that JAMES MURRAY, JOHN EDWARDS and JOHN WARD of the 1729 deeds of Bertie Co. N.C. were also from Va. Pioneer relatives tended to migrate together or to go where relatives lived. Bath Co. was discontinued and most of its land became Beaufort which lay adjacent to Tyrrell Co. which emerged and was identified about 1739.

Although ANN BECK was the only daughter named in the will of DAVID MURRAY SR. there are records which indicate that he had at least three more daughters.

In 1685, DOROTHY MURRAY witnessed the will of RICHARD KING and the following year, 1686, a DOROTHY NICHOLS witnessed the will of WM. MANAKE.

Then in the 1731 will of JOHN MURRAY of Princess Ann Co. he mentions his cousin WM. NICHOLSON. Cousin in that era was used in its present sense and also, many times, as "nephew." Also in use in that era was the custom of adding "son" to the family name to designate "son of."

These customs translated into this will of JOHN MURRAY, grandson of DAVID SR., would cause its' meaning to be "my nephew, WILLIAM NICHOLS, JR."

We have noted that DAVID MURRAY and ANN MURRAY both signed the will of MICHAEL MACOY. We believe that this was DAVID SR. and his first wife signing the will of their son-in-law for its logical that ANN was mother of the daughter, ANN, wife of MACOY who was later wife of JEREMIAH BECK and also of the sons JOHN and DAVID MURRAY JR. If ALEXANDER MURRAY was of full age in 1695 she would also have been his mother.

Later records prove that RICHARD HILL, the third witness to MACOY'S will, was another son-in-law and his wife was JANE (JUNE or JOAN).

In the 1685 will of RICHARD HILL, he refers to his wife JEANE and brother-in-law BEAKE.

On 8 Feb. 1685, WM. COCK, brother-in-law to RICHARD HILL, assigned rights to land in Norfolk-town to RICHARD and JUEN or JANE HILL. (Bk. 7 p. 33 Norfolk Records - 16 May 1704) JANE SANER, now relick of HILL.

Because of these records we see that JANE, the wife of RICHARD HILL, and later of JOHN SAVEON and the wife of WM. COCK might both have been daughters of DAVID MURRAY SR. since they were bros-in-law to his son-in-law, JEREMIAH BECK and to each other.

W. C. COKE (COCK) was named one of the executors of ANN BECK when she wrote her will in 1700.

ALEXANDER MURRAY, third son of DAVID MURRAY SR., was not of age when his father made his will in 1692 but he was left land adjoining that of his deceased brother DAVID MURRAY JR. adjacent JOHN BOLETO, JOHN STOKES, JOHN MURDEN, and THOS. STANDING, when he came of age which was before 16 Sept. 1695 on which date ALEX. MURRAY was conveyed 196 acres of land by ALEXANDER and ELIZ. GWIN. W: EDWARD THURSTON and HUGH DANIEL. (Bk. 6 Norfolk Co. Records p. 2)

On 18 Jan. 1700 MURRAY served on a jury of Norfolk Co. As of 15 Oct. 1703 ALEX. MURRAY, planter, was in a suit against the legatees of JOHN ANDROS, dec'd. (Bk. 7 p. 9)

On 15 Feb. 1704, difference between JOHN WILLIAMS and ALEX. MURRAY postponed to next court at which difference between MURRAY and his wife, JUNE (or JANE) adm. of JOHN WARDEN, dec'd, and JOHN WILLIAMS came before the court. (Bk. 7 p. 24)

We suppose this was a first marriage for ALEXANDER MURRAY, between 25 and thirty years old in 1702, and JOHN WILLIAMS was likely JOHN WILLIAMSON JR., the brother of his wife, JUNE or JANE.

On 15 May 1706, JAMES WARDEN petitioned the court that ALEXANDER MURRAY, who married the relick of JOHN WARDEN, give bond as security to MURRAY'S wife in behalf of ye orphans or JOHN WARDEN, dec'd., brother of JAMES WARDEN. (Court Records 1703-6 p. 120)

15 Mar. 1709 JOHN GOOD vs. ALEX. MURRAY concerning land on Tanners Creek p. 124.

On 15 Feb. 1710 ALEX. MURRAY and THOS. WAKEFIELD acted as security for ELIZABETH, relick of JOHN COTTEN. (p. 124 Court Records 1710-1717)

On page 29 of these court records, probably early in 1710, is a notation that JOHN NICHOL'S bill was signed by ALEX. MURRAY and delivered to said, NICHOLS who casually lost same. A CHRISTOPHER RUELL or PUELL was involved. According to the will of JOHN NICHOLS of W.B.E.R. probated May 1697, his then wife was JUDITH and his legatees were MATHEW and ANN SPIVEE, her children by a former marriage.

Wits: THOS. RUSSELL, ELEAZOR and WM. TART, MALA THURSTON.

The 100 acres which NICHOLS bequeathed to his step-daughter ANN SPIVEE, was sold in 1704 by JOHN and ANN GRANDBURY of Nansemond Co.

15 Feb. 1710 ALEX. MURRAY asks for att. against the estate of THOS. PARKER who departed country. (Court Records of Norfolk p. 122, 1710-17)

DARCUS WILLIAMSON ordered ALEX. MURRAY to appear in court. (p. 5 Court Minutes 1710-1717) 11 April 1711.

On 3rd Friday in May 1711, DARCUS WILLIAMSON, relick of JOHN WILLIAMSON, testified that JOHN WILLIAMSON departed life without a will. (Ibid p. 6) On 14 July 1711, ALEX. MURRAY against DARCUS WILLIAMSON for his full share of his father-in-laws estate and it was ordered that he be paid in full. Like order granted WM. SIMMONDS, SARAH WILLIAMSON, JOHN WILLIAMSON and ABRAHAM PATTON. (Court Minutes of Norfolk 1710-1717, p. 15)

On 3 Nov. 1711 THOMAS HARRISON petition the court that the Sheriff summon ALEXANDER MURRAY to the next court and produce the orphans of JOHN WARDEN, a boy and a girl. (Ibid p. 20)

DORCAS WILLIAMSON had acknowledged the inventory of JOHN WILLIAMSON SR. 12 June 1711. This inventory was made by ARTHUR BLAKE, JOHN WILLIAMSON II), JAMES SIMMONDS and THOS. LANGLEY. Finally on 15 Feb. 1711/12 the estate of JOHN WILLIAMS and his wife, DARCUS, was settled by the granting of deeds. (Ibid pp 27)

A month later or on 21 Mar. 1712, ALEX. MURRAY was dead and EDWARD MOSELEY made oath that CHRISTOPHER COCKE was assignee of land, gave bond on the estate of ALEX. MURRAY and the court ordered that the estate of MURRAY be sold next day.

The next entry explains the earlier one that refers to JOHN GOOD for on 14 May 1712 JOHN and RUTH GOOD of Nansemond Co. conveyed (evidently post-humously) land on Tanner's Cr. to ALEX. MURRAY, said land by will to RUTH, now wife of JOHN GOOD, by MURPHRY TAGGETT dec'd. land belonging to NICHOLAS WILLIAMS or WILLIAMSON. (Court orders 1711-1723 p. 225)

It is not clear exactly what the connection is between RUTH GOOD, NICHOLAS WILLIAMS and ALEX. MURRAY and the will of WILLIAM probated 20 May 1679, recorded in Bk. 4 p. 46 names a daughter FRANKE WILLIAMS, mentions the fact that he had 2 sons and 2 daus. names THOS. SIMMONDS as his F.I.L., and JAMES and THOS. WILLIAMS as his B.I.L.

He also names as his brother, FRANCIS BAKER, who in 1674 had married the widow of the first JAMES or JOHN WARDEN, father of JOHN WARDEN, first husband of JANE or JUNE, the wife of ALEX. MURRAY. Wife of JOHN WARDEN I) m. FRANCES BAKER by 1674.

Perhaps RUTH, the wife of JOHN GOOD in 1709 and 1712, was the widow of JOHN or JAMES WARDEN I) and the sister of NICHOLAS WILLIAMS who in dividing the estate of his father, or other relative, was due to have given the land in question to JANE MURRAY'S first husband, JOHN WARDEN, grandson of ALICE NEWMAN.

The next document dated 2 July 1716 concerns a third generation of WARDENS. On this date JOHN WARDEN JR. came into court and said his father, JOHN WARDEN, dec'd. left to JANE, his mother, his part of the estate and that later she married ALEX. MURRAY. (p. 166 Court Minutes of Norfolk 1717-1723) From all these records, it is clear that JANE, or JUNE, the wife of JOHN WARDEN SR. and then of ALEX. MURRAY was the daughter of JOHN WILLIAMSON SR. and his wife, DORCUS.

A year later, 16 Aug. 1717 JAMES WARDEN vs. DORCAS WILLIAMSON, admx. of JOHN WILLIAMSON (SR) dec'd., in the interest of JOHN WARDEN, said JOHN WARDEN (JR) being his nephew and he, JAMES WARDEN, being security for the orphans of JOHN WARDEN dec'd. Court orders DORCAS to pay his part of estate. (p. 198 Court Minutes of Norfolk 1717-1727)

On 3 Dec. 1716, WILLIAM FENTRISS and MARY, his now wife, one of the daughters of ALEX. MURRAY to JOHN SCOTT of E.B.E.R. land formerly belonging to DAVID MURRAY, part of said MURRAY'S patent by will to son, ALEXANDER, 5 Nov. 1692, binding on JOHN BOLITO, JOHN STOKES, JOHN MURDEN and THOS. STANDING.

Wits: JAMES and RICHARD NICHOLS, GEO. KEMP, RICH. CORBITT. (P.A. Co. Records 1714-1724)

On 18 Aug. 1722 by petition of MARY, SUSANNAH and DORCAS MURRAY that JOHN WARDEN act as their guardian and on 15 Mar. 1723 LEMUEL SIMMONDS vs. JOHN WARDEN for DORCAS, MARY and SUSANNAH MURRAY, granddaus., of DORCAS WILLIAMSON (pp. 54-56 Norfolk Record 1717-1723).

The final act in this section on ALEX. MURRAY came on 14 May 1733 when DORCUS MURRAY sold to JAMES SALTER, in Norfolk Co. a plantation which came to me by decease of my father, ALEX. MURRAY (as being co-heir) on Tanner's Creek.

Wits: JOHN and HANNAH FIFE. (Bk. 11 Norfolk Records)

JOHN WARDEN III) will was dated 1741 and probated 20 Nov. 1741. He names his nephews JOHN and EDWARD COLLINS leaving to them his plantation and house-hold goods. It was witnessed by JOHN DAVENPORT, EDWARD COLLINS and JAMES MILLER. (No mention here of a half brother who would have been son of ALEX. MURRAY)

We presume that his COLLINS nephews were sons of his full-sister, given name not known.

We believe that she had first been the wife of WILLIAM MILLER as early as 1719, before she married COLLINS, because on 16 Jan. 1719 WILLIAM MILLER by his petition set forth that JOHN WARDEN had in his possession money legacies given by his father, JOHN WARDEN, deceased, (Court Records of Norfolk 1717-1723 pp. 44).

JOHN WARDEN II) deceased 1702, was actually JOHN WARDEN JR., son of JOHN WARDEN I) who died, perhaps as early as 1674.

The will of ALICE NEWMAN identifies her grandchildren, JAMES and JOHN WARDEN, ALICE WARDEN and WM. ADAMS' Her will was dated 1688.

WM. ADAMS was the son of her daughter, ALICE BRIENT, wife of THOMAS BRIENT, and ALICE was former wife of JOHN ADAMS.

On 15 Nov. 1689 SARAH WARDEN, orphan of JOHN WARDEN dec'd., petitions for tobo from her father's estate which had been in hands of ALICE NEWMAN, her grandmother. JOHN WARDEN II), her brother, to pay her part. (Court Orders Norfolk Co. p. 152)

WARDEN is consistently indexed as WARD in wills of Norfolk Co. Va.

The record pertaining to ALEXANDER MURRAY are spelled, usually, MURPHRY. This spelling is so consistent that we wonder if a double "R" is treated like a double "S", In the past, Miss was spelled Mifs.

JAMES WARDEN, son of JOHN WARDEN I) who died before 1674, brother of JOHN WARDEN JR. who died 1702 and Uncle of JOHN WARDEN III) who died 1741; died in 1739 in Norfolk Co. Va. His legatees were his sons: SAMUEL, JOHN, WILLIAM and LEMUEL WARDEN. His daughters were ELIZ. WICKLIFF, MARGARET WHITEHEAD, ABIGAIL SIMMONDS, SARAH MERCHANT.

Wits: EDWARD JOYCE, JASPER LANE, ELIZABETH LANE.

We notice in the records pertaining to the WARDENS and ALEXANDER MURRAY, who married in 1704 the widow of JOHN WARDEN JR., a total absence of cross references to JOHN EDWARDS which so characterized the references to DAVID MURRAY SR. and his other known children.

After completing this study of ALEXANDER MURRAY and finding no where a reference to a male heir, we can only conclude that he was not the father of JAMES MURRAY or of ELIZABETH WARD to whose husband, JOHN WARD, JAMES MURRAY conveyed land in Bertie Co. in 1729.

The best possibility seems to be that JAMES MURRAY of Bertie Co. N.C. 1729 was the son of JOHN MURRAY SR. and that in 1729 his father was deceased and his mother, now the wife of JOHN EDWARDS was ELIZABETH GODFREE, dau. of WARREN and SARAH GODFREE.

If JOHN EDWARDS to whom Governor Berkeley granted guardianship of the children of EVAN WILLIAM, 9 Oct. 1671 was married to WILLIAM'S widow, in the eventuality that JOHN EDWARDS of the 1729 deed in Bertie Co. was the husband of JOHN MURRAY'S widow, dau. of WARREN and SARAH GODFREE; then this JOHN EDWARDS was married to the granddaughter of EVAN WILLIAMS. He may have married his cousin or he may have been descendant of EDWARDS by another marriage.

We have reviewed records in Norfolk Co. which refer to JOHN and NATHANIEL EDMUNDS who were probably EDWARDS.

JOHN EDMUNDS was named as grandson of MARY RAVENS will, dated 1695, probated 1707.

On 16 June 1684, DAVID MURRAY SR. was security for MARY RAVINGS on the estate of her husband, ED. RAVINGS. (p. 237 Court Records 1684).

In her will dated 30 Jan. 1695/6 and probated 2 April 1707, MARY RAVENS named her grandchildren: HUGH, JOHN, MARY, ELIZABETH and HENRY WHITEHURST; HENRY SMITH, HENRY NICHOLAS and if he dye to go to his aunt, MARY SMITH, wife of RICHARD SMITH.

She also named other grandson: ROBERT WHITEHURST; EDWARD, JOHN and WM. TANTERS; and JOHN EDMUNDS (EDWARDS). Her daus. were ELLINOR and MARY SMITH.

The witnesses of her will were STEPHEN PEW, JOHN SMITH, JOHN EDMUNDS and JOHN BARRINGTON.

In 1700, MARY RAVENING, MARY SMITH, and RICHARD CHURCH witnessed the will of THOS. SOLLY who like JOHN MURRY SR. of Princess Ann Co., had married a daughter of RICHARD CHURCH.

The first wife of THOS. SOLLY was MARY, the daughter of JOHN PORTER SR., as we know from a deed of gift form him to the children of THOS. SOLLY and my daughter, MARY, his wife; JOHN, THOMAS SOLLY, JR. and MARY SOLLY JR. This deed was dated 13 Jan. 1691/2 and was recorded in P. A. Co. Va. Records Vol. I p. 32.

At the time of his death, SOLLY'S wife was FRANCES who had previously been married to NICHOLS according to a 1693 record in which RICHARD CHURCH in behalf of his dau., FRANCES NICHOLS, conveyed

property. This is no doubt the reason that CHURCH fails to mention his dau., FRANCES, in his will, though he does mention his granddaus. ANN and LIDIA SOLLY who are also mentioned in the will of THOS. SOLLY as his daus.

SOLLY'S widow married RICHARD CORBITT before 30 Jan. 1704/5 on which date GEORGE KEMP (son of JAMES) appointed MAX. BOUSH atty., to represent me as marrying ye daughter and legatee of THOS. SOLLY dec'd. (P. A. Co. Bk. I, Part II p. 212)

Records from Albermarle Co. N.C. show that on 13 Nov. 1694 JOHN PORTER SR. of that Co. granted Power of Attorney to his son, JOHN PORTER JR. of the E.B.E.R. in Norfolk Co. Va. to sell certain property. This P. of A. was recorded on page 215 of the current records and was witnessed by JAMES WARD, WILLIAM BRADFORD and THOMAS SOLLY who would have been Junior or grandson of JOHN PORTER SR.

This document culminated on 24 Dec. 1695 in the sale by JOHN PORTER JR. of Chowan Prect. in N.C., on behalf of my father of land to JOHN SHIRLEY of Eliz. River in Va. formerly sold to JOHN ACKISS.

Wits: JOHN SOLLY, THOS. HALL and BEN. BURRUSS, attorney for MARY PORTER, wife of JOHN JR. (p. 215-218 of Bk. I P.A. Co. Records)

The will of JOHN ACKISS was dated 30 Mar. 1725 and recorded in P.A. Co. Va. p. 183 of Records 1724 to 1735. He names his wife KATHERINE; sons WILLIAM, JOHN, FRANCIS and ADAM and grandchildren: WILLIAM and KATHERINE of son, WILLIAM; SARAH and JANE, daus., of JOHN, ELIZABETH dau. of FRANCIS and MARGARET and JOHN EDWARDS. He states that he has a total of 11 grandchildren. His dau. MARGARET EDWARDS is named in the 1734 will of his wife, KATHERINE.

Besides MARY MURRAY and FRANCIS NICHOLS SOLLY, the 1705 will of RICHARD CHURCH names daughters: SARAH NICHOLS; ANN THEVATHAN (mother of DANIEL LANIER of N.C. records) LYDIA BUTT; ABIGAIL, PATIENCE and CORBIN CHURCH and a son JOSEPH CHURCH. He also named his wife, ELIZ., and the granddaus. who were daus. of THOS. SOLLY.

His will was witnessed by MATHEW GODFREY, WM. NICHOLSON (NICHOLS) and JOHN HEBDON.

We have reviewed the evidence of a relationship between DAVID MURRAY SR. and WM. NICHOLS who were security for the estate and orphans of THOS. WATKINGS 16 Aug. 1669. This, in the same year RICHARD STONE who married WATKINS relick, SUSAN, made conveyances to DAVID MURRAY, WM. NICHOLS and JOHN PRESCOTT (or PRESTON?) and wife ANN.

Later ANN BECK, dau. of MURRAY prayed ------ ------ for a house from the property of THOS. WATKINS for her son, GEO. BECK.

Therefore, we believe that MURRAY, NICHOLS and PRESCOTT were married either to the sisters or daus. of THOS. WATKINS and thus MURRAYS and NICHOLS were related. SUSAN, relick of THOS. WATKINS was his wife for only a very brief span and there would not have been a relationship to her.

A study of the map of Pitt Co. N.C. shows one of its main waterways to be Trantors Creek, perhaps named for the Trantor grandsons of MARY RAVENS, who also had grandson JOHN EDWARDS, in 1695. Pitt was made from BEAUFORT Co. N.C. and was the seat of the descendants of JOHN and MICHAEL WARD, sons of JOHN and ELIZABETH WARD who received land in adjoining Tyrrell Co. from JAMES MURRAY and wife ELIZABETH, who in turn were grantors of a deed 1728 from JOHN EDWARDS and wife ELIZABETH, for said land.

We have seen that DAVID MURRAY SR. was security for MARY RAVING 16 June 1684 on the estate of her husband EDWARD RAVING, dec'd.

Earlier Norfolk Co. Records prove that an EDWARD RAWLINGS married before 2 April 1669 the relick of Lt. Col. THOS. LAMBERT who had married the relick of WM. BURRUSS shortly after his death in 1643. Her name was also MARY, and we wonder if she is the same as MARY RAVINGS of the 1695-1707 will, who was rich in grandchildren. From 1643 to 1707 is a long span of years but not an impossible one.

On 7 Dec. 1734 in I. of W. Co., JOHN EDWARDS, Capt. THOS. BRYANT (of Norfolk origin) and WM. BENNETT met at the house of ELIZ. JEFFERS to divide estate of Capt. SIMON JEFFERS. (p. 355 IVII Century I. of W. Co.)

A JOHN EDWARDS of the same county made his will in 1748. He named his son JOHN and daus. MARY and ANN, a wife, ANN, and made his brother NATHANIEL EDWARDS, trustee.

An earlier JOHN EDWARDS of I. of W. Co. married the widow of JOHN GREENWOOD, ELIZABETH who was also relick of JAMES PYLAND, about 1665.

To make things more complicated, the very first land grant made in N.C. was conveyed to JAMES MURDAH on 25 Sept. 1663 for 520 acres on the west side of Chowanke (Chowan) River for transporting unto the province THOS. CRAFFORD, WM. MORRY and NATHANIEL BRIDGES and others. (Lost Tribes of N.C. - Ray)

If the JAMES MURRAY who conveyed land in Bertie in 1729 to JOHN WARD and THOS. BRIDGMAN was descended from this JAMES MURDAH who imported WM. MORRY and NATHANIEL BRIDGES, we would be inclined to conclude that JOHN WARD of Tyrrell was not recently of Norfolk Co. in 1729 and that he was a son of MICHAEL WARD instead of JOHN WARD III), of Norfolk Co.

But that would mean that we must discount all the accumulation of data which we have reviewed which points to the possibility that he was of Norfolk as recently as 1728 and was the son of JOHN WARD III), and his wife, ELIZABETH SMITH.

An item in Book D. (p. not discernable) of Norfolk Records under date of 1656, probably February, states that the relick of Mr. THOMAS WORL (WARD) m. WM. SORNISH. (CORNISH)

On 16 Feb. 1656, Bk. D. Norfolk Co. Records p. 47 in the Court Minutes, is testimony that one SIMON OBERZOR, was granted suits against WILLIAM SORNING (CORNING); NATHANIEL BATTS, who had married the widow of HENRY WOODHOUSE SR.; GEORGE JOHNSON, against whom the widow of JOHN WARD I) brought suit for 300 lbs. of tobo in the same year; WILLIAM CAPPS; THOMAS ALLEN and WILLIAM HATTERSLEY, whose wife MARGARET was named executor of the 1673 will of JOHN WORKMAN, though no relationship was apparent or indicated.

SIMON OBERZOR was executor of EDWARD LLOYD who formerly lived in Norfolk Co. and served as a justice of the Norfolk Court with his brother, CORNELIUS LLOYD and Mr. THOMAS WARD and others.

It was CORNELIUS LLOYD, acting for his brother, EDWARD LLOYD, who conveyed in 1651 to THOMAS WARD, a tract of land "Wolf's Neck" which was to be transferred to an orphan, ——— HAWKINS, ward of EDWARD LLOYD, when he came of age.

EDWARD LLOYD had married in Norfolk Co. Va. before 25 July 1648, FRANCES, the widow of JOHN WATKIN and not long thereafter had removed to the colony of Maryland. It was HENRY HAWKINS of Maryland who sold "Wolf's Wood" of the same location as "Wolf's Neck" when he came of age about 1665.

We believe that his mother, one of the wives of THOMAS WARD was either daughter, step-dau. or sister of LLOYD, or that she was the dau. of JOHN HOLMES I) who died in 1648 and whose Md. estate was in the hands of EDWARD LLOYD. (Deed Bk. 4 Norfolk Co. p. 154)

That would make JOHN HOLMES II) of Norfolk, brother-in-law rather than father-in-law of THOMAS WARD and there are no Norfolk Records that indicate a closer relationship except WARD'S will which could have been miscopied.

Perhaps WARD had also been married to the full sister of THOMAS WORKMAN but his wife at the time of his death was ANN HAYES, sister of PETER HAYES of I. of Wight Co. Va., who named his sister "ANN CORNES," in his will made 1678, P. 1678.

SIMON OBERZOR, executor of EDWARD LLOYD, perhaps ask suit against ANN and her husband, WM. CORNISH, as executors of THOMAS WARD, no doubt in the interest of the HOLMES heirs and perhaps other children of HAWKIN'S, mother by WARD.

ANN HAYES WARD CORNISH may have been the sister of THOMAS WORKMAN who married THOS. WARD. We know that his mother ANNE, married ROBERT HAYES and had ADAM and NATHANIEL HAYES, besides her sons, THOMAS and JOHN WORKMAN. So ANN, last wife of THOMAS WARD, sister of PETER HAYES could have also been sister of THOMAS WORKMAN. The fact that neither she nor PETER were named in the will of ANN HAYES does not prove that they were not her children.

THOMAS BEVAN of I. of W. Co. called PETER HAYES his Uncle and THOMAS WARD II) of that county in 1687, spoke of BEVAN with love and affection. We believe that THOMAS WARD of I. of W. Co. was the son of THOMAS I of Norfolk.

The earliest record in Isle of Wight Co. concerning THOMAS WARD, was dated 11 Aug. 1666, an appraisement of the estate of RICHARD JEFFERS by THOS. WARD. JOHN SHELLOCK, MORGAN LEWIS and JOHN NEWMAN. (Bk. II, p. 45)

On 26 May 1668 WM. CLARK granted P. of A. to his wife, MARY, vs. THOS. WARD (W. & D. Bk. D. p. 536)

The will of THOMAS MOSS (MORSE, MORRIS) was proved in I. of W. Co. Feb. 1669/70. His Legatees were, JOHN, son of JOHN WHITLEY, THOS. RICHARDS, THOS. WARD JR.

Wits: JOHN RICHARDS. (Vol. I Chapmans Will of I. of W. Co. Va. p. 12)

This THOS. WARD JR. was evidently the son of THOMAS I) of I. of W. Co. who must have been THOS. II), son of THOS. I) of Norfolk. Relationships are not given in the extract of this will but more than likely the three children named in this 1669 will were grandsons or nephews of THOS. MOSS (MORSE, MORRIS).

The estate of THOMAS LEWIS was appraised 2 July 1670 by JOHN SHELLOCK, GEO. HARDY, THOS. WARD and JOHN ALLEN. Signed by REBECCA LEWIS.

The estate of RICHARD DAVIS app. 9 Feb. 1673/4 by THOS. WARD and PHILIP PARDOE.

Although there is no will, inventory, appraisement or estate settlemen, we presume that THOMAS WARD II) was deceased before 1681 when JANE WARD wrote her will in which her son-in-law (step-son), THOMAS WARD, was named. The will was recorded 9 April 1683. (Vol. I p. 69 Chapman's Will of I. of W.) No mention is made of her husband.

THOMAS WARD JR., of the MOSS Will whom we will call by that designation, had a wife, ANN, in 1682.

The estate of THOMAS GREEN was appraised 19 June 1686 by RICHARD WILKERSON, JAS. TULLEDGE, DANIEL LONG and THOS. WARD JR. (Bk. I, p. 19 & 20)

The will of THOS. GREEN d. 22 Oct. 1685; P. 9 June 1686 names his sons THOS., GEO., JOHN and WILLIAM. To the latter two, 300 acres each of land adj. THOS. POOLE and JAMES BAGNELL. His daus. were PRUDENCE,

SARAH, BRIDGETT, ELIZABETH and MARY DAVIS. His wife was MARY. There also are records in I. of W. Co. of LEWIS and ROGER BRIANT.

Before this, the will of HENRY REYNOLDS, dated 9 June 1681, named his wife executor. The court granted this, making THOS. WARD and HENRY CLARK her securities. (Wills of I. of W. Co. p. 107)

On Sept. 18, 1689, THOMAS WARD of the Lower Parish of I. of W. Co. planter, for the love and good will I bear to THOMAS BEVAN, ½ of the land on which I now live, adj. Vergoes Cr. the said land granted unto me by virtue of an Escheater Patent for 202 a. adj. northerly on Warrisqueak Back Bay Creek, formerly laid out by Mr. ARTHUR ALLEN, 100 acres with all houses, buildings and orchards thereon.

Wits: NICHOLAS FULGHAM, RICH, WILLSON, JOHN PITT. (Deed Bk. 1 p. 19 I. of W. Co. Va.)

On the same day, 18 Sept. 1689, THOMAS BEVAN of the Lower Parish of I. of W. Co. do give and grant unto THOS. WARD of the same Parish and county all my rights, title and interest in ½ of the land which I now have which did belong to my Uncle, PETER HAYES, and by him given to me in his will, land lying on the West side of Virgoes Cr. butting northerly on Warrisqueak Back Bay Creek containing the whole 202 acres that is to say ½ being about 100 acres. The hindmost part of the tract with all houses etc.

W.: NICHOLAS FULGRAM, JOHN PITT, RICHARD WILLSON.

The latter deed refers to the will of Uncle PETER HAYES which was dated 7 May 1678 and P. 10 Mar. 1679. He speaks of his mother who would have been deceased, his sister, ANN CORNES (CORNISH) and devises the reserve to his cozen (nephew) THOS. BEVAN.

Witnesses were ANTHONY FULGRAM. HUGH HUMPHREY.

The two deeds dated the same day transferring an equal amount of land one to the other, 100 acres out of 202 to each, from tracts that were in the same location, THOMAS WARD with love and affection to THOMAS BEVAN who shares a legacy from his Uncle PETER HAYES, certainly speaks of a close kinship and mutual concern and property. This leads us to feel that ANN CORNES is the same as the widow of Mr. THOS. WORL (WARD) of Norfolk who in 1656 was married to WILLIAM SORNISH (CORNISH).

WILLIAM CORNISH lived in Norfolk Co. and was cut off in that part that became Princess Ann in 1693 where he died in 1700. He came to Va. in 1651 as a young man so was born about 1630.

The estate of THOMAS WARD JR. was presented by his widow MARY WARD. Appraisal was returned 9 Feb. 1693 by JOHN GILES, NICHOLAS FULGRAM. THOS. NORSWORTHY and THOS. WHITLEY. (Bk. II p. 333)

In 1702 WM. CLARK had m. MARY WARD, relick of THOMAS, JR., and in 1708 the estate of WM. CLARK was app. in I. of W. Co. by THOS. THROPP, JOHN MUNGER and ROGER HODGES.

On 9 Oct. 1707 ROBERT MOUNGER of ye Upper Parish in I. of W. Co. to THOS. WARD of Lawns Cr. Parish in Surry Co., a certain plantation whereon, I myself lately lived, situate on the northwest side of the first swamp of ye main Blackwater in ye Upper Parish, 300 a. being part of a patent of 400 a. formerly granted to PETER HALL of I. of W. Co. and by him conveyed to my father and by his will of 3 Jan. 1670, to me."

Signed ROBERT MOUNGER - ELINOR MOUNGER. (Deed Bk. 2 p. 84 I. of W. Co.)

This THOMAS WARD of 1707 in Surry Co. was THOMAS II) of that location, son of THOMAS WARD who made his will 25 Feb. 1675. He named his wife ELIZABETH and his sons THOMAS and JOHN who were to divide his land when they came of age. He had other children but did not call them by name. His friends JAMES REDDETH and JOSEPH RICHARDSON were overseers of estate.

On 30 Aug. 1715 JOHN WOARD of Surry Co. left his estate to dau. MARY JACKSON, wife of JOHN JACKSON and left one shilling to dau. MARY ELLIS.

W.: WM. JONES and ROBERT WYNNE.

To go back to THOMAS WARD JR. of I. of W. Co. who was deceased 1693. In 1696, a THOMAS WARD, evidently his son, appraised the estate of NICHOLAS WILSON. In the appraisments made by his father in several instances they were also signed by NICHOLAS FULGRAM and RICHARD WILSON and in this generation we have a NICHOLAS WILSON. (p. 53)

In 1710 THOMAS WARD witnessed the will of THOS. CARTER.

We now have the fourth THOMAS WARD in that many generations without the mention of any sons other than the heir and name-sake. We have not overlooked or omitted them - there are no others by the name of WARD in these records.

We do not believe that in that day of big families the WARDS were able to limit their male heirs to one, each. Did they provide land for them in Nansemond or in N.C.? The will of FRANCIS RAYNER of I. of Wight Co. was dated 29 Sept. 1716 and P. 28 Sept. 1719. He names his wife JOANNA; his dau. JOANNA, wife of THOS. WARD; his dau. FRANCES, wife of FRANCIS LITTLE; his deceased son, JOHN RAYNOR, and JOSEPH WARD, son of THOMAS WARD.

Wits. were CHAS. GOODRICH SR. and JR. and LAWRENCE BAKER.

Although the name of the wife is JANE instead of JOANNE and JOSEPH, son of THOMAS WARD, planter, is omitted, we believe the THOS. WARD of the will d. 15 April 1727, P. 27 May 1728 is the one referred to in the RAYNOR will.

Beside his wife JANE, (which would be JOAN) WARD names his daughters: HANNAH, MARY, OLIVE and his sons JOHN, BENJ., FRANCIS. JOSEPH was heir of his grandfather and was not mentioned in his father's will.

His wife and son BENJ. were made executors and the will was witnessed by JOHN and SUSAN WILLIAMS and JOSEPH QUANTOCK. (Wills Vo. II p. 2)

In the next 40 years the four sons of this THOMAS WARD are all accounted for in I. of Wight Co. but they are too late for JOHN WARD who was deeded land, in Tyrrell Co. N.C. in 1729:

1. JOHN WARD, son of THOMAS deeded 47½ acres to JOHN GREY, son of ARCHIBALD GREY on 23 April 1739. This was signed by JOHN and SARAH WARD. The next year JOHN WARD with wife SARAH and daughter MARY, died in I. of W. Co. (Vol. II p. 102). He also left a son, JOHN JR., who married COMFORT. He and his children were conveyed property by his Uncle BENJAMINE, who left most of his property by deed to a daughter, HARTWELL DAVIS.

JOHN WARD JR. died in I. of W. Co. 1771.

2. BENJAMINE WARD d. 1757 without leaving a will and his relick, SARAH, married REUBEN PROCTOR in 1758. (Vol. II Wills of I. of W. Co. p. 30)

3. The will of JOSEPH WARD of I. of W. Co. is recorded in Will Bk. 7 p. 428 and dated 7 Aug. 1768. His wife was ELIZABETH. He names his oldest son JOHN and youngest son, JOSEPH, and his daus.: ELIZ. STALLINGS, ANN MADDORA, UNITY EDWARDS, SARAH BERRIMAN and LUCY LEE.

Wits: RICH. JORDAN, FRANCIS WRENN, BENJ. JONES.

FRANCIS WARD of Isle of Wight Co. dated his will 13 June 1768. It was recorded 1 Aug. 1776. His wife was ANN and his sons were NATHAN BRITIAN, JOHN, JOSEPH and JAMES WARD. He had a daughter WALLOOTH, and others, ANN, CONSTANCE and MARY.

Wits: JACOB PARSONS, WM. GAY, THOS. COPHER. Will Bk. 8 p. 429 and 430, I. of W. Co. Va.

Unless JOHN WARD of Tyrrell Co. who died there in 1750, ancestor, of NANCY WARD, was the neglected son or descendant of one of the early THOMAS WARDS of I. of W., we must conclude that his original home was not in this county.

WARDS of Princess Ann Co., Va.

The only THOMAS WARD of which we have records in Norfolk Co. following the death of THOMAS WARD I) in Jan. 1655 is THOMAS WARD of the Western Branch of ELIZABETH River who appears in the records pertaining to the BOWLING family in 1670 and last appears when he and his wife, JOAN, convey 25 acres of "JOHN WARDS old plantation" to DORETHEA HARRIS and her daughters in 1693.

There are no further THOMAS WARDS on the W.B.E.R. until THOMAS, son of JOHN WARD III) and brother of JOHN, JOSEPH and WILLIAM, is named as co-executor of his father's estate in 1710.

We presume that the THOMAS WARD of the will of JOHN BRUKS, May 17, 1687 is another, because the BRAKS (BRUKS) holdings were still in the Lynhaven area not the W.B.E.R. and THOS. WARD was a neighbor who was given a calf, then at his place. This will was w. by THOS. WARD and RICH. BONEY.

In the meantime, shortly after Princess Ann was organized in 1691 and cut off from Norfolk, a THOMAS WARD appears in the records there. We know that he has been previously married but the first entry in P. A. Co. pertains to his having married MARTHA SIVIL, relick of JOHN SIVIL, and receiving appointment as executor of SIVIL'S estate 21 Apri. 1695.

SIVIL'S will dated 21 June 1694 named his wife, MARTHA, a son, JOHN JR., and dau. MARTHA JR. It also mentioned JAMES DAUGE, son of JAMES DAUGE and was witnessed by JNO. LYBURN and DAUGE. (Bk. 1 p. 6 P. A. Co. Va.)

A 1688 record in Norfolk Co. prove that CHAS. EGERTON and JOHN SERVILLE were born in St. Christophers and lived in North Carolina before coming to Norfolk. (Norfolk Co. Bk. 5, p. 106)

On 10 Sept. 1698 MARTHA WARD, wife of THOMAS, JOHN LEWIS and his wife, appeared in court for JAMES SHEREWOOD and his wife, GRACE, in a trial for slander and witchcraft, against GRACE.

This calls to mind the 1674 will of Gov. RICHARD BENNETT in which he left 1000 lbs. of tobo to the wife of JOHN LEWIS and an equal amount to MICHAEL WARD and CHAS. HOWARD.

It recalls also connecting documents between SHEREWOOD and WARDS, both in England and in Va.

In 1701, the inventory of JAMES SHEREWOOD was signed by REBECCA SHIRLEY 5 Oct. 1701. (Vol. I p. 15 Sect. 1 P. A. Co. Va.) He would not likely have been the JAMES of the above suit. Even before this HENRY SNAILE JR. petitioned that he be made gdn. of JOHN SHEREWOOD I) Mar. 1679. (Norfolk Records 1676 - 1686 p. 107) At one time SNAILE had wife GRACE. The will of GRACE SHEREWOOD dated 20 Aug. 1738 and P. 1 Oct. 1740 named her sons: JOHN, JAMES and RICHARD and in Chowan Co. N.C. in the 1740's JONATHAN SHEREWOOD conveyed land to both JOHN & BENJ. WARD. Who was GRACE, wife of JAMES SHEREWOOD?

In the court orders of the May Court of 1697, record is made of the fact that "ROBERT WARD, son of THOMAS WARD, who had been bound by his father to JAMES PURDY, now deceased, complained that he was afraid and ill-kept by JOHANNA PURDY, relick of sd. PURDY with whom he now lives. Court orders boy to remain

with father until next court."

A deed dated 2 Aug. 1708 from FRANCIS MORSE and his wife, BARBARA, conveyed to THOMAS WARD land formerly given by WM. WALSTON to his sister, MARY RUSSELL, by deed of Gift. She and her husband, GEO HILLIARD to GEO. NEWTON and he to MORSE 5 Sept. 1694, now MORSE to THOMAS WARD.

Wits: WM. CORNISH, WM. CAPPS. (Bk. II, p. 8 P. A. Records)

BARBARA MORSE was the sister of this WILLIAM CORNISH, JR. and the CAPPS and CORNISH signatures are duplicates of the names of their antecedents who were sued by SIMON OBERZON 16 Feb. 1656. BARBARA, the daughter of the first WM. CORNISH may have been his daughter by ANN HAYES WARD and half-sister of THOS. WARD of P. A. Co.

On 29, Mar. 1709 WM. WALSTON, son and heir of WM. WALSTON, for L8, confirmed to THOMAS WARD the land from his father, to father's sister, MARY RUSSELL, already conveyed by FRANCIS and BARBARA MORSE. Said land upon upper ——— of the eastern shore of Linhaven on line dividing his land from PETER'S land adj. land of CHAS. KINLEY and GEO. MASH (MORSE).

Wits: W. C. COCK, JOHN DESMOND, ROBERT WARD. (D. & W. Bk. 2 p. 43 & 44) COCK was son-in-law of DAVID MURRAY SR. of the JOHN WARD IV of Norfolk Records.

On April 5, 1709, FRANCIS MORSE of Linhaven Psh. for L35 conveyed to ROBERT WARD of same, a plantation of 70 or 80 acres lying in ye Upper Prect. of ye Eastern Shore of Linnhaven Psh., P. A. Co. Va. whereon ROBERT WARD now liveth joining Bridge Marsh and THOS. GRIFFINS patent of land, and Piney Island Creek. Wits: C. COCKE, HENRY SPRATT, HENRY CHAPMAN. From the deeds we find that THOMAS WARD and his son ROBERT invested in the same neighborhood and no doubt lived as close neighbors to one another, and that both received by deed, land from BARBARA MORSE, dau. of ANN CORNISH.

On 6 of April 1708/9 JAMES PETERS of P. A. Co. to ROBERT WARD for L10, all ye tract called Acre Ridge 100 a. patented to PETERS 1690 part of 695 acres ye same adj. ROBERT WARD and ye line of Capt. MORSE, land now in occupancy of ROBERT WARD. (D. & W. Bk. 2 p. 74)

Wits: RICH. CORBITT, WM. SMITH. RICHARD CORBITT was the SIL or grandson of RICHARD POOLE who had married the widow of THOS. WORKMAN I) before 1657.

JAMES PETERS was junior, the son of JAMES PETERS last husband of ALICE HOLMES and guardian of the children of her brother's children HENRY and SARAH HOLMES in 1690-93. PETERS JR. was married to a daughter of GEO. ASHALL and died shortly after this deed was conveyed without naming either wife or children.

With all of these indirect indications of kinship, it seems safe to say that THOMAS WARD III of Princess Ann Co. and his son ROBERT, are descended from THOMAS WARD I) of Norfolk, THOMAS III, a second son by a different wife, named for his father who already had son, THOMAS II of I. of W.

There is no doubt that this is the THOMAS WARD of the 1687 will of JOHN BRUKS who left a heifer to WARD. BRUKS no doubt was son of ALICE HOLMES and HENRY BRAKES and if JOHN HOLMES was truly the father-in-law of THOS. WARD I) perhaps WARD and BRUKS were cousins, but more likely, THOS. WARD was son of ANN HAYES, relick of THOS. WARD and later wife of WM. CORNISH, whose dau. BARBARA MORSE sold land to both THOS. and ROBERT.

There is no other information about THOMAS WARD, father of ROBERT, and no other children unless THOMAS WARD JR., who conducted a processional 10 May 1739 in the lower part of the Upper Prect. of the Eastern Shore, was son of THOMAS and brother of ROBERT.

WARD was assisted by THOS. MORSE and PETER MALBONE.

JOHN WARD I) of Princess Ann Co. may also have been son of THOMAS WARD III) of the same county but there is little evidence of this relationship other than the fact that they lived in the same general area. We will later, present documents pertaining to JOHN WARD.

While there is even less proof that JAMES WARD of Chowan Co. 1695-1757 was son of THOMAS of Princess Ann Co. we believe that there is a strong possibility that he was.

He doesn't appear in the records of the W.B.E.R. nor in those of I. of Wight Co. He named his oldest son, THOMAS, and THOMAS WARD III, of P.A. Co. was old enough to have fathered JAMES born about 1670-75; THOMAS III, of P.A. born 1650-55.

Another reason we believe that JAMES may have been of P. A. Co. is because he witnessed the documents concerning the PORTERS and SOLLYS of Princess Ann Va. and Chowan Co. N.C. as shown in the N. C. Section of this chapter.

If JAMES was son of THOMAS III of Princess Ann, it is possible that one or the other of the early JOHN WARDS of Chowan was also a son, since records show that JAMES and JOHN migrated together into N.C. in 1701 or 1702. (Claimed in that year)

The will of WILLIAM CORNISH was proved in P. A. Co. 7 Oct. 1700 forty-four years after his marriage to ANN HAYES WARD, widow. In this time he had been married probably three or more times and his daughter BARBARA, wife of FRANCIS MORSE was possibly the only one of his children by the first wife who was named in his will

However, it is possible that WM. CORNISH II) of the 1708 signature, THOMAS CORNISH mentioned in P. A. Co. records and perhaps the mother of PHILIP PIGHTING of England, who called BARBARA MORSE his aunt, were

all children of his first marriage.

In his 1700 will WILLIAM CORNISH Names his wife, ALICE, his sons: MARTIN, JOHN and JOEL; his daughter BARBARA, wife of FRANCIS MORSE; A son-in-law LEMUEL IVY. It was witnessed by HENRY and HORATIO WOODHOUSE, JOHN RICHARDSON and BEN DREWITT.

After the death of Capt. FRANCIS MORSE, his widow, BARBARA CORNISH married SOLOMON WHITE, brother of PATRICK WHITE whose descendants - SWAINS and SPRUILLS - moved to Tyrrell Co. N.C.

SOLOMON and BARBARA WHITE, widow of Capt. FRANCIS MORSE and dau. of WM. CORNISH to THOS. MORRIS (MORSE) and he to JAMES HARRISON 7 Nov. 1722. (Book 1714-1722 p. 468 P. A. Co.) (THOS. MORSE 1722 was probably son of BARBARA and relative of THOS. MOSS of the 1669 will in I. of W. Co.

For the student of Norfolk Co. genealogy, it is apparent that the sons named in the will are descendants of JOHN MARTIN discussed earlier in this chapter. MARTIN also had son JOEL MARTIN. Because of other RICHARDSON signatures on CORNISH documents, it seems apparent that the second wife of WM. CORNISH I) was ANN MARTIN who had already been the wife of ADAM KEELING and JOHN RICHARDSON having married KEELING about 1669.

CORNISHS' third wife was ALICE IVY, widow, daughter of JOHN PORTER SR. whose daughter MARY was the first wife of THOS. SOLLY SR. of P. A. Co. as proved by Deeds of Gift from PORTER to WM. CORNISH and wife ALICE, my daughter and her two children (Deed Bk. I p. 32 P.A. Co.) also to the children of THOMAS SOLLY and my daughter MARY, his wife - JOHN, THOS., JR. and MARY SOLLY, JR. 13 Jan. 1691/2.

ALICE CORNISH conveyed 15 Nov. 1701 property to son, LEMUEL IVY and grandsons THOMAS and ANTHONY IVY, sons of my son, THOS. IVY.

Wits: CASON MOORE and JOHN RICHARDSON. (P. A. Co. Records Vol. I. p. 500)

Her will probated 27 Sept. 1708 names her grandsons, ANTHONY and THOMAS IVY, dau. ALICE CORNISH, grandson MORRIS FITZGERALD and granddau. ELIZ. ANGUISH. It was wits: by PAT. ANGUISH, HENRY LINTON and RICHARD CORBITT. (Page 20 P. A. Co. Records 1708-1704)

Back to ROBERT WARD, son of THOMAS of P. A. Co.! On 3 Oct. 1720 ROBERT WARD of Linhaven Pash. in Princess Ann Co. and wife JANE, deeded to THOS. RAYLEY of same Parish and Co., 53 a. in ye Upper Prect. of the Eastern Shore, a plantation from 70 or 80 acres, adj. Bridge MARSH and THOMAS GRIFFINS patent etc.

Wits: JOHN BRINSON, JOHN MOY. (D. Bk. 3 p. 343)

The day before on 2 Oct. 1720 ROBERT WARD of ye Upper Prect. of Eastern Shore of Linhaven in P. A. Co. to THOS. RAYLEY of same, for the consideration of a certain plantation lying and being in ye Upper Prect. 100 acres now in possession of ROBERT WARD, granted in a mutual exchange of land between sd. ROBERT WARD and said RAYLEY, with full consent of JANE my now wife, one plantation of 100 a. called Acre Ridge, conveyed by Mr. JAMES PETERS to WARD 5 April 1709. W. JOHN BRINSON, JOHN MOY. (Bk. 3 p. 342 P. A. Co.)

In exchange THOS. RAYLEY for £10 sterling to ROBERT WARD, tract of land adj. place commonly called LONGRIDGE and 53 acres granted PATRICK HANAGAN by a patent 16 July 1700 and by HANAGAN to RICHARD MOY and by deed dated 5 May 1715 by said MOY sold and conveyed to THOS. RALEY. MARY, wife of THOS. RAYLEY relinquishes dower. W. JOHN BRINSON, WM. CAPPS. (Bk. 3 p. 344 P.A. Co.)

On 2 Aug. 1721 RICHARD MOY deeded to ROBERT WARD both of Linhaven Psh. P. A. Co. Va. for £12, 100 acres "which I bought of PATRICK HANAGAN and which HANAGAN (or FLANAGAN) bought of Capt. JAMES DAUGE 7 Jan. 1711; land adj. BRINSON and GRINTO.

Wits: FRANCIS WOODHOUSE, ED. JAMES, WM. CAPPS. (P. A. Co. D. Bk. 3, Part 2 p. 390)

THOS RAYLEY died before 19 Feb. 1721 and named his wife MARY and sons JOHN, THOS. EDWARD and JAMES.

In the will of RICHARD MOY dated 6 Mar. 1733, he named his wife, MARY, his kinsman JOHN RAYLEY, son of THOS. and MARY RAYLEY and his bro. GEO. MOY. One of the witnesses was KITLEY ROE and the Nov. 1733 court records of P. A. show that GEO. MOY of Bath Co. and JOHN MOY of Albermarle, both owed money to KITLEY ROE of P. A. (Records 1724-1735 p. 485 and 509)

The will of ROBERT WARD SR. of Lynhaven Parish P. A. Co. was dated 7 Oct. 1750 and recorded 16 Nov. 1756. He named his wife, JANE' whom we believe to have been a sister or dau. of RICHARD MOY. His sons were CALEB, THOMAS the executor, ROBERT WARD JR. and JOHN who was left land, adj. PETER MALBONE.

His daus. were MARGARET WHITEHURST, JANE BONNEY and ELIZABETH LOVETT.

Witnesses were FRANCIS WOODHOUSE and HENRY WOODHOUSE.

These WOODHOUSE witnesses are descendants of MARY BATTS, widow of HENRY WOODHOUSE I). It was her second husband, NATHANIEL BATTS, against whom SIMON OBERZOR, executor of EDWARD LOYD, brought suit 16 Feb. 1656 at the same time he also sued WILLIAM CORNING, WM. CAPPS, GEORGE JOHNSON, THOS ALLEN and WM. HATTERSLEY. It is interesting to note the cross signatures on these P. A. Co. records which indicate that these families, now a hundred years later, were still involved with one another. At the time of the 1656 suit, WM. CORNISH was just recently married to the relick of Mr. THOS. WARD.

A will of a later THOS. WARD, dated 26 May 1764 and recorded in P. A. Co., names his son, GEORGE WARD.

and dau. MARY BONNEY, wife of EDWARD BONNEY.

He named three grandsons, JOHN and SIMON WARD and JOHN BONNEY to whom he left 40 acres adj. THOS. LEWIS. His wife was SARAH.

His son, GEORGE WARD, is probably the one of that name mentioned in the 1720 will of GEORGE MORRIS (MORSE) as his grandson. MORRIS' daus. were, SARAH WARD, his eldest; ELIZABETH CAPPS and JANE KOLLOY, wife of CHARLES COLLEY. He also names an unmarried dtr. FRANCIS MARSH and grandsons JOHN KOLLY, GEO. WARD and RICH CAPP and friends, ROGER FOUNTAIN and JOHN MOY.

Wits: JOHN HAIRAS (HARRIS), JOHN MOY and CHAS. KONSOY. (P. A. Co. Records 1714-1721 p. 316)

We are convinced that these MORSE (MORRIS) were related to the THOMAS MOSS of I. of W. Co. who in 1669 named THOMAS WARD JR. probably his grandson, as a legatee.

Another THOS. MORSE (MORRIS) made his will 17 Mar. 1700 in Princess Ann Co. He named a wife, DOROTHY, and daughters MARY, wife of JOHN BROWN and DORCAS, wife of THOS. HATTERSLEY.

Wits: BRYAN CAHILL, ED MOSELEY SR. and JR. (P. A. Co. Bk. I p. 491)

In 1706 THOMAS HATTERSLEY'S inv. was signed by DORCAS BROUGHTON.

Between 1777 and 1782, records show that JOHN, ROBERT and THOMAS WARD and ROBERT SR. were property owners in P. A. Co. All were probably sons or grandsons of ROBERT.

We have carried these records far beyond 1729 when JOHN WARD of Tyrrell Co. N.C., ancestor of the WARDS of Tenn., Ala. and Tex. of this chapter, took up residence there and as of yet we have found no definite connection between him and these WARDS of P. A. Co. although we noted several occasions when N. C. citizens were identified in Va. records.

However, there is still the family of JOHN WARD of P. A. Co. to be considered.

JOHN WARD left his will in P. A. Co. It was dated 26 April 1733 and recorded August 1733 in Bk. 4 p. 457 of Princess Ann Records. His wife was MARY and he named daus. SARAH FRANKLIN and MARY and ABIGAIL WARD.

To his son EDWARD, he left the plantation on which he lived and to sons JOHN and WILLIAM, land on the North River known by name of Ringer.

His will was witnessed by ELIZABETH CORBITT, CHRISTOPHER PHILPOTT and JOHN SMITH.

It is difficult to identify this JOHN WARD. He does not name a son THOMAS, and the only evidence, other than the fact that he lived in the "upper precinct of ye upper," that he might be related to the THOMAS-ROBERT WARD group is the signature of THOMAS and MARY RAYLY on a deed to him in 1717.

Perhaps the reason his friends and acquaintances are almost entirely different from those of ROBERT WARD, son of THOMAS, is that he lived on the western shore of Lynhaven Bay while the others lived on the eastern shore.

However, it seems more likely, that if THOMAS WARD III, of P. A. Co. had a son, JOHN, that he would have been JOHN WARD of Bath Co. in 1734, and later of Craven Co. In 1762, ROBERT and CATHERINE PERRY, JOHN and SIVIL PERRY and THOS. BRACKEN and wife, MARY, of Craven, sold to JACOB ISPOCK a tract of land on the north side of the Trent River which JOHN WARD bought of MARTIN FRANK and left to his daughters SIVIL, CATHERINE and MARY WASSILL, wives of ROBERT PERRY, JOHN PERRY and THOS. BRACKEN. The fact that WARD named a dau., SIVIL, is significant since the second wife of THOS. of P. A. Co. was MARTHA SIVIL, relick of JOHN.

Since JOHN WARD of P. A. Co. named his eldest son EDWARD WARD, perhaps he was descended from EDWARD of the 1669 Norfork will and his only son, EDWARD JR. or from WILLIAM WARD I), brother of THOMAS WARD I), and his son EDWARD.

There are few later records of any of these EDWARD WARDS in either Norfolk or P. A. Cos. Va.

A statement is made in Court Records of Norfolk about 1665 that one of the two younger of these EDWARD WARDS had left the country and we have presumed that this was EDWARD, son of WILLIAM deceased in 1659.

In 1672, EDWARD WARD and WM. WYNNE witnessed the P. of Att. from MORRIS FITZGARRELL to WM. ALFORD. FITZGARRELL was the husband of KATHERINE HILL REINS HOWARD. When her husband JOHN REINS died about 1658, WILLIAM WARD and LANCASTER LOVETT were appointed to divide the cattle belonging to THOS. DAVIS dec'd. son-in-law of CHRISTOPHER BURRUSS I).

At his death in 1659, WILLIAM WARD was exect. of THOMAS COOPER. On 21 Sept. 1711 JOHN and THOS. CORPHEW, one of Norfolk and one of P. A. Co. to their nephew, WM. MAC NORIN, part of a tract JOHN CORPHEW SR., father of THOS. and JOHN purchased of RICH. JONES, the younger, tract called "Ward's Island." (p. 11 Norfolk Co. Deeds)

Finally in about 1721 to 1725, EDWARD WARD and wife, ELIZABETH, made a deed to JOHN ECHOL which was struck from the records. (p. 108 Deed of Norfolk Co. 1721-30)

That is a complete summary of the later records pertaining to EDWARD WARDS in these counties and it isn't enough to contribute much to the background of JOHN WARD I) of P. A. Co., but still he had to come from somewhere.

As early as 1712 and 1713 Ancient Records of Bath Co. N. C. included deeds for land on east side of the North

River and another for land in Coresound. (Corrituck, probably since the North River flows through Norfolk Co. and into Currituck Bay. (Vol. I p. 9 Bath Co. Records N.C.) Two of these deeds were from CHRISTOPHER DAWSON or LAWSON, were to an EDWARD WARD and one was witnessed by THOS. MARTIN.

In 1768 a WILLIAM WARD of Currituck Co. N. C. made his will and named his sons JONATHAN and TIMOTHY and son-in-law CHAS. WATERMAN of P. A. Co.

Were these early records of the sons of JOHN of Princess Ann Co.; The evidence is that the early records concerning EDWARD WARD was too early for them. Perhaps WILLIAM, of the 1768 will, was the son of JOHN.

In an exchange of property in P. A. Co. Va. in 1739, between JOHN and EDWARD WARD, sons of JOHN, they are both spoken of as of P. A. Co. EDWARDS' wife was AMY, dau. of WM. CATHERILL and in 1746 a JOHN WARD of P. A. Co. had wife, MARY' and they appeared for JOHN WILLIS agst. JOHN SMITH. None of the witnesses to the several deeds available are the same as those who so often appear in the records of THOMAS and his son, ROBERT, but these negative evidences are not conclusive as to parentage of JOHN WARD.

One document - a deed from EDWARD KEELING of P. A. Co. to JOHN WARD for 150 acres for which WARD paid only 6 shillings may account for the name of EDWARD among JOHNS' sons. This deed dated 13 Mar. 1723 was signed by EDWARD KEELING and his wife ELIZABETH. It sounds like a gift made more binding by the 6 shillings payment. The witnesses were CHAS. SAYORS and HILL MOSELEY. (Deed Bk. 3 p. 553 P. A. Co.)

Whoever his antecedents, the lateness of his will and the fact that JOHN'S son was still spoken of as of Princess Ann Co. in 1739, pretty well eliminates the possibility that JOHN WARD of Tyrrell Co. N. C. was his son.

WARD - SMITH - LOYD

Because JOHN WARD IV) of W.B.E.R. in Norfolk Co. signed his name with the same sprawling "E" which was used by JOHN WARD of Tyrrell Co. N.C.; because the former sold his land holdings in Norfolk Co. in late 1728 and the latter received his first N.C. land, which was later a part of Tyrrell Co., from JAMES MURRAY in 1729 and because both of these JOHN WARDS had wives, ELIZABETH, are the primary and direct reasons for believing that JOHN WARD of Tyrrell was the former JOHN WARD IV) of W.B.E.R.

There are numerous other contributing circumstances to this belief:

1. After 1728 there is no further positive evidence of the residence of JOHN WARD IV) in W.B.E.R.
2. DAVID MURRAY is progenitor of the family of that name in Norfolk and DAVID WARD, son of JOHN and ELIZABETH WARD of Tyrrell, inherited his father's home place which included the tract of land which they had received from JAMES MURRAY in 1729.
3. JOHN EDWARDS, a name of more than one generation association with MURRAYS appears in the records of Norfolk Co. and JOHN EDWARD conveyed to JAMES MURRAY the tract of land in Bertie Co., at least part of which MURRAY conveyed to JOHN WARD, THOS. BRIDGMON and SAMUEL PRESTON (or PRESCOTT).

Overlapping records of Virginia and N.C. prove that, in this era, relatives of both JOHN WARD and ELIZABETH MURRAY were living in the neighborhood to which JOHN WARD removed in N.C. Some of these were GEORGE BECK' JAMES MACOY, JAMES and JOHN SMITH, the daus. of JOHN WAITE and JOHN EDWARDS who married ZILPHA BLOUNT, as well as the JOHN EDWARDS of the Bertie Co. deed.

Furthermore, a detailed search of those Va. counties which contributed most heavily to populating Northeastern N.C. has failed to bring to light another JOHN WARD, of his age and era, who could have been identified as one and the same as JOHN of Tyrrell Co. N.C.

These counties, Norfolk, Isle of Wight, Princess Ann and Nansemond, the latter of which lost its records contributed most heavily to the populating of the first inhabited area of the Province to the South because it was a simple matter of moving across an invisible colonial line which fact was not even always evident at the time.

Therefore, because the evidenee is that JOHN WARD IV) of W.B.E.R. was the son of JOHN WARD III), and his wife, ELIZABETH SMITH, the dau. of THOMAS SMITH I) and his wife, we will include, here, a brief genealogy of the SMITH family of early Norfolk Co. Va.

The first of this known line was JOHN SMITH, supposedly, the commonest name in the English language, so we are fortunate to be researching these SMITHS when the colony and the county were young and sparcely populated, there being not too many SMITHS or colonists of any name.

JOHN SMITH I) of Norfolk was evidently related to Capt. CORNELIUS LOYD of London and Norfolk Co. Va., who also acted for his brother ED. LOYD in 1651, to convey to THOS. WARD, of Little Creek in Lynhaven, a tract of land which was to be in his possession until his step-son, HENRY HAWKINS came of age.

Mr. CORNELIUS LOYD was 38 years of age in 1646, born 1608 so would have been about the same age as THOS. WARD I) who came first to the colonies in 1637. JOHN SMITH I) of Norfolk, who had grown children in 1654, was probably a few years older.

It is possible that one of the wives of THOS. WARD I) was related to the LOYDS, as was the wife of JOHN SMITH I) of Norfolk.

On 9 Feb. 1636, WM. TUCKER, MAURICE and GEO. THOMPSON, WM. HARRIS, THOS. DEACON, JAMES STONE and CORNELIUS LOYD of London, merchants, assigned to JEREMIAH BLACKMAN 8000 acres in Chas. City Co., commonly known by the name of Buckleys Hundred, due by deed of sale from the adventurers and company of Buckleys Hundred. (p. 53 "Cavaliers and Pioneers")

On 2 June 1635, CORNELIUS LOYD patented 800 acres in Eliz. City Co. (later Norfolk) on the south side of the Westernmost Branch of Elizabeth River, adjacent the WOODS on the North, southly on the river and eastly on Merchant's Creek and back to the north on Muddy Cr. (Ibid p. 50)

On 19 April 1648 JOHN SMITH received, by assignment, from CORNELIUS LOYD 200 acres in Lower New Norfolk Co. on Brown's Bay. (Cavaliers and Pioneers p. 172)

While Brown's Bay no longer appears on the maps of Norfolk Co. Va., no doubt it took its' name either from Capt. HENRY BROWN or THOMAS BROWN, both of whom lived on W.B.E.R. as proved by later Norfolk Co. records. (Brown's Creek was one of the boundaries of land belonging to Mr. THOS. HODGES dec'd. on W.B.E.R. 15 Nov. 1725.)

THOMAS BROWN also had an assignment from CORNELIUS LOYD. It was earlier than WARDS, was dated 7 Oct. 1646 and was for 240 acres. It lay in Norfolk Co. on the south side of Clark Cr. on a branch of Elizabeth River adjacent to his own land and the land of GEO. WHITE.

It can be noted that during the ten years since LOYD received his own patent, the vicinity has been settled to the extent that tracts of land are now identified as bordering on the property of specific persons, and creeks have been given definite names.

On 2 Nov. 1643, Capt. HENRY BROWN, one of the Council of State, received by grant, 2450 acres beginning at the 4 miles tree and adjoining land on which Widow FLUDD, lived, two thousand acres due by order of the court 12 Dec. 1634 and 450 acres by purchase in 1637 from the overseers of the last will and testament of JOHN SMITH, planter.

Since Capt. HENRY BROWN was an early resident of W.B.E.R. it is certainly possible that the JOHN SMITH from whose estate, BROWN bought the 450 acres was the father of JOHN SMITH I) who received in 1648 the 200 acre assignment from CORNELIUS LOYD which adjoined Brown's Bay.

Possibly the 2000 acres to Capt. HENRY BROWN, patented to him 12 Dec. 1634, was transferred to him from the estate of JOHN SMITH, deceased.

An item on p. 61 of "Cavaliers and Pioneers'. states that JOHN SMITH dec'd. before 14 July 1637, and his trustees, Capt. WM. PERRY and Capt. THOS. OSBORN sold 2250 acres beginning at the half-way tree, land granted him 12 Dec. 1634. (could be 2450 a.)

This court met in James City Co. and the land was described simply as being on the south side of the James River. While originally, what was later Norfolk Co., was a part of Eliz. City Co., in 1636 the south side of the James River became New Norfolk which in 1637 became Upper and Lower New Norfolk and five years later, Upper, was designated Nansemond Co.

However, there are other instances in which this designation, was not used for some years after that date. Evidently this land did fall in Nansemond Co. near or adjoining the western boundry of Norfolk for it does not appear in the records of the latter co. and neither does it appear in Isle of Wight land records.

Therefore, there is no proof that JOHN SMITH, who died before 14 July 1637, had children or was the father of JOHN SMITH I) of Norfolk Co.

That, however, is still a possibility and it would, indeed, be interesting and rewarding to know if JOHN SMITH of the 1637 estate was one and the same as one of that name who came to Va. in 1611 with Sir THOS. DALE on the ship, the "Starr," patent granted 26 Aug. 1633.

This land lay in "Warwicksqueake," which was later Isle of Wight Co. (Cavaliers & Pioneers) p. 17) but county boundries were not firmly fixed at that early date and it could have been in Nansemond Co..

JOHN SMITH who received the 200 acres grant on the W.B.E.R. was progenitor of most of the numerous SMITHS of that community for the next fifty or sixty years, before they began to migrate south into N.C.

The only other documents relating to him in Norfolk are recorded in Book C. page 92 and Book E. p. 20 and relate to a 480 tract of land, the former one recording the transfer of JOHN SMITH'S patent to THOMAS SMITH and the latter reviewing the first transaction and recording an assignment.

"I, THOMAS SMITH, of Elizabeth River in the Co. of Lower Norfolk, planter, send greetings -- whereas the assembly (of Va.) here on April 26, 1651 (or 2) decreed that all patents should be signed hereafter under the governor's hand -- Now know ye that I, RICHARD BENNETT, (Quaker governor during the Cromwell interlude in Eng.) by the authority of ye majestrates in England and the authority of the colony, accordingly give and grant unto JOHN SMITH 480 acres of land on ye Westernmost branch of Elizabeth River, beginning at ————Swomp and running along the line of THOS. SPARROW, unto the said JOHN SMITH, his heirs and assignees forever ——————.

And whereas ye said JOHN SMITH, for a certain consideration -- unto THOMAS SMITH, planter, did give grant and of —————— ye said 480 of ye said patton aforesaid mentioned rents ye said THOMAS SMITH to have and to hold and to possess and enjoy ye 480 a part and parcel to ye said THOMAS SMITH his heirs, assignees and administrators,

forever, now ye administrator of said JOHN SMITH, ye Capt. CORNELIUS LOYD did confirm same unto ye said, THOMAS SMITH, bearing date of ye 18 day of June 1654, and recorded in ye courts of Lower Norfolk, it doth and may now ever appear that ye said THOMAS SMITH for and in consideration -- paid by WILLIAM and JOHN GRANDBURY, planters, hath given, granted and sold unto the aforesaid WILLIAM and JOHN GRANDBURY 240 acres of ye above 480 acres dated Feb.16, 1666."

Wits: JOHN ROBERTS, THOMAS MARTIN, RALPH BEVALHURST.

The transfer from THOS. SMITH to the GRANDBURYS which repeats the information from book "C", is recorded in Book E p. 20 Norfolk Co. Records as is also the assignment of this same property by the GRANDBURYS to WILLIAM ELLIS. This latter instrument is dated 14 April 1667 and is witnessed by JOHN OKEHAM and RICHARD JONES.

JOHN SMITH evidently left no will as CORNELIUS LOYD was admt., but we have reconstructed his family from various records of Norfolk and adjoining counties. We feel certain that his wife was the sister of CORNELIUS LOYD but we do not know her name. It may have been DORCAS. Their children were:

1. THOMAS SMITH, who received from his father the 480 acre grant, and who met with an accidental death in 1683. His wife remains unidentified. On 18 Mar. 1684 JAMES WILLIAMS, who married ye relick of THOS. SMITH, petitions the court.
2. JOHN SMITH of either Nansemond or Norfolk Co. JOHN SMITH was named with THOMAS in the 1670 will of RICHARD BOWLING, as his friends, and in 1698 the will of THOS. DAVIS of I. of W. Co. leaves to his eldest son, THOS. DAVIS land adj. to JOHN SMITH in Upper Norfolk Co. PETER SMITH, of later Norfolk Co. identifies himself as son of JOHN whose will was dated 1692. This will, if filed in Norfolk, is lost as so many wills are.
3. The mother of WILLIAM and JOHN GRANDBURY who received assignment from THOS. SMITH I).
4. The mother of RICHARD POWELL, wife of WM. ELLIS in 1667, when he received assignment of 240 acres of land from the GRANDBURYS. Since RICHARD POWELL named his eldest dau. ELIZABETH and that was also the name of the wife of WILLIAM ELLIS we presume she was mother, not step-mother, of the POWELL children. Though she was married to POWELL from 1644 to 1658 we only know of her three sons RICHARD JR. JOHN, and WILLIAM POWELL SR. of Norfolk. ELIZABETH SMITH, daughter of JOHN Married (1) RICHARD POWELL SR.; m. (2) in 1658 WILLIAM ELLIS who died in 1670, m. (3) in 1671 JOHN FEREBEE. In 1658 WM. ELLIS was made admt. of estate of RICH. POWELL.

RICHARD POWELL, THOMAS SMITH and ANN SMITH all came to Va. as headrights of WM. STONE in 1635. This was probably the RICHARD POWELL, who married JOHN SMITH'S dau. before 1645, in which year his heir, RICHARD POWELL JR. was born, and his bro. and sister-in-law THOS. and ANN SMITH.

On Feb. 16, 1666 WM. ELLIS was ordered by the court to deliver to RICHARD POWELL what was coming to him from his father's estate.

If ELIZABETH SMITH was mother of RICHARD POWELL born 1645 she could not have been the mother of JAMES FEREBEE, JOHN FEREBEE'S youngest son born in 1693.

RICHARD POWELL and ELIZ. SMITH had RICHARD JR., JOHN and WM. POWELL the latter two receiving land from JOHN FEREBEE after his marriage to ELIZ. Both RICHARD JR. and his bro. JOHN married SUSAN CLEMENT dau. of WM. CLEMENT. By her RICHARD had RICHARD, JOHN, WILLIAM and ELIZ. POWELL. JOHN, the second husband, was father of LEMUEL, MARY, SUSAN, DORCAS, KATHERYN and SARAH POWELL. (Wills of WM. CLEMENT, JOHN POWELL and relick, SUSAN BRYAN, last wife of ROGER.)

Perhaps there were other children of JOHN SMITH I) but we do not know who they were although there are many possibilities.

Since it seems evident that CORNELIUS LOYD was related to JOHN SMITH I) of Norfolk Co. and was probably brother of his wife we will include a brief sketch of his activities in Va.

CORNELIUS LOYD of London and Va.

LOYD'S wife, was, ELIZABETH, who after his death returned to live with her brother in Ireland and soon died there. (Norfolk Court Records)

Evidently they were childless for no children are mentioned in the estate settlements and on 15 March 1654/5 Mr. EDWARD LOYD of Maryland, heir of his brother, Mr. CORNELIUS LOYD, dec'd., claimed and was awarded his brothers lands.

Since CORNELIUS LOYD was only 40 years old in 1648 when he assigned land to JOHN SMITH and others of the same era, it seems evident that the wives of these various grantees were his sisters not daus. of another marriage.

In his will dated 10 June 1649, EDWARD HODGE, who was probably of Modebury in England spoke of his friend Mr. CORNELIUS LOYD. (p. 4 Wills of Norfolk Co. Va.)

We have already seen that LOYD made assignments of land to JOHN SMITH I) and THOMAS BROWN of W.B.E.R., the first in 1648 and the latter in 1646.

Early in this chapter we saw that he, for his brother EDWARD WARD, in 1651 conveyed land on Little Cr. in

Norfolk to THOMAS WARD who was to have use of it only until HENRY HAWKINS came of age, which was 1665.

No doubt, WARD, was married to the mother of HAWKINS but we have thought that she was the daughter of JOHN HOLMES I) also of Md. at the time of his death in 1648. EDWARD LOYD was his executor. An ED. HOLMES was LOYD'S age.

Perhaps the mother of CORNELIUS ELLIS was a sister of CORNELIUS LOYD. If it followed that CORNELIUS was the brother of WILLIAM ELLIS then the assignment to him from the GRANDBURYS may have been in his own right, instead of that of his wife, ELIZABETH.

On 22 July 1645 CORNELIUS LOYD assigned 450 acres in Northampton Co. Va. to WM. JONES; to THOS. WRIGHT, 310 acres by assignment from LOYD 26 April 1647.

His last assignment was to Mr. EMPEROR for 200 acres in Lynnhaven Parish 29 Nov. 1654, shortly before his death the following March.

He made the following conveyances all in Norfolk Co., by deed: to RICHARD JONES Bk. B. p. 15; to ROBERT BOWERS et al Bk. B p. 81; (BOWERS was brother-in-law to Mr. THOS. HODGES), to Mr. JOHN PIPER et al Bk. B. p. 83; to RICHARD OWEN Bk. C. p. 111 and to Mr. THOS. LAMBERT Bk. C. p. 163.

In 1658, a THOS. LOYD appointed WM. WARD I) bro. of THOS. WARD of Little Creek his attorney.

Because of the many times DORCAS appears as the given name of female descendants of JOHN SMITH I), and his wife we believe that her name was DORCAS LOYD.

THOMAS WARD I) who received the assignment of 480 acres from JOHN WARD I) between 1651 and 1654 died an accidental death in 1683 for which on 16 June 1684 JAMES WILSON was questioned, but released. (p. 239 Norfolk Court Minutes 1676-1686) We do not know the name of his wife but we do know that she later married JAMES WILLIAMS before 18 March 1684/5 when WILLIAMS petitioned the court as having married the relick of THOS. SMITH (p. 272 Norfolk Co. Court Orders 1676-1686)

The family of THOS. SMITH I) of W.B.E.R. has been at least partially reconstructed from various records of Norfolk Co. Va.

1. THOMAS SMITH II) dec'd. 1693 had wife ALICE, who was probably ALICE RUSSELL and who married, after SMITHS decease, WILLIAM POWELL SR. THOMAS II) was made executor of his father's estate.
2. JAMES SMITH - On Nov. 17, 1684 THOMAS SMITH gives to brother JAMES SMITH, after mothers decease, 100 acres of land. (Wits: JOHN FEREBEE and JNO. NICHOLS) which was assigned by consent of SMITHS wife, MARY, to HENRY BOWLES on March 15, 1695 after the death of THOMAS SMITH II). W: ELEAZOR TART, MARY TART.

The executors of THOMAS SMITH II) made a final settlement to JAMES SMITH Sept. 15, 1704. They were JOHN WARD, JOHN SMITH, THOMAS SMITH and ISAAC SMITH. We believe that they were his brothers and bro-in-law, JOHN WARD. JAMES then assigned same to HENRY BOWLES, who m. the daughter of THOMAS SMITH II.

Shortly, thereafter, JAMES SMITH was conveyed land on ye south shore of Albermarle Sound in Chowan Co. N.C. by THOS. HAWKINS. This area was Albermarle Co. before it was cut up into Hyde and Tyrrell.
On 26 Jan. 1709/10, THOS. HAWKINS deeded to THOS. WILEY, a tract of land on the S. shore between JOHN SWAIN and Tarkill Branch, bounded by JAMES LONG and JAMES SMITH.

The will of JAMES SMITH of Beaufort Co. was dated 3 Sept. 1744 and probated March 1749 in Beaufort Co. JOHN and JAMES SMITH and JOHN WARD IV) each received land grants at Newburn in N.C., 22 Nov. 1744.

The grant to WARD was for 640 acres in Beaufort Co., lands adjoining Tyrrell Co., where his home place was located. The grants to JAMES and JOHN SMITH both fell in Tyrrell Co. though there are no documents in that county proving their residence for the simple reason, that JAMES SMITHS residence later fell in adjoining Beaufort Co. while that of JOHN SMITH was cut off in Hyde Co. when it was made at the same time as Tyrrell, 1712, from Bath.

In spite of the fact that the wife of JAMES was MARY in1703, when he conveyed his inheritance to HENRY BOWLES, son-in-law of his bro. THOMAS SMITH II), and in this will his wife was ANN, we believe that this is certainly the JAMES SMITH of the 1744 grant and possibly JAMES SMITH of the 1704 deed to BOWLES, bro-in-law to JOHN WARD IV), or more likely he was JAMES' son, JAMES JR. In his 1749 will, he names only his wife ANN, and makes her his executor.

Berkley Prect. N.C. later called Perquimans county covered lands south of Albermarle Sound which later fell in Tyrrell or Bath Co.

Those county records have the good fortune to contain birth, death and marriage records of the early Quakers of that era and among them we find those pertaining to a JAMES SMITH and his wife SUSANNAH or ANN. (RUSSELLS and BENNETTS of early Norfolk were Quakers, perhaps some WARDS too).

(1) THOMAS SMITH, son of JAMES and SUSANNAH, born 23 Dec. 1721;
(2) JAMES SMITH, son of JAMES and SUSANNAH, born 23 Feb. 1723/4;
(3) MICHAEL SMITH, son of JAMES and SUSANNAH, born 23 Aug. 1727;
(4) JOHN SMITH, son of JAMES and SUSANNAH, born 23 Jan. 1729.

While there are wills of JAMES SMITHS in Perquimans P. in 1733 and 1735, neither name wives and neither seem to have the sons of these records other than JAMES and JOHN.

It should be noted that the four sons of JAMES and SUSANNAH carry the names of the grandfather, JOHN SMITH I) of Norfolk, of his father THOMAS SMITH I) of Norfolk and beside JAMES JR., a MICHAEL SMITH even as JOHN WARD IV) of Norfolk and his wife ELIZ. SMITH had a son, MICHAEL.

Perhaps the double use of MICHAEL in these families is a clue to the name of the father-in-law of THOS. SMITH I).

3. JOHN SMITH also left Va. early for N.C. On 15 Nov. 1705, HENRY NEWMAN, who m. ye relick of JAMES SIMMONDS, setting forth that MARY SIMMONDS, was bound out to JOHN SMITH till age 18, SMITH about to leave the country. Pray she be left under Mother's care.

A deed from JOHN SMITH, son of HUMPHREY SMITH to HENRY PRICE dated 15 Jan. 1718 for 5 shillings part of 100 a. at the head of the S.B.E.R. (not far removed from W.B.E.R.) 50 acres adjoining WM. MILLER granted me by my Uncle JOHN SMITH and commonly called Mt. Pleasant.

Wits: JAMES CUMMINGS, JOSEPH PERRY, JOHN YOUNG

(Norfolk Co. Deed Bk. 10 p. 647)

On 19 July 1717, JOHN SMITH son of HUMPHREY received by deed from his Uncle JOHN SMITH and wife JANE' 100 acres being part of a grant of 300 a. to me by HUGH CAMPBELL and commonly called Mt. Pleasant.

Wits: WM. MILLER, HENRY PRICE, ANDREW SMITH

This latter deed pre-dates the former and of course explains it and perhaps hints that the wife of THOMAS SMITH I) was related to CAMPBELL.

In Hyde Co. N.C. the will of a JOHN AVERY whose wife was JANE was probated. It was dated 27 Oct. 1740 and names, among many legatees, children of JOHN SMITH – MARTHA SMITH, AGNES SLADE, THOMAS, WILLIAM, SAMUEL, ELIZABETH and DORCAS SMITH, all children of JOHN SMITH. Other devisees were DORCAS WORDLEY, JAMES AVERY, GILBERT MACKNARY, KESIAH HADLEY, ELIZABETH (dtr. of URIAH COLLINS), FOSTER JARVIS, LYDIA CARTWRIGHT and LYDIA wife of BENJ. RUSSELL. (Grimes Wills of N.C. p. 13)

A JOHN SMITH of Hyde Co. who had wife, MARY, made his will 17 Dec. 1748 which was probated 7 Mar. 1748/49. His children names partially agree with those named in AVERYS will. His sons were THOMAS, WILLIAM, JAMES, BENJ. JOHN and SAMUEL SMTIH; daughters were MARTHA and ELIZABETH SMITH.

Wits: JONATHAN and CARTHERINE JASPER, URIAH COLLINS.

If JOHN SMITH was not deceased in 1740 when AVERY wrote his will of course his wife, JANE, was not SMITHS relick. However, it is probable that JOHN SMITH of the 1748 will who had wife, MARY, was the son of JOHN SR., dec'd and his wife, JANE, who was now wife of AVERY, who named her grandchildren in his will.

4. HUMPHREY SMITH, whose son JOHN received from his Uncle JOHN SMITH and wife JANE, 100 acres of land in 1717. This JOHN SMITH of HUMPHREY who had wife SUSANNAH or ANN moved to N.C. in 1717, where they took up a substantial amount of land before returning to Norfolk Co. in 1721, according to a deed from WILLIS MILLER to Mr. JOHN SMITH of Pamplico recorded on page 155 of Norfolk Co. Records 1719-1732.

   HUMPHREY SMITH also had son HUMPHREY JR. grown in 1693.

   JOHN SMITH son of HUMPHREY, left his will dated 12 Dec. 1733 and named his children HUMPHREY, JOHN, WILLIAM, LEVI, SIMON, JANE and RACHEL. He also named grandsons: JOHN SMITH, MATT. GODFREY, WM. SMITH, WILLIS MILLER, and ABREHAM ETHEREDGE. Records of Norfolk Co. Va. and Craven Co. N.C. both make references to the land granted to JOHN SMITH, son of HUMPHREY on the Neuse River in Craven Co. made from Bath Co. in 1712, and name many of his children mentioned in this will.
5. ISAACS SMITH of Accomack Co. Va. One of the executors of RICHARD II.
6. ELIZABETH WARD, wife of JOHN WARD III), who was son of JOHN WARD II), and who has featured in the conveyances herein discussed and to whom JAMES SMITH made acknowledgement of final settlement to JOHN WARD, THOMAS SMITH, JOHN SMITH and ICACKS SMITH in 1703 for his part of his fathers estate, from his bro. THOS. SMITH II.

   JOHN WARD IV), son of JOHN and ELIZABETH SMITH joined his uncles and cousins of the SMITH connection in Tyrrell Co. N.C. in 1729. His ancestry and descendants are recorded in this WARD Chapter.
7. The wife or mother of HENRY PRICE. We have seen that JOHN SMITH, son of HUMPHREY, transferred the 100 acres he received from his Uncle JOHN SMITH for a nominal sum to HENRY PRICE. In 1728 when JOHN WARD sold his holdings in Norfolk Co. Va., he conveyed them to RICHARD and WILLIAM PRICE, evidently sons of HENRY PRICE. Other conveyances to or from SMITHS of this connection to HENRY or other PRICES add weight to this rather meager evidence.
8. SUSAN SMITH. On April 10, 1670 WM. ANDREWS of W.B.E.R. gave a brown heifer to SUSAN SMITH,

probably dtr. of THOMAS SMITH I) or THOMAS II. WILLIAM ANDREWS was married to the relick of JOHN OSBORNE which reminds us that one of the trustees of the JOHN SMITH who died before 14 July 1637 was Capt. THOS. OSBORNE. This is additional evidence that JOHN SMITH I) of Norfolk could reasonably have been son of the JOHN SMITH of 12 Dec. 1634 patent of 2450 acres. If this be a fact and the entire tract was transferred to Capt. HENRY BROWN, it is easy to believe that SMITHS widow may have married BROWN.

Perhaps SUSAN is the daughter of THOS. SMITH who married PRICE.

We have already reviewed in this Section of Chapter III, the documents pertaining to JOHN WARD III) of W.B.E.R. who married about 1680-85 ELIZABETH, the daughter of THOMAS SMITH. Because of carefully estimated date of births in the WARD and SMITH families, we believe that she was the daughter of THOMAS SMITH I) rather than THOMAS SMITH II).

If this is a fact, the executors of THOS. SMITH II) were probably his brother and bro-in-law, rather than his sons, at least we believe that JOHN WARD III) was his bro-in-law.

As far as we know, ALICE RUSSELL was the only wife of THOMAS SMITH II) of W.B.E.R. An ALICE RUSSELL was transported to Va. 25 Nov. 1653 by JOHN KING. THOMAS SMITH II) must have first married about 1660 and could have married this ALICE RUSSELL but there is no proof of this supposition.

On 15 July 1693, ALICE SMITH was granted probate on the will of her husband, THOS. SMITH II. Unfortunately, this will, like the 1692 will of his brother, JOHN SMITH, is lost. (Bk. 5 p. 293)

On 18 Mar. 1695, HENRY BOWLES, who married one of the orphans of THOMAS SMITH, vs. WM. POWELL SR. who married ye admx. of SMITH to pay BOWLES for Child's portion. (Court Records)

14 May 1696 WM. POWELL vs. THOS. RUSSELL for cows, calves and sheep due by obligation.

THOS. RUSSELL was recently of the Parish of Kenton in Devon, Eng., but we believe that he and his father had previously resided in Va. and later he lived in Princess Ann Co. Va. where he died and left a will dated 13 Jan. 1697/8. He named his sons OTHO, DANIEL, EDWARD, and THOMAS RUSSELL. An earlier THOS. RUSSELL deceased about 1684 in Norfolk Co.

On 1 April 1701, OTHO RUSSELL, son of THOS. II), formerly of Parish Kenton, Devon England conveyed land in P. A. Co. to RICHARD SMITH. (P. A. Co. Bk. I p. 487)

THOS. RUSSELL II), mentions no daus. in his will but grantor deed in Norfolk indicate that he was providing either for his daughters or his sister by that means:

10 Nov. 1686, THOS. RUSSELL of Kenton in Eng. to JOHN ROBERTS, plantation on the east side of W.B.E.R., 350 acres ½ of a patent of 10 Oct. ———, the other half of 688 a. hath been given and assigned to THOS. SMITH. (Norfolk Co. Records Bk. 5 p. 9)

Before Sept. 18, 1690 he had returned to Va. and for 2500 lbs. of tobo. conveyed to JOEL MARTIN of S.B.E.R., 200 acres part of a patent of 450 acres. (Norfolk Co. Bk. 5 p. 91)

On the same day, RUSSELL assigned to THOS. ELIFE his rights and interest in the 200 acres to JOEL MARTIN (Ibid).

From the foregoing deeds we deduct that the wives of JOHN ROBERTS and THOMAS SMITH II) were either daughters or sisters of RUSSELL. ROBERT'S wife was LYDIA.

Other records indicate that JOEL MARTIN and perhaps ELIFE married daughters of THOS. SMITH II) and his wife, ALICE RUSSELL.

The will of THOS. BOWLES, son of HENRY and grandson of THOS. SMITH II) throws additional light on he family of the latter.

HENRY BOWLES died in 1711 and his will was probated in Nansemond Co. On 19 Dec. 1716, JOHN BOWLES, heir of HENRY BOWLES, late of Norfolk Co. for the love and good will I bear to my loving brother, THOMAS BOWLES conveyed 100 a. Wits: SAMPSON POWER, WM. HODGES. THOS. SCOTT. (Bk. 9 p. 576 Norfolk Co. Deed)

On 17 July 1717 the estate of HENRY BOWLES was divided between his sons, THOS. and JOHN BOWLES. (Bk. 10 p. 613)

The will of THOS. BOWLES is recorded on p. 77 of Bk. 10 Norfolk Co. Va. It was dated 4 Mar. 1718, proved 17 July 1719.

He had never married and his devisors were his various cousins:

To cousin, THOS. SMITH, 100 a. adj. MARY SMITH and WILLIAM ELLIS JR.;

Cousins, JOHN and LEMUEL SMITH;

Cousin LEMUEL POWELL, son of JOHN POWELL 100 acres on S.B.E.R. adj. THOS. TUCKERS land;

AUNT MARY SMITH;

Cousin JOHN SMITH plantation I now live on;

Cousin DORCAS BAYLISS, curtains;

Loving cousins ANN, DORCAS and DIANE now of Pamphico (N.C.).

Wits: SAMPSON POWERS, FRAN. and WM. SIEGRAVES.

Loving cousins ANN, DORCAS and DIANE of Pamphico N.C. were the daughters of JOHN WAITE JR. who was ½ brother of HENRY BOWLES to whom he deeded, 17 Nov. 1790, 350 acres from his father's estate speaking of his brother with love and affection and of himself as the only son and heir of his father, JOHN BOWLES. (Deeds of Norfolk Co. 1695-1703 p. 70) HENRY had an only sister, JUDITH, who was probably the mother of MATHEW SPIVEY and his sister, ANN, step-children of JOHN NICHOLS of W.B.E.R., all named in his 1696 will.

The mother of HENRY and JUDITH BOWLES and their half-brother, JOHN WAITE JR. was ANN BROWN, dau. of THOMAS BROWN who received 240 acres in 1646, by assignment, from CORNELIUS LOYD.

Tragedy really struck this family in 1670

In that year ANN BROWN BOWLES WAITE lost her second husband, JOHN WAITE SR. and her brothers THOS. BROWN, JOHN BROWN and HENRY BROWN.

In the will of JOHN BROWN dated 2/15/1670, he named his bros. and sisters: THOMAS, CHRISTOPHER, HENRY and WILLIAM BROWN; ANN WAITE and MARY BROWN. (Page 85 Wills of Norfolk Co.)

The 1670 estate settlement of JOHN WAITE was signed by ANN WAITE and mentions HENRY and JUDITH, orphans of JOHN BOWLES.

On 16 May 1670, HENRY BROWN of Western Branch of Eliz. R. made his will. This will dated just two months later than that of his brother JOHN, named his sister, ANN SOUTHERLAND, his two brothers WILLIAM and CHRISTOPHER and his sister MARY. In this two months time, ANN WAITE had been widowed and had married ––––– SOUTHERLAND. (p. 87 Will of Norfolk Co.)

On 13 Sept. 1670, WM. BERKELEY granted to ANN BROWN (another), relick of THOS. BROWN, permission to sell property. This was THOMAS JR. the brother of JOHN and the other heirs of THOS. BROWN SR. who was probably son or brother of Col. HENRY BROWN, Counsel of State of the 2450 a. assignment in 1637 from the estate of JOHN SMITH.

ANN SOUTHERLAND, relick of both JOHN BOWLES and JOHN WAITE SR., was accidently shot and killed by ROBERT SPRING.

ANN, the relick of THOS. BROWN JR. married before 6 Feb. 1671 JAMES BROWN not named as part of this family. In 1681 she was the wife of WM. DAYNES, one of the justices. Later ABE. BRUCE m. her or her daughter, ANN.

ANN, DORCAS and DIANE, loving cousins of THOS. BOWLES, in 1719, were granddaughters of ANN BROWN BOWLES, WAITE SOUTHLAND, as THOS. BOWLES was grandson.

On 16 Nov. 1725, THOS. BALTERS (BUTLER?) and DORCAS his wife, and DIANE WAIT, all of Bath Co. in the Province of N.C., the said DORCUS BALTERS and DIANA WAIT being heirs of our father Mr. JOHN WAIT dec'd., to SAMPSON POWERS for L31 Va. money, two traets for 116 a. and 66 acres on the West side of W.B.E.R. on WARD'S Stick Branch.

The relick of JOHN WAITE JR. m. WM. CORDING.

In 1714 a DIANE WAITE was the wife of JOHN STAFFORD. We believe that before 1709 she had been the wife of JOHN POWELL and that her son, LEMUEL POWELL, was the cousin of THOS. BOWLES will. This DIANE WAITE was the sister of JOHN WAITE JR. and Aunt of THOS. BOWLES.

On 9 Jan. 1709, the estate of JOHN POWELL, late of Norfolk Co. was appraised by WM. BROWN, ABREHAM BRUCE, JOHN STAFFORD.

All of these people, BROWNS, BOWLES and WAITE are LOYD descendants as well as all of the JOHN SMITH connection. The name DORCAS runs through-out both connections and leads us to believe that it was a LOYD name.

The SMITHS of the THOMAS BOWLES will are the family of JOHN SMITH, son of THOS. II). The definite identification of this family is helpful in identifying the wife of JOEL MARTIN as a member of same family.

We have previewed these assorted documents in order to be able to accurately place the children of THOS. SMITH II) and his wife ALICE RUSSELL in their proper setting.

The children of THOMAS SMITH II) of W.B.E.R. and his wife, ALICE RUSSELL (or wives) were:

1. DORCUS, the wife of THOMAS SCOTT SR. of P. A. Co. Va. In his will dated 5 Aug. 1706, THOS. SCOTT names his loving wife, DORCOOSE. His sons DAVID and THOMAS SCOTT and his daughter MARGARET. (Bk. I P. A. Co. p. 464)
   DAVID SCOTT, married FAITH SMITH dtr. of RICHARD (son of PETER, son of JOHN of 1692 will) and had JOHN, DAVID, RICHARD, THOS., FRANCES, MARGARET and MARY SCOTT before his death.
   FAITH SCOTT signed his inventory 5 July 1727 and was a widow later that year when the estate of her father RICHARD SMITH and her mother FAITH SMITH was divided. FAITH SCOTT m. (2) JOHN WILLIAMS. Her sister MARTHA SMITH was wife of THOS. SCOTT JR. A sister, GRACE, was widow of ––––– MURRAY.
2. THOMAS SMITH who made his will in Albermarle Co. or Precc. N.C. dated Nov. 1706. His devisor was MARGARET EULTER dau. of DORCAS and we believe that MARGARET was the former MARGARET SCOTT dau. of THOS. SCOTT SR. and his wife, DORCAS.

JAMES WARD of Chowan Co. was either executor or legatee of this THOS. SMITH. (Wills of N.C. - Grimes p. 347)

3. The wife of HENRY BOWLES, father of THOMAS BOWLES of the 1719 will. We have discussed fully the documents pertaining to the relationship.
4. JOHN SMITH, whose children are devisees of the THOS. BOWLES will. SMITH'S wife as MARY and she is also named in the will of THOS. BOWLES. They are the couple who assigned 200 acres of their patent dated 20 Oct. 1691 to JOEL MARTIN. Both left wills, naming their sons, cousins of THOS. BOWLES, son of HENRY. JOHN'S will dated Oct. 21, 1710, p. 20 April 1711 was witnessed by ELEAZOR TART, THOS. SMITH SR., WM. ELLIS and THOS. WARD. (Bk. O. p. 29)
   MARY remained a widow until her death in 1734. Her will was wits. by JOHN WARD and JOHN TART. (Bk. 12 p. 80 Norfolk Records) According to MARY'S will, their son JOHN SMITH had a son of the same name. She does not mention LEMUEL and a derth of records in his name in Norfolk may mean that he died without issue. On 15 Jan. 1723, THOS. SMITH and his wife ELIZ. of Norfolk sold to WM. IVES for 5 shilling 100 acres already in his possession said land devised to THOS. SMITH by the LWT of JOHN SMITH SR. (Norfolk Co. Bk. F p. 89)
5. RICHARD SMITH who married ELLINOR, relick of STEPHEN MARKS in 1671, and later lived in P. A. We know that STEPHEN MARKS lived W.B.E.R. because on 6 Feb. 1671 ANN BROWN and her second husband, JAMES BROWN, sold him a cow.
   In 1674, WM. DAYNES, (representing W.B.E.R.) on the court ordered RICHARD SMITH who m. the relick of STEPHENS MARKS to next court. (Norfolk Co. Records of Court)
   In 1701 after the death of THOS. RUSSELL, his son, OTHO, conveyed land to RICHARD SMITH. P. A. Co. Records Vol. I p. 487.
   On 15 Sept. 1708, RICHARD SMITH, ship carpenter vs. JOHN WILLIAMS of Tanners Cr. On page 116 of P. A. Co. Records Vol. III, RICHARD SMITH had son THOS. SMITH, about 1715.
6. The wife of JOEL MARTIN. Because of information in a deed of conveyance from JOEL MARTIN to LEMUEL WILSON we believe that his wife was dau. of THOS. SMITH II).
   JOEL MARTIN received by assignment from JOHN SMITH and his wife MARY, 200 acres patented to SMITH on Oct. 20, 1691. On March 16, 1702, JOEL MARTIN sold a tract of land on the Southern Branch of Eliz. River to Capt. LEMUEL WILSON. This tract contained all of the 200 acres he received from JOHN SMITH, 20 acres of a tract purchased by MARTIN from THOMAS RUSSELL and 50 acres of a plantation where THOMAS MARTIN lives. THOMAS, probably the Uncle of JOEL, was one of the testators of the 1666 decd of THOMAS SMITH I) to the GRANDBURYS.
   JOEL MARTIN moved with his family to Pamphico in North Carolina not long after this 1702 deed to WILSON. Norfolk records prove the he hired a sloop to make the move by water. It is certainly possible that the wife of MARTIN was dau. of THOMAS SMITH II).
7. The wife of THOS. ELIFE. We have seen that on 18 Sept. 1690, the same day on which he made the assignment of 200 acres to JOEL MARTIN, RUSSELL provided that MARTIN divide this assignment with THOS. ELIFE.

CHAPTER IV

ADENSTONE - ROGERS GENERATIONS

I. JOHN and JOANE ADENSTONE.
and
JOHN ROGERS b. 1617; wife unknown; d. 1676.

II. JOHN ROGERS and AGNES ADENSTONE.

III. ADENSTONE ROGERS and ------ .

IV. WM. ADUSTON ROGERS and ------ .

V. JOHN A. ROGERS and ELIZABETH BERNARD.

VI. WILLIAM A. ROGERS and (1) ROSE POWELL
(2) SARAH MORGAN.

VII. SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and wives,
(1) MARY WHITE,
(2) LUCINDA HARDY,
(3) MARY EVELYN EVANS.

VIII, IX, X, XI, XII
THE TEXAS GENERATIONS.

CHAPTER IV
ADENSTONE - ROGERS

The ADENSTONE-ROGERS line, which we shall be discussing in this chapter is descended from the first Protestant Martyr of England, JOHN ROGERS.

Among the early cavaliers and pioneers mentioned in these chapters are many who carried a first name "ROGER" - ROGER WARD, ROGER HODGES, ROGER ADELSTONE, etc., ROGERS, burned at the stake Feb. 4, 1555, was probably the inspiration for all of these first names.

Twice in the English wills of the foreparents of the Virginia WARDS of this relationship the Rev. JOHN ROGERS, famous preacher of Dedham was mentioned. In a volume called "Americans of Royal Birth," by BROWNING, it is stated that "JOHN ROGERS, Prebendary of St. Paul, vicar of St. Sepulchre - the Protestant martyr in Queen MARY'S reign -- had among other children, a son who was the father of the Rev. JOHN ROGERS, for many years a famous preacher of Dedham, Essex, who died 1636 and who was the father of Rev. NATHANIEL ROGERS b. 1598 d. 1655 who removed with his family in 1636 to New England and settled at Ipswich."

NATHANIEL was the father of JOHN ROGERS, fifth president of Harvard College in 1676, who was born in England in 1630 and died in 1684." (p. 74)

The will of JOHN ROGERS, minister of God's word in Dedham, was d. 14 Oct. 1636 proved 20 Feb. 1636/7.

He named his wife DOROTHY and his children as follows: Eldest son JOHN dec'd. and my grandchild, his son, JOHN; sons NATHANIEL, SAMUEL and DANIEL ROGERS; son ANGER'S children, son PECK'S children, dau. MARTHA'S children, to HANNA, SARA and MARKE (unidentified). Others named were Sister GAROOD and her children, Cousin WEBB of Colchester and her son JOHN, to cousin ELIZABETH ROGERS and her brother the saddler.

Remainder to all my children in "Old England." Wits: RICHARD BACKLER, SAM'L. SHERMAN. (P. 212 "Gleanings in England" by Waters.)

We do not know which of the children of JOHN ROGERS the preacher of Dedham were not in "Old England" but this last statement in his will insinuates that some were not and since NATHANIEL is not mentioned in the singular as residing in America, we believe that there were others.

On 21 August 1635, JOHN ROGERS, THOS. ROGERS, age 16; and RICHARD DIXON, were transported to Va. on the George. ("Persons of Quality" p. 125) JOHN ROGERS was 18.

A generation later when JOHN ADENSTONE wrote his will he named his son-in-law JOHN ROGERS, husband of AGNES, and his orphaned grandchildren RICHARD DICSON, ELIZABETH and AGNES DICSON.

Early birth recorded in the Register of Abingdon Parish-Gloucester Co. Va. include those of RICHARD, ELIZABETH and AGNES DIXON, children of RICHARD and ANN DIXON, and also the older children of JOHN and AGNES ROGERS.

At one time, at least part of York Co., was included in Bruton Parish of which the Bruton Church in Williamsburg was seat. Among the deaths recorded in that Parish register are those of JOHN ROGERS SR. dec'd., 7 April 1676, GILES ROGERS dec'd., 9 Nov. 1676 and THOS ROGERS buried 8 Mar. 1686.

We know that the latter of this trio of ROGERS was of York Co. because on 12 Nov. 1688 ANN ROGERS of Bruton Parish, York Co. gives and makes over to her children THOS. ROGERS, ELIZABETH ROGERS and ANN ROGERS, each a heifer and increase. Witness: ROBERT BOOTH, JOHN DENNETT.

There is no question but this was the widow of THOS. ROGERS, who was buried in Bruton Parish 8 March 1686 and there is little question that JOHN ROGERS SR., who died 7 April 1676 was also of York Co. and was the father of JOHN ROGERS JR. who married AGNES, the daughter JOHN ADENSTONE, about 1675. THOMAS died a very young man with three small children and was also likely the son of JOHN ROGERS SR. and perhaps GILES, whose lineage to JOHN ROGERS the martyr has been established was also a son of JOHN ROGERS SR. of Bruton Parish dec'd. in 1676. We feel sure he was a kinsman.

In Accomack and Northumberland Cos. Va. there are very early JOHN ROGERS of this same era as JOHN ROGERS SR. whose death is recorded in Bruton Parish. Both of them had sons JOHN and both of them left wills 1675-1680. These wills and other documents of these counties, prove conclusively that neither son JOHN, could have been JOHN ROGERS who m. AGNES ADENSTONE and who later lived in York.

YORK COUNTY RECORDS

Page 199 Nov. Court 1698, York Co. Va.

JOHN ROGERS action of Trespass agst. JOHN WILLING and THOMAS BELL ----- Judgment is granted in favor of Plaintiff. This is JOHN ROGERS son of JOHN SR. of Bruton Parish now married to AGNES ADENSTONE and THOS. ROGERS is the son of THOS. ROGERS dec'd. 1686.

THOMAS ROGERS summoned as Evidence for Mr. JOHN ROGERS in suit against JOHN WILLING and THOMAS BELL and is paid 40 pounds of tobacco for one days attendance.

Page 179 Nov. Court 1708. York Co. Records 1706-1710

JOSEPH CHERMESON granted Administration on the Estate of THOMAS ROGERS dec'd. SARAH ROGERS, widow of THOMAS, petitions Court for a bed, dishes, spoons, pott etc. for her use which are delivered to her by JOSEPH CHERMESON.

Page 218 May 24, 1709

JOSEPH CHERMESON, Admrs. of the Estate of THOMAS ROGERS dec'd, having returned and made oath to the Inventory and Appraisement of the said Estate at his motion it was admitted to record.

Ordered that the Sheriff of this County Summon SARAH ROGERS widow of THOMAS ROGERS dec'd to appear and make oath to the Inventory of her husband's Estate and the Sheriff to make return hereof.

Page 233 May 24, 1709

The Inventory of THOMAS ROGERS dec'd bearing date the 24th of March 1708 made by JAMES HUBARD RICHARD KENDALL & HENRY GILBART as brought before them by JOSEPH CHERMESON Admrs.

At a Court held for Yorke County June 24, 1709 SARAH ROGERS Relict of THOMAS ROGERS dec'd made oath to the within Inventory & Appraisement of the said ROGERS' Estate. It was admitted to Record.

Some of the descendants of NATHANIEL ROGERS of Mass. and his son, fifth president of Harvard College, moved to Va.

According to the Bible Records in the Family Bible of HARVEY ROGERS of Paris Ky. in 1932, NATHANIEL ROGERS, the son of THOMAS ROGERS and ELIZ. ANNE CARR was born 25 July 1755 in the state of Va. He was the son of THOS. ROGERS of Charlotte Co. Va. and was a great-grandson of JOHN ROGERS fifth President of Harvard College, descendant of the Martyr and of JOHN ROGERS of Dedham, who was no farther removed from the martyr, than his grandson.

However, the THOMAS of Charlotte Co. Va. was not a fore-parent of JOHN, who married AGNES ADENSTONE 1675, but he probably was a younger relative, of a future generation.

CORNELIA WARD PARFIT., a great-granddaughter of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his first wife, MARY WHITE, stoutly maintained that her grandfather, the said SAMUEL ROGERS, stated that he was descended from JOHN ROGERS, the martyr.

Before we seek to discredit this statement let us ask ourselves how ROGERS born in Va. but an early immigrant to Texas in his twentieth year with only a meager education and that in a Latin school, would have known of JOHN ROGERS the Martyr unless by family tradition.

The exact wording of CORNELIA PARFIT'S affidavit is as follows:

THE STATE OF TEXAS,
COUNTY OF KERR

I, CORNELIA WARD PARFIT, born April 22, 1879, great granddaughter of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, born in Gloucester County, Virginia, June 18, 1810, and died in Jackson County, Texas, February 13, 1892, make the following statements:

My grandmother was his eldest daughter, CATHERINE ROGERS, child of his first wife MARY WHITE. My mother was his granddaughter, FRANCES MARY EVANS, the daughter of CATHERINE and her second husband, ALFRED BURTON EVANS.

I well remember my great-grandfather, SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, and cherish the things he told me. Among these statements was one which he made to my mother in my presence concerning the descent of the family from JOHN ROGERS, the first Protestant martyr in England.

He said, "There should always be a JOHN ROGERS in each generation, for we are descended from JOHN ROGERS the Martyr."

My great grandfather had followed this established precedent by naming his second son, JOHN ROGERS.

Signed: CORNELIA WARD PARFIT

SWORN and Subscribed to before me, the undersigned Notary Public, this the 29th day of September, A.D. 1958.

Signed: ETHEL WILLIAMS
Notary Public, Kerr County, Texas

According to Encyclopedia Britannica Vol. 19 - R - p. 385, "JOHN ROGERS born 1500 died 1555 born at Aston near Birmingham, was educated at Pembroke Hall-Cambridge where he graduated B.A. in 1526. Six years later he was rector of Holy Trinity Queenshcights, London and in 1534 he went to Antwerp, Holland as Chaplain to the English merchants.

Here he met WILLIAM TYNDALE, under whose influence, he abandoned the Catholic faith and married an Antwerp Lady. After TYNDALE'S death, ROGER'S pushed on with his English version of the Old Testament, which he used up to Chronicles II employing Convendale's translation for the rest.

TYNDALE'S New Testament (in English and the reason for his resident in Protestant Holland) had been published in 1526. The entire Bible was put out by ROGERS under the psuedonym THOS. MATTHEW in 1537.

ROGERS had little to do with the translation but contributed valuable preface and marginal notes.

His work was largely used by those who prepared "The Great Bible" in 1539-40, out of which came in turn "The Bishops Bible," 1586, and the "King James Version in 1611."

JOHN ROGERS, the Martyr, after rejecting the Catholic Priesthood, married about 1537, ADRIANA PRATT or de WEYDEN of Holland and had three daughters and seven sons - DANIEL, JOHN, AMBROSE, SAMUEL, PHILIP, BERNARD and AUGUSTINE. "Dictionary of National Biography" (English).

ROGER BABSON, recently nationally known economist, claimed to have been a descendant of the Martyr through a grandson, THOS. ROGERS, a signer of the Mayflower Compact.

In a note from him to the compiler he stated, "Now to answer your question -

"I have spent a large amount of money and time trying to find the "missing link" to which you refer but have failed. We conclude that the wife took her children underground for a generation or so to keep them from persecution. You, however, have enough facts to enable you to claim direct descent."

Mr. BABSON and associates overestimate the time necessary for hiding from persecution in England.

The reign of MARY, first daughter of HENRY VIII), who was Catholic, was very brief, less than five years, and was followed by that of ELIZABETH I) of England who for personal reasons embraced the Protestant faith of her father who was also HENRY VIII).

However, ROGERS wife, being Dutch, no doubt did return to her native Holland, if that were possible. According to ROGERS own testimony she was still having trouble with the English language during his imprisonment having only been in England since 1548, and busy with babies.

From Holland, England, or elsewhere, several of the descendants of these seven sons of the Martyr found their way to the colonies in North America and research done by others has been more rewarding than that of Mr. BABSON, at least in it's implications.

Among those who have claimed and proved this lineage are NATHANIEL ROGERS of Mass. and GILES and MARKE ROGERS of Va.

We of the ADENSTONE-ROGERS branch also claim this heritage and thrill at the example of this ancestor who was true to his faith, who "in losing his life, found it."

JOHN ROGERS - Martyr

JOHN ROGERS the Martyr, returned to England in 1548, during the brief reign of EDWARD, son of HENRY VIII. On the ascention of MARY (Catholic daughter of HENRY VIII) ROGERS preached at St. Paul's Cross commending the true doctrine taught in King Edward's day and warned his hearers against pestilent Popery, idolatry, and superstition.

Ten days later, Aug. 16, 1553, he was bidden to keep within his own house. In January 1554, BONNER the new Bishop of London sent him to Newgate prison where he was imprisoned for over a year.

On Jan. 28th and 29th, 1555 he came before the commission appointed by Cardinal POLE and was sentenced to death by GARDINER for heretically denying the Christian Character of the Church of Rome and the real sacraments. He met his death on 4th of Feb. 1555 at Smithfield.

He was the first Protestant martyr of MARY'S reign and his friend Bradford wrote that he broke the ice valiently.

Ref. - Vol. 19 p/395, Encyclopedia Britannica

For the following account of the trial and death of JOHN ROGERS, an ancient book "Martyrs" was used as reference: "Martyrs," written in the 16th Century by JOHN FOX, a Contemporary of JOHN ROGERS, was revised in the next generation by the son of the author, GEORGE FOX, from which edition, this is condensed.

This excerpt is given largely in the words of JOHN ROGERS himself as each night after a hearing he went to his prison cell and wrote an exact account of what was said and done in court that day.

One or two of the long discourses were shortened or left out and the arrangement of a few of the sentences was changed but not the wording. Otherwise it is an exact quotation from "Martyrs."

ROGERS wrote his account of these proceedings because after the first day of preliminary hearing, the public was excluded from his trial.

The Examination and answers of JOHN ROGERS made to the Lord Chancellor and to the rest of the Council Jan. 27, 1555:

Lord Chancellor GARDINER to ROGERS:

"How say you? Are you content to unite and knit yourself to the faith of the Catholic Church with us, in the state in which it is now in England?"

ROGERS: "The Catholic Church I never did nor will dissent from."

L. C. GARDINER: "Nay, but I speak of the state of the Catholic Church in that way in which we stand now, having received the pope as supreme head."

ROGERS: "I know no other head, but Christ of his Catholic Church, neither will I acknowledge the Bishop of

Rome to have any more authority than any other bishop hath by the word of God and by the doctrine of the old and pure Catholic church four hundred years after Christ."

- - - - L. C. GARDINER: "Make us a direct answer whether thou wilt be one of this Catholic Church or not, with us in the state in which we now are in."

ROGERS: "My Lord, I cannot believe that you yourselves think in your hearts that he (the pope of Rome) is supreme head in forgivness of sins, seeing you and all the Bishops of the realm have now for twenty years preached and some of you written to the contrary; and the parliment has so long condecended to it" (and there he interrupted me).

L. C. GARDINER: "Parliament was with great cruelty forced to abolish and put away the primacy of the Pope - - - . If thou wilt not receive the Bishop of Rome to be the supreme head of the Catholic Church, then thou shall never have the mercy (pardon) of the Queen."

Then he bade me tell him whether I would enter into one church.

ROGERS: "I will find this first in the scriptures and see it tried by that; before I receive him to be the supreme head."

WORCESTER: "Why? Do you not know what is in your creed? 'I believe in the holy Catholic Church'?"

ROGERS: "I find not the Bishop of Rome there (in the creed). For Catholic signifies not Romish Church; it signifies the consent of all true teaching churches of all time and all ages: But how shall the Bishop of Rome's church be one of them, who teaches so many doctrines that are plainly and directly against the word of God. Can that Bishop be the true head of the Catholic Church who does so? That is not possible!"

L. C. GARDINER: "Show me one - - let me hear one."

ROGERS refers here to scriptures in a long and interesting discourse.

L. C. GARDINER: "No! No! Thou can'st prove nothing by the scriptures. The scripture is dead. It must have a living exponent."

ROGERS: "No, the scripture is alive - but let me go forward with my purpose" (continue his argument.)

Interruptions from all sides.

Sir RICHARD SOUTHWELL: (standing by the window) speaking to ROGERS (with a sneer). "Thou will not burn in this cause, when it come to that. I know that well."

ROGERS: "Sir, I cannot tell, but I trust in my Lord God that I shall" (be able to)

ROGERS, after further discussion and their repeating that he would never have the Queen's mercy (pardon) because he would not claim the Bishop of Rome to be the head of the church, stated that he had never offended (broken her law) the Queen in all his life.

All: especially Secretary BOURNE

"No, a married priest and yet have not offended the law?"

ROGERS: "I have not broken the Queen's law nor yet the law of the Realm for that (because) I married when it was lawful."

DIVERS at once cried: (thinking it unlawful in all places)

"Where was that?"

ROGERS: "In Holland, and if you had not in England made a public law that priests might have wives, I never would have come home again, for I brought a wife and eight children with me which you might be sure I would not have done if the laws of the realm had not permitted it."

There was a great noise, some saying I had come too soon, some other remarks.

ROGERS: (As he left the chamber accompanied by the sergeant) "The Catholic Church never denied marriage to priest or any man."

Bishop of Worecster: (turning his face toward ROGERS) "I do not know where that church is."

ROGERS: "I can tell you where it was - - - " but there the sergeant took me out the door.

This was the purport of all that was spoken to me and all I answered. --- I would gladly have made a more perfect answer to all the objections and also a full report of what I had undertaken to explain, but I was informed that I should come tomorrow to further answer.

Wherefore I was compelled to leave out that which I most gladly would have done, desiring the hearty and unfreigned help of the prayers of Christ's true members, the true children of the true unfreigned Catholic Church; that the Lord God of all consolation may now be my comfort, aid, strength, buckler and shield; As also of all my brethren who are in the same distress; that I, and they all, may dispise all manner of threats and cruelty and even the bitter burning fire and the dreadful dart of death; and stick like true soldiers of our dear and loving Captain, Christ our only Redeemer and Savior, and the only true head of the church, who worketh all in us all, which is the very property of a head. That we do not traitcrously run out of his tents or out of the plain-field from him, in the jeapordy of battle, but that we may presevere in the fight (if he will not otherwise deliver us) till we are most cruelly slain by his enemies. For this I most heartily and at this presence, with weeping tears, most instantly and earnestly desire and beseech you all to pray. And also if I die to be good to my poor and most earnest wife, she being a poor stranger

(foreigner), and all my little souls and hers, my children.

Whom with all the whole faithful and true Catholic congregation of Christ, the Lord of life and death, save, keep and defend from all the troubles and assaults of this vain world; and bring at last to everlasting salvation on the true and sure inheritance of all crossed Christians. Amen! Amen. The 27th of January at night.

The second Confession of JOHN ROGERS next day Jan. 28th, 1555:

The Lord Chancellor GARDINER: "Wilt thou then repent and return to the Catholic Church?"

ROGERS: "I have never been out of the true Catholic Church, nor will be; but into your Church, by God's grace, I will never come."

L. C. GARDINER: "Well, then our Church is false and antichristian?"

ROGERS: "Yes."

L. C. GARDINER: "And what is the doctrine of the sacrament. (Is it truly the blood and body of Christ.)

ROGERS (casting hands abroad): "False."

L. C. GARDINER: "Come again tomorrow, between nine and ten."

Next day ROGERS again is brought into court.

STEPHEN WINCHESTER Bishop, (begins reading the condemnation of JOHN ROGERS): "JOHN ROGERS priest, alias called MATTHEW, accused and condemned as a heritic because under cross examination he hath declared that the Catholic Church of Rome is the Church of the Antichrist. Also that the sacrament of the altar is not substantially nor really the natural body and blood of Christ."

ROGERS: "Well, my Lord, here I stand before God and you and all this honorable audience. I take Him (God) to witness that I never wittingly nor willingly taught any false doctrine and therefore I have a good conscience before God and all good men. I am sure that you and I shall come before a Judge that is righteous, before whom I shall be as good a man as you; and I nothing doubt that I shall be found there a true member of the true Catholic Church of Christ and everlastingly saved.

And as for your false church, you need not to excommunicate me from it. I have not been in it these twenty years, the Lord be thanked therefore.

But now you have done what you can, my lord, I pray you yet grant me one thing."

Bishop WINCHESTER: "What is that?"

ROGERS: "That my poor wife, being a stranger, may come and speak with me so long as I live. For she hath 10 children that are hers and mine, and I would somewhat council her, what were best for her to do."

WINCHESTER: "No, she is not thy wife."

ROGERS: "Yes, my lord, and has been these eighteen years."

WINCHESTER: "Shall I grant her to by thy wife?"

ROGERS: "Choose you whether you will or not. She shall be so, never-the-less."

WINCHESTER: "She shall not come at thee."

ROGERS: "Then I have tried out all thy charity. You make yourself highly displeased with the matrimony of priests but you maintain open concubinage, as in Wales where every priest has his concubine openly dwelling with him; even as your holy father (the pope) suffers all the priests in Holland and France to do."

To this he (WINCHESTER) answered not, but looked as it were asquith at it. And thus I departed and saw him for the last time.

After the sentence had been read he sent us (Master HOOPER, I mean, and me) to the clink, there to remain until night. And when it was dark they carried us through the bishop's house, and so through St. Mary Overy's Church yard into Southwark and over the bridge in procession to Newgate through the city.

(Here is ended JOHN ROGERS' own account and the story is taken up by JOHN FOX who was his contemporary and from whose book "Martyrs" this entire account is taken.)

The fourth of Feb. in the year 1555 being Monday, in the morning he was warned suddenly by the keeper's wife of Newgate to prepare himself for the fire (his burning).

Being then sound asleep he could scarcely be wakened. At last being awake he was bid to make haste - "then," said he, "if it be so, I need not tie my points."

And so he was taken first to BONNER to be degraded (excommunicated). That done, he craved of BONNER one petition. And BONNER asking what that should be.

"Nothing said he but that he might talk a few seconds with his wife before his burning."

But this request could not be obtained of BONNER.

Now when the time came that he, having been delivered to the sherriffs, was brought out of Newgate to Smithfield, the place of his execution, Master WOODROOFE one of the sherriffs called Master ROGERS to him and asked him if he would revoke his abominable doctrine and his evile opinion of the sacrament of the altar.

Master ROGERS answered and said, "That which I have preached, I have sealed with my blood."

"Then," said Master WOODROOFE, "thou art an heretic."

"That shall be known," replied ROGERS, "at the day of Judgement."

"Well," said Master WOODROOFE, "I will never pray for thee."

"But I will pray for thee," rejoined ROGERS.

And so he was brought on Monday the fourth of February toward Smithfield repeating the fifty-first Psalm by the way.

All the people wonderfully rejoicing at his constance, with great praises and thanks to God for it.

And there in the presence of ROCHESTER, comptroller of the Queen's household, Sir RICHARD SOUTHWELL, the sheriffs, and a wonderful number of people, he was burned to ashes, washing his hands in the flames as he was burning.

A little before his burning at the stake his pardon was brought if he would recant but he utterly refused it.

He was the first martyr of all the blessed company that suffered in Queen Mary's time at the fire.

His wife and children, being now eleven in number, met him by the wayside as he went toward Smithfield.

This sorrowful sight of his own flesh and blood, could not move him (to recant) but he constantly and cheerfully took his death, with wonderful patience, in the defense of Christ's gospel."

The coat of arms of the family of ROGERS from whence the Martyr came, with its fitting motto, "We and Ours to God" is included in "Burke's Record" of British Armory and is described below.

ROGERS Coat-of-Arms

ROGERS of Wisdome Co. Devon Bart.

ARMS - Argent a Chevron gules between three roebucks courant sable attired and gorged with ducal coronets or

CREST - On a mount vert a roebuck courant ppr. attired and gorged with a ducal coronet or, between two branches of laurel vert.

MOTTO - Nos Nostraque Deo (We and Ours to God)

In the fanciful lore of Heraldry, Argent (silver) means innocence and purity. Gules (red) is the badge of deathless courage, sable (black) signifies good judgement and constancy in adversity.

The description of this ROGERS Coat-of-Arms means translated: "A silver shield with a red chevron on it between three running roebucks black with antlers and each one wearing a gold coronet around his neck. He is on a green mound and between two branches of green laurel."

The mantling represents the knight's cloak, torn and rent in battle. It hung from the helmet and protected the wearer from the weather and his armour from rust. The crest was carved of light wood or of leather boiled and compressed into a mould and laced to the helmet with thongs. The crest rests on a wreath of the colors. The wreath was made of two strands of heavy silk twisted together.

A chevron was never given for anything but military achievement and so is accounted the most honorable of all heraldic charges. It is said to represent the roof of a house and so denotes protection.

Each family's Coat-of-Arms had to be registered with the College of Heralds of College of Arms - just as we register our signature at the bank today - and to use another man's was considered a forgery. The College of Arms is still powerful in England today and dictates procedure when a new King or Queen is crowned.

Colors used in Coats-of-Arms were clear and bright so that they could easily be seen in the dust and heat of battle. Knights fought in battle with helmets closed and for identification had their Coats-of-Arms embroidered on horse trappings and surcoat.

Heralds carried messages from King to King or castle to castle and were identified by Coats-of-Arms, while some distance away.

When SAMUEL ROGERS' half-sister, ROSEY ROGERS CRAWFORD, came to Texas, after the war between the states, she brought with her a ring with the ROGERS crest which probably came to her from her Uncle JOHN ROGERS, who mentioned her in his 1822 will. Unfortunately this ring has fallen into the hand of those who will not share it.

Of the families who came into the lines of SAMUEL CRAWFORD ADUSTON ROGERS, through marriage in America; ADENSTONE, BERNARD, MORGAN, EVANS and SUTHERLAND are all entitled to coats of arms.

A study of the ROGERS who are listed in "Cavaliers and Pioneers," as having come to Va. before the year 1669, reveals that some twenty-five JOHN and WM. ROGERS migrated to Va. in that period. Therefore, it was necessary to make a study of ROGERS in all the counties adjacent to York Co. Va. where we first find firm records of the line we are following. Of those counties; James City, Chas. City, Gloucester and Warwick Cos. have lost their records. However, we were fortunate to be able to obtain very good records of early York Elizabeth City, Northumberland, Accomach, Northampton, Southampton, Surry, Isle of Wight, Brunswick and Norfolk Cos. and to compare them with findings in "Cavaliers and Pioneers," and with early York.

In both Accomack and Northumberland Cos. we have a JOHN ROGERS very early. Each left wills and each had a son, JOHN, of the proper age to have married AGNES ADENSTONE about 1670-75. But later records in those cos. proved this not to be a fact.

In that volume "Cavaliers and Pioneers," among the many references to various JOHN ROGERS, there are three

which should be carefully considered.

The first of these concerns JOHN ROGERS, age 18; THOMAS ROGERS age 16 and RICHARD DIXON who all came to Va. on the George in 1635. (Persons of quality) In that day families tended to stay and migrate together so since, in the next generation, a later JOHN ROGERS and RICHARD DIXON married the two daughters of JOHN ADENTSTONE, we will concentrate on the JOHN and THOMAS ROGERS of this record.

Only if JOHN ROGERS, age 18, was the son of JOHN ROGERS, JR. deceased before 1636, and the grandchild mentioned in the will of JOHN ROGERS the famous preacher of Dedham, could this ROGERS family be descended from the latter.

Another likely immigrant shown in "Cavaliers and Pioneers" is the Mr. JOHN ROGERS who came with JOHN GARRETT prior to 22 May 1642, "Mr." in that era designated a person of position, which would be in keeping with the testimony of SAMUEL ROGERS that he was descended from the Martyr, who was of royal blood, and the possession of the ring with the ROGERS' crest which his sister brought with her to Texas.

It is also in keeping with the inclusion of JOHN ROGERS, age 18, in "Persons of Quality" and it is entirely possible that they were one and the same person, JOHN of 1642 now age 25, returning from a visit to England.

Then on 12 Nov. 1652, JOHN ROGERS patented 720 acres on the south side of Skimmino Cr. lying on the south side of York River which would have been in York Co. Va. where we find the will of JOHN ADENSTONE and early document pertaining to his ROGERS descendants who were the fore-parents of SAMUEL ROGERS who was born in adjoining Gloucester Co. and who migrated to the Mexican colony of Texas in 1831.

We have already seen that the death of a Mr. JOHN ROGERS SR. was registered in 1676 in Bruton Parish and that of his son, THOMAS, in 1686, the latter being of Bruton Parish, York Co. Va.

We believe that JOHN ROGERS age 18, in 1635, Mr. JOHN ROGERS of 1642, JOHN ROGERS of the 1652 patent on the southside of York River and Mr. JOHN ROGERS SR. who died in 1676 are all one and the same person and that this JOHN ROGERS was the father of JOHN ROGERS who married about 1670-1675, AGNES ADENSTONE, who was born in 1648. ROGERS born about 1645 died in York Co. after 1714. We also believe that THOS. ROGERS of York River whose buriel was recorded in Bruton Parish in 1686, though he lived in York Co. was probably brother of JOHN, who married AGNES ADENSTONE.

After the marriage of AGNES ADENSTONE to JOHN ROGERS about 1675 and the probation of the will of JOHN ADENSTONE in 1677, it became much easier to identify this ROGERS family because for a definite reason they began to give, to certain children, the name ADENSTONE. (York Records Bk. 9, p. 84)

We find this name variously spelled ADENSTONE, ADEUSTONE, ADONSTON, ADLESTON, ADDUSTON, ADISON, ADUSTON and ADUSTIN, but it was correctly and originally ADENSTONE as proven by the 1677 will of JOHN ADENSTONE which was probated in York Co., Virginia in 1677.

In it, he mentions his wife, JOANE, his orphaned grandchildren, RICHARD DICSON, ELIZABETH DICSON and AGNES DICSON. Then he mentions his daughter, AGNES ROGERS, wife of JOHN ROGERS, and their infant son, ADENSTONE ROGERS, whom he makes his heir, specifying that after the death of his widow, JOANE ADENSTONE, or on her remarriage, his lands in York County are to go to ADENSTONE ROGERS "providing always where the name of ADENSTONE is used that there the land is to remain." In other words, those of each generation who inherited the land must carry the name ADENSTONE.

He also provided that this son-in-law, JOHN ROGERS, should be landlord for life of a tract of land in Gloucester County which he left to his wife and his DICSON (DIXON) grandchildren" and if in case any of the aforesaid child should die before he or they come of age, that then my will is that their part shall return to ADENSTONE ROGERS."

In many of the early records of both Gloucester and York County, JOHN ADENSTONE is recorded as JOHN ADLESTONE and in the records of "Cavaliers and Pioneers" it is so spelled (page 214 and 232).

Third Generation

In 1651, he was granted 500 acres of land in Gloucester Co. and in May 1654, he had Lt. Col. JOHN CHEESMAN were granted 400 acres adjoining their neighboring places in the same county. ("Calvaliers and Pioneers," Nugent)

However, York Co. records show that he and a Capt. JOHN CHISMAN had business dealings there as early as 1646. (Va. Col. Records Vol. 25, York Co., p. 32) This Capt. JOHN CHISMAN and later Lt. Col. CHEESMAN are evidently the same person.

Power of attorney was granted June 12, 1671 by JAMES HOLT in Gloucester Co. to JOHN ADELSTONE and this record was witnessed by JOHN ROGERS. (Col. Gloucester Co. Records, Vol. II, p. 111) This was about the time or shortly before JOHN ROGERS married AGNES ADENSTONE, daughter of JOHN ADENSTONE.

Their son, ADENSTONE ROGERS, was born before his grandfather's death in 1677.

The Abington Parish Register of Gloucester and early York County has the records of the births of several children born later who did not benefit from this will.

1677-1684, York Co. Va. Records Bk. 6

Page 247 Date, Nov. 4, 1679

JOANE ADDUSTONE of York Parish and County, Widdow & Admrx. of my husband JOHN ADDUSTONE, dec'd; being sick and weak & not able to manage the Estate left me by my said husband do therefore resign up and will deliver up to my son-in-law JOHN ROGERS on Demand all the said whole Estate in general my one third only exeepted which I reserve to myself the rest to be at the said Son-in-law's management he giving Security to Yorke Court to pay to and allow my said grandchildren at their several ages or day of marriage what their grandfather hath left them by Will. The said JOANE to have one third of crop Etc. she paying one third of all expenses.

Witnesses, JOANE ADDUSTONE

WM. LOBB Acknowledged in Court Dec. 8, 1679.

JOSEPH COLEMAN

JOANE ADENSTONE died before 24 May 1700 and perhaps before 1697. It will be recalled that her husband made his grandson ADENSTONE ROGERS his heir and after her death his father JOHN ROGERS, executor; following some misunderstanding, made settlement to ADUSTON ROGERS at the Sept. Court 1700, in York Co.

Children of JOHN ROGERS II) and AGNES ADENSTONE:

1. ADENSTONE ROGERS I) b. prior to Jan. 16, 1677; became heir of his grandfather, JOHN ADENSTONE; made decd of gift Dec. 19, 1726 to his son JOHN ADDUSTON ROGERS II); d. before Nov. 18, 1728 when his estate was inventoried.
2. JOHN ADONSTON ROGERS I) b. May 4, 1678; (Abington Parish Register) m. prior to Nov. 10, 1705 JANE ANDREWS widow of Dr. HENRY ANDREWS formally of London; (WILLIAM and MARY Q. Vol. II, p. 165) received by Deed of Gift Mar. 21, 1714 from his father, JOHN ROGERS, of Hampton Parish, property including slaves named TOM. BARNABY and BETTY (D. Bk. Vol. III, p. 61-62 York Co., Va.) his estate was inventoried June 16, 1729 York Co.; on the same day June 16, 1729, bond was granted ELIZABETH ROGERS probably his second or third wife, as administrator of his estate with EDWARD WRIGHT and WILLIAM PALMER, signing bond with her.
3. BARBARA ROGERS, b. Aug. 25, 1681, perhaps wife of one of the above bondsmen (Later Oct. 15, 1787 ALLEN CHAPMAN of this connection was granted bond as guardian of children or orphans of BENJAMINE PALMER with JOHN A. ROGERS and THOMAS POWELL (POWER) securities (WILLIAM and MARY Vol. I, p. 56).
4. GEORGE ROGERS, b. Mar. 27, 1683. In Elizabeth City Co., on July 18, 1733 the estate of GEORGE ROGERS was settled at the petition of his dau. AGNES ROGERS. (Wills and Administration - Chapman) This was probably GEORGE ROGERS son of JOHN and AGNES. Also, Lt. JOHN ROGERS, of the Continental Army, youngest officer of his rank, joined his cousin, GEORGE ROGERS CLARK, on the Western expedition; never married. (William & Mary Vol. VIII, p. 104).
   (This Lt. JOHN ROGERS, later Capt., seemed to be associated earlier in the Fourth Va. Reg. with Capt. WILLIAM ROGERS of York Co., later of Norfolk, Va. The list of ROGERS in the Revolutionary War from Va. includes only these two as commissioned officers.)
5. Perhaps JOHN and AGNES ROGERS also had a son, THOMAS ROGERS, as in the next generation on Dec. 21, 1712 GEORGE ROGERS, son of THOMAS ROGERS, was baptized and the date was recorded in the Abington Parish Register. We have already seen that JOHN ROGERS I) father of JOHN, who married AGNES ADENSTONE came to Va. in 1635 at age 18 with 1686, his buriel being registered in Bruton Parish, though his estate was recorded in York. Later we found his son, THOS. ROGERS, associated with JOHN, the father of this family.

Fourth Generation

In determining the fourth generation children of ADENSTONE ROGERS I), son of JOHN and AGNES, we will keep in mind that it was he who was named heir of his grandfather in 1677 with the condition that the name ADENSTONE be always kept on the land. This provision is responsible for the fact that among the descendants of ADENSTONE, many if not all, used the middle name ADENSTONE.

I. Known children of ADENSTONE ROGERS I), b. about 1671-1675; married before 1697, (perhaps CHAPMAN); d. in 1728 in York Co. Va.

1. JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS II) b. about 1705 or earlier, who received by decd of gift, 19 Dec. 1726, from his father ADDUSTON ROGERS of York Hampton Parish, York Co., the tract of land whereon he now resides adjoining lands of THOS. CASE and ROBERT WILLIAMS.
2. WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS b. about 1715; m. about 1740; ––––––d. in 1785 leaving will in York Co. We include this WILLIAM in the family of ADDUSTON ROGERS because he and his descendants adhered to the stipulation in the 1676 will of JOHN ADENSTONE that each ROGERS, who ever hoped to share in the estate of JOHN ADENSTON, should bear the name ADENSTONE.
   In 1763 Mr. WILLIAM ADDUSTON ROGERS of York-Hampton Parish, York Co. Va. had 5 titheable in his household. (Vol. 7 p. 179-185 Tylers Quarterly). This means that at this date there were five males over

16 in his home. We can only account for two, WILLIAM A. ROGERS, himself and his son and heir, JOHN A. ROGERS, who married in about 1765. We know that ADENSTONE ROGERS inherited land in Gloucester Co. so perhaps other sons lived there.

WILLIAM ADDUSTON ROGERS was allowed L53 for losses sustained in the Rev. War. (Losses to Citizens of York Co. Va. - Wm. and Mary. Vol. 7 (2) p. 133) This loss was suffered in 1781 by invasion of British.

3. BARBARA ADUSTON ROGERS. The 1785 will of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS provided for his sister, BARBARA ROGERS, and in 1748, BARBARA ADUSTON ROGERS was a witness with her brother, WILLIAM to the will of REBECCA GOODWIN. (Ref. Wm. and Mary Quarterly Vol. 6 p. 152) who may have been their sister.
4. Perhaps the wife of BENJ. WRIGHT. On 20 July 1778 WILLIAM A. ROGERS conveyed to BENJ. WRIGHT 110 acres in York-Hampton Parish and on the same day the said ROGERS made bond to sd. WRIGHT. (York Co. Deeds Bk. 6 p. 7). ROGERS' will mentions that WRIGHTS land was adj. that of WILLIAM A. ROGERS.

The records of York Co. relating to ADENSTONE ROGERS and his descendants prove that they were of York-Hampton Parish which included the town and port of Yorktown. ADENSTONE was heir of JOHN ADENSTONE and this was evidently the location of ADENSTONE'S land in York Co.

We will note, as we proceed that the descendants of JOHN ROGERS II) or JR. of York Co. through his heir, JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS, are identified as of Charles Parish in York Co. That Parish evidently included the 720 acre grant on Skimmino Creek which was made to JOHN ROGERS I) of York Co. in 1652, who was JOHN ROGERS SR. of Bruton Parish, dec'd 1676.

The deed of gift of slaves by JOHN ROGERS II) of Hampton Parish, York Co. which was dated 21 Mar. 1714 identifies the grantee as his son, JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS I) of Charles Parish.

II. Fourth and later generation descendants of JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS I), son of JOHN and AGNES bapt. May 4, 1678. Left 1729 inventory in York Co., signed by relick, ELIZABETH.

1. On Mar. 14, 1714 JOHN ROGERS, husband of AGNES ADENSTONE, made a Deed of gift to their second son, JOHN ADONSTONE ROGERS I), which included three negro slaves, namely, TOM, BARNABY, and BETTIE. As JOHN ADONSTONE ROGERS I) of this generation seldom appears, in the records of York Co., he may have lived, at least temporarily, in a neighboring Co. probably Gloucester, as some of the records of his son's family are recorded in Abington Parish Register of that Co.

There it is recorded that WILLIAM ROGERS was buried Aug. 25, 1739 and there is also recorded the birth and christening of JOHN, son of WILLIAM ROGERS, on Mar. 7, 1732.

Evidently, as indicated by his quick christening and his absence in his father's will, JOHN ROGERS died as an infant.

The will of WILLIAM ROGERS of York-Hampton Parish, written May 16, 1739 and proven Dec. 17, 1739 in York Co. is the first known will recorded in this family since the Will of JOHN ADENSTONE in 1677. In it, he leaves much silver with a crest upon it, his coach and four horses and many slaves, including TOM, BARNABY, and BETTIE to his family. The repetition here of the names of slaves given JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS I) by his father, JOHN ROGERS, in 1714 is a logical reason for assuming that WILLIAM ROGERS of this fourth generation is the son of JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS I).

Later records also strongly indicate that there was a relationship between his descendants and those who continued to use the name ADENSTONE, but as the son of the second son, JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS I), he would have no part in the legacy from JOHN ADENSTONE in 1677 and he likewise would have no obligation to use the name, ADENSTONE.

His 1739 Will names his wife, THEODOSIA, his children and also mentions the children of his brothers and sisters. His children were:

(1) SUSANNAH REYNOLDS, wife of Capt. THOMAS REYNOLDS. WILLIAM REYNOLDS, their only son, died and his will was proven in York Co. in 1802. In it, he names WILLIAM A. ROGERS and THOMAS GRIFFIN, executors. WILLIAM REYNOLD'S son, THOMAS REYNOLDS, died before his father and his will proven July 21, 1800 also names WILLIAM A. ROGERS and THOMAS GRIFFIN as executors. (William and Mary Q., Vol. 12, p. 128-129).

The names given in the descendants of this REYNOLDS line - ANNE, HARRIET, SUSAN and WILLIAM are names that occur in the family of WILLIAM A. ROGERS, father of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, the Texas pioneer. As WILLIAM lived at that time in York Co., it was probably he who was executor of the wills mentioned.

(2) HANNAH ROGERS and

(3) SARAH ROGERS one of whom married WILLIAM MONTGOMERY (THEODOSIA ROGERS' will proved 1752 in York County names WILLIAM MONTGOMERY, her son-in-law).

(4) WILLIAM ROGERS II), only son of WILLIAM I), who died in 1739, was a minor at the time of his fathers death.

The compiler has no further definite information concerning this WILLIAM ROGERS.

There was a WILLIAM ROGERS made Captain of the troops June 7, 1734 (Bk. 18, Part I, pa. 121, York Co.) but we judge this to be his father who was a young man having only one married daughter when he died in 1739. It appears that she only recently had been married, as the will speaks as if she, as yet, has no child and also mentions the building of a house for her.

After the Rev. War, a WILLIAM ROGERS of York Co. moved to Norfolk, Virginia and became a prominent citizen there.

He had been Capt. in the Continental Army and must have been the WILLIAM ROGERS of the Fourth Va. Reg. who was made Second Lt. on Mar. 19, 1776, promoted to First Lt. Sept. 28, 1776 and to Capt. April 1, 1778. He was taken prisoner Sept. 22, 1778 and exchanged in 1780 after which he was attached to the Fifth Va. Reg. (Ref: "Records of Virginians in Revolution").

He married PRISCILLA VALENTINE and they had a dau. PRISCILLA CLAYTON ROGERS, who married JOHN HARMON (Ref: Valentine Papers Vol. IV, p. 2328). Unfortunately, no dates were given on these marriages so while it is likely that this WILLIAM ROGERS II) was the son of WILLIAM I) of the 1739 will, it is also possible that he was a younger man and may perhaps have been the third generation of WILLIAM ROGERS and grandson of WILLIAM and THEODOSIA.

While it is almost certain that he is of this family, it is impossible to definitely place him with the material at hand.

2. ADUSTON ROGERS II), a bond of 1 Jan. 1736 was posted in York Co. by ADUSTON ROGERS, CLAYTON ROGERS, JAMES ROGERS and JOHN BORODELL to pay the debts of JOHN POWELL or (POWERS) and SUSANNAH, his wife, deceased. This has the earmarks of a family responsibility and here are named other children of JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS I), son of JOHN ROGERS II) and AGNES ADENSTONE, and his wives JANE and ELIZABETH and perhaps others, one of whom was probably a CLAYTON.

   ADUSTON ROGERS II) m. KATHERINE, perhaps NUTTING, since the 1733 will of ELIZABETH NUTTING of Chas. Parish mentions ELIZABETH ROGERS, dau. of ADDUSTON and CATHERINE ROGERS (Wm. and Mary Vol. 6 p. 151) Other records of York Co. suggest CATHERINE had first been the wife of WM. SHELDON of that Co.

   The births of the children of this couple are recorded in the Chas. Parish Register as follows:

   (1) ADENSTONE ROGERS bapt. 23 Mar. 1731;
   (2) JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS III) bapt. 27 Mar. 1733;
   (3) MARY ROGERS bapt. 19 Aug. 1735.

   On 15 Sept. 1729 ADDUSTON ROGERS and KATHERINE, his wife sold land in York Co. to EDWARD MOSS. It is probable that they moved to Goochland Co. where the estate of an ADDUSTON ROGERS was inventoried in 1749.

3. JAMES ROGERS of the 1736 bond, m. about 1735 MARGARET GOLDEN (will of MARGARET ROGERS Bk. 22 p. 573 York Co. mentions her bro. JOHN GOLDEN). JAMES and MARGARET had before his death in 1744 (1) WILLIAM; (2) JOHN; (3) ANTHONY and (4) ELIZABETH ROGERS. Only ELIZABETH, b. 1738, survived childhood. (All births and deaths recorded in Chas. Parish)

4. CLAYTON ROGERS, who also signed the 1736 bond, married and had a son named (1) THOS. ADESTIN ROGERS b. 18 May 1738 (Chas. Parish). No other child of CLAYTON is entered in this register.

5. The wife of JOHN BORODELL who also gave bond for the debts of SUSANNAH and JOHN POWELL 19 Jan. 1736.

6. Probably SUSANNAH ROGERS who married JOHN POWERS or POWELL, and whose bros. and sisters, except WILLIAM ROGERS, gave bond for the POWELL debts after they were deceased.

7. The husband of SARAH ROGERS widow, of Charles Parish, who died in 1778 leaving will. Perhaps, she was the wife of CLAYTON ROGERS I) listed as No. 4 above, since she had a son CLAYTON ROGERS II). Or perhaps, there was a JOHN ROGERS in the family of JOHN ADENSTON ROGERS and SARAH was his widow. It was her son, JOHN ROGERS who bought land in Southampton Co. as early as 1769 and to whom she conveyed slaves in 1774 designating him as of Southampton Co. He was sheriff of that Co., in 1793 and moved the next year to the town of Raleigh in Wake Co. N.C.

   She was SARAH SATTERWHITE, dau. of MARTHA SATTERWHITE, in1763 of York-Hampton Parish but erstwhile of Henrico Co.

   Her will was probated in York Co. 20 July 1778 at which time her children were (1) JOHN ROGERS; (2) WILLIAM ROGERS, (3) her late son, ADDUSTON ROGERS and daughters MARTHA PATRICK, ANN DRURY, MILDRED PATRICK. She also named her grandchildren WILLIAM ADDUSTON and JOHN ROGERS sons of her son, ADDUSTON ROGERS dec'd. of Charles parish.

   CURTIS PATRICK and JOHN ROGERS were made executors.

   GILES MORRIS (MOSS) and THOS. PRESSON, were witnesses

THOS. PRESSON m. 29 Jan. 1774, SUSANNAH PATRICK with CURTIS PATRICK as security. SUSANNAH was probably the dau. of CURTIS PATRICK and his wife, MARTHA and the granddaughter of SARAH SATTERWHITE ROGERS. (York Co. Marriages)

We believe that SARAH also had a son CLAYTON ROGERS, deceased 10 Jan. 1773, the year before she conveyed slaves to her living children and five years before she made her will.

His will speaks of himself as of Chas. Parish and states that his wife, REBECCA ROGERS may be with child. Then he names his God-children: JOHN ROGERS, son of ADUSTON ROGERS, dec'd.; SARAH PATRICK, dau. of CURTIS PATRICK; JOHN PATRICK, son of EDMUND PATRICK. His executors were his wife, REBECCA ROGERS and CURTIS PATRICK and the will was witnessed by WILLIAM PATRICK, WM. MOORE, and WM. MORRIS (MOSS).

In his will WILLIAM ROGERS in 1739 spoke of his brothers and sisters and we believe that this group, just reviewed, at least five of them of age in 1736, could only have been the children of JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS I).

These two CLAYTON ROGERS, certainly indicate that there was a ROGERS-CLAYTON connection.

On 18 Sept. 1647 in York Co. Va., WILLIAM REYNOLDS was granted a commission for the administration of the estate of JAMES CLAYTON dec'd. York Co. Va. Court (p. 49 Va. Colonial Abstracts Vol. 25)

This CLAYTON is in the right place at the right time to have had a daughter or sister who became the wife of JOHN ROGERS, age 18, who came to Va. in 1635.

However, there is nothing further to prove such a relationship except the two CLAYTON ROGERS of later York Co., one born about 1710 and the other in the next generation.

Northumberland Co. was cut off from York Co. in 1648 and in that Co. Mr. JAMES CLAYTON, or his assignees, conveyed his rights in 250 acres, lying on a creek called Claytons Creek, to Mr. JOHN ROGERS on 20 Jan. 1652. (Va. Colonial Abstracts of Northumberland Co. Vol. II, p. 94)

We sense that this ROGERS was married to a dau. or sister of JAMES CLAYTON who is possibly the son of the JAMES CLAYTON dec'd in York Co. the year before Northumberland was separated from the former Co. or if this is the settlement of an estate the JAMES of 1652 may be the JAMES, dec'd 1647.

However, in neither case could this family be that of JOHN ROGERS of the ADENSTONE connection because the records are unmistakable that the JOHN ROGERS of Northumberland Co. remained in that Co. until his death in July 1680. He was called Capt. ROGERS.

His son, JOHN JR. whose wife was JOANE, was deceased before his father. On 17 Mar. 1679-80 admx. was granted JOANE ROGERS on the estate of her husband, JOHN ROGERS, dec'd.

The description of lands in a chain of deeds to JOHN ROGERS, and later Capt. JOHN ROGERS, beginning with the one dated 1652 and cited above, prove that JOHN ROGERS of the 1652 assignment was one and the same as Capt. JOHN ROGERS of the July 21, 1680 will.

Perhaps another daughter of JAMES CLAYTON married JOHN ROGERS I) of York.

ADENSTONE - ROGERS - Fifth Generation

The will of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS I) of York Co., Va., fourth generation was proven Oct. 17, 1785.

Sister: BARBARA ROGERS Son: JOHN ROGERS.

GrandchildrenFRANCES BLAKE, JOHN ROGERS, WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS, ANNE ROGERS, ELIZABETH ROGERS.

Executors: JOHN A. ROGERS, son, and THOMAS SMITH, friend.

Witnesses: WILLIAM PATRICK, BENJAMINE WRIGHT, VINCENT RAWLINGS.

Securities: JOHN CHISMAN and ED HARWOOD.

Will mentions the fact that his land joins that of BENJAMINE WRIGHT.

The fact that he mentions only one child, his son JOHN ROGERS, is explained by the fact that JOHN, was the oldest son and by the law of primo-genture, he was his father's heir.

FRANCES BLAKE is one of the granddaughters now married to ——— BLAKE as the will says she is already using the negro slave who is given to her by her grandfather's will.

JOHN, WILLIAM ADUSTON and ELIZABETH ROGERS are the children of his son and heir, JOHN A. ROGERS, for we know from later documents that JOHN had children by those names. ANNE may have been the daughter of any of his sons or NANCY dau. of JOHN A. ROGERS, his heir.

Let us retrace and recall that in 1646 in York Co. Capt. JOHN CHISMAN and the original JOHN ADENSTONE (spelled ADISON) and in 1654 Lt. Col. JOHN CHEESMAN and JOHN ADLESTON, neighbors, are shown to have business relations.

Now, although more than a hundred years have passed, another JOHN CHISMAN is witness to the will of ADDUSTON ROGERS in 1762 and was security for the administrators of the estate of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS, in 1785. This continued association makes it appear that the original relationship may have been more than that of friend or neighbor.

We have no proof of the family name of JOANE ADENSTONE, last wife of JOHN ADENSTONE, and presumedly mother of AGNES ROGERS.

These CHISMAN records might mean that it could have been CHISMAN.

There is no hint in the York Co. records of other sons of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS I, although the tithe list of 1763 credits him with 5 titheables which means that he had three sons over 16 years of age, beside his eldest son and heir, JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS.

Perhaps he had a daughter who married BENJAMINE PALMER. On 15 Oct. 1787 two years after the death of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS I), ALLEN CHAPMAN was granted bond as guardians of ANN, ELIZABETH, WILLIAM, MARY, and CHARLOTTE PALMER, orphans of BENJAMINE PALMER.

His securities were JOHN A. ROGERS and THOMAS POWELL (Wm. and Mary quarterly Vol. I (1).p. 56)

It is too early for a dau. of JOHN A. ROGERS to have married and had five children, so if the wife of BENJAMINE PALMER was a ROGERS she was probably, daughter of WM. ADUSTON ROGERS, I).

A series of deeds recorded in several Virginia Cos. make it possible to identify some of the ROGERS of the 18th century who bore identical names.

On 16 Mar. 1769, ARTHUR TURNER and wife ELIZ. conveyed to JOHN ROGERS of Southampton Co., 250 acres in St. Lukes Parish, Southampton Co. for ₤115 cash land adj. Meherrin River, JAMES BRITTCHETT, Blake's line and THOS. TURNER, ARTHUR TURNER of Meherrin Parish. (Bk. 4 p. 156 Southampton Co. Va.)

SARAH ROGERS of York Co. Va. deed of gift to son JOHN ROGERS of Southampton Co. slaves. 20 June 1774 (p. 421 Deed Bk. 8 York Co. Va.)

On the same day SARAH ROGERS for the natural love and affection which he hath for me, to my son, WILLIAM ROGERS, of Brunswick Co. (p. 420 Bk. 8 York Co. Va.)

Identical deeds were made to her sons-in-law CURTIS PATRICK, EDMOND PATRICK and MATHREW DRURY on the same day by SARAH ROGERS.

On 13 Feb. 1777, SESSOMS BLAKE and wife, MARY, 120 acres in St. Lukes Parish, adj. BRICHETT near low ground on Meherrin River, in Southampton Co. to JOHN ROGERS. (Bk. 5 p. 255)

On 10 Sept. 1778 THOS. DAY and wife, MARY of Southampton Co. to JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS of York Co., 243 acres of land in St. Luke's Parish Southampton Co. adj. RICHARD TAYLOR Cock's swamp and Barrows line. Mr. ROGERS paid ₤350 pounds cash in current money. (Bk. 5 p. 347 Sothampton Co. Va.)

JOHN ROGERS of Southampton Co. in 1769 and 1774 had not moved back to York Co. These two JOHN ROGERS, were cousins - JOHN the son of SARAH SATTERWHITE ROGERS of Charles Parish was a descendant of JOHN ADENSTONE ROGERS while JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS was the son of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS of the 1785 will, evidently also descendant of ADENSTONE ROGERS, heir of his grandfather, JOHN ADENSTONE, 1677.

On 25 Oct. 1782 JOHN ROGERS of Southampton Co. to THOS. TURNER, 30 a. N. side of Meherrin River adj. both ROGERS and TURNER (Bk. 7 p. 580).

In 1789 JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS of York Co. Va., conveyed to their son WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS the land which he bought in Southampton Co. in 1778.

On 30 Dec. 1794, THOS. TURNER and wife, PATIENCE, of Southampton Co. to JOHN ROGERS of Wake Co. N.C., 60 acres of land on Northside of Meherrin River (Bk. 8, p. 176) Southampton Co.

On 30 Dec. 1794 JOHN ROGERS of Wake Co. N.C. to HENRY SMITH of Southampton Co. 639 acres in sd. Co. on North side of Meherrin River for 645 pounds. (Bk. 8 p. 178).

18 Jan. 1797, JOHN ROGERS of the town of Raleigh N.C. and CLAIBORNE CLIFTON of Columbia S.C. for the love and affection they have for CURTIS PATRICK and CRISSY, his wife, late of the town of Columbia, our rights and claim in three negroes called RACHEL, MASON and ANTHONY (D. Bk. 8 p. 397).

This is final proof that JOHN ROGERS of Southampton Co. 1769 was the son of SARAH ROGERS who also had son-in-law CURTIS PATRICK.

On 21 Aug. 1815 the last entry concerning the 240 acres purchased by JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS of York Co. 1778 was recorded in Southampton Co.

In 1789 JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS of York Co., conveyed, by deed of gift, this tract to his son WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS. (Deed Bk. 6 p. 416)

Now on 21 Aug. 1815 WILLIAM A. ROGERS and SARAH his wife of Gloucester Co. to JOHN FOSTER of Southampton Co., a certain tract of land containing 240 acres lying in the Co. of Southampton, Parish of St. Lukes, beginning at RICHARD TAYLORS adjacent JOHN BARROW and Sneed's Branch, etc.

Signed WILLIAM A. ROGERS - SALLY ROGERS.

The grantors of this deed were the parents of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS b. 20 June 1810 in Gloucester Co. Va.

We are not certain that JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS and his wife, ELIZABETH BERNARD, ever lived in Southampton but it is possible that they did for a brief period between 1778 and 1785 when his father, WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS died.

There are reasons for believing that WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS I) and SARAH SATTERWHITE ROGERS were man and wife although neither mentions the other in their wills.

In SARAH'S 1778 will, she leaves to her children 4 slaves named PHIL, HANNAH, HARRY and BESS. Slaves with identical names as the first three are named in the inventory of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS dated 15 Nov. 1785, but not devised to any of his children. Also WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS leaves to his granddaughter, FRANCES BLAKE, a slave named SUE in his will dated 5 Dec. 1784. In Southampton Co. 13 Feb. 1777 SESSOMS BLAKE and wife MARY sold 120 acres in St. Lukes Parish. FRANCES of 1784 was probably their daughter.

However, this evidence is outweighed by the fact that JOHN ROGERS, son of SARAH was already in Southampton Co. in 1769 and in 1777 when he bought additional land there. He is identified as the son of SARAH ROGERS in 1774.

In 1782 JOHN ROGERS of this Co. sold 30 a. to his neighbor THOS. TURNER of the 1769 deed. In 1793, he served as sheriff and in 1794 and 1797 was of Wake Co. N.C.

On the other hand, JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS was of York Co. when he purchased land in Southampton Co. in 1778. He was of York Co. when he assigned this tract to his son WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS II) in 1789, and when he deeded land to his son JOHN A. ROGERS JR. in 1800.

It hardly seems possible that he would have moved around from York to Southampton before 1774 back to York, before 1778, again to Southampton before 1782, to York before 1789, to Southampton by 1793, and to N.C. 1794 and 1797 then back to York in 1800.

These must be two different families and JOHN ROGERS of Southampton Co. could hardly have been the same as JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS of York Co. who was the son of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS I).

JOHN A. ROGERS of York was executor of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS.

Sixth Generation

Sometime previous to 1769, JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS or as we will speak of him in the future, JOHN A. ROGERS I), had married ELIZABETH BERNARD.

Two of their children were baptised in Charles Parish Church and their christenings were recorded in the Register. They were:

1. "WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS, son of JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS and his wife ELIZABETH BERNARD was born July 15,1769 (York-Hampton Parish." (This was the father of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS), m. (1) ROSE POWELL, about 1793; m. (2) 1800 SARAH MORGAN, on Sept. 18, 1800.
2. MOLLY, dau. of JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS and ELIZABETH BERNARD was born Dec. 1775. Evidently MOLLY did not live to maturity for there are no further records about her unless "MOLLY" was a nickname for ELIZABETH. If not, there were at least two more children who reached manhood and womanhood.
3. JOHN A. ROGERS, JR., was probably the oldest son, as he was appointed administrator of his father's estate in 1812 and continued to reside in York Co. He was probably born about 1767. His wife's name was MARY.
4. ELIZABETH ROGERS may either have been born before or after MOLLY. She m. (1) Jan. 12, 1799 JOHN CHAPMAN (Marriage Bk. II p. 390, York Co.,); m. (2) ------ TOMPKINS; and had at least one child by her marriage with CHAPMAN. This was ALLEN CHAPMAN mentioned in 1821 in the will of his grandmother, ELIZABETH ROGERS. The JOHN CHAPMAN who signed the inventory of JOHN ADONSTONE ROGERS in 1729 and ALLEN CHAPMAN who in Oct. 15, 1789 was granted bond as the guardian of orphans of BENJAMINE PALMER (William and Mary Vol. I, p. 56) must have been closely related to this later JOHN CHAPMAN and his son, ALLEN.
5. NANCY ROGERS, who m. JOHN FOX on June 8, 1792 (Marriage Bk. II, p. 398, York Co.). On Jan. 20, 1794 JOHN A. ROGERS deeded property to JOHN FOX (Deed Bk. No. 6, p. 97). 1792 WM. A. ROGERS, security for JOHN FOX for m. to NANCY ROGERS. NANCY same as ANN.

Why the birth of part of the children of JOHN A. ROGERS I) and ELIZABETH BERNARD were recorded in Charles Parish and part were not; and why WILLIAM ADDUSTON ROGERS II) born in 1769 is designated as from York-Hampton Parish has already been explained.

The deed of gift JOHN ROGERS of Hampton Parish to JOHN ADDUSTON ROGERS of Charles Parish (Mar. 21, 1714, Vol. III, p. 61 and 62 Record Bk. 16) hints at this, as well as other documents that mention ROGERS of both Parishes.

On Dec. 28, 1789 JOHN A. ROGERS I) and his wife, ELIZABETH, deeded to their son, WILLIAM A. ROGERS II), who was now almost twenty-one, 248 acres in Southampton County for a nominal sum. This was in reality a gift. (Bk. No. 6, p. 416)

JOHN A. ROGERS I) and his wife made a similar deed to their son, JOHN A. ROGERS, JR. in 1800 (Deed Bk. No. 7, p. 319).

In 1812, JOHN A. ROGERS I) died and on April 20, 1812 JOHN A. ROGERS II) was granted a bond as administrator of his father's estate. (York Co. Records Bk. No. 8, p. 155).

Before this time, the son, WILLIAM A. ROGERS II), had moved to Gloucester Co., Va. He died Dec. 4, 1820 near Knoxville, Tenn. while moving his family to a plantation in Ala., which had been purchased the previous year.

(S.C.A. ROGERS Memoirs).

The will of ELIZABETH BERNARD ROGERS, the mother, was proven Nov. 19, 1821 (York Co. Will Bk. No. 10, p. 386). She names as her heirs:

(1) ALLEN CHAPMAN, her grandson.
(2) JOHN A. ROGERS, her son.
(3) ELIZABETH TOMPKINS, her daughter.

A year later, JOHN A. ROGERS II) died and his will was proven Dec. 16, 1822 (York Co., Will Bk. No. 10, p. 429). His heirs were:

(1) ROSEY CRAWFORD, his niece and dau. of his deceased brother, WILLIAM A. ROGERS. It was this ROSEY CRAWFORD who came to Texas after the Civil War to make her home with her brother, SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS. She brought the ring with the ROGERS Crest, which has been lost.
(2) ALLEN CHAPMAN'S dau., ELIZABETH CHAPMAN, who was JOHN'S great niece.
(3) EDMUND THOMAS, relations not stated.
(4) Wife, MARY, to have the use of his entire remaining estate during her lifetime. After her death, the estate was to be sold and the proceeds were to go to:
(5) The five youngest children of his deceased brother, WILLIAM A. ROGERS II).

Records Indicate that this money became available for these heirs of his brother in 1836, but it is possible that it was not received by those for whom it was intended.

After residing in York Co. and its vicinity for nearly two hundred years, we see, in two brief years, all the members of this immediate family disappear from the Va. scene unless JOHN ROGERS, son of WILLIAM A. ROGERS II) remained in Va. when his family moved to Alabama.

Later records in York Co. prove that the ADENSTONE heritage continued to be recognized in the names of ROGERS there.

It is possible that JOHN ADDUSTON ROGERS and WILLIAM ADDUSTON ROGERS, sons of ADDUSTON and MARY, remained and reared families there.

The children of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS II) will constitute the seventh generation included in "We Cousins."

WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS II) himself was born July 15, 1769; m. (1) and had four or five children, including ROSEY, by his first wife; m. (2) Mar. 18, 1800 SARAH MORGAN of York-Hampton Parish (Marriage Bk. II, p. 302); d. Dec. 4, 1820 near Knoxville, Tenn.

Seventh Generation

Children of WILLIAM A. ROGERS II) by his first wife; ROSE POWELL, dau. of SEYMORE POWELL:

1. JOHN A. ROGERS III), no record of him is found in Ala. so it is presumed that he remained in Gloucester Co., Va. when his family moved to Ala. (Gloucester Record mostly destroyed).
2. WILLIAM A. ROGERS III) b. probably 1797; m. (1) Nov. 20, 1819 CAROLINE THOMPSON in Madison Co., Ala. (Marriage Bk. II, p. 389 Madison Co.) (This indicates that his father, after buying the plantation and slaves in Alabama, left young WILLIAM A. in charge while he returned to Virginia to close his business there and bring his family); m. (2) Apr. 16, 1845 ELIZABETH DANCE in Morgan Co., Ala. (Bk. A. p. 481). Children of last marriage: ANN, b. 1847; ALEXANDER, b. 1850: RICHARD, b. 1852. (U.S. 1860 Census)

   The fragmentary records of Gloucester Co., Va. prove the DANCE family also resided there. They were probably old neighbors. WILLIAM A. ROGERS III) acted as guardian of his five sons, who were all minors in 1836 when they, as heirs of WILLIAM A. ROGERS, inherited property from a JOHN A. ROGERS in Virginia. His son, WILLIAM A. ROGERS IV) m. Nov. 20, 1839 LUCY JANE GRANTLAND in Morgan Co., Ala. (Marriage Bk. A., p. 39).
3. ROSEY LILLIE ROGERS, b. Sept. 2, 1795; m. Nov. 22, 1810 to SAMUEL CRAWFORD, who was 25 years her senior, and for whom her brother, SAMUEL CRAWFORD ADUSTON ROGERS, was named and baptized on her wedding day. One of her sons, a Captain in the Confederate Army was awarded a sword for his gallantry in defense of Richmond.

   ROSEY LILLIE CRAWFORD came to Texas shortly after the Civil War, bringing with her a young grandson, JOHN CLOPTON CRAWFORD. (See CRAWFORD family next generation.)
4. ANNE ROGERS, afterwards Mrs. HART (Second administrator to estate of WILLIAM A. ROGERS II) was JOHN T. HART - Madison Co., Ala. Records).
5. HARRIET ROGERS died at 17 years; never married. Evidently died before 1827 when the mother and 2 younger daughters went to live in Morgan Co. with son, ALEXANDER. (S.C.A. ROGERS Memoirs).

Issue of second marriage of WILLIAM A. ROGERS to SARAH MORGAN.

We do not know the birth dates nor the order of birth of these children. Circuit Court, Case Number 31, page 19, Madison Co., Ala. - SARAH ROGERS petition for her dower, states that WILLIAM A. ROGERS departed this life and left 8 children. All of her children would have been minors, since she had been married to WILLIAM A. ROGERS

less than 21 years

The order given below is the order in which they are named in the S.C.A. ROGERS Memoirs:

6. ALEXANDER A. ROGERS, b. about 1801; m. July 31, 1832 SUSAN MILLER (Bk. 4, p. 142 Madison Co., Ala.) After the death of his father and loss of their property, ALEXANDER went to learn the trade of a Carriage maker. Not later than 1827, he moved to Decatur, Morgan Co., Ala.; taking with him his mother and younger sisters, SARAH MARIA and MARY SUSAN. SUSAN ROGERS, wife of ALEXANDER, born 1 Feb. 1818; d. 27 Nov. 1853, buried Old Cemetery in Athens, Ala.
7. GEORGE WASHINGTON ADUSTON (Called Washington) ROGERS. G.W.A. ROGERS m. (2) Sept. 3, 1847 CAROLINE V. STRAIN (Bk. A, p. 533 Morgan Co., Ala.) G.W.A. ROGERS, d. in 1852, named his mother, SARAH M. ROGERS, and his brother, HENRY A. ROGERS, his heirs. Will was witnessed by W. A. ROGERS and H.A.I. DANCE, but was contested, probably by his children, and nullified because it was said not to have sufficient witnesses, m. (1) and had: CHARLES b. 1839; IZABELL b. 1841; FLORA, b. 1845; MARY b. 1846.
8. ELISHA T. A. ROGERS, b. before 1810; m. Dec. 1, 1832 MARGARET ANN KIMBELL in Morgan Co., Ala. (Marriage Bk. A, p. 218). He left a will and made his son, ELISHA T. A., JR. his executor; SAMUEL, his younger brother, records that ELISHA was the handsome one, and spoiled favorite of the women of the family.
9. SAMUEL CRAWFORD ADUSTON ROGERS, b. June 18, 1810 in Gloucester Co., Va.; m. (1) Jan. 4, 1829 in Morgan Co., Ala., FRANCES MARY WHITE, (Marriage Bk. A. p. 144), dau. of JESSE WHITE and MARY MENEFEE WHITE; m. (2) in Texas, in 1835 LUCINDA HARDY; m. (3) Sept. 14, 1851 in Jackson Co., Tex. MARY EVELYN EVANS, dau. of JESSE EVANS and his wife, RUTH PRIDE; d. Feb. 13, 1892 in Jackson Co., in his eighty-first year.
10. SARAH MARIA ROGERS, b. 1816; m. 1836 in Morgan Co., Ala. WILLIAM FORD b. 1811, (Marriage Bk., Vol., A, p. 288) Had before 1850; MARY b. 1843, FRANK b. 1845, WASHINGTON FORD b. 1847.
11. HENRY A. ROGERS, nothing known of him except that he was living in 1852 and was named devisee of the will of his brother G.W.A. ROGERS, who d. in Decatur, Ala.
12. FRANKLIN ROGERS joined his brother, SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, in Texas; m. Mar. 10, 1842 in Jackson Co., Tex. ELIZA JANE WHITSON.
13. MARY SUSAN ROGERS m. ——— LIGON.

In his memoires, SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS makes the statement that his mother, SARAH MORGAN, was French. This could mean that she was of French extraction, but actually, in the 1850 census of Morgan Co., Ala. where SARAH ROGERS, age 68, is shown as a member of the household of WILLIAM S. FORD and his wife SARAH MARIA, it is recorded that she was born in France.

MARIA SARAH or SARAH MARIA, wife of WILLIAM FORD was the sister of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and there is every reason to believe that this SARAH ROGERS, was the mother of same.

This belief is made fact by the statement by said ROGERS in the 1880 census of Jackson Co. Texas that his mother was born in France.

This does not necessarily mean that SARAH'S father was an immigrant, though that may be true. There is a possibility that MORGAN was a sea-faring man, and may have been in France with his family, at the time of the birth of this daughter who was eighteen when she married WILLIAM A. ROGERS III) in 1800, so born 1782.

The records of Norfolk and Southampton counties lying hard-by York Co. and accessable for brief travel by water, are replete with MORGAN records many of them of WILLIAM MORGANS. Because of their accessibility to waterways many of the inhabitants of this area engaged in some vocation related to the sea, and it was not unusual for a sea captain to take his wife to sea with him.

We know that the parents of SARAH MORGAN ROGERS were WILLIAM and SARAH MORGAN because there are no other MORGAN in the York Co. records during the 1790 to 1810 era, few records concerning them and no child other than SARAH even mentioned.

Since the first census and the one of 1800 were burned when the British took the national capital in the War of 1812, the census of 1810 and 1820 of York and all surrounding counties were examined. Only SARAH MORGAN, living alone in York Co., is shown in these records. From this we know that at that date, 1810, SARAH was a widow.

On 16 April 1804, WILLIAM and SARAH MORGAN of York Co. gave deed of trust to WM. MACKINDER and JOHN BURCHER. (D. Bk. 7 p. 451 York Co.)

A letter dated 20 Oct. 1800 from WM. NELSON, Supt. of Quarantine, recommending WM. MORGAN as his replacement, was addressed to the then governor of Virginia and it stated that in regard to the quarantine between Norfolk and the other ports of the state, that a definite place for inspection should be marked out for the port of Yorktown and recommended that the middle of the York River, opposite the mouth of Wormley Cr., be established as the place of inspection.

In tending his resignation as Supt. of Quarentine because of frequent absence from the town, NELSON recommended Mr. WM. MORGAN, "who is always in place and who will faithfully execute the duties of office."

From a story concerning his Grandmother MORGAN, in the Memoires of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, we know that she lived with his mother's family in Alabama.

In the "Dictionary of Biographies of Ala." in Vol. IV p. 1460 is one pertaining to JOHN ADUSTIN ROGERS, merchant and farmer of Sumpter Co. who was born 1 Sept. 1861 in that county. His father CHARLES McPHERSON ADUSTON ROGERS was also a native of that co. and served in the Civil War. His grandfather was ALEXANDER ADUSTON ROGERS and his grandmother SARAH JOLLY ROGERS. He was the great-grandson of WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS and SARAH McPHERSON ROGERS.

This is, of necessity, the lineage of a grandson of ALEXANDER, brother of SAMUEL of Jackson Co. Texas, but it doesn't agree with the testimony of the latter that his mother was SARAH MORGAN which is proved to be a fact by the marriage bond of WM. A. ROGERS and SARAH MORGAN, spinster, recorded in York Co. Va. in 1800. But this biography cannot be entirely discounted because MACK ROGERS, son of SAMUEL C. A., was in reality named SAMUEL McPHERSON ROGERS. (1880 Census).

The answer may lie in a second marriage for SARAH MORGAN SR., mother of SARAH MORGAN, wife of WILLIAM A. ROGERS. SARAH, the latter was 18 when she married in1800 and was only 38 on 4 Dec. 1820 when she was widowed. Her mother, SARAH, could reasonably have been only 55 years of age for she appears to have had only the one child.

In ROGERS Memoires, he tells of his mother and two younger sisters moving from Madison Co., Ala. and living in Decatur with his brother ALEXANDER in 1827. No mention is made of the grandmother who was part of the household a few years earlier and very likely she had married a Mr. McPHERSON, who must have been held in esteem by her grandchildren who gave his name to their sons.

JOHN A. ROGERS, her great-greatgrandson, of Sumpter Co. Ala., apparently did not know that SARAH, the wife of WILLIAM A. ROGERS, mother of ALEXANDER, was not the daughter of McPHERSON, but was of an earlier marriage of her mother, to WM. MORGAN.

SARAH MORGAN ROGERS was born in France 1782 or 1783 near the close of the American Revolution, her parents later making their home at Yorktown Va., the scene of the final American and French victory over the British forces.

Perhaps theirs is another case where the foreign soldier who assisted the American colonist fell in love either with the land or a lass of the land and eventually migrated to the new world.

Eighth Generation ROGERS

I. Complied from the Family Bible of SAMUEL CRAWFORD and his wife ROSEY LILLY ROGERS dau. of WM. ADUSTON ROGERS and his first wife, ROSE POWELL, dau. of SEYMOUR POWELL, who died in 1782, and his wife JANE.

SAMUEL CRAWFORD, son of MOSES and RACHEL CRAWFORD of Hawfield, Orange Co., N.C. b. 1 Sept. 1770; d. 8 Oct. 1857; m. in Mathews Co., Va., by the Rev. Dr. SMITH, 22 Oct. 1810 ROSEY LILLY ROGERS, dau. of WILLIAM ADUSTIN ROGERS and his first wife, ROSE POWELL, of Gloucester Co., Va.; b. 2 Sept. 1795; d. 11 Oct. 1874 at the home of her brother, SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS near Texana, Texas. Issue:

1. WILLIAM ADDUSTIN ROGERS CRAWFORD, first son of SAMUEL and ROSEY CRAWFORD, b. 11 Feb. 1812 in Gloucester Co., Va.
2. DAVID PORTER CRAWFORD, b. 17 Sept. 1814 in Petersburg, Va.; d. 3 Oct. 1822. (first of that name)
3. SAMUEL MOSES CRAWFORD b. 9 Dec. 1816 in Petersburg, Va.
4. JOHN POWELL ROGERS CRAWFORD, b. 8 Mar. 1819 in Petersburg, Va.; d. 2 Feb. 1867 in Washington City (D.C.).
5. JANE POWELL CRAWFORD b. 8 April 1821 at Petersburg, Va.; d. 3 July 1832 of scarlet fever.
6. ROSA ROGERS CRAWFORD b., in Richmond, Va. 1 Sept. 1823; d. 20 June 1832 of scarlet fever.
7. DAVID PORTER CRAWFORD (Second son of that name) b. 1 Jan. 1827 in Petersburg, Va. at 1 P.M.
   REMARK: He was born on the first day of the year, the first day of the month, the first day of the week and the first hour of the afternoon -- may he be a man, first in integrity.
   DAVID PORTER CRAWFORD, second of that name d. 11 Dec. 1850; m. 28 Aug. 1848 MARY WINIFRED JENKINS d. 1 Aug. 1853, dau. of TURNER JENKINS of Warren Co., N.C.;
   (1) ROSEY PORTER CRAWFORD, dau. and only child of DAVID PORTER CRAWFORD and his wife, MARY WINIFRED CRAWFORD, d. 6 Mar. 1851 age 3 months.
8. ELIZA FRANCES CRAWFORD b. 4 April 1829; d. 3 July 1832 of scarlet fever (third daughter of SAMUEL and ROSY CRAWFORD to die of scarlet fever in 2 week period)
9. SEYMOUR VIAL CRAWFORD b. 28 Aug. 1832; d. 12 April 1862; m. 21 March 1854, in the Gothic Church in the city of Richmond, ELIZABETH CORNELIA, dau. of WILLIAM and SALINA CLOPTON. Issue:
   (1) JOHN CLOPTON CRAWFORD b. 2 Jan. 1855; d. 10 July 1933 at Ganado, Texa;s m. 19 Oct. 1887 QUINTINE DICKIE by Rev. J. S. GRAHAM. Issue:

A. SARAH CORNELIA CRAWFORD, b. 30, Aug. 1888; d. as a child.
B. IDA CAMILLE CRAWFORD b. 9 Nov. 1880; d. 26 Sept. 1950; m. 8 April 1917 WM. OSCAR SMITH; no issue.

(2) IDA SAMUELA CRAWFORD, b. 19 Mar. 1858 in Richmond, Va.

(3) MARY CAMILLE CRAWFORD b. 30 July 1860; d. 10 July 1861 at Ashland Hanover Co., Va. ELIZABETH CORNELIA CLOPTON CRAWFORD, widow of SEYMORE VIAL, m. (2) in Richmond Va., 2 Nov. 1873 WILLIAM G. SALLEE.

The will of SEYMORE POWELL of York Co. Va. father of ROSE, first wife of WILLIAM A. ROGERS II) was recorded in Book 22, p. 534 York Co. wills. It was dated 6 January 1776 and was proved 20 May 1782 by the oath of DAVID JAMESON and was further proved 19 Aug. 1782 by the oath of THOS. GEBBONS who with JAMESON and CORBIN GRIFFIN were the witnesses, thereunto.

I, SEYMORE POWELL, lend to my dearly beloved wife, JANE, during her natural life my land which lies north or northeast of the road which runs through it; also any 10 negroes she may choose and also stock.

I, also lend to my said wife, the use of my house at the water side in York Town until she can prepare a house and proper conveniences on the land (the frame house to be sold). Also all the rest of slaves, stock, goods, wares and merchandize, whatsoever to be sold, my wife to have 1/8 part and the rest to be divided among my children; MARY, THOMAS, SEYMORE, JOHN, ROSE, WILLIAM and JANE; the money then to be put out on good bonds and securities and the interest used to educate and care for children.

Wife and friend, DAVID JAMESON excts.

Sept. Court York Co. Sept. 1782, probate granted JANE POWELL with WM. A. ROGERS and WM. MOSS Securities.

II. Descendants of WILLIAM A. ROGERS of Gloucester Co. Va. and his second wife SARAH MORGAN.

Issue of S.C.A. ROGERS and his first wife FRANCES MARY WHITE, b. Nov. 22, 1814; m. Jan. 4, 1829 in Ala; d. 1833 in Texas:

1. MARTHA CATHERINE ROGERS, b. 1829 in Ala.; m. (1) HENRY MONTAGUE JACKSON; m. (2) ALRED EVANS.
2. WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS, b. 1831; d. about 1834 in Texas.

Issue of second marriage in 1835 to LUCINDA HARDY:

3. JOHN ROGERS, b. 1843; enlisted in Confederate Army 12 Oct. 1861 as a Private in Co. K 2nd Texas Infantry; d. 15 June 1862 in Service.

(ADOLPH GARMON ROGERS, an adopted son, went also to the Confederate Army and was killed in battle.)

Issue of S.C.A. ROGERS and his third wife MARY EVELYN EVANS, b. Sept. 15, 1835; d. May 2, 1912 at Uvalde, Texas; buried at Ganado:

4. WASHINGTON MONTAGUE ROGERS, b. 1853; d. about 1868.
5. ROSA RUTH ROGERS, b. Aug. 11, 1855 Ganado, Texas; d. June 17, 1941 at Uvalde, Texas; m. Feb. 20, 1873 EDWARD LEROY WITT, b. Mar. 26, 1846 in Dallas Co., Texas; d. Apr. 26, 1909, son of PRESTON and HARRIET HUFFMAN WITT.
6. SUSAN ROGERS, b. about 1858; d. 1871.
7. FRANK WHITE ROGERS, b. May 24, 1859 in Jackson Co.; d. 1927 in Victoria, Texas; m. Jan. 3, 1883 MARY ATKINSON, b. Aug. 31, 1850; d. July 20, 1936 at Edna, Texas, dau. of WILLIAM ATKINSON.
8. CLARK OWEN ROGERS, b. Feb. 21, 1863; d. April 1958; m. May 22, 1887 IDA LOU BABCOCK, b. Aug. 17, 1869 d. July 17, 1947 at Ganado, Texas.
9. SAMUEL MACK ROGERS, b. July 4, 1865; d. Aug. 31, 1907; m. Dec. 20, 1893 NETTIE McGOWAN, b. Jan. 9, 1874 at Hattisburg, Miss.; d. June 17, 1853 at San Antonio, Texas.
10. LIZZIE LAURA ROGERS, b. Dec. 24, 1868; d. Mar. 12, 1932 in Houston, Texas; m. Dec. 9, 1885 THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND II), son of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I) and his wife MARY ELIZABETH HODGES.
11. EMMA ROGERS, b. Sept. 1, 1871; d. 18 Feb. 1964; m. Dec. 8, 1889 WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND II), brother of T. S. SUTHERLAND II).
12. MINNIE MALISSA ROGERS, b. Apr. 8, 1874; d. 23 June 1959; m. Oct. 21, 1891 ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND I), brother of the husbands of her two sisters.

It will be noted that S.C.A. ROGERS dropped the middle name ADENSTONE in this eighth generation. He did this under the misguided belief that ADENSTONE had been originally used, after a quarrel and rift in the family, to designate one branch from the other. He felt it was not right to continue the quarrel after 200 years! Small wonder they had forgotten why they originally used the name!

III. BENJAMINE FRANKLIN A. ROGERS born in Va., brother of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, married in Jackson Co. Texas, Mar. 10, 1842, ELIZA JANE WHITSON (Vol. A-B p. 17) b. in England died Feb. 4, 1869 daughter of ——— WHITSON and wife ——— HOBBY. Children:

1. HENRY ELLIOTT A. ROGERS, b. April 23, 1843 at Edna, Jackson Co. Texas; died Mar. 17, 1923 at Sabinal, Uvalde Co., Texas; m. 1868 MARY ANN HARLAN.
2. MARY SUSAN ROGERS b. Feb. 24, 1847 at Edna, Jackson Co. Texas; d. Apr. 13, 1913 at Dunn, Scurry, Texas.
3. JAMES P. ROGERS b. 1848; d. Nov. 10, 1872 at Edna, Jackson Co. Texas
4. SARAH LUCINDA b., Dec. 19, 1849 at Edna, Texas d. May 13, 1945 at Roby, Texas; m. Aug. 19, 1875 OLIVER RASMUS ETHEREDGE.
5. BENJAMINE FRANKLIN JR., b. Apr. 9, 1856 at Edna, Texas; d. Sept. 3, 1926 at Sweetwater, Texas; married EMMA DICKIE.
6. WILLIAM C. b. 1860; d. Mar. 25, 1879 at Edna, Jackson Co., Texas.
7. MARTHA CATHERINE b. Mar. 2, ———; m. FLETCHER HARPER; buried at Colorado City, Texas.
8. ANNIE ELIZA b. Mar. 4, ———; m. RICHARD WILKERSON; buried at El Centro, Calif.

Note:

Information from ANN GRAHAM, Rt. 2, Sweetwater, Texas.

ELIZA JANE WHITSON had 4 sisters: POLLY ANN, PHOEBE ANN, CYNTHIA ANN and MOLLY. MOLLY married BOB MILBY in Jackson Co. in 1842. CYNTHIA m. a Mr. RYMES.

SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS

SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, at the insistance of his children, wrote a brief history of his early life from which most of the information of the seventh generation, that is not specified as documental, was taken.

He started it with this statement.

"I was born in the state of Virginia, Gloucester Co. 18 June 1810. My parents were WILLIAM and SARAH ROGERS. My father was of English descent, my mother, French. They (really he) were the parents of thirteen children." Then he names the children, as given in their generation.

In a later paragraph, he says, "Up to my tenth year, I was raised the child of affluence, as my parents were quite wealthy. In the year 1820, my father removed from Virginia to Madison County, Alabama. On our way, we stopped at Knoxville, Tennessee where my father died from a broken blood vessel. That was my first lesson in how insecure were all earthly things.

My mother came on to Alabama and occupied a plantation that my father had purchased at twenty-one thousand dollars. There were about one hundred slaves belonging to the family.

My father's estate was administered by a man who defrauded us out of everything we had and then went to Cuba."

This is quite literally true. Madison County Records show that SARAH MORGAN ROGERS, after her husband's death, applied for dower and guardianship of her children's property. Some months later, she again appears in court and asks that her petition be cancelled.

When asked by the court why she wished to take that action, she replied that the administrator wished to recommend a better way.

The petition for dower was cancelled as requested and the way left open for him to defraud her, not only of the Alabama property, but of holdings retained in Virginia as well.

Madison County, Alabama records show that he was successful to the extent that even the household furniture and goods sold at auction and SARAH and WILLIAM A. ROGERS III), now married, were forced to buy the few things which they needed or cherished most and which they could afford.

SARAH ROGERS and her children, heirs of WILLIAM A. ROGERS II) sued for recovery of their property. The case was in the courts for years, finally being taken to the Alabama Supreme Court, but nothing was ever recovered.

Trustingly and in ignorance of the consequences, SARAH ROGERS in withdrawing her petition for dower, had given the administrator of her deceased husband's estate, legal power to defraud her and her children of everything they owned.

SAMUEL ROGERS says: "In my fourteenth year, ELISHA and myself rented 60 acres of land from a man by the name of HOPSON, for which we paid $5 per acre rent.

Old Buck, a negro servant, went to my mother and said, "Missus, I must go with them, they are young and inexperienced and I am old. I can cook and keep house for them." If ever there was a person who acted the part of a mother toward children, she did."

Later 1827: "About this time, I visited my mother, who was living with my brother ALEXANDER, in Decatur, Alabama. My mother told me that a Mr. TOM SUTHERLAND (youngest son of JOHN and AGNES SUTHERLAND) was dying in the house next to her and that she wanted me to go there with her.

Among those weeping around that bed was a young lady and, strange to say, she took perfect possession of me at my first sight of her. This was Miss MARY WHITE, who became my wife, and mother of two of my children.

The rest is the Texas story. SAMUEL ROGERS came to Texas with his father-in-law, JESSE WHITE, who was in

charge of the Water Contingent. He says, "We started from Decatur on the Tennessee River on the night of December 2, 1830 at 11: o'clock. The entire inhabitance of the town stayed up to bid us good by. About the sadness of the parting with mother, brothers and sisters, I will say nothing, as parting is one condition of our existence here, but I have never seen but two of my brothers since then, HENRY and FRANKLIN." His sister, ROSEY CRAWFORD, came to live with him in her later years.

On the centennial Marker erected in Jackson County, Texas to commemorate the part SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS had in the Texas Revolution for Independence is engraved:

"S. C. A. ROGERS, a soldier of the Texas Revolution, participated in the Siege of San Antonio in 1835, Secretary of the Lavaca and Navidad meeting at Milligans Gin House, Father of Methodism in Jackson County."

In reading Taylor's "History of Jackson County," one is impressed with the persistent way in which SAMUEL ROGERS continued to help establish the cultural things of his community after having assisted in time of war to establish the independence.

He acted as Trustee of the First Methodist Church in Jackson Co. Texas and was lay pastor until 1840 when an ordained pastor was, occasionally, available. The First Methodist Church at Ganado was built on the ROGERS grant as was the first public school building erected on his property in 1878.

He and his third wife and many relatives are buried on his original grant in ROGERS Chapel Cemetery, the first Community Cemetery in Jackson Co.

His children and those of his sister ROSE CRAWFORD and his brother FRANKLIN ADUSTON ROGERS constitute the Eighth Generation of the ADENSTONE-ROGERS Chapter.

ROGERS - Ninth Generation

- Grandchildren of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his first wife FRANCES MARY WHITE m. Jan. 4, 1829; in Ala.

I. MARTHA CATHERINE ROGERS m. (1) HENRY MONTAGUE JACKSON; m. (2) about 1855 ALFRED BURTON EVANS. Issue of first marriage:

1. WILLIAM PINKNEY JACKSON, b. 1844; d. 1898; m. MELISSA CAROLINE GRIMES, b. 1851; d. 1940.
2. HENRIETTA MONTAGUE JACKSON, b. 1853; m. MATHEW WOODS GRIMES.

Issue of second marriage:

3. FRANCES MARY EVANS b. Aug. 18, 1856 in Jackson Co.; d. July 5, 1952 in San Antonio, Texas; m. BENJAMINE QUINN WARD, b. Mar. 5, 1827 Palmyra, Missouri; d. 1912 in San Antonio, Texas
4. SAMUEL ROGERS EVANS, b. Jackson Co.; d. 1926; m. ELIZABETH BRIZENDINE of Austin, Tex.; no issue.
5. CARSON JACKSON EVANS, b. Jackson Co.; May 20, 1861; d. Dec. 7, 1931 at Comanche, Tex.; m. May 11, 1893 ELIZA ANN CAULISHAW (born in England) at Trinadad, Colo.

Grandchildren of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his third wife MARY EVELYN EVANS, dau. of JESSE EVANS and RUTH PRIDE.

I. ROSA RUTH ROGERS m. Feb. 20, 1873 EDWARD LEROY WITT. Issue:

1. Child born and died Dec. 18, 1873.
2. SAMUEL PRESTON WITT, b. Mar. 8, 1875 at Ganado, Tex.; d. Jan. 26, 1938; never married.
3. LOUIS EDWARD WITT, b. June 30, 1877; d. Nov. 15, 1946; m. Dec. 28, 1905 GRACE LOUISE WILSON at Seguin Texas.
4. McLAMARA WITT, b. Oct. 3, 1879; d. 23 Oct. 1968; m. June 27, 1939 MAGGIE B. HARDCASTLE; no issue.
5. PERRY CLARK WITT, b. Feb. 28, 1882; d. 28 Jan. 1960; m. Nov. 5, 1911 RUBY JEWEL McGOWAN.
6. ROSA LEE WITT, b. June 21, 1884; d. Oct. 29, 1888.
7. MAGGIE RAY WITT, b. Oct. 14, 1887; d. Aug. 15, 1921; m. Dec. 20, 1911 WILLIAM BARNEY McFATTER I).
8. WILLIAM FRANKLIN WITT, b. May 9, 1890 at Utopia, Tex.; d. Mar. 2, 1895.
9. THOMAS LEE WITT, b. Sept. 14, 1892 in Kansas; d. 17 Oct. 1958; m. June 6,1917 HOPE GILLESPIE VICTOR.
10. JOHN BRYAN DOUGLAS WITT, b. Sept. 25, 1896; d. Sept. 10, 1900.
11. ARTHUR PLEASANT WITT, b. July 7, 1899; at Montell; d. Nov. 8, 1921; never married.

II. FRANK WHITE ROGERS, m. Jan. 3, 1883 MARY ATKINSON. Issue:

1. MARTHA ROGERS, b. Dec. 23, 1883; d. 23 Mar. 1963; m. Nov. 24, 1812 C. N. BROWN of Louis, Tex.; b. 1873; d. June 14, 1936.
2. SAMUEL WILLIAM ROGERS, b. Nov. 9, 1885; d. July 9, 1916 at Mercedes, Tex.; m. July 1, 1908 MABBIE ETTA TRAYLOR, b. Dec. 8, 1890 at Edna, Tex.
3. PEARL S. ROGERS, b. Jan. 12, 1888; m. Dec. 26, 1908 EARL F. MARTIN at Edna, Tex.
4. JOHN ROGERS, b. Dec. 7, 1890; m. June 29, 1914 GRACE MONTIER at Port Lavaca, Tex.
5. WILLIE ROGERS, b. Dec. 15, 1892; m. Aug. 31, 1910 WILLIE GEORGE GAYLE, b. Nov. 16, 1892; d. 8 Sept. 1964. Son of B. B. GAYLE I).

6. LOUIS FRANCIS ROGERS, b. Nov. 4, 1896; d. Feb. 26, 1951; m. Oct. 11, 1920 at Victoria, Tex. MARY ELIZABETH GRIFFITH, b. Jan. 12, 1892.
7. GORDON ROGERS, b. 1899; d. Apr. 4, 1942 at Taft, Tex.; m. RUTH YANCY.
8. ROSA RUTH ROGERS, b. June 1901; d. Oct. 17, 1919 at Edna, Tex.; m. but no children.
9. JEWELL ROGERS, b. 1906; m. EUGENE BIRD; d. 25 May 1965.

III. CLARK OWEN ROGERS, m. May 22, 1887 IDA LOU BABCOCK. Issue:
1. MONTIE W. ROGERS, b. May 24, 1888 at Ganado; d. Sept. 18, 1949; m. Dec. 25, 1917 MAUDE BLOOMINGTON.
2. ETHEL AGNES ROGERS, b. Nov. 16, 1890 at Ganado; m. Nov. 3, 1909 LIFFORD WILLIAMSON LANCASTER, d. 6 Aug. 1969.
3. OWEN SAMUEL ROGERS, b. Dec. 27, 1892; d. 9 May 1963; m. Nov. 27, 1920 NELLIE ROBINSON.
4. MARGARET BEATRICE ROGERS, b. Dec. 10, 1895; m. Feb. 3, 1923 CHESTER FRANKLIN SPENCER, no issue.

IV. SAMUEL MACK ROGERS, m. Dec. 20, 1893 NETTIE McGOWAN. Issue:
1. BERTHA ROGERS, b. Sept. 3, 1894 at Ganado, Texas; m. Apr. 18, 1915 H. T. (TOSS) PEACE, d. 13 Feb. 1962.
2. MARY ROGERS, b. Apr. 4, 1897; m. Mar. 10, 1918 PARVIN SPENCER d. Feb. 5, 1963; no issue.
3. LEE MACK ROGERS b. July 21, 1901; m. 1924 FRANCES NELSON at Sherman, Texas; she d. 1926. m (2)
4. FRANCIS ADOLPHO ROGERS, b. July 13, 1803 at Ganado, Texas; m. July 11, 1932 LOLA BROWN of Corpus Christi, Texas; no issue.
5. WITT ROGERS, b. Nov. 26, 1905 at Montell, Texas; m. July 17, 1953 NAN SWAYZE at Kerrville, Texas; no issue.

V. LAURA LIZZIE ROGERS, m. Dec. 9, 1885 THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND II). Issue:
1. THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND III), b. June 21, 1887; d. 3 April 1957; m. Nov. 2, 1910 MARY ELIZABETH ROBERTSON, b. 9 June 1887; d. 20 June 1950, dau. of MACKLIN and ALICE ROBERTSON of Salado, Tex.
2. Baby son b. Aug. 19, 1888; d. Aug. 22, 1888.
3. SAMUEL ROGERS SUTHERLAND b. July 17, 1889; d. Jan. 7, 1891.
4. GEORGE SUTHERLAND, b. Feb. 21, 1891; d. Aug. 2, 1904 in Nueces Canyon while riding his horse; buried in Montell, Texas.
5. MARY SUTHERLAND, b. June 20, 1892; m. LOUEN S. VICKREY, Dec. 23, 1913 at Harlingen, Tex. He died Dec. 1926.
6. JOHN WILLIAM LEE SUTHERLAND, b. Dec. 13, 1893 at Sutherland Place, "Spring Hill" in Jackson Co.; m. June 1, 1927 EULA WARD at San Marcos, Tex.
7. MINNIE BELL SUTHERLAND b. Mar. 15, 1896 in Nueces Canyon; m. Oct. 30, 1918 AULSEY K. ANDERSON at Brownsville, Tex.; m. by Rev. Ruffner.
8. LIZZIE (ELIZABETH) SUTHERLAND b. Oct. 26, 1899; d. 25 Dec. 1963; m. (1) DAVID C. DONALSON, son of Mr. & Mrs. GEORGE DONALSON of San Marcos, Tex. Nov. 4, 1921 in Belton, Tex.; m. (2) July 6, 1936 JAMES ARLING MEDLEY JR. at Harlingen, Tex. MEDLEY d. 17 Jan. 1964.
9. TALITHA FLORENCE SUTHERLAND, b. Dec. 24, 1900 in Uvalde, Tex.; m. June 1, 1926 at Belton, Tex. CHARLES EDWARD HUDSON, son of Mr. & Mrs. JAMES HARVIE HUDSON of Pine Bluff, Ark.
10. WELLS FAIRES SUTHERLAND, b. Aug. 26, 1902 at "Riverside Ranch" in Nueces Canyon; m. Feb. 28, 1926 DESSIE WOOD in Belton, Tex.
11. FRANK ROGERS SUTHERLAND, b. Jan. 22, 1904 at "Riverside Ranch," d. Apr. 19, 1957; m. June 10, 1932 at Lake Charles, La. PERLA MAE TURNEY; m. by Rev. WHITE, Methodist Minister.
12. MABLE PEARL SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 17, 1905 at "Riverside Ranch."
13. ARA SUTHERLAND, b. July 11, 1908 at "Riverside Ranch."
14. EMMA ELIZABETH (afterwards called EMMA JEAN) SUTHERLAND, b. May 18, 1910 at Salado, Tex.; m. Feb. 14, 1942 at Mineral Wells, Tex. JOSEPH TIMOTHY O'CONNELL.
15. FRANCES LUCILLE SUTHERLAND, b. Sept. 1, 1911 at Salado, Tex.; m. Jan. 7, 1937 GERALD GARMON at First Meth. Church, Houston by Rev. PAUL QUILLIAN.

Bible Record from the Family Bible of THOMAS S. SUTHERLAND II) and his wife LAURA L. ROGERS.
Future generations of this family to be found in SUTHERLAND Chapter.

Aunt ROSEY CRAWFORDS Trunk

When ROSE ROGERS CRAWFORD, eldest half-sister of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, and widow of SAMUEL CRAWFORD for whom ROGERS was named, came to Texas to make her home with her brother, she brought many

of her possessions in a big brown leather trunk which later came into possession of her niece, LAURA LIZZIE ROGERS.

Possibly it was given to her, at the time of her marriage, by her Aunt's grandson, JOHN CLOPTON CRAWFORD, who was still living with his uncles family at Ganado, Texas in 1880 and who did not marry until 1887 two years after his cousins wedding.

This trunk had been a fine trunk with its leather cover and brass studded straps. It's lid was rounded and it had two trays.

According to the early memory of this compiler Aunt ROSEY'S trunk had an air of mystery and surprise, for in it her mother stored her keepsakes and treasures. Sometimes when she opened it we children would gather around, peering at the contents of that first tray.

On one such occasion, after admiring a crushed gold covered crown and a wreath of, once white but now yellowed, artificial flowers she asked the meaning of these relicks.

Then was unfolded an exciting story which had its beginning in the jousting tournaments of the middle ages.

During that period, when Feudalism held sway, for the young people of the aristocracy, a system of training, known as chivalry, took the place of school and college. It had little to do with intellectual life but was for the purpose of giving children, especially boys, training in horsemanship, the handling of weapons and social behavior.

His training for knighthood started at the age of seven when he was sent to the castle of some famous nobleman. There, until the age of fourteen, he served his Lord and Lady as a page. He received religious instruction from the Chaplain, training in arms from the squires and to honor and protect all women. He also learned to sing, to play the lute, to hunt and to hawk. But above all else he learned to ride a horse.

At fourteen he became a squire and his training in weapons and horsemanship was completed as he accompanied his lord at all times, keeping his armor burnished; lending aid, should the lord be outmatched; lending his horse, should the master lose his own and bearing his body away, if he were wounded or killed.

At this age he also learned to carve at table.

When he was twenty-one, if he had done well as a page and squire, the young man was made a knight. This was a solemn and glorious occasion. The candidate for knighthood knelt or stood all night in prayer before the alter on which lay the precious armor which he would don tomorrow.

There, in the courtyard, in the presence of assembled knights and ladies, his armor was buckled on and he knelt to receive the accolade and to hear, "In the name of God and St. Michael and St. George, I dub thee Knight; be brave and loyal."

Frequently on the occasion of knighting, the lord by whom the knight had been trained and whom he had served for fourteen years, gave a tournament. This was often a very gorgeous and extravagant form of entertainment.

Knights for miles around were invited to come and take part. In the mornings after attending mass, they would go to the tourney field. Here, the jousts between the knights were fought, sometimes by two opposing knights and sometimes by whole companies.

Along the sides of the field were handsome pavillions filled with beautiful ladies, gay young pages and bedecked nobles. The knights were resplendent in shining armor, and about the helmet of each was tied the favor his lady had given him. He fought to do her honor as well as himself credit. (Compton's Encyclopedia)

When the cavaliers invaded Virginia in the seventeenth century, they brought with them their traditions, their coats of arms, their horses and their tournaments, somewhat modified by time and custom.

In 1830, when the Alabama Settlement, headed by GEORGE SUTHERLAND V) and JESSE WHITE, transplanted themselves in the Texas Wilderness, they also brought with them their traditions, their horses and their modified version of the tournament brought down from the middle ages by their fore-parents - across an ocean and now half-way across another continent.

But about the golden crown and wreath of once white roses - the mother, then all of forty-five and wed since two weeks prior to her seventeenth birthday, blushed and admitted that these were mementoes of her long past girlhood.

It seems that the then battered golden crown, had graced her brow when she had reigned as queen of the Tournament Ball and she had worn the crown of roses when she served as maid of honor for another queen.

Then she explained that the winner of the 19th century tournament had the privilege of naming the young lady of his choice to reign at the ball held that evening and those who won the next several places chose the fortunate ones who served as her maids of honor.

Once in her brief girlhood she had been chosen queen and once maid of honor.

Did Papa win that crown for her? Again she blushed - No, it was bestowed upon her by his younger brother, Uncle BOB. And the wreath? A then familiar name of a cousin by now slipped the memory of this compiler, 57 years thereafter.

She maintained that her husband was second to none as a horseman; could drive a team or ride a horse where other men would falter but he was nine years her senior and perhaps was away at school or on more serious business

at that time.

R. L. SUTHERLAND SR. of Uvalde in 1870, son of this Uncle BOB, remembers later tournaments in which his father participated, as a middle aged man, challenging the younger squires.

This modified event, handed down by horseman from one generation to another for five hundred years or more, had lost much of its brilliance and pomp but it was still an exciting social-event and the pioneers for miles around came to see the racing.

The field on which the tournament was held were various lengths with poles and cross-bars every fifty yards and from the cross bar on each pole, steel rings were lightly fastened.

Each rider on his fastest and favorite steed was equipped with a slender lance which had a handguard. The judges fixed a minimum speed at which the course must be run or the rider disqualified.

The declared winner was the rider who ran the course in the shortest time and caught on his lance the largest number of rings, holding and not losing any as he tried for the latter ones. Some of the rings were uniform and about two inches in diameter but on other fields, the rings got progressively smaller and varied as much as an inch from largest to smallest.

A tournament race was usually for eight or ten rings but on smaller fields they were taken in relays.

A tournament was the finest of Social Occasions especially when it was followed by the tournament ball, presided over by the queen and her ladies in waiting.

Later Camp-Meetings vied with this form of entertainment and gradually superceeded them, perhaps because they emphasized the spiritual.

In the old trunk was another memento of the past brought from Va. to Texas by a loving mother - this was an old masonic apron which had been presented to SEYMORE VAIL CRAWFORD when he became a master mason in 1857 in Petersburg, Va. in his twenty-first year.

The apron is hand-painted on satin, lined with linen and finished with a narrow pleated ruffle of satin ribbon. It now is displayed in the Masonic Temple at Waco, Texas, placed there by the family of a lately deceased friend to whom it was presented by the compiler and her husband, when he was elevated to Junior Grand Master of Texas Masons, with the understanding that it be given for display in the Temple, during his term as Master Grand Mason. It hangs there now prematurely, because within a fortnight this friend was deceased.

Perhaps ROSEY CRAWFORD was also able to bring to Texas in her trunk a sword which had been presented to her son JOHN POWELL ROGERS CRAWFORD for his bravery in the defense of Richmond during the War Between the States.

No doubt, tucked away among her other treasures was the ring bearing the crest of the ROGERS Coat of Arms and used for sealing letters and documents.

This ring, designed for a man and, no doubt, too large for her was probably given to her by her Uncle JOHN A. ROGERS, who, himself childless, left $1000. to his niece, ROSEY CRAWFORD, in 1822.

The sword is 39 inches in length. On the sheath is the Latin inscription "Sic. Semper Tyrannis."

Engraved also on the sheath is the tribute to CRAWFORD. "Presented to Capt. JOHN P.R. CRAWFORD by his friends, not as an act of homage to man, but as a testimony to Merit and Worth."

On the sword itself among etchings the inscription reads, "To mark the path of Civil Liberty and to perpetuate the principles of 76."

Data for this family from the Bible Records of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND II) and LAURA ROGERS SUTHERLAND now in possession of Mrs. CHARLES E. HUDSON, San Benito, Texas.

Future generations of this family found in Ninth and Later generations of SUTHERLAND.

VI. EMMA MARIAH ROGERS, m. Dec. 8, 1889 WILLIAM DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND II). Issue:

1. JOHN D. SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 20, 1890 in Jackson Co., Texas; m. Sept. 4, 1912 ELSIE JOSEPHINE STOVALL, b. Mar. 5, 1894 in Marshall Co., Tex.
2. WILLIAM D. SUTHERLAND, JR., b. Jan. 21, 1893; m. July 15, 1920 in Travis Co., Tex. ELIZABETH CROCKETT, b. Mar. 11, 1901.
3. SAMUEL SHELTON SUTHERLAND, b. Apr. 30, 1895; d. 2 June 1963 m. July 30, 1919 at Victoria, Tex. CARLISLE CRAWFORD, b. July 29, 1898 at Victoria, Tex.
4. THOMAS ROBERT SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 24, 1898; m. Aug. 20, 1938 NORA BELL FARLEY at Carrizo Springs, Tex.
5. LAURA MAE SUTHERLAND, b. June 4, 1901; d. 22 Oct. 1963; m. Aug. 8, 1920 at Uvalde, Tex. CHESTER KING, b. Jan. 15, 1898.
6. GEORGE GAYLE SUTHERLAND, b. Apr. 24, 1904; m. Mar. 5, 1927 at Chilton, Tex. PEARL MAXEY, b. Jan. 19, 1907.
7. VIRGIL SUTHERLAND, b. June 16, 1906; m. Jan. 1, 1930 at Montell, Texas; VELMA SCOTT, b. Apr. 12, 1910 at Gonzales.
8. VIOLA SUTHERLAND, twin of VIRGIL, b. June 16, 1906; m. Aug. 9, 1932 at Uvalde, Texas; RUFUS JAMES GREEN, b. May 8, 1903.

9. HARRY KEITH SUTHERLAND, b. Oct. 15, 1908; d. 5 Dec. 1958; m. in Kerrville, Tex. on June 19, 1936 LILLA ELOISE SCOTT, b. Nov. 22, 1912 at Gonzales, Tex.
10. MALCOLM SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 17, 1910; m. (1) CHARLOTTE GELEIN; m. (2) DOROTHY STAHE, b. Dec. 23, 1923 at Victoria, Tex.
11. EDWARD LESESNE SUTHERLAND, b. Jan. 17, 1913; m. Oct. 3, 1936 at Blanco, Tex. MELITTA EMMA GOETH, b. May 20, 1915 in Blanco Co.

Future Generations of this family will be found in Ninth and Later Generations of SUTHERLAND.

VII. MINNIE MALISSA ROGERS m. Oct. 21, 1891 ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND. Issue:

1. ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND II), b. Jan. 2, 1893; m. (1) Feb. 14, 1919 THELMA LEWIS; m. (2) Nov. 12, 1943 JENNIE SHIRLEY.
2. BETTIE SUTHERLAND, b. May 10, 1894; m. Oct. 18, 1916 at Uvalde, Tex. JOHN EMMETT CRAFT, b. May 22, 1892 in Denton Co., Tex.; d. Jan. 9, 1941; buried Flower Mound Cemetery in Denton Co.
3. FRANCIS WELLS SUTHERLAND, b. Aug. 30, 1896; m. June 27, 1936 at San Antonio, Tex. LORENA DAVENPORT, b. Utopia, Tex.; Feb. 2, 1905.
4. ROGERS SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 26, 1898; m. Nov. 1924, HAZEL BLAKE, at Dupaw, Okla., b. May 24, 1903 at McKenney, Tex.; no issue.
5. FAIRES SUTHERLAND, b. June 1, 1900, Ganado, Tex.; m. (1) June 15, 1923 EDNA MORTON at Breckenridge, Tex.; m. (2) Nov. 25, 1927 VICTORIA RICHTER' b. Dec. 13, 1907 at Buffalo, N.Y.
6. MARY ELOISE SUTHERLAND, b. July 20, 1902 at Ganado, Texas; m. Aug. 1, 1923 at Sabinal, Tex. STERLING HARPER FLY, b. Nov. 27, 1896 at Hondo, Tex.
7. HARRELL CROCKETT SUTHERLAND, b. Mar. 14, 1907; m. Aug. 26, 1931 at Columbus, Tex. EVELYN MORGAN, b. Aug. 8, 1906
8. FLORA SUTHERLAND, b. Feb. 6, 1909 at Montell, Texas; m. JOHN TURMAN ARNIM, b. Mar. 21, 1906.
9. MARGUERITE MINNIE SUTHERLAND, b. Nov. 22, 1910 at Montell, Texas; m. June 14, 1930 at Crystal City, Texas WAYNE WINN, b. Jan. 31, 1910, Bracketteville, Texas.

Future generations of this family to be found in SUTHERLAND Chapter.

The four daughters of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his third wife and their brother MACK whose marriages and children we have just recorded, all left Jackson Co. Texas not long after they had started their big families and moved to Uvalde and Edwards Co's. in the hill country and in the beautiful valley of the Neuces River, which is miscalled Neuces Canyon by the local people.

There, the husbands engaged in ranching.

The children of the three SUTHERLAND-ROGERS marriages were double-cousins and thirty-two of them lived to adulthood. Family connections were closer in that era, especially in an area so sparcely inhabited as the Neuces Canyon and this family connection has been bound closer together by the family-reunions which have been held since 1930 each year in June. At one of these gatherings 287 cousins registered for the three day reunion.

True to their generation and inclination, these ROGERS-WITT-SUTHERLAND families were a religious people.

Perhaps they were more so than some other of that day and age, for we have seen that they had a staunch and blessed Christian heritage.

The ROGERS cousins, descended from JOHN ROGERS, the Martyr, from JOSEPH EVANS, a Methodist minister, and from SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, father of Methodism in Jackson Co. Texas, and lay-preacher of his community.

The SUTHERLAND cousins were descendants of ABRAHAM MICHEAU and his wife SUSANNA ROCHET; French Protestants who fled persecution in France; of DAVID HODGES, Methodist Minister, who was ordained by Bishop ASBURY; and of QUIN MORTON, gifted evangelist, of whom a contemporary testified that; had he not entered the political arena, he could have had a career as an effective evangelist.

It is small wonder that this connection and many of their generation were mature and dedicated Christians, and that daily family devotionals and church attendance was important in their lives.

Their post-office was Montell, a small community which, from an early day, boasted an Episcopal Church, a small general store, and many years later a gasoline pump.

The Episcopal Church bespeaks the fact that this choice part of the hill country was early settled by a small colony of English.

About 1907 the Methodist, largely through the efforts of THOMAS S. SUTHERLAND II) and his wife, LAURA L. ROGERS, built a second small church at Montell.

However, no denomination ever furnished a minister for every Sunday of the month so both churches were used by other denominations when not in use by the ones who built them.

When a preacher was available, it was advertised first by grapevine but after about 1905 by telephone and people from miles around came to church to spend the day on Sunday.

They brought picnic lunches and after a morning service, a sumptious picnic was spread and a social time

enjoyed until around two or two-thirty when afternoon services were called, after which the families departed for their various homes.

In the summer-time when it could be arranged, they held a community camp-meeting, as they had in the coast country of Texas and as their fore-parent had in other parts of the south.

The compiler is indebted to ROBERT L. SUTHERLAND SR. of Uvalde for his memoires of Camp Meetings held in the Nueces Canyon for details of this story.

The location of the Camp Meeting he remembers most vividly, was, in what was then called Baylor Mott, located about a mile above Montell on what is now highway 55.

People came from all over the Canyon, each family making their own camp, some in tents but others camping in the open. They came in wagons, hacks, or on horse-back.

Meals were cooked over open fires and were served together, each family furnishing their part. Sometimes the men prepared a delicious bar-be-que, enough for all and these ranch housewives had, no doubt, baked at home, a good supply of cakes, which they stored in empty five gallon lard cans. The water was hauled in barrels on wagons from the nearest good well or was dipped from cool springs for drinking.

These Camp Meetings were non-denominational and ministers of various denominations were the evangelists for different meetings.

The Church Camp of today and preaching missions had their beginning in the preaching and Christian fellowship of Camp Meetings.

The preaching was held under a large tent or arbor (Shades of the Old Testament). Seats were board placed on boxes or stumps and the ground was covered with hay to keep down the dust.

Church services were held each morning and night and on Sundays during the meeting, Sunday School was held before church.

For these services, there was preaching and spirited singing of hymns and in the afternoon prayer services were held.

There is no way of estimating the number of persons who came to know Christ as their Saviour at these meetings.

"We and Ours - to God."

These revivals, which were arranged in the Nueces Canyon, periodically, were multiplied hundreds of times all over the south and perhaps that is one reason it is still known as the Bible Belt.

Christian fellowship was also a part of the Camp-Meetings.

During the time when services were not in session, the older people sat around reminiscing about earlier days and the children played many games, using whatever was at hand. Baseball was popular with older boys and some liked to whittle with their pocket knives.

There is no mention here of throwing horse-shoes or dollars and one wonders if they were considered too "worldly" for church camp.

Older young people, beginning to notice the other sex, would stroll the paths along the streams and through the hills.

No doubt, some of the romances of that era which led to marriages of Canyon young people, had their beginnings at the Camp Meetings.

ROGERS - Tenth and Later Generations

Descendants of S.C.A. ROGERS and his first wife FRANCES MARY WHITE, m. Jan. 4, 1829.

Their dau. MARTHA CATHERINE ROGERS, m. (1) HENRY MONTAGUE JACKSON; m. (2) ALFRED EVANS. Issue of first marriage.

I. WILLIAM PINKNEY JACKSON m. MELISSA GRIMES.
Had: Five children who died in Infancy.
6. HOMER HENRIETTA JACKSON, b. 1884; m. JOHN CARLTON ANDERSON. Children:
(1) HOMER LUCILLE ANDERSON; m. NEHF LOUIS LEMOINE.
Had: A. NANCY CATHERINE LEMOINE.
(2) MARIAN AGNES ANDERSON, m. (1) G. E. MORROW; m. (2) CLYDE HERBERT BREWER. Had:
A. MARVIN GENE MORROW: m. RUBY LUCILLE HICKS.
a. PHYLLIS ELAINE MORROW; b. SUSAN FAY MORROW.
B. LAURE BREWER - by second husband.
(3) JOHN CARLTON ANDERSON, Jr.
7. MARY S. (MAMIE) JACKSON, b. 1886; m. HERBERT ELWOOD BLACK. Children:
(1) HERBERT ELWOOD BLACK, Jr., b. 1913; m. BONNIE DORIS BEARDEN. Had:
A. HERBERT OWEN BLACK; B. GENE EDWARD BLACK; C. JIMMIE DOYLE BLACK; D. BONNIE MARIE BLACK; E. RUTH ANN BLACK.
(2) WILLIAM ROBERT BLACK; m. VERA CATHERINE TAYLOR. Had:

A. WM. ROBERT BLACK; B. KENNETH WAYNE BLACK; C. TERRY WADE BLACK.
(3) MARGUIRITE BLACK, m. PERSHING WINSTON CROW. Had:
A. ROBERT PERSHING CROW; B. MARGUIRITE CATHERINE CROW; C. CAROL JOYCE CROW; D. MICHALE CROW.
(4) JEWEL BLACK m. BILLY VINCENT GOULD. Had:
A. PEGGY IRENE GOULD; B. BILLY VINCENT GOULD, JR.; C. RICHARD ELWOOD GOULD; D. CHERRILL ANN GOULD.
(5) STERLING JACKSON BLACK.
8. ROSE CATHERINE JACKSON m. JAMES HUGH McCOLLOCH, b. 9 Feb. 1887; d. 23 Dec. 1967.
Child: (1) LOUISE McCOLLOCH.
9. WILLIAM LUCKY JACKSON, b. 1890; d. 23 Mar. 1967; m. LORENA MARTIN.
Child: (1) WILLIAM MASSEY JACKSON, m. June 1959, JUNE DALE ARNOLD. Have:
A. LISA MICHELLE, b. 10 June 1961; B. KERRY JACKSON b. 2 May 1964.
10. MINTA PEARL JACKSON, b. 1893; m. FRANK LOUIS DOLESH.
Child: ROSEMARY JANE DOLESH m. RICH. LEO DAERR.
Had: A. RICHARD LEO DAERR, JR.; B. ROSE MARIE DAERR; C. PATRICIA CAROL DAERR; D. SHARON MELISSA DAERR; E. DARYL FRANCIS DAERR.

II. HENRIETTA MONTAGUE JACKSON, b. 1853; m. MATHEW WOODS GRIMES, b. 1845. Had:
Three children who died as infants.
4. MARY HENRIETTA GRIMES, b. 1873; d. 1939; m. JOHN L. KENNON. Children:
(1) ALICE KENNON, d. in infancy.
(2) JOHN L. KENNON, JR. b. 1890.
(3) VASHTI KENNON, b. 1892; d. 1931.
(4) ETHEL KENNON, b. 1895; m. SAM HILL BREWER. Had:
A. LUCILLE BREWER; m. SCOTT KEY. Had: a. CAROLYN KEY; b. CATHERINE KEY.
(5) HORACE KENNON, b. 1897; m. ZELDA REEVES. Had:
A. HORACE M. KENNON, JR.
(6) WILLIS KENNON m. BILLIE PHILLIPS. Had: CAROL JEAN KENNON.
(7) MARTHA ETTA KENNON, b. 1907; d. 1947.
(8) ALTON DENNIS KENNON; m. MAGGIE ——————.
Had: A. JACK DENNIS KENNON; B. JOAN KENNON.
5. FRANCES LEVI GRIMES, b. 1870; d. 1940; m. EDWARD EUGENE WICKLUND. Children:
(1) LILLIAN RACHEL WICKLUND m. EARL BARTLETT STEEN. Had:
A. MARJORIE FRANCES STEEN, b. 1921; m. (1) CHESTER SWIDEDSKI; m. (2) JAMES ROBON WATTS. Had:
a. GERALD LONG SWIDEDSKI, b. 1941; b. HAROLD EARL WATTS, b. 1947; c. CAROLYN FRANCES WATTS, b. 1951; d. JANIS RAE WATTS, b. 1953.
B. JOHN WICKLUND STEEN: b. 1923; m. (1) BILLIE GENE ROGERS; m. (2) DOROTHY KENNEDY. Had:
a. ROBERT HEARNE STEEN, b. 1945, child of first marriage.
Children of second marriage:
b. JOHN WICHLUND STEEN, JR., b. 1948; c. STEPHENIE JANE STEEN, b. 1950; d. MARK DOUGALS STEEN, b. 1954.
C. WM. EUGENE STEEN, b. 1927; m. LILA LEE. Had:
a. KAREN STEEN, b. 1946; b. WILLIAM JEFFERY STEEN, b. 1949.
D. ELIZ. ANN STEEN, b. 1932; m. DONALD WAYNE MOELLER. Had:
a. DONALD WAYNE MOELLER, JR., b. 1950.
b. KATHERINE LUCILLE MOELLER, b. 1951.
(2) NOBLE EUGENE WICKLUND; NINA ——————.
(3) MAGGIE HENRIETTA WICKLUND; b. 1903; d. 1919.
(4) FRANCES ELLEN WICKLUND; m. FRANCIS CRUM. Had:
A. EVELYN CRUM.
6. ALEXANDER MARTIN GRIMES; b. 1880; d. 1951; m. ANNA L. FORD, b. 1882. Had:
(1) FAE E. GRIMES, b. 1906; d. 1937; m. CULVER.
(2) FLO E. GRIMES, b. 1910; m. WAINSCOTT. Had:
A. ANNA FAE WAINSCOTT, b. 1933; m. McPHEARSON. Had:
a. SHERYL DIANA McPHEARSON, b. 1952.; b. GLENDA SUE McPHEARSON, b. 1954.
B. CLAYTON WAINSCOTT.

(3) FORD A. GRIMES, b. 1915; m. and had:
A. GLENDA GRIMES, b. 1938.

7. SUSAN ETHEL GRIMES, b. 1882; d. 1934; m. ARTHUR WESLEY BIKKER. Children:
(1) LEIGHTON ALVIN BIKKER, b. 1905; m. MARGUERITE SMITH. Had:
A. LOIS BIKKER, b. 1935; B. ARTHUR W. BIKKER, b. 1939; C. PRISCILLA BIKKER, b. 1946.
(2) THELMA FLORINE BIKKER, b. 1907; m. BILLIE COLLINS.
(3) BEE MARUINE BIKKER, b. 1910; m. JOE L. CARROLL. Had:
A. ARLINE SUSANNE CARROL, b. 1940; B. ALLEN LEON CARROL, b. 1943.
(4) JEANIE V. BIKKER, b. 1911, m. JAMES P. HAMILTON. Had:
A. JEANIE STARR HAMILTON, b. 1946; B. JOEL WADE HAMILTON, b. 1952.

8. BESSIE GRIMES, b. 1886; d. 1952; m. (1) CHARLES FORD; m. (2) ACKERMAN.

9. WILLIAM ROGERS GRIMES, d. young.

10. KENNON GRIMES, d. as child.

11. EDITH BELL GRIMES m. HARRY ANDERSON.
Had: (1) WOODROW ANDERSON.

12. HENRY CARSON GRIMES.

13. GEORGE GRIMES m. EDNA ––––– . Had:
(1) WANDA SUE GRIMES;
(2) DOROTHY HENRIETTA GRIMES;
(3) HAZEL LOUISE GRIMES.

MARTHA CATHERINE ROGERS m. (2) about 1855 ALFRED BURTON EVANS, son of JESSE EVANS and his wife RUTH PRIDE.

The children of CATHERINE ROGERS JACKSON, widow, b. 1830; m. (2) about 1855 ALFRED BURTON EVANS, son of JESSE EVANS and his wife, RUTHA PRIDE EVANS, brother of MARY EVELYN EVANS, third wife of CATHERINE'S father, SAMUEL CRAWFORD ADUSTON ROGERS. CATHERINE was daughter of ROGERS first wife, MARY WHITE, and widow of HENRY MONTAGUE JACKSON. EVANS m. (2) MALINDA GUTHRIE FLETCHER, widow, after the death of CATHERINE, about 1872.

I. FRANCES MARY EVANS, b. 18 Aug. 1856 in Jackson Co., Tex.; d. 5 July 1952 in San Antonio, Texas; m. about 1875 BENJAMINE QUIN WARD b. 5 March 1827 in Palmyra, Missouri; d. 1912 in San Antonio, Texas.

According to a letter from RUSSELL WARD, eldest child of this union, to the compiler on 14 July 1960, on the occasion of the marriage of his grandparents, his mother's grandfather, SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, was heard to remark to the bridegroom, "Now, Ben you are kin to Jackson County," (Texas). It was for his great, grandson, RUSSELL WARD, that SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS related and wrote the true story of "The Wild Woman of the Navidad River," who was thought to have been an escaped slave who reverted to the jungle.

It was to RUSSELL'S mother FRANCES MARY EVANS WARD, ROGER'S granddaughter, that he confided that he was descended from JOHN ROGERS, first Protestant Martyr of England and it was also to her that Mrs. NOLEN addressed the letters concerning the relationship of the EVANS and EARNEST.

II. SAMUEL ROGERS EVANS, b. 1859 in Jackson Co., Texas; d. 1926; m. ELIZABETH BRIZINDINE; no issue.

III. CARSON JACKSON EVANS, b. Jackson Co., Texas, 20 May 1861; d. 7 Dec. 1932 in Soda Springs Community, Comanche Co., Texas; m. 11 May 1893, in Trinidad, Colorado, ELIZA ANN COWLISHAW, b. 25 Mar. 1877 in Pilsley, England, dau. of GEORGE and ANN COWLISHAW; d. 3 March 1960; buried beside her husband in Taylor Chapel Cemetery, Comanche Co., Texas.

Future generations of the descendants of CATHERINE ROGERS and her second husband, ALFRED BURTON EVANS, are to be found in the EVANS Chapter, Chapter VI.

The data relating to the family of FRANCES MARY EVANS and her husband, BEN Q. WARD was compiled by

their dau., FRANCES MARY WARD.

That relating to the family of CARSON JACKSON EVANS was compiled by ALFRED W. EVANS of San Antonio, Texas.

Descendants of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his 3rd wife MARY EVELYN EVANS:

I. ROSA RUTH ROGERS married 20 Feb. 1873 EDWARD LEE WITT. The WITTS were the first of the SAMUEL C.A. ROGERS family to live in the Neuces Canyon of the Texas Hill country where he became a successful breeder of Angora goats, as attested by trophies now in the possession of some of his descendants.

One, now owned by WAYNE VICK of San Antonio Texas, was presented to ED. WITT in 1907 and the inscription thereon reads: "Awarded by The American Angora Breeders Association, to E. L. WITT and Sons, for having, The Best Exhibitor's Flock of Registered Angora Goats at the Kansas City Angora Goat Exhibit - State Fair of Texas - San Antonio International Fair - 1907."

Another, in the possession of PERRY CLARK WITT JR. of Arcadia, Calif., reads: "To E. L. WITT and Sons - for Producing a Prime Fleece of Mohair - Measuring Sixteen Inches - New York, New York - 1912."

Mrs. TOM WITT of Montell, Texas now lives on the home-ranch of ROSA and EDWARD WITT.

Tenth and Later descendants of ROSA RUTH ROGERS and her husband EDWARD LEE WITT: Children:

1. LOUIS EDWARD WITT, m. Dec. 28, 1905 GRACE LOUISE WILSON. Issue:
   - (1) EDWARD LOUIS WITT, JR., b. May 31, 1907 at Montell, Tex.; d. 22 Feb. 1963.
   - (2) LYDIA ELIZABETH WITT, b. Nov. 2, 1909 at Uvalde, Tex.; m. Feb. 14, 1935 at San Antonio, Tex. LEONARD CARL WESTERMAN, son of GEORGE CARL and MARTHA FICKER WESTERMAN; no issue.
   - (3) GRACE ADELAIDE WITT, b. Oct. 21, 1911 in Corpus Christi, Tex.; m. Feb. 19,1938 at Boerne, Tex. FORREST ORAN VICK, son of ORAN JEFFERSON and MABEL LINDSAY VICK. Had:
     - A. GARY FORREST VICK, b. June 28, 1943.
     - B. WAYNE ORAN VICK, b. July 31, 1947.
   - (4) NEEL WITT, b. Nov. 25, 1913 at Barksdale, Tex.; m. June 18, 1936 in San Antonio FRANCES ELIZABETH MERCHANT, dau. of EDMUND BILLUPS MERCHANT and his wife, DAISY KEY. Had: A. BETTIE FRANCES WITT, b. July 28, 1941; m. 11 June 1960, MICHAEL G. MACKLIN. Issue:
       - a. ROBIN MICHELLA MACKLIN b. 6 Oct. 1961; b. TERRI SUE MACKLIN b. 27 March 1964.
   - (5) MORRIS HARVEY WITT, b. Mar. 5, 1916; m. Feb. 23, 1935 CELESTIA KATHERYN REED at Castorville, Tex.; dau. of CLARENCE and ANNIE BOWDOIN REED. Had:
     - A. MORRIS BOWDOIN WITT, b. Nov. 20, 1939; d. 9 Jan. 1967 in Vietnam, Capt. USAF; m. 4 Sept. 1964 DOROTHY JEAN WALTERS; no issue.
   - (6) VIRGINIA RUTH WITT, b. Mar. 7, 1918 at Uvalde, Tex.; not married.
   - (7) WILLIAM PRESTON WITT, b. Sept. 17, 1920 at Bracketville, Tex.; not married.
2. PERRY CLARK WITT m. Nov. 5, 1911 RUBY McGOWAN. Issue:
   - (1) PERRY CLARK WITT, JR., b. Mar. 20, 1914 at Montell, Texas; m. Apr. 8, 1943 in Baltimore, Md. MARY MARGARET BYRNE, b. Feb. 7, 1915. Had:
     - A. SUSANNE WITT, b. July 19, 1944 in Baltimore, Md.
     - B. JAMES PERRY WITT, b. Oct. 29, 1951 Arcadia, Calif.
     - C. THOMAS CLARK WITT' b. Feb. 11, 1956 in Pasadena, Calif.
   - (2) WESLEY RAY WITT, b. Nov. 26, 1915; m. Dec. 24, 1949 in Seymore, Tex. FRANCES KINNIBRUGH, b. Mar. 1, 1922 at Vera Tex. Had:
     - A. JANIS RAY WITT, b. Dec. 31, 1952 in San Antonio, Tex.
     - B. LEIGHTON ALLEN WITT.
3. MAGGIE RAY WITT, m. Dec. 20, 1911 WILLIAM BARNEY McFATTER, d. 12 Nov. 1967. Issue:
   - (1) MARGUERITE RAY McFATTER, b. Dec. 10, 1913; m. (1) Apr. 17, 1933 HOWARD ELLIOT CARTER; divorced and married again; no issue.
   - (2) WILLIAM BARNEY McFATTER II) b. Dec. 19, 1914; m. June 20, 1940, MARGARET MONKHOUSE, b. Oct. 6, 1921; dau. of D. H. MONKHOUSE. Had:
     - A. RITA RAY McFATTER, b. Aug. 11, 1942; B. DUNE HOUSTON McFATTER, b. Aug. 11, 1944;
     - C. BILLIE MARGARET McFATTER, b. Dec. 27, 1946, m. JACK KLEIN.
   - (3) CORNELIA RAY McFATTER, b. Feb. 18, 1918; m. Mar. 13, 1938 HAROLD MILBRUN MUNSEY, b. Nov. 25, 1911. Had:
     - A. GEORGE HAROLD MUNSEY, b. Mar. 3, 1939; B. ROBERT LEE MUNSEY, b. Feb. 28, 1941; C. VICKI RAY MUNSEY, b. Sept. 7, 1949.
4. THOMAS LEE WITT, m. June 6, 1917 HOPE VICTOR. Issue:
   - (1) THOMAS LEE WITT, JR., b. Sept. 28, 1918 at Uvalde, Tex.; d. June 21, 1936 in an automobile accident.

II. FRANK WHITE ROGERS, son of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his third wife MARY EVELYN EVANS, married MARY ATKINSON: Issue:

1. MARTHA ROGERS m. 24 Nov. 1912 CHARLES NELSON BROWN and had:
   (1) DIXIE BROWN b. 1914; B.A. Baylor Univ.; m. 20 Dec. 1936, LOYD MAXWELL CHAPMAN; B.A. Baylor Univ.; Theo. M. - Southern Baptist Theological Seminary. Issue:
      A. JEANETTE MARIE CHAPMAN, b. 1939 Palacios, Texas; B.A. and M.A. Univ. of of Wisconsin; m. 2 Sept. 1958, JAMES HOWELL SMITH, B.A. Baylor Univ.; M.A. Tulane Univ.; Ph. D. Univ. of Wisconsin. Issue:
         a. HILTON HOWELL SMITH, b. 14 May 1962; (b) SUSAN MARIE SMITH b. 5 July 1966.
      B. LOYD MAXWELL CHAPMAN JR. b. 1942 at Hattisburg, Miss.; B.B.A. Baylor Univ.; C.P.A.;m. 15 June, 1963 LA NELLE GALLANT; B.S. - N.T.S.U., Denton, Texas. Issue:
         a. JESSICA GENET CHAPMAN, b. 2 Jan. 1966; (b) ANDREA LA NELLE CHAPMAN b. 4 Aug. 1969.
   (2) FRANK NELSON BROWN, b. 1 July 1917; m. 1940 in Houston, Texas, BESSIE MAE FAUKNER. Issue:
      A. FRANK NELSON BROWN, JR. b. 1942; B.A., N.T.S.U.; m. 11 Dec. 1965 BARBARA FRANCE LUBBERS. Issue:
         a. FRANK NELSON BROWN III) b. 31 Mar. 1967.
      B. MARTHA LEE BROWN b. 1943; m. 24 Nov. 1960 FRANK ATKINS BATEN JR., Issue:
         a. TERRY LEE BATEN b. 27 Dec. 1961; (b) DONNA LYNN BATEN b. 23 Jan. 1963; c. BARRY FRANK BATEN b. 24 Sept. 1965; d. BRIAN PAUL BATEN b. 6 Aug. 1966; d. 7 Aug. 1966.
   (3) LEO RUSSELL BROWN, b. 23 July 1920 at Beeville, Texas; m. JOYCE YOUNG.
   (4) TRAVIS WARD BROWN, b. 14 July 1924 at Ganado, Texas; m. 26 June 1955 in Denver, Colo. ELEANOR DUNN; B. S. Purdue Univ. Issue:
      A. CHARLES TRAVIS BROWN, b. 2 July 1958; B. NANCY ELEANOR BROWN, b. 24 June 1959.
2. SAMUEL WILLIAM ROGERS m. 1 July 1908, MABBIE ETTA TRAYLOR. Issue:
   (1) MILDRED ROGERS, b. 9 Feb. 1911; m. 19 April 1952 GRADY JOHNSON.
   (2) MAE ROGERS, b. 15 Dec. 1914; m. 6 Nov. 1940 MARVIN PERSHING RYMAN. Issue:
      A. WM. FRANCIS RYMAN.
3. PEARL S. ROGERS m. 26 Dec. 1908 EARL F. MARTIN; B.S. Univ. of San Francisco 1907; d. 30 Nov. 1969. Issue:
   (1) EDWARD F. MARTIN b. 5 May 1913; d. 30 Jan. 1968; Graduate Pharmacist; m. 7 Sept. 1938 ELAINE ROSE MACH. Issue:
      A. EARL FRANCIS MARTIN II), b. 24 April 1941; m. 2 Feb. 1968 in Monterrey, Mex., OFELIA ROIS. Has:
         a. CANDACE ANN MARTIN b. 30 June 1969.
      B. ELAINE MACH MARTIN, had child, DELAY LORAINE, by former marriage, who m. TOM DAWSON of Weslaco, Texas. Issue:
         a. CLARK DAWSON; b. SUSIE DAWSON.
   (2) SAMUEL SETH MARTIN, b. 12 Nov. 1918; B.S. Mechanical Engineering Texas A & M; m. (1) mother of son; m. (2) 11 Mar. 1946 MARTHA L. WHITTON b. 11 Nov. 1923, dau. of W. L. WHITTEN of Simpson, Texas and LOUISE HARVEY. Issue:
      A. SAMUEL ARTHUR MARTIN, b. 16 Oct. 1942, at Abilene, Texas, B.S. Mech. Eng., Texas Tech.; 1st Lt. U.S.A.F., d. 27 Dec. 1967 in action in Vietnam; m. and had dau. DEBORAH.
      B. PAMELA ANN MARTIN, b. 13 Dec. 1946 at Austin, Tex.; B.S. Texas Tech.
4. JOHN ROGERS m. 29 June 1914 GRACE MONTIER. Issue:
   (1) JOHN THOS. ROGERS b. 25 Jan. 1918 at Edna; Practicing Dentist; m. 26 April 1941 at Houston, HELEN ELIZABETH ESTILL. Issue:
      A. LINDA LEE ROGERS b. 23 Oct. 1944; B. CYRUS THOS. ROGERS b. 1 Aug. 1948; C. GRACE HELEN ROGERS b. 23 Jan. 1953.
5. WILLIE ROGERS m. 31 Aug. 1910 WILLIE GEO. GAYLE. Issue:
   (1) W. B. GAYLE b.7 Jan. 1912; d. 20 April 1963; m. 7 Sept. 1930 RUBY JACKSON b. 9 Sept. 1910. Had:
      A. DOUGLAS ZACK GAYLE b. 25 June 1931; B.S. Texas A & M; m. HERTHA GAYLE b. 14 Nov. 1929. Issue:
         a. JOHN RICHARD GAYLE b. 21 May 1958; b. FRIEDA ANN GAYLE, b. 14 Sept. 1959; c. STUART BARTLETT GAYLE b. 25 Sept. 1960; d. BARBARA SUE GAYLE b. 27 Sept. 1961.
      B. JOHN WILLIS GAYLE b. 2 Mar. 1933 m. PEGGY MILLER. Issue:
         a. JO PAULETTE GAYLE b. 26 Dec. 1950; b. DANIEL WAYNE GAYLE b. 24 June 1954; c.

STEPHEN CLARK GAYLE b. 1 Oct. 1955.

C. BARBARA LOU GAYLE b. 5 Nov. 1934; m. 3 July 1955, BRUCE B. DAVIS. Issue:

a. LINDA ANN DAVIS b. 30 Jan. 1956; b. BRUCE BARTON DAVIS JR. b. 16 June 1959; c. NANCY RUTH DAVIS b. 25 Dec. 1961.

D. PATSY ANN GAYLE b. 12 Jan. 1943; m. 7 Jan. 1959 TROY STUBBS. Issue:

a. JERRY DEAN STUBBS b. 2 Aug. 1959; b. DIANA LYNN STUBBS, b. 12 Aug. 1960; c. MICHAEL ALLEN STUBBS b. 26 Oct. 1962.

E. WILLIAM BARTLETT GAYLE, b. 14 April 1945; m. 15 July 1967 IVA JO DITTFURTH.

6. LOUIS FRANCIS ROGERS m. 11 Oct. 1920 MARY GRIFFITH: Issue:

(1) LOUIS FRANCIS ROGERS JR. b. 24 July 1921 at Ganado, Texas; m. 24 Nov. 1943 PAULINE IDA NICHOLS. Issue:

A. RAYMOND EARL ROGERS, b. 24 July 1945; B. ELIZABETH ANN ROGERS b. 31 Oct. 1951 at Victoria, Texas.

(2) HOMER VAIL ROGERS b. 14 Nov. 1925 at Mission, Texas m. (1) MYRTLE WITHERS, m. (2) 19 April 1968 NETTIE LOESCH. Issue of 1st marriage:

A. PHILIP WAYNE ROGERS, b. 31 Mar. 1952.

(3) MARJORIE ROGERS, b. 25 Dec. 1931 at Mission, Texas; m. (1) PRIDGEN; m. (2) 21 May 1955, MELVIN LEROY REAVES. Issue:

A. LYNDA JOYCE PRIDGEN, b. 24 May 1949, child of first marriage.

B. DEREL WAYNE REAVES, b. 16 Jan. 1956, child of second marriage.

7. GORDON ROGERS m. RUTH YANCY. Issue:

(1) MARIAN RUTH ROGERS m. (1) SHUMATE; m. (2) STEPHEN BENTON. Issue of 1st marriage:

A. MICHAEL EDWARD SHUMATE, b. 2 Dec. 1945.

(2) GENE FRANK ROGERS m. (1) 6 Oct. 1944 MARY ANN PEARSON. Issue:

A. GENE FRANK ROGERS JR. b. 28 Feb. 1946; m. 25 Jan. 1968 LINDA LIPSCOMB;

B. FRANCES ANN ROGERS b. 12 Nov. 1948;

C. CHARLES GORDON ROGERS, b. 8 July 1950;

D. DEBRAH KAY ROGERS, b. 9 Jan. 1954;

E. KAREN MICHELLE ROGERS, b. 28 Aug. 1958;

F. JAMES DAVID ROGERS, b. 17 Aug. 1964.

III. CLARK O. ROGERS, son of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his third wife MARY EVELYN EVANS, m. 22 May 1887 IDA LOU BABCOCK. Issue:

1. MONTAGUE ROGERS m. 25 Dec. 1917 MAUDE BLOOMINGTON. Issue:

(1) MAXINE MARY ROGERS b. 19 Nov. 1918; d. 17 Aug. 1928;

(2) CLARK OWEN ROGERS II), b. 18 Jan. 1920; d. 4 June 1920;

(3) WANDA MARIE ROGERS b. 4 April 1922; m. 11 Sept. 1953 in San Antonio, M.W. SUNDEN;

(4) MARGUERITE MAUDE ROGERS b. 20 Aug. 1926; m. (I) March 1954 HENRY HALLETT; m. (2) 1 Mar. 1965 ROBERT M. DOWNING.

(5) ORVA RETHA ROGERS b. 8 Mar. 1937; m. 16 Jan. 1955 at Richmond, Texas, JAMES HARVEY ASHFORD JR. Issue:

A. DEBORAH LYNNE ASHFORD b. 24 Sept. 1957;

B. JAMES HARVEY ASHFORD III) b.12 Sept. 1960.

2. ETHEL AGNES ROGERS m. 3 Nov. 1909, LIFFORD WILLIAMSON LANCASTER d. 9 Aug. 1969. Issue:

(1) MARY AGNES LANCASTER M.D., b. 14 Jan. 1912 at Ganado, Texas; m. 11 Aug. 1943 in Dallas, Texas, BEN T. KIIBLER; d. 18 April 1968.

(2) LIFFORD ROGERS LANCASTER, M.D., b. 7 April 1918; m. 19 Sept. 1942 at Galveston, INGER M. OLSON. Issue:

A. DIANE ELAINE LANCASTER, b. 7 April 1945; m. 11 Sept. 1964 at Beaumont, Texas, ROBERT ADALBERT McLAUCHLAN JR. Issue:

a. ROBERT ADALBERT McLAUCHLAN III) b. 11 July 1966;

b. LIFFORD LEE LANCASTER McLAUCHLAN b. 22 May 1969.

B. LIFFORD LEE LANCASTER b. 11 Dec. 1953.

3. SAMUEL OWEN ROGERS m. Nov. 27 1920 NELLIE ROBINSON. Issue:

(1) OWEN SAMUEL ROGERS JR., b. Feb. 19, 1922; m. Aug. 18, 1943 in Houston, Texas, ANNIE LEE WILSON. Issue:

A. SAMUEL DWIGHT ROGERS, b. Jan. 14, 1947;

B. BRUCE WILSON ROGERS b. Feb. 24, 1951;

(2) GLORIA ELAINE ROGERS, b. Oct. 10, 1925; m. Mar. 29, 1946 JAMES LYNEWOOD MANTOOTH.

IV. The MACK ROGERS and NETTIE McGOWAN Family.

1. BERTHA ROGERS m. Apr. 18, 1915 H. T. PEACE, d. 13 Feb. 1962; m. (2) 27 July 1968 at La Pryor,

Texas, SHERRILL BAKER McCLURE. Issue:
(1) ROGERS T. PEACE b. Apr. 30, 19——; m. Jan. 27, 1945 MILDRED SHERROD. Issue:
A. LYNDA PEACE, b. June 18, 1947 in San Antonio, Texas.

2. LEE MACK ROGERS m. 1924 FRANCES NELSON, d. 1926. Issue:
(1) MARY FRANCES ROGERS, b. Sept. 2, 1926 at Sherman, Tex.; d. May 19, 1945 at San Antonio, Texas.

Note:
The Texas generation have been submitted by the various branches of the family, some 15 persons contributing to the five generations included.

V LAURA L. ROGERS; VI EMMA ROGERS; VII MINNIE ROGERS married the three SUTHERLAND brothers. Their descendants are in the SUTHERLAND Chapter.

Ninth and Later Generations

I. Eighth Generation HENRY ELLIOT A. ROGERS, son of FRANKLIN A. ROGERS and his wife ELIZA. ANN WHITSON, born in Jackson Co., Republic of Texas, April 25, 1843; When seventeen years old he entered the Army of the Confederacy and fought at Vicksburg, Miss. He returned to Texas after the war and became a rancher. His ranch was located near the little community of Vanderpool. His family still have papers of the original land grants from the state of Texas for this property located in Bandera Co. In the early days he made the trip to Bandera about twice a year for supplies for the family.

His wife MARY ANN HARLAN was born October 20, 1850 at Summerville, Ala. and died Oct. 28, 1930 at Sabinal, Uvalde Co., Texas. Family tradition is that she lost her mother when very young and was reared by her father and the slaves.

Their children were:

1. MARY IDA b. July 26, 1869 at Edna, Texas; d. Jan. 21, 1946 at San Antonio, Texas; m. Jan. 8, 1890 JOHN SOWELL b. Mar. 19, 1866; d. July 25, 1899.
2. ANNIE ELLIOT b. May 13, 1872 at Edna, Texas; d. Dec. 10, 1958 b. Sabinal, Texas; m. July 18, 1894, SEARCY T. HUTCHINSON b. July 18, 1871 at Seguin, Texas, son of THOMAS E. and FRANCES MALONE SEARCY.
3. FRANKLIN JAMES ROGERS b. Jan. 21, 1874 at Edna, Texas; d. June 13, 1947 at Brawley, Calif.; m. (1) CARRIE BANDY b. Nov. 27, 1878 at Bandera, Tex., dau. of JOHN and ALIF BANDY m. (2) ADDIE HILL.
4. ROSA ROGERS, b. Feb. 12, 1878 at Edna, Texas; d. June 25, 1951 at Clovis, Calif.; m. Nov. 29, 1899 SIDNEY WALLER b. Sept. 6, 1871 at Johnson City, Texas.

Grandchildren of HENRY ELLIOT A. ROGERS and MARY ANN HARLAND.

1. MARY IDA ROGERS and JOHN SOWELL had one child ASA ROGERS SOWELL b. Oct. 12, 1890 at Seguin, Texas; died Feb. 5, 1960; m. Aug. 22, 1912 MAYME FLORENCE SALLING. (Information from ASA SOWELL Bible.
2. ANNIE ELLIOTT ROGERS m. SEARCY THOMAS HUTCHINSON, 18 July 1894. Issue:
(1) FRANK MALONE HUTCHINSON b. Apr. 26, 1895; m. MATTIE FILMORE KEAHEY.

2. ANNIE ELLIOTT ROGERS m. SEARCY THOMAS HUTCHINSON, 18 July 1894. Issue:
(1) FRANK MALONE HUTCHINSON b. Apr. 26, 1895; m. MATTIE FILMORE KEAHEY.
(2) NETTIE LEE HUTCHINSON b. Feb. 28, 1897 at Vanderpool, Bandera Co., Texas; m. LEE ROY HAGIN.
(3) BERTHA ROSA HUTCHINSON b. July 19, 1903 at San Antonio, Texas; m. AUSTIN H. TACQUARD.
(4) THOMAS MILTON HUTCHINSON b. May 26, 1907 at San Antonio; m. ANNE LOU CRUMLIN.
(5) HENRY LEO HUTCHINSON b. Nov. 21, 1909 at Sabinal, Tex.; m. HELEN GREENWELGE.
(6) SEARCY HARLAN HUTCHINSON b. Sept. 23, 1912 at Sabinal, Tex.; m. NINA FLENIKEN.
3. FRANKLIN JAMES ROGERS family; children of his first wife, CARRIE BANDY:
(1) IRA BANDY ROGERS b. Aug. 25, 1899 at Utopia, Tex.; d. Aug. 7, 1838.
(2) LESLIE FRANKLIN ROGERS b. Dec. 24, 1901; d. Aug. 8, 1947.
(3) THELMA CARRIE ROGERS b. Mar. 12, 1904 at Utopia, Texas; m. Virchow Kessinger.
(4) CARL JEFFERSON ROGERS b. July 28, 1909,
4. ROSA ROGERS m. SIDNEY WALLER; 29 Nov. 1899. Issue:
(1) CLARENCE WALLER, b. Aug. 31, 1900 at Johnson City, Texas; m. Mar. 28, 1947, SYLVIA MYERS, has STEPHEN JAY WALLER, b. 8 Sept. 1948.
(2) SLOAN WALLER b. Mar. 22, 1904 at Vanderpool, Texas; m. July 23, 1933 to SALLY HAIMSON, has CAROL WALLER m. DON UNGER.
(3) BERNICE WALLER b. Aug. 28, 1913; m. (1) June 22, 1932 IRA K. FINDLEY, m. (2) GEO. BARON. Issue: a. PATRICIA FINLEY m. PAUL STEEN; b. JUDITH LEE FINLEY.

II. Eighth Generation SARAH LUCINDA ROGERS, daughter of FRANKLIN A. ROGERS, b. Dec. 19, 1849 at Edna, Texas; d. May 5, 1907 and is buried at Roby, Texas; m. Aug. 19, 1875 OLIVER RASMUS ETHEREDGE b. May 1, 1856 at Dalton, Ga., son of SAMUEL SLADE ETHEREDGE and his wife LYDIA CAROLINE JACKSON; d. May 14, 1945. Children:

1. ELIZA CAROLINE b. June 2, 1876 at Wharton, Texas;
2. OLIVER FRANKLIN ETHEREDGE b. Nov. 23, 1877 in Jackson Co., Texas; m. Sept. 4, 1917 in Motley Co., Texas; LELA ADELE SEIGLER b. in Oklahoma May 5, 1894, daughter of GEORGE WASHINGTON SEIGLER and his wife, IDA JOE KIRBY.
3. WILLIE SAMUEL ETHEREDGE b. Mar. 16, 1879 in Jackson Co., Tex.; m. May 29, 1901 at Claytonville, Fisher Co. Texas, RUTH BRYAN b. Mar. 18, 1882 at Bowier Pash, La., dau. of S. A. BRYAN and his wife TURO MARTIN.
4. JAMES RASMUS ETHEREDGE b. Mar. 30, 1881; d. Bandera Co. about 1883.
5. ADDIE SARAH ETHEREDGE b. June 1, 1883 Bandera, Texas; m. Dec. 25, 1900 BURTON HALL NEEL b. May 25, 1880; d. May 11, 1924 at Sweetwater, Texas, son of W. M. NEEL and CLARA JONES.
6. ROBERT HENRY ETHEREDGE b. April 1, 1885 at Bandera, Texas; m. Dec. 18, 1907, JULIA CLARK NEEL b. Sept. 18, 1887 in Falls Co., Texas, dau. of WILLIAM MACK NEEL and his wife, CLARA CATHERINE JONES.
7. NATHAN JACKSON ETHEREDGE b. Dec. 7, 1887 in Wilson Co., Tex.; m. Dec. 22, 1907 at Roby Texas, MATTIE HEFNER; b. Feb. 1, 1889 in Bell Co., Texas; dau. of JOE HEFNER and his wife, TENNIE FISHER.
8. BENJAMINE ADUSTER ETHEREDGE b. Mar. 24, 1892 at Hobbs, Fisher Co., Tex.; m. May 11, 1911, GRACIE ALICE RINKER, b. Sept. 27, 1892, daughter of ALEX C. RINKER and MARY L. KNUTSON.
9. ANNIE GERTRUDE ETHEREDGE b. Feb. 7, 1896 at Claytonville, Fisher Co., Texas; m. May 12, 1920, HOSEA A. GRAHAM, b. Oct. 4, 1888 at Centerville, Leon Co., Texas; son of W. B. GRAHAM and his wife MARY ETTA THOMAS.

Note:

The information on the family above was furnished by ANNIE GRAHAM (Mrs. H. A. GRAHAM from the family Bible of her parents SARAH LUCINDA ROGERS and OLIVER RASMUS ETHEREDGE. Her father was a Missionary Baptist Preacher and her brother BENJAMINE ADUSTER is also a minister of that denomination and has completed his college education and the Baptist Seminary at Ft. Worth, Texas. He was ordained to the ministry on Sept. 21, 1910 and graduated from the Seminary June 1924. It is said BEN baptized 190 people at Erick, Okla. in 67 minutes in Aug. 1927. This was during a revival at which 400 person professed their faith. Several other sons of SARAH LUCINDA ROGERS and her husband are now serving as deacons in the Baptist Church.

Information on later generations of this ETHEREDGE family was submitted by the heads of the various families: Mr. O. F. ETHEREDGE, 1319, 62nd St., Lubbock, Texas; Mr. W. S. ETHEREDGE, Route 2, Rotan, Texas; Mrs. B. H. NEEL, 704 Ave. C, Sweetwater, Texas; Mr. R. H. ETHEREDGE, Route 2, Sweetwater, Texas; Mr. N. J. ETHEREDGE, Route 4, Mernard, Texas; Rev. B. A. ETHEREDGE, 1237 S. W. 40, Okla. City, Okla.

Grandchildren of SARAH LUCINDA ROGERS and her husband OLIVER RASMUS ETHEREDGE.

2. OLIVER FRANKLIN ETHEREDGE and his wife LENA ADELA SEIGLER. Had:
   (1) OLIVER FRANKLIN ETHEREDGE JR., b. Sept. 29, 1918 at Childress, Texas; d. Oct. 5, 1918.
3. WILLIE SAMUEL ETHEREDGE and his wife, RUTH BRYAN. Had:
   (1) T. ERNEST ETHEREDGE b. May 26, 1902, in Surry Co., Texas; m. April 15, 1934, FLORA SPENCER.
   (2) BRYAN B. ETHEREDGE b. Oct. 4, 1903; m. Oct. 5, 1924 NETTIE MINER.
   (3) O. FRANKLIN ETHEREDGE b. June 29, 1905; m. Dec. 24, 1928 ELSIE BOYD.
   (4) WILLIE S. ETHEREDGE JR. b. April 11, 1907, in Fisher Co., Texas; m. Jan. 10, 1934 ROSIE RUP.
   (5) R. BERNON ETHEREDGE b. Jan. 10, 1909; m. Dec. 24, 1932 SARAH SMITH.
   (6) WILMA B. ETHEREDGE b. July 24, 1910; m. Jan. 19, 1934 JESSIE KNUTSON.
   (7) CLIFFORD C. ETHEREDGE b. Sept. 27, 1912; m. May 4, 1939 HILDA OHLENBURCH.
   (8) EDNA RUTH ETHEREDGE b. Oct. 8, 1914; m. July 25, 1932 JIM S. CAVE.
   (9) TURA LOU ETHEREDGE b. Mar. 14, 1916; m. May 28, 1946 EARNEST DUKE.
   (10) SIDNEY L. ETHEREDGE b. Feb. 6, 1918; m. April 18, 1937 LENA HAMILTON.
   (11) MABLE C. ETHEREDGE b. May 29, 1920; m. Aug. 8, 1943 L. C. PRICE.
   (12) O. BOB ETHEREDGE b. Aug. 22, 1922; m. June 23, 1945 JOSEPHINE BLUNT.
   (13) FAY ETHEREDGE b. May 1, 1928; m. May 5, 1946 LOYD B. RINKER.

Submitted by W. S. ETHEREDGE from his family Bible.

5. ADDIE SARAH ETHEREDGE and her husband BURTON HALL NEEL had:
   (1) ALLIE RENA NEEL b. Jan. 12, 1904 in Fisher Co., Tex.; m. Jan. 17, 1928 GEO. P. SIEGLER.
   (2) LUCY CLARA NEEL b. July 6, 1909; m. June 26, 1927 J. M. HADDERTON.
   (3) RAYMOND NEEL b. Feb. 16, 1911; m. Aug. 27, 1936 RUBY ROBINS.
   (4) JULIA ANNIE NEEL b. July 1, 1919; d. Oct. 3, 1943; m. Jan. 9, 1938 B. H. YOUNG.
6. ROBERT HENRY ETHEREDGE and his wife JULIA CLARA NEEL had:
   (1) LONIA CATHERINE ETHEREDGE b. Mar. 19, 1909 at Capitola, Texas; m. Sept. 11, 1927 BERNACE CALLAWAY.
7. NATHAN JACKSON ETHEREDGE and his wife MATTIE HEFNER had:
   (1) LEWIS ETHEREDGE b. May 10, 1911, at Pecos, Tex.; m. ELENA WHITE on May 11, 1929, at Lamesa, Texas.
   (2) FANNIE MAY ETHEREDGE b. Mar. 16, 1917 d. Mar. 20, 19——; m. Mar. 28, 1934 ALTON LEWIS.
   (3) ALENE ETHEREDGE b. Dec. 6, 1918; m. May 1935 B. B. THURMAN.
   (4) ELSIE FAE ETHEREDGE b. Dec. 2, 1924; m. Aug. 13, 1944 GILBERT PIERCE.
   (5) HOMER J. ETHEREDGE b. June 16, 1928; m. Aug. 16, 1945 NAOMI LOW.
   (6) LOUISE ETHEREDGE b. Feb. 13, 1930; m. May 2, 1948 VERNON McWILLIAMS.
8. BENJAMINE ADUSTER ETHEREDGE and his wife GRACIE ALICE RINKER had:
   (1) PAULINE OPHELIA ETHEREDGE b. Feb. 4, 1912 at Abilene, Texas; m. Aug. 16, 1931 Rev. LUTHER R. BRADLEY.
   (2) BEULAH BELLE ETHEREDGE b. June 19, 1914 Sweetwater, Texas; m. June 16, 1946 to PAUL E. CALDWELL.
   (3) CHARLES ROSSER ETHEREDGE b. Nov. 4, 1915 at Rotan, Texas; d. Sept. 11, 1941; m. Aug. 10, 1934 METRA HUNNICUTT. (Died in automobile accident near San Diego, Calif.)

3. (2) BRYAN B. ETHEREDGE, second son of WILLIE SAMUEL and his wife RUTH BRYAN, b. Oct. 4, 1903 m. Oct. 5, 1924 in Scurry Co., Texas NETTIE G. MINOR b. Sept. 13, 1907 in Denton Co., Texas. She is the dau. of SAMUEL T. MINOR and his wife MATTIE LEE LOTT. Children:
   (a) RAYFORD MINOR ETHEREDGE b. July 11, 1925 d. Feb. 24, 1931.
   (b) BILLIE LOU ETHEREDGE b. Dec. 20, 1931 m. May 5, 1950 HARMON HOLCOMB JR., b. Jan. 6, 1932. Children: BOBBY BLAINE b. Dec. 7, 1952, JENNIFER LYNN b. Aug. 13, 1955, KENNETH LEE b. Jan. 29, 1957.
   (c) TEDDY BRYAN ETHEREDGE b. June 12, 1934 m. Nov. 8, 1958 JANIS CHRISTENSEN b. Oct. 9, 1937 at San Jose, Calif. dau. of JAMES CHRISTENSEN. Children: MELISSA JANE b. Feb. 29, 1960 at Coronado, San Diego Co., Calif.
   (d) FREDA JANE ETHEREDGE b. Dec. 11, 1939 m. June 10, 1960 at Roby, Texas, JERRY LEE BRANSON b. Dec. 21, 1938 at Sayne, Okla. son of CECIL B. BRANSON and his wife ADELL SIMPSON.

Mrs. HARMON HOLCOMB, JR., Box 704, Roby, Texas and
Mrs. JERRY LEE BRANSON, P.O. Box, Roby, Texas, compiled the foregoing

III. Eighth Generation MARTHA CATHERINE ROGERS, dau. of FRANKLIN A. ROGERS and FLETHCER HARPER, furnished by Mrs. SUSIE BUCKALEW, 314 Mimosa St., Kerrville, Texas.

MARTHA CATHERINE ROGERS b. Mar. 2, ———; d. Dec. 25, 1940 at Colorado City, Tex.; m. April 13, 1882 JOHN FLETCHER HARPER, b. Aug. 31, 1857 in Texas, son of ————— HARPER and ————— KILLINGSWORTH; d. Sept. 17, 1905 at Stamford, Texas. Children:

1. SAMUEL SYLVESTER HARPER b. June 14, 1884 at Edna, Texas; m. MATTIE BROSHEAR.
2. GEORGE FRANKLIN HARPER b. Aug. 9, 1886 at Edna, Texas; m. LAURA TUCKER.
3. HATTIE MAY HARPER b. Aug. 3, 1888; m. Dec. 18, ALBERT COOPER.
4. MALINDA SUSAN b. Oct. 22, 1891; m. Oct. 17, 1917 to YANCIE DAVID BUCKALEW.
5. ELIZABETH ALBERTINA HARPER b. Oct. 26, 1893; m. Sept. 17, 1917 CLAUDE VAUGHAN.
6. JOHN FLETCHER HARPER JR. b. Jan. 12, 1895; (invalid from birth)
7. MARTHA CATHERINE HARPER b. July 11, 1897; m. HOUSTON SHUSTLEFF.
8. ANNIE BELL HARPER b. Nov. 5, 1900; m. OLLIE THOMPSON.
9. MARY LOUISE HARPER b. Dec. 18, 1903 at Houston, Texas; m. GRADY STANDEFER.

Grandchildren of MARTHA CATHERINE ROGERS and her husband FLETCHER HARPER.

1. SAMUEL SYLVESTER HARPER son of J. F. and M. C. HARPER; b. June 14, 1884; d. Sept. 20, 1948; m. Jan. 18, 1909 MATTIE BRASHEAR b. Jan. 18, 1891, dau. of ISSAC WALTER BRASHEAR and his wife MAUDINE NORMAN; d. Sept. 20, 1948 at Colorado City, Texas. Children:
   (1) ARTHUR LOUIS HARPER b. Nov. 30, 1909; m. Feb. 4, 1933 EULA SHEPPERD. Had: ARTHUR LOUIS HARPER JR. b. Mar. 2, 1937; m. Feb. 23, 1958 PATRICIA ANN PRICE.
   (2) ALMA PEARL HARPER b. June 15, 1913; m. Feb. 25, 1950 ALLEN OWEN BRASHEAR.
   (3) CARL NORMAN HARPER b. May 15, 1916; d. Oct. 1, 1918.

(4) HERMAN LEON HARPER b. July 20, 1921; m. MILVA HALTOM.
(5) LEOLA DEAN HARPER b. June 27, 1929; m. WARREN W. ANDERSON.

Information from Mrs. SAMUEL S. HARPER, 728 Elm St., Colorado City, Texas.

(2) ALMA PEARL HARPER b. 1912, dau. of SAMUEL SYLVESTER and MATTIE BRASHEAR HARPER m. (1) MELVIN M. REEVES; m. (2) 1950 at Las Vegas, Rev. ALLEN OWEN BRASHEAR b. Lawton, Okla. in 1902, son of JAMES and MYRTLE HEARST BRASHEAR. Children of first marriage:
(a) KENNETH D. REEVES b. Aug. 31, 1934 at Colorado City, Texas.
(b) ROBERT J. REEVES b. Aug. 8, 1936 at Colorado, Texas; m. Dec. 8, 1955 CLAUDETTE DIXON. Have:
(1) DEBRA KAREN REEVES b. April 15, 1958 at Biloxi, Miss.
(2) ALLISON MARIE REEVES b. May 14, 1959 at Long Beach, Calif.
(c) WANDA LILLIAN REEVES b. Dec. 31, 1938; m. Feb. 6, 1958 to VERNON C. SMITH JR. Have:
(1) VERNON CLEVELAND SMITH III) b. Feb. 6, 1960 at Long Beach, Calif.

Information from Mrs. ALLEN O. BRASHEAR, 3061 Copa De Ora Dr., Los Alamitos, Calif.

(4) HERMON LEON HARPER, son of SAMUEL SYLVESTER HARPER, b. July 20, 1920; m. MELVIA EULALIA HALTOM b., July 31, 1922 in Crockett Co., Texas dau. of WM. B. and WILLIE CARTER HALTOM. Children:
(a) LENA FAYE HARPER, b. Sept. 27, 1940 at Colorado City, Texas.
(b) SYLVIA MAYE, b. April 11, 1942.
(c) HERMON LEON HARPER, JR. b. June 9, 1944.

Information from Mr. HERMON L. HARPER, P. O. Box 562, San Angelo, Texas

(5) LEOLA DEAN HARPER, dau. of SAMUEL SYLVESTER HARPER and MATTIE B. HARPER, b. June 27, 1929; m. WARREN WOODROW ANDERSON b. Aug. 27, 1921 at Bonham, Tex.; son of WM. WARREN and VELMA E. ANDERSON. Children:
(a) ANITA KATHLEEN ANDERSON b. Dec. 15, 1947 at Colorado City, Texas.
(b) WARREN WOODROW ANDERSON JR. b. Feb. 23, 1951.
(c) LESLIE STEPHEN ANDERSON b. July 31, 1954.
(d) RANDALL CRAIG ANDERSON b. Mar. 23, 1960.

Information from Mrs. WARREN ANDERSON, Route No. 3, Colorado City, Texas.

3. HATTIE MAY HARPER m. Dec. 1, 1907 ALBERT JAMES COOPER, b. Feb. 12, 1888, son of JAMES NELSON COOPER and his wife CLARIE LEE MILLER. Children:
(1) WILLIE RALPHARD COOPER b. Aug. 22, 1908 at Edna, Texas; m. Nov. 11, 1940 ELOISE BENNISON.
(2) HENRY LEE COOPER b. April 14, 1910 at Snyder, Texas; m. April 15, 1933 JESSIE EVELYN PAYNE.

4. MALINDA SUSAN HARPER daughter of above, m. YANCIE DAVID BUCKALEW b. Oct. 12, 1891; d. July 1958 at Liberty Hill, Texas, son of IRA BUCKALEW and his wife MARY HAYMAN. Children:
(1) ALVIN LOYD BUCKALEW b. Oct. 8, 1923 at Colorado City, Texas; m. Mar. 27, 1947 JULIA MAY JENET.
(2) MAYLON ELDRED BUCKALEW b. Mar. 31, 1929; d. Oct. 26, 1929.
(3) EULA BLANCHE COOPER b. Feb. 23, 1913, at Cuthbert, Texas; m. Mar. 29, 1931 ORVILLE LEE HOLT.
(4) A. J. COOPER, b. April 12, 1916 at Colorado City, Tex.; m. Feb. 18, 1936 ALICE LOUISE FISHER.
(5) RAYMOND LEON COOPER b. Sept. 16, 1920 at Goldith, Texas; m. July 20, 1946 ALVA NAN BALLARD.
(6) HOWARD LORANE COOPER b. Nov. 8, 1924 at Raylon, Texas; m. Oct. 6, 1951 RODBY CHAMBLIS.
(7) MARTHA ALENE COOPER b. Jan. 1, 1927 at Vernon, Texas; m. July 14, 1951 BENJAMINE W. ORSACK.
(8) MONTZALEE COOPER b. Feb. 17, 1929 at Vernon, Tex.; m. Dec. 4, 1954 ERWIN ALLEN SHIFFER.
(9) EDITH MAY COOPER b. April 5, 1932 at New Home, Texas; m. Nov. 29, 1953 MILLER DEAN BEAL.

The above information from HATTIE HARPER COOPER, R. R. No. 1, Box 6F, Comfort, Texas.

5. ELIZABETH ALBERTINA HARPER m. Oct. 3, 1910 at Snyder, Texas; CLAUD CLAYBORN VAUGHN, b. Aug. 5, 1891 at Ennis, Texas, son of WILLIAM BLACKBIRD VAUGHN and his wife JENNIE HUGHS. Children:
(1) LENA PEARL VAUGHN b. Aug. 28, 1912; m. Mar. 9, 1933 JAMES W. CAVINESS.
(2) THELMA MARY VAUGHN b. June 28, 1914 at Snyder, Texas; m. April 23, 1939 HERMAN C. BARNETT.

8. ANNIE BELL HARPER, dau. of JOHN FLETCHER HARPER and MARTHA CATHERINE ROGERS, m. Jan. 21, 1922 OLLIE HARTWELL THOMPSON, b. June 18, 1892 at Paris, Texas; son of FRANCIS MARION THOMPSON and his wife, CAROLINE; died June 22, 1960. Children:

(1) AGNES PAULINE THOMPSON b. Aug. 15, 1924 at Colorado City, Texas; m. June 18, 1949 OTIS BERL CAUIN.
(2) WESLEY LA VERNE THOMPSON b. June 26, 1933, at Colorado City; m. June 21, 1952 LOIS ELIZABETH DAVIS.

Information from Mrs. O. H. THOMPSON, 513 Bluebonnet Dr., Kerrville, Texas

9. MARY LOUISE HARPER, dau. of J. F. and M. C. Harper m. Oct. 15, 1922 at Colorado City, Texas, CLARENCE GRADY STANDIFER b. Mar. 10, 1902 in Montgomery Co., Ark. son of LEROY STANDIFER and LUELLA HOUTON. Children:
   (1) CLEMENT ROY STANDIFER b. Oct. 14, 1928; m. Aug. 8, 1946 DOROTHY SUE HENSON.
   (2) EVELYN MAXINE STANDIFER, b. July 30, 1925; m. Dec. 27, 1951 HAROLD MINTER.
   (3) ELMER TURETT STANDIFER b. April 30, 1927; m. Mar. 28, 1949 LIBBY KOONCE.
   (4) LOIS VERNELL STANDIFER, b. Sept. 2, 1931; m. Oct. 15, 1949 ROBERT LEE.
   (5) JENNIE LADEL STANDIFER b. Oct. 2, 1934; m. June 2, 1951 LEROY LINNEY.

IV. No information on descendants of ANNIE ELIZA ROGERS and RICHARD WILKERSON.

V. Eighth generation BENJAMINE FRANKLIN ROGERS, son of BENJAMINE FRANKLIN A. ROGERS and his wife ELIZA JANE WHITSON m. EMMA DICKIE.

EMMA DICKIE, according to family tradition, was an orphan and was reared by a family named DONAHUE. She had two sisters, one older and one younger named PRICEY and a brother BILLY. All of the children were reared in different homes and PRICEY was adopted. Issue:

1. ALEX MEREDITH ROGERS, b. Feb. 4, 1881 at Edna, Jackson Co., Texas; d. 1919 Stonewall, Tex.; m. BERTHA ELLEN SMITH.
2. BENJAMINE ROBERTSON b. Sept. 28, 1882 at Bandera, Texas; d. Childress, Texas; m. ROSE.
3. HENRY HIRAM b. 28, 1884; d. Nov. 24, 1935; m. MARGARET (MORGANA) McDONNELL.
4. BERTHA ROGERS b. July 5, 1885; m. JAMES BENSON LIVERMAN.
5. LUCINDA (LUCY) b. Sept. 26, 1888; d. Nolan Co., Texas, June 13, 1956; m. OSCAR C. McDONNELL.
6. MACK LAMAR, b. Mar. 6, 18——.
7. OLLIE LEE (twin) ROGERS.
8. ALLIE (twin) ROGERS, d. New Mexico.
9. WILLIE ROGERS b. ———— d. Delight, Ark. 1919.
10. LETTIE BERETTA ———— d. Texas 1919; m. BEARDON.
11. EMMA EDNA ROGERS b. July 7, 1895 at Sweetwater, Nolan Co., Texas; d. Feb. 13, 1945 at Sylvester, Texas; m. Jan. 1915 HENRY OGDON VAN LIEW.

Last Information on the family of BENJAMINE ROBERSON ROGERS is that some of them lived in Childress, Grandchildren of BENJ. FRANKLIN ROGERS and EMMA DICKIE:

4. Lineage of BERTHA ROGERS, dau. of BENJAMINE ROBERSON ROGERS, and JAMES BENSON LIVERMAN. Information from IVA VOLPI, 201 Mass. Ave., Riverside, Calif. She says that LIVERMAN family moved in 1918 to Imperial, Calif. Mr. LIVERMANS' parents were ROBERT and NANCY LIVERMAN who were first cousins. Both died at the age of 25 and JAMES BENSON LIVERMAN was orphaned at the age of 9 mo. He was reared by a lady, WILLIE METCALF, who later became the wife of the Rev. FEATHERSTONE, who wrote a biography of his life and who officiated at the marriage of his step-son, and BERTHA IVA ROGERS b. 5 July 1885; d. 27 May 1957 at Riverside, Calif.; m. 22 Aug. 1905 JAMES BENSON LIVERMAN b. 13 April 1884; d. 13 May 1952. Issue:
   (1) BENJAMINE JONATHAN LIVERMAN;
   (2) IVA FRANCES b. May 6, 1908 m. VOLPI;
   (3) ALLEN HENRY LIVERMAN;
   (4) VIRGIL CLARENCE b. Aug. 22, 1912;
   (5) EMMA MAE b. Nov. 21, 1916 at Brownwood, Texas;
   (6) MACK LAMAR b. April 8, 1918 at Brownwood, Texas.

Lineage of LUCINDA SARAH ROGERS dau. of BENJ. FRANKLIN ROGERS JR. Information from REBECCA GRACE, 1001 W. Colo., Sweetwater, Texas.

5. LUCINDA SARAH ROGERS b. Sept. 26, 1888; d. June 13, 1956; m. 1902 OSCAR COWAN McDONNELL b. July 4, 1878; d. Oct. 20, 1957. Children:
   (1) JOHN FRANKLIN, b. Nov. 19, 1903 at Aspermont, Stonewall Co., Texas.
   (2) DOCK COWAN, b. May 18, 1906.
   (3) KATIE ETHEL b. May 3, 1909 at Sweetwater, Tex.
   (4) REBECCA MAE, b. June 18, 1913; m. May 23, 1932 GEORGE FOREST GRACE b. June 18, 1910 in Hall Colk, Texas, son of GEO. THOS. GRACE and his wife LILLIE MAE WYATT. Children:
      a. GEORGE WYATT GRACE, April 30, 1936; Sweetwater, Texas; d. May 31, 1936.
      b. LILLIE MAE b. Sept. 14, 1946.
      c. LUCY SARAH b. April 23, 1949.
      d. GEORGE FOREST b. April 6, 1953.
      e. DORA REBECCA b. June 4, 1955.

GEORGE FOREST GRACE was a petty officer in World War II in U.S. Navy C.B.'s two years overseas, one year in S. Pacific and one at Dutch Harbor, Alaska.

11. Lineage of EDNA EMMA ROGERS, youngest daughter of BENJAMINE FRANKLIN ROGERS, JR. and his wife EMMA DICKIE, and her husband HENRY OGDON VAN LIEW.
EDNA EMMA ROGERS, b. July 7, 1895; d. Feb. 13, 1945 at Sylvester, Fisher Co., Tex.; m. Jan. 1915 HENRY OGDON VAN LIEW, b. Aug. 29, 1895 in Coryell Co., Texas, son of JOHN HAFFORD VAN LIEW and his wife MARY JANE APPLIN. Children and grandchildren:
(1) ROY DANIEL VAN LIEW b. Nov. 1, 1915 in Haskell Co., Texas; m. July 8, 1949 MAMIE ELLEN GRIFFIN b. July 31, 1917, dau. of THOMAS ROY GRIFFIN and LULA PEARL McKENNEY. Had:
a. DAN WELDON VAN LIEW b. Nov. 1, 1945 at Sweetwater, Texas.
(2) DOLORA MAE VAN LIEW b. April 28, 1918; m. Oct. 8, 1938 TROY BISHOP GORDON, b. Sept. 18, son of CONDY GORDON and OLIVE SWANNER. Had:
a. HOWARD WAYNE GORDON b. Sept. 4, 1939;
b. DEVERAL WAYNE GORDON b. Oct. 17, 1942;
c. LOUISE LAVERNE GORDON, b. Mar. 15, 1948;
d. JERRY LEE GORDON b. Dec. 4, 1958 at Rotan, Texas;
e. RANDY ROY b. Jan. 10, 1955.
(3) VERA VERDILLA VAN LIEW b. Jan. 20, 1921; m. Nov. 18, 1940 SILLVESTER J. TEMPLETON JR.; b. Sept. 28, 1921 at San Angelo, Texas, son of SILLVESTER J. and FRANCES DENTON TEMPLETON. Had:
a. CAROLYN VIRGINIA TEMPLETON b. April 30, 1940 at San Angelo; m. Oct. 15, 1960 ROBERT LOUIS SMITH.
(4) RAYMOND ROGERS VAN LIEW b. Mar. 21, 1924 at Sylvester, Texas; d. Jan. 20, 1925.
(5) ROSA LEE VAN LIEW b. April 24, 1933; m. MELVIN SCOTT in 1954.
(6) NORMAN DAVIS VAN LIEW b. May 27, 1935; m. Sept. 28, 1956 CHARLSIE LAVONNE POWELL b. Aug. 14, 1937 at Conway, Ark. dau. of ROLLAND IRVING POWELL and LINNIE LOUISE MASON. Have:
a. DEBRA KAY VAN LIEW b. Sept. 15, 1957;
b. LAURIE ANN VAN LIEW b. June 4, 1960 at Midland, Texas.

Information from NORMAN VAN LIEW, 2309 Cloverdale Rd., Midland, Texas

The information on the family of FRANKLIN A. ROGERS and his wife ELIZA ANN WHITSON was collected in 1961, from various members of that connection by MAMIE VAN LIEW and sent to the compiler in the hope it might be included in Vol. II "We Cousins."

ROGERS-BERNARD

ELIZABETH BERNARD, the wife of JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS or JOHN A. ROGERS and the grandmother of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, was probably not of York Co. but of Gloucester Co. across the York River.

Minute' pains have been taken in trying to make a definite connection between her and earlier BARNARDS but the only BERNARD in York Co. up until and after the birth of ELIZABETH, who was born about 1740-45, was SAMUEL BERNARD, rector of York-Hampton Parish from about 1705 to 1720.

Neither SAMUEL'S will nor the available records of York Co. from 1700-1765 show, definitely, that SAMUEL BERNARD had sons who might have lived in York Co., after his death. The will refers only to heirs of his wife's body.

The seat of the BERNARD family after 1651 was Gloucester Co. until their holdings were cut off in 1793 in Mathews Co. when it was established. However, that was long after ELIZABETH BERNARD, born about 1745, became the wife of JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS of York-Hampton Parish about 1765 and was subsequently the mother of his children, JOHN A. ROGERS JR., WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS II), ELIZABETH or MOLLY and NANCY or ANN.

Therefore, it is evident that we must concentrate on Gloucester Co., where RICHARD BERNARD was an immigrant before 1647, and on Warwick Co., where both THOMAS (1637) and WILLIAM (1641) were early settlers. Unfortunately the records of both of these counties have been destroyed by fire and those of Gloucester three times.

The BARNARDS were early comers in both of Warwick and Gloucester.

On 22 Aug. 1637, THOMAS BARNARD, gentleman, was granted 500 acres on the Warwick River. On 16 Dec. 1641, he added 1050 acres to this holding and another 300 acres on 24 Sept. 1645, all on Warwick Co. ("Cavaliers and Pioneers").

In addition to the Warwick lands, THOMAS BERNARD patented 189 acres in James City 20 Jan. 1641. (Gleaning in England) This was probably land adjoining his Warwick holdings.

In 1644 Captain THOS. BERNARD was BURGESS from Warwick Co. He was addressed as Captain. This was his title two years later in a document dated 1647 which refers to him as late sheriff of Warwick Co.

A WILLIAM BERNARD was granted 1050 acres in Warwick Co. 16 Dec. 1641. ("Gleanings in England" - Walters - (No. 1 p. 762)

This is the exact number of acres and the exact date of the second patent to THOMAS BERNARD and may be an assignment from him to WILLIAM.

In 1651 a Mrs. MARY BARNARD lived in Warwick Co. according to the will of ROBERT NICHOLSON, merchant of London, son of FRANCIS NICHOLSON, Esq., dated 10 Nov. 1651, who devised six pair of gloves to Mrs. MARY BERNARD of Warwick River and to her daughters, three pair each.

He also devised gloves to Capt. WM. MATHEWS of Va. Esq. to Mrs. MATHEWS and to SAM'L MATHEWS JR. (Genealogical Gleanings in Eng. p. 173)

We have seen that WILLIAM BARNARD of Warwick seems to have been assigned a tract of 1050 acres of land patented to THOMAS BERNARD in Dec. 1641. We believe Mrs. MARY BARNARD was widow of THOMAS, and WILLIAM of Warwick was his brother.

Mrs. MARY BARNARD was still living in Warwick Co. on 27 May 1673 when JAMES HALEY and AMBROSE LOYD were granted orders to patent surplus land within ye bounds of lands belonging to Mrs. MARY BARNARD in Warwick Co. (p. 341 "Minutes of Council and General Court of Col. Va.")

One of the most prominent families of Gloucester Co. from early times was that of RICHARD and ANNA BARNARD of Purton.

Among the Related Families of Va. who are entitled to Coats of Arms is BARNARD of Gloucester Co. (p. 13) of Related Families).

"Arms - argent, a bear rampant, sable muzzled or Crest a demi-bear muzzled and collared. Motto - "Bear and Forebear."

The first of this family in Va. was RICHARD BARNARD, gent., who as a widower aged 26 obtained a marriage license 24 Nov. 1634 in England to marry ANNA CORDEROY aged 22 dau. of ——— CORDEROY of St. Andrews in Wardrobe, London. (Chester's London Marriage Licenses) He was in the colony 3 Jan. 1647 in which year he rented from Capt. THOS. HARWOOD of Va. and others, the plantation in York Co. called Pryors Plantation, for a term of three years.

To this document is attached a rough drawing made by the clerk of the court, of a shield bearing the arms common to the BARNARDS of Buckingham. This lease was made in York Co. Va. relating to property on the N.E. side of York River which was cut off in Gloucester Co., in 1651.

However, a conveyance recorded in York in 1652, states that ANNE BERNARD, now of Purton in Petso Parish, Gloucester Co. widow purchased Pryor Plantation from THOMAS EDWARDS of the Inner Temple, London and his wife, MARGARATE, one of the daughters of WM. PRYOR, dec'd.

ANNE BARNARD had a son RICHARD BARNARD II) who was a vestryman, in 1677, of Petso Parish who had two sons, JOHN and PHILIP BERNARD.

On 2 July 1652, Mrs. ANNA BARNARD patented 700 acres in Gloucester Co. adjoining the lands of Mr. WILLIAM PRYOR, dec'd., and bound partly by the head of Jones Creek, and eastly on the Rappohannock horsepath adj. also lands of Col. RICHARD LEE, HUGH DANDRIDGE and SAM'L SOLLACE for the importation of 20 persons.

Prior to this or 3 April 1651 Mrs. ANNA BARNARD was granted 1000 acres in Northumberland Co. on the north side of the Potomac River for transfer of 20 persons: Mr. RICHARD BARNARD, Mrs. ANNE BARNARD, Mrs. ELINOR CORDUROY, ELIZA. BARNATT (BARNARD) CORDUROY BARNATT, RICHARD BARNATT, WM. CORDUROY, EDWARD CORDUROY, WM. IRONMONGER, FRANCIS IRONMONGER, ELIZA PERCY, ELIZABETH ASHTON, JOHN SMITH, JOSEPH BACON, etc. ("Cavaliers and Pioneers" p. 211)

From these names we know that this is the land she claimed, after her husbands death for the transfer of her immediate family and numerous relatives to the new world.

On 21 Aug. 1665 FRANCIS IRONMONGER patented 660 acres beginning at a corner tree on Major JOHN SMITH and WM. CORDEROY and adjacent RICHARD BARNARD along back line of PURTON, in Gloucester Co.

We recognize this group of people as all tied to the family of ANNA BARNARD.

Major JOHN SMITH had married ANNA BARNARD JR. daughter of Mrs. ANNA BARNARD. Their son JOHN SMITH II) of Gloucester Co., married MARY WARNER, dtr. of Col. AUGUSTINE WARNER and MILDRED READE and their daughter MILDRED SMITH b. 20 Feb. 1681 m. 17 Aug. 1700 ROBERT PORTEUS, all direct lineal ancestor of Queen Elizabeth II) of England.

Minutes of the council and General Court of Colonial Va. dated 25 Sept. 1671 state that Mrs. ANNA BARNARD being deceased, Col. PETER JENNINGS requested that Major JOHN SMITH and Col. PRITCHETT be joined with him in the guardianship of JOHN MATHEWS, orphan of Col. SAMUEL MATHEWS dec'd., Mrs. ANNA BARNARD having served as guardian before her death.

We have seen that ROBERT NICHOLSON of London, merchant and son of FRANCIS NICHOLSON, Esq. devised gloves to Mrs. MARY BARNARD and her daughters of Warwick River and to Capt. WM. MATHEWS and Mrs. MATHEWS of Va. as well as to SAMUEL MATHEWS JR. That was in Nov. 1651 and twenty years later we find

that Mrs. ANNA BARNARD acted as guardian of JOHN MATHEWS, orphan of Col. SAMUEL MATHEWS, who was either SAMUEL MATHEWS JR. of twenty years before or his father, SAMUEL SR.

If NICHOLSON was related to Mrs. MARY BARNARD of Warwick River as well as the MATHEWS who were also related to Mrs. ANNA BERNARD of Purton the implication is that RICHARD BARNARD I) of Gloucester Co. was related to THOMAS BERNARD of Warwick Co. dec'd., probably bro. of WILLIAM.

According to the available records, it appears that RICHARD BARNARD I) of York Co. in 1647 and his wife ANNA CORDUROY had only one surviving son, RICHARD JR. born before they came to Va. and included as a headright when ANNA BARNARD claimed the land in 1651. No further mention is made of CORDURY BARNARD.

Records of a case, RICHARD BARNARD vs. DISHMAN WEEDEN and JOHN and WILLIAM BROWN included in Barradalls "Reports of Virginia Colonial Decision," Vol. II p. 272 are reviewed as follows:

"In 1652 a patent was obtained by Mrs. ANNA BERNARD for 1000 acres of land and, in 1654, another for 1500 acres including the 100 acres in question. ANN BARNARD died in 1671 and the premise descended to her son, RICHARD BARNARD, who died in 1691, having by his will devised the same to his sons PHILIP and JOHN. JOHN had the whole by survivorship and died in 1709, having by his will devised to his son the Lesser (RICHARD BARNARD III) of the plaintiff who was 25 years old when the suit was brought.

In 1689, two years before his death, RICHARD BARNARD JR.) made a letter of attorney to WILLIAM BUCKNER to take charge of 400 acres in Stafford Co. patented to Mrs. ANNA BARNARD and assigned to him, (Stafford Co. made in 1664 from Westmoreland Co.) and devised by RICHARD in his 1691 will to his sons JOHN and PHILIP BERNARD.

In 1691 BUCKNER, for a small consideration, did take upon himself to sell two small parcels of said land to THOS. WEEDEN and ALEX SHAIRS. These deeds were made in the name of BUCKNER, himself, and not in the name of BARNARD, who, indeed, was dead before the date of them. Case April 1738, in Washington Parish.

Mrs. ANNA BARNARD left her estate, "Purton" in Gloucester Co. to her son-in-law, Capt. JOHN SMITH, her sons RICHARD and his son JOHN claiming the Westmoreland Co. property.

ELIZABETH BERNARD, wife of RICHARD III), of the BARRADALL Case, was the widow of WILLIAM STOKES and the daughter or step-dau., of LAWRENCE BUTLER of Westmorland Co. Va.

Mrs. ELIZABETH BARNARD died before Dec. 1760 as did also her son, JOHN STOKES. From a suit in Chancery in the Westmorland Court between RICHARD BARNARD in his own right, as admt. of ELIZABETH BARNARD his wife (dec'd) and FRANCES STOKES, widow of JOHN STOKES, and admx. of her husband's estate, we have this information.

This RICHARD BARNARD, who married ELIZABETH HART STOKES and had WILLIAM, RICHARD and JOHN BARNARD, was the son of JOHN BARNARD 1661-1709, great-grandson of RICHARD BARNARD I) 1608-1650 and his wife ANNA CORDUROY 1612-1671.

There are birth dates given in the Register of St. Pauls Parish, King Geo. Co. Va. (made from Westmorland in 1720) which would be of RICHARD BERNARD III) and his wife ELIZABETH STOKES and their two younger sons, WILLIAM Having been born before 1732.

1. RICHARD, son of RICHARD and ELIZABETH BERNARD, b. 20 Sept. 1734;
2. JOHN, son of RICHARD and ELIZABETH BERNARD, b. 29 Dec. 1736.

It is said that only their son, RICHARD survived, but the fact that future records are mostly in the name of the oldest son doesn't necessarily mean that the other sons were deceased before manhood because, as heir, the eldest son inherited the lion's share of property. We find WM. but not RICHARD or JOHN.

The will of Capt. LAWRENCE BUTLER of Westmoreland Co. was dated 9 Mar. 1732 and probated exactly a year later.

He names his dau.-in-law, CORDUROY SANFORD; his grandson, WM. BARNARD; and his son-in-law RICHARD BARNARD. This looks like the husband and son of ELIZABETH HART STOKES but unless BUTLER was married to the mother of either RICH BARNARD or his wife, this could not be.

The will of a ROBERT BERNARD dated 4 Dec. 1724 was probated in Westmorland Co. 27 Jan. 1724/25. He mentions a wife, but not by name, and other persons but no children. He was of Washington Parish of Westmorland Co. the one in which suit was brought by the heirs of RICHARD BERNARD II) who died in 1691 against DISHMAN WEEDEN and JOHN BROWN in 1738. He may have been brother of RICHARD III.

The will of WILLIAM BARNARD of King Geo. Co. Va. was dated 12 Mar. 1782; proved 4 May 1783. (King Geo. Co. made from Westmorland and Richmond Co. in 1720/21) WM. BARNARD made complete provision from his wife's future welfare as long as she remained his widow.

His children were:

1. RICHARD BARNARD, to whom he left all his lands in King Geo. Co. and ½ of all his lands in Henry Co. Va., all silverplate except coffee-pot and 6 tablespoons and 6 teaspoons.
2. Son WILLIAM, all lands in Richmond Co. and Farquir Co. and ½ lands in Henry Co. Va., also silverplate not given to son, RICHARD.
3. To dau. SARAH, £2000 lbs. in gold or silver payable to her from estate at time of marriage or when she reaches age of 21.

4. A son, now deceased.
5. Debt from MANN PAGE, of Gloucester Co. Son, WILLIAM, and dau. SARAH, are not of age and so are probably the "Two younger children" to whom the will refers. Son, RICHARD, is of age and is made one of the exectuors. Because of this difference in age we believe that WILLIAM BERNARD was married twice and only RICHARD and perhaps the deceased son, were children of an earlier marriage.

This WILLIAM BERNARD, is surely the son of RICHARD BARNARD III) and his wife, ELIZABETH HART STOKES. He was the oldest son, born before 1732 while RICHARD was born in 1734 and JOHN in 1736.

THOS. JETT and JOHN ASHTON SR. were co-exects., with RICHARD BERNARD of the estate of his father, WILLIAM BERNARD.

The will of THOS. JETT dated 14 Feb. 1784/5 and proved 25 Oct. 1785 in Westmorland Co. Va. names his daughter, ANN BERNARD, and his grandson, THOMAS BERNARD. He also names his son, WILLIAM STORKE JETT and daughter, MARY STORKE and a grandson THOMAS STORKE.

He refers to HENRY, son of LAWRENCE WASHINGTON, who died in 1776 and his nephew, BECKETT JETT.

His wife was SUKEY and his executor was Col. JOHN SKINNER.

Evidently ANN JETT BERNARD was the wife of RICHARD BERNARD IV), grandson of RICHARD BERNARD III) and his wife ELIZABETH HART, widow of WILLIAM STORK. RICHARD IV) was the son of WM. BERNARD who died in King Geo. Co. in 1783.

The several references to members of the STORKE connection in the will of THOMAS JETT suggests that in marrying ANN JETT, RICHARD BARNARD IV) married into the descendants of his grand-mother by her STORKE marriage. The name of WILLIAM STORK JETT, who was the brother of ANN, as well as the other STORKE names which appear in this document and RICHARDS will, suggest this relationship.

RICHARD BARNARD IV made his will on 15 Oct. 1783 and it was proved 3 March 1785.

He left to his wife, ANN BERNARD, the plantation where his mother-in-law (step-mother) was then living and the plantation which his grandfather bought of ROBERT WASHINGTON.

(1) To his son, THOMAS BERNARD, he left his lands in King Geo. and Farquir Cos.
(2) To his son, THORNTON BERNARD he left lands in Spottsylvania and Henry Cos.
(3) He had a daughter, yet not baptized to whom he left money.

He devised two slaves to WILLIAM SUTTLE, son of SARAH SUTTLE. (Was this his sister, SARAH?) His friends, JOHN and WILLIAM STORKE, were made executors. ROBERT MASSEY and SUKEY KENNEDY were witnesses. (Was SUKEY the widow of THOS. JETT?)

There is, of course, the possibility that THOMAS JETT was step-father of ANN and that MARY STORK, the other daughter named in JETT'S will, was the wife of one of the executors of the estate of RICHARD BERNARD IV) while THOMAS STORKE was their son.

With most of the genealogy of RICHARD BERNARD II), son of RICHARD I) and ANNA CORDURY reviewed; if he was an only son of his parents, as assumed these many years, it eliminates the probability of ELIZABETH BERNARD who married JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS about 1765, being of the line of RICHARD and ANNA CORDURY, unless WILLIAM II of Gloucester was their son.

A WILLIAM BARNARD born 1598, d. 1665 in Va. came to that colony and married LUCY HIGGINSON BURWELL, widow. He was a grandson of FRANCIS BERNARD SR. of Abington in Northampshire. (Va. Mag. of History Vol. 54 p. 330) He is said to be of Nansemond Co.

Still another document states that WM. BERNARD, aged 27, embarked at Gravesend, Eng. for Va. in June of 1635. He is said to have been the son of the Knight of Huntington. The records of York Co. prove his wife to have been LUCY, only dau. of Capt. ROBERT HIGGINSON. Fragmentary records of Gloucester Co. prove that they resided in that Co.

On 8 Oct. 1657 Col. WM. BERNARD patented 800 acres in Lancaster Co. Va. but files of that Co. indicate that, not he, but his grandson, JOHN BARNARD, occupied this land. JOHN was married before 1704 to ANN ——— the births of their children were registered in Christ Church - Middlesex Co. beginning in Dec. of that year.

Do all of these Records refer to one WILLIAM BERNARD? With records of Warwick, Gloucester and Nansemond Cos. all destroyed it is difficult to say, for there was also WILLIAM BARNARD of Nansemond Co.

However, LUCY HIGGINGSON evidently did not marry two different WILLIAM BARNARDS. Since she married only one, one of the birth-dates of WILLIAM is in error, and the evidence is that she married Col. WILLIAM BARNARD of York and Gloucester Cos. whom we believe to have been the WILLIAM BERNARD formerly of Warwick.

On Feb. 11, 1657 AUGUSTINE WARNER of Gloucester Co. patented 200 acres on the branches of the Pyankertank River touching on the Severn R. and adj. his own land, Col. BARNARD's and along the Indian path. ("Records of Colonial Gloucester Co." p. 78) This land was Gloucester Co.

Because of this fact and because the few records of Gloucester indicate that he had descendants there, it appears that Col. WM. BERNARD who married LUCY HIGGINSON, her second husband, lived in Gloucester Co. at least after his marriage to her.

She married first Major LEWIS BURWELL SR. who died about 1653; married (2) Col. WM. BARNARD d. 31 Dec. 1664/5 m. (3) Col. PHILIP LUDWELL.

By BARNARD she had:

1. LUCY BARNARD m. (1) Dr. EDMUND GROYN of Gloucester Co. Va.; m. (2) ED CREFFIELD of London.
2. ELIZABETH BARNARD m. THOS. TODD II, of Gloucester Co.
3. GEORGE BARNARD, who in 1666 was living in England with his Uncle.
4. WILLIAM BARNARD of Gloucester Co. in 1675, 1698, 1703 and 1704.

There may have been one or two more children of this ten year marriage.

The will of Sir ROBERT BARNARD, BART. of Brampton Hall, Huntington England, dated 5 Dec. 1665 and proved 15 May 1666 recites that his brother, WILLIAM BARNARD of Va., died 31 Dec. 1664 and that GEO., his son, is in England with the Uncle. (Va. Mag. of History Vol. 25 p. 87).

WILLIAM BARNARD dec'd. the last day of the year 1664 was born 1608, came to Va. 1635; was granted 1050 acres of land in Warwick Co. 16 Dec. 1641 (Gleanings in Eng. Waters); received the oath of Counciller (WILLIAM BARNARD, Esq.) at James City 8 Mar. 1641. ("Minutes of the Council and General Court of Colonial Va." p. 498)

A WILLIAM BARNARD with the title of Captain was a member of the Governor's Council in 1647 and as Col. WILLIAM BARNARD from 1655-1658 (Gleanings in England - Waters)

Council membership was usually for life so no doubt, Col. BARNARD served until his death 31 Dec. 1664.

Since BARNARD, born, 1608 was 45 years old when he married LUCY HIGGINSON in 1653 or 1654, it is very likely that he had been married before and quite possible that his son, GEORGE, who was in England with his uncle, Sir ROBERT BARNARD, in 1666 was of the earlier marriage.

In his will dated 8 Sept. 1654/5, GEO. LUDLOW, Esq. of the county and parish of York in Va., devised to GEO. BARNARD, son of Col. WM. BARNARD, my great silver tankard with my arms on it, to Col. WM. BARNARD, Major WM. GOOCH and Capt. AUGUSTINE WARNER 1/10 each for acting as overseers of the estate. ("Gleanings in Eng." p. 173)

Since Col. BARNARD'S son was named GOERGE it is probably that GEORGE LUDLOW was either his Godfather, Grandfather or Uncle.

Because we find him in available later Records, we believe that Col. WM. BARNARD had a son, WILLIAM BARNARD II) by his wife, LUCY HIGGINSON. We have seen that both of their daughters married Gloucester Co. husbands.

On 28 Oct. 1675, ROBERT CARY patented land inGloucester Co. which was adjacent to Mr. WILLIAM BARNARD, JOSEPH COLEMAN, Mr. IRONMONGER and WILLIAM FLEMING in Petso Parish. ("Reeords of Colonial Gloucester Co." - Cary p. 121)

The neighbor, JOSEPH COLEMAN, was granted 300 acres in Gloucester Co. 28 Oct. 1698, the land lying adj. to WM. PRITCHETT, WM. BERNARD and WM. FLEMING. ("English Duplicates of lost Va. Records" p. 20)

The 1704 Quit Rent Roll for Gloucester Co. records that WILLIAM BARNARD was owner of 800 acres in that Co. and that SAMUEL BERNARD owned 550 acres, both of them of Petso Parish.

This WILLIAM BARNARD of age 1675 still living in Gloucester Co. in 1704 could have been either the first child of Col. WILLIAM BARNARD and LUCY HIGGINSON married 1653 or 1654 or he might have been the last child of RICHARD BARNARD of York and Gloucester Cos. who married ANNA CORDUROY in London in 1634. Their oldest son RICHARD BARNARD II of Virginia was born in England in 1636 and was counted as a headright when ANNA BARNARD, in 1651, claimed land for having transported 14 persons including herself and her husband, RICHARD, to Va. CORDEROY BARNARD, reasonably another son of ANNA CORDURY BARNARD, is lost after the importation record.

However, RICHARD BARNARD SR. of Va. who was in Va. in 1647 lived until 1650, therefore, although RICHARD II, is reputed to have been the only son of his parents, it is entirely possible that they had a son, WILLIAM BARNARD born 1647-1650, as well as CORDURY BARNARD perhaps dec'd.

However, we believe that WILLIAM BARNARD II, of York Co., born 1654 or earlier, was the son of Col. WM. BERNARD and that he had these sons;

1. SAMUEL BERNARD of the 1704 Quite Rent Roll. A SAMUEL BERNARD was rector of York-Hampton Parish in adjoining York Co. from about 1705 until his death in 1720 and could easily have been the SAMUEL BERNARD formerly of Gloucester Co. in 1704. SAMUEL mentions his wife, MARTHA, in his will, and the heirs of her body not specifying whether they were her children and his or hers by a former husband. We assume they were his children.
2. ROBERT BERNARD of Gloucester Co. who married ELIZABETH ——— and died in 1742.

A ROBERT BERNARD was justiee of peace in 1737. (p. 21 Records of Col. Gloucester Co.)

This was probably the same ROBERT BERNARD of Kingston Parish, Gloucester who dated his will 1 Oct. 1742. This will was proved 25 Nov. 1742 and was later eopied by JASPER CLAYTON, county clerk, and sent to JOHN BERNARD of Buckingham Co. Va. son of ROBERT BERNARD dec'd. of this will. Except for the necessity of

copying it, it would also have been lost.

ROBERT BERNARD speaks of his wife, without giving a name, makes her guardian of his children and sole executrix of his estate and, after having devised his land to be divided between his sons, leaves the rest to his wife and children but he does not name the daughters.

It was to Sir ROBERT BERNARD of Buckingham, in England to whom his brother, Col. WM. BERNARD, entrusted his son, GEORGE, before his death in 1664.

Now is Gloucester Co. Va. a ROBERT BERNARD, most of whose children are still minors in 1742 makes his will and devises his land to his sons:

(1) To son, ROBERT, land near Monasan Towne which I purchased of THOS. JOHNSON.
(2) To son, PETER, 400 acres which I purchased of JOHN TWILLY of Goochland Co.
(3) Son, WILLIAM - land in Goochland Co. on Willis River.
(4) Son, JOHN, half of the land in Goochland on Willis River.

The will speaks of a son who has reached his majority who was to sell 50 acres of land but does not call his name. This was probably ROBERT BERNARD, first named of his sons or WILLIAM.

The will was witnessed by JOHN SIMMONS and BARTHOLEMEW BLUNT. (BARNARD File in Va. Historical Society Library).

Among other papers of JOHN BERNARD, church warden of Buckingham Co. Va. in 1785 are notations made by JASPER CLAYTON, Clerk of Gloucester Co. as follows:

"I cannot find any order for appointing Mr. WILLIAM BERNARD guardian for JOHN BERNARD, neither the approval of Mrs. ELIZABETH BERNARD executrix, but if I should, will copy and deliver them to Mr. ED TABB to be delivered to Mr. CARRINTON." (TABBS related to TODDS)

Notation on back of this note: "Copy will"

Search for ELIZABETH BERNARD'S will:

For the order appointing WILLIAM BERNARD guardian of JOHN (evidently WILLIAM was an older son perhaps the eldest while JOHN was one of the younger children).

For ELIZABETH BERNARD'S approval;

For WILLIAM BERNARD'S acceptance of guardianship.

These notes supply the name of the widow of ROBERT BERNARD, dec'd. 1742, as ELIZABETH.

They also supply additional hints of relationship to Col. WM. BARNARD dec'd. 1664 and his descendants.

ELIZABETH BARNARD, second daughter of Col. WILLIAM and his wife, LUCY HIGGISON, married THOMAS TODD of Toddsbury in Gloucester Co. This would have been probably THOS. TOOD JR. for his father THOS. SR. started the house, "Toddsbury," in 1658 about the time ELIZABETH was born.

"For four generations the owners were the TODDS; then EDWARD TABB, married his cousin, MARY MASON WYTHE, a daughter of ELIZABETH TODD, and inherited Toddsbury from their Uncle CHRISTOPHER TODD. Both of these young people were direct descendants of THOMAS TODD the founder. Their descendants were owners for many years and additions were made up to 1784. (p. 96 "Old Virginia Houses" - Farrar)

EDWARD TABB, to whom CLAYTON expected to deliver certain information, was evidently the one who married LUCY TODD, daughter or granddaughter of ELIZABETH BARNARD, the daughter of LUCY and Col. WM. BARNARD, who would probably, have married 1675-1680.

Mr. CARRINGTON, according to papers in the BERNARD file in the Library of the Va. Historical Society in Richmond, was married to a descendant of JOHN BERNARD. EDWARD TABB as the closest relative of the descendants of JOHN BERNARD and evidently is the go-between in this search for BERNARD documents in Gloucester Co.

JOHN BERNARD was justice of peace in Buckingham Co. Va. in 1777. He and JOSEPH WATKINS, at various times, purchased and then sold a total of 6000 acres in 12 tracts.

His estate was inventoried in the Co. of his residence in 1799. It was signed by GEORGE BERNARD (named for his great Uncle?) and by W. R. BERNARD (probably WILLIAM).

PETER BERNARD, son of ROBERT BERNARD of Gloucester served in the Revolutionary War, entering as a Captain in the spring of 1777 and serving until 1781.

PETER BARNARD, the only BARNARD to appear in the1782 tax list of Gloucester Co., Kingston Parish, owned 230 acres and lived alone. He owned 12 slaves, 3 horses and 3 cattle.

He is not shown in the 1791 tax list. (p. 107 "Records of Colonial Gloucester" - Cary)

He was probably cut off that year in Mathews Co. which was created from Kingston Parish.

PETER BARNARD or his widow, applied for a Rev. War Pension on 12 Nov. 1833 in Mathers Co. Va. and on 10 Aug. 1835 the heirs of PETER BARNARD received a warrent No. 8166 for 4000 acres of land.

3. JOHN BERNARD of Middlesex Co. 1704 to 1719 was another son of WILLIAM BERNARD II, son of Co. WM. BERNARD of Gloucester Co. Va.

Middlesex Co was made from Lancaster Co. in 1673/4.

The name of JOHN BARNARD of Middlesex Co. is misspelled BARNATT.

In the 1651 land patent to Mrs. ANNA BERNARD for 1000 acres in Westmorland Co., the official record shows part of her family as BARNARD and part as BARNATT, even her son RICHARD BARNARD JR.

This mistaken or double spelling of the same name is also found in English wills of approximately the same era

In the will of WILLIAM ROGERS of London, gold-smith, he refers to MARY BARNATT, a grandchild of my deceased brother, JOHN ROGERS and to her mother, BARNATT. He mentions his kinsman, JASPER DRAPER and his wife, ANN and his brother RICHARD ROGERS.

His will was dated 1 Dec. 1625 and Proved 24 March 1625/26. (Gleanings in Eng. p. 642)

The will of his brother, RICHARD ROGERS, Esq. comptroller of His Majesty's Mint, Tower of London was dated 26 June 1636. He names his wife JOANE, his daughter ANN, wife of JASPER DRAPER, and his cousin (niece) MARY RUSSELL and her daughter, MARY BARNARD. He left his land in Va. to his son, EDWARD ROGERS, who may have been the one of that name who lived a bit later in Isle of Wight Co.

In these two wills we see MARY, grandchild of JOHN ROGERS dec'd. before 1625, referred to in one as MARY BARNATT and in the other as MARY BARNARD.

Because of these two references where the name BARNARD is spelled BARNATT, the BARNATT records of Middlesex Co. Va. are included here, at least those taken from the Christ Church Parish which fell mostly in Middlesex Co. which was made from Lancaster:

1. JOHN BARNATT son of JOHN and ANN bapt. 3 Dec. 1704;
2. RICHARD BARNATT, son of JOHN and ANN bapt. 16 Mar. 1706;
3. SARAH BARNATT, dau. of JOHN and ANN bapt. 16 Feb. 1708/9;
4. WILLIAM BARNATT, son of JOHN and ANN bapt. 28 Aug. 1715;
5. ANNE BARNATT, dau. of JOHN and ANN, bapt. 27 Mar. 1719.

Earlier in this sketch, we found that Col. WM. BARNARD patented 800 acres in Lancaster Co. on 8 Oct. 1658 No. 4 p. 372 (Gleanings in Eng. p. 174) Middlesex Co. was made from Lancaster Co. 1673/4. So these BARNATTS (BERNARDS) could be descended from Col. WILLIAM BARNARD of York and Gloucester Cos. Va. who had sons GEORGE and WILLIAM JR. whom we have already identified. WILLIAM JR. was of age in 1675 and JOHN, who was father of five children 1704-1719 may have been his son.

This JOHN who lived at least until 1719 could not have been JOHN, son of RICHARD BERNARD JR. who died in 1709.

4. HENRY BARNATT (BARNARD) of Middlesex Co. may have been another son of WILLIAM BARNARD II) of Gloucester Co., who shared, with his brother, JOHN BARNARD, the 800 acre tract of land patented in Lancaster Co. by their grandfather, Col. WILLIAM BARNARD in Oct. 1657.

Christs Church Register states:

1. MARY BARNATT, dau. of HENRY and ANN, bapt. 3 April 1728.
2. WILLIAM BARNATT, son of HENRY and ANN, bapt. 6 Dec. 1730.

Later, in Kingston Parish Gloucester Co., the birth of (3) JAMES BARNARD son of HENRY and MARY was registered, 22 Aug. 1756.

He could have been the same HENRY BARNARD, moved back to the parent county with another wife, or, more probably, he was a cousin or nephew of HENRY I).

Finally:

We believe that ELIZABETH BERNARD, wife of JOHN ADUSTON ROGERS whom she married about 1765 was descended from the Col. WILLIAM BARNARD line of Gloucester Co., there being no indication of BARNARDS in York Co. since 1647 when RICHARD and ANNE BERNARD were briefly residents of that Co. until 1651 when their holdings were cut off in Gloucester Co., except SAMUEL BARNARD of 1720 will in that county.

From the records of York and Gloucester Cos. which are available, and, because of proximity which was a factor in choosing a wife in that day, the best evidence is that she was a granddaughter of SAMUEL BERNARD, Rector of York-Hampton Parish when he died in York Co. or of another son of WILLIAM BARNARD II) of Gloucester Co. who was of age in 1675 and still living in 1704 when the Quit Rent Roll was taken.

According to the will of SAMUEL BERNARD, his wife was MARTHA and, in his 1720 will, he refers to the heirs of her body.

JOSEPH WALKER, LAWRENCE SMITH and THOS. NELSON, who gave bond for the estate of SAMUEL BERNARD, were distinguished citizens of York and Gloucester Cos., LAWRENCE SMITH being son of JOHN SMITH II) and his wife, MARY WARNER.

We believe that SAMUEL BERNARD of York was the SAMUEL who owned 550 acres in Gloucester Co. in 1704 and was the son of WILLIAM BERNARD of that county who owned 800 acres at the same time.

These two BERNARDS were the only ones who appear in the 1704 Quit Rent Roll of Gloucester and there were none in York.

WILLIAM BERNARD, age 27, who embarked at Gravesend Eng. for Va. in June 1635 was said to have been son

of the Knight of Huntington and to have married LUCY HIGGINSON only daughter of Capt. ROBERT HIGGINSON.

In another reference, a statement is made that WILLIAM BERNARD who married LUCY HIGGINSON was a grandson of FRANCIS BERNARD of Abington in Northampshire England. (He was son of FRANCIS JR.)

In a long article entitled "Finding your Forebears in America" by BENNETT, the lineage of RICHARD BERNARD who married ANNA CORDURY in England in 1634 is traced from the coat of arms which was attached to his lease from Col. WM. PRYOR in 1647. This coat of arms is that of the BERNARDS of Buckingham in England where the connection is made proving him to have been son of RICHARD BERNARD I), next to youngest son of FRANCIS BERNARD of Abington and brother of FRANCIS BERNARD JR.

Since Col. WM. BERNARD who married LUCY HIGGINSON was grandson of FRANCIS BERNARD of Abington in Northampshire that would mean that RICHARD BERNARD who m. ANNA CORDUROY and who died 1650 and Col. WILLIAM who married LUCY HIGGINSON were first cousins.

We have noted that there seemed to be a connection, through the MATHEWS family, between the family of RICHARD and THOMAS BERNARD of Warwick Co.

The mother of BENJ. HARRISON of Gobions was ELIZABETH BERNARD of Abington, Northampshire, Eng.

These records account for the early BERNARDS of Va. and whether ELIZABETH BERNARD, wife of JOHN A. ROGERS, was descended from RICHARD and ANNA CORDURY or WILLIAM BERNARD and LUCY HIGGINSON she was also descended from FRANCIS BERNARD b. 1526 d. 1602 and his wife ALICE HAZELWOOD, of Abington.

There is a four volume History of BERNARDS of Abington in which the line is traced back nine generations from FRANCIS BERNARD, Lord of Abington, Northampshire who died 21 Oct. 1602 to GODFREY BERNARD of Wansford in Yorkshire in the reign of HENRY III).

Through his great grandmother, MARGARET SCOPE, FRANCIS BERNARD SR. was descended from King EDWARD I) of England. Through his grandson, RICHARD BARNARD and wife ANNA CORDURY, he was the ancestor of ELIZABETH II), present Queen of England and through his son FRANCIS BERNARD JR., he was the ancestor of ROBERT E. LEE, Commander of the Confederate forces in The War Between the States.

Through either RICHARD I (JR) of Gloucester Co. or Col. WILLIAM BERNARD, both grandsons of FRANCIS BERNARD, SR., he was ancestor to all of the descendants of ELIZABETH BERNARD and her husband, JOHN A. ROGERS, of York Co. Va. including those of their son WILLIAM ADUSTON ROGERS and wife SARAH MORGAN.

The chart of BERNARDS from King EDWARD of England who married ELEANOR of Castile and who died in1290 is as follows:

Princess JOAN of Acre, MARGARET DE CLARE; MARGARET DE AUDLEY, HUGH STAFFORD, MARGARET NEVILLE. HENRY SCOPE. MARGARET SCOPE, JOHN BERNARD, SR., JOHN BERNARD, JR. and wife CECILLY, FRANCIS BERNARD SR. b. 1526 d. Oct. 1601/2.

RICHARD BERNARD I) of Va. b. 1608 d. 1650 m. 1634 in England was the son of RICHARD, son of FRANCIS BERNARD SR.

ANNE BERNARD daughter of RICHARD and ANNA of Virginia married Capt. JOHN SMITH and inherited Purton from her mother.

Their son, JOHN SMITH JR., married MARY WARNER, dau. of Col. AUGUSTINE WARNER JR. and sister of MILDRED WARNER, who m. LAWRENCE WASHINGTON, grandfather of GEORGE WASHINGTON

MILDRED SMITH, daughter of JOHN SMITH JR., and his wife, MARY, married ROBERT PORTEUS. They returned to England to rear their large family and are the ancestors of Queen Elizabeth II) through her mother, ELIZABETH ANGELA MARGUERITE BOWES-LYONS b. 1900 m. 1923 King GEO. 6th of England.

FRANCIS BERNARD JR. and RICHARD BERNARD I) of England were both sons of FRANCIS BERNARD SR. of Abington who died 1602. Col. WILLIAM BERNARD who married LUCY HIGGINSON was the son of FRANCIS BERNARD JR.

ELIZABETH, eldest dau. of Col. WM. and LUCY married THOS. TODD II) of Toddsbury in Gloucester Co. Va.

Their dau., ELIZABETH TODD, married ----- MOORE and had ANN BUTLER MOORE who was the mother of ANN HILL CARTER, who was the mother of ROBERT E. LEE.

CHAPTER V

EVANS GENERATIONS

I. The Texas Generations 1840 - 1970.

II. JESSE EVANS m. RUTHA PRIDE

HENRY EVANS m. SARAH PRIDE BRAND, widow.

NATHANIEL EVANS m. (1) JANE PRIDE m. (2) CATHERINE BETTS, widow.

JOSEPH EVANS JR. m. ALICE THOMPSON

(All of Morgan Co. Ala.)

III. JOSEPH EVANS m. ELIZABETH EARNEST

IV. NATHANIEL EVANS m. MARY.

V. MARK EVANS of Augusta Co. Va.

VI. JOHN EVANS of Somerset Co. Md., perhaps m. dau. of NICHOLAS RICE.

CHAPTER V - Part A

EVANS Family in Texas

MARY EVELYN EVANS, the third wife of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, to whom he was married Sept. 14, 1851, in Jackson Co. Texas, was the daughter of JESSE EVANS and his wife, RUTHA PRIDE, daughter of BURTON PRIDE.

According to the 1850 census of Cherokee Co. Texas taken Nov. 26, of that year, JESSE EVANS was then 47 and his wife RUTHY was 39. At that time, they had 8 children living at home and two already married. All of these children except the youngest, NATHANIEL, then four, and seven years the junior of JESSE JR., just older, were born in Alabama. NATHANIEL was born in Texas.

JESSE was farming, at that time, assisted by his two older sons, JOSEPH and ALFRED, who were part time students. The rest of the children were classified as students.

Probably the next year, JESSE EVANS moved to Jackson Co. for it was there that his daughter, MARY, married ROGERS in September of 1851.

The 1860 census of that county states JESSE EVANS, 57, was born in Wayne Co. Ky. and that his wife, RUTH, was born in Madison Co. Ala. Only two children were still living at home; JESSE A. now 20 who was born in Morgan Co. Ala., and NATHANIEL H. who was born in Lamar Co. Texas. The same census records, includes the families of JESSE'S son A. B. EVANS, and his son-in-law, SAMUEL ROGERS, in which the birth-place of both of these older children is given as Morgan Co., Ala.

From these census returns and from a letter written by a cousin of JESSE'S to a member of the family when she was past 80, we are able to reconstruct the family of JESSE and RUTH EVANS who were married Oct. 15, 1824, in Morgan Co. Ala. Issue of JESSE and RUTH EVANS: *

1. A daughter, probably born about 1826 in Ala. m. in Texas (1) a Mr. BIRDSONG, m. (2) Mr. LANGFORD; no issue.
2. JOSEPH EVANS born in Ala. in 1828; either deceased or remained in East Texas when his parents moved to Jackson Co.
3. ALFRED BURTON EVANS b. 1830 in Ala. married CATHERINE ROGERS JACKSON, widow, daughter of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS who m. his sister, MARY EVELYN.
4. HENRY EARNEST EVANS b. 1833, in Ala. m. (1) Dec. 6, 1855, ANNICE JENKINS; ANNICE died Feb. 13, 1868, m. (2) Mrs. GRIFFIN whose dau. m. (1) NATHANIEL EVANS.
5. NANCY C. born 1834, in Ala. m. (1) JOHN HAMMOND, m. (2) JAMES BURLESON, son of ED. BURLESON, SR. Their son, JAMES, JR., lived at Cuero in 1900.
6. MARY EVELYN born in Ala. Sept. 15, 1835, m. Sept. 14, 1851, in Jackson Co. Texas, SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS.
7. SARAH born in Ala. 1837, married in Texas; WM. COTTINGHAM, son of JOHN WESLEY COTTINGHAM; no issue.
8. JESSE EVANS, JR. b. in Ala. 1839, m. MINERVA of Fayette Co. who after his death in Confederate Army m. NATHAN FIKE, had a son JOHN EVANS.
9. NATHANIEL b. in Texas in 1846, m. DELLA GRIFFIN, eldest dau. by first husband of second wife of HENRY E. EVANS; moved to Coreyalle Co. Texas.

1. ALFRED BURTON EVANS, second son of JESSE and RUTH EVAN, and his wife, MARTHA CATHERINE ROGERS JACKSON, had three children.

1. FRANCES MARY EVANS b. Aug. 18, 1856 in Jackson Co. Tex; d. July 5, 1952 in San Antonio, Texas; m. BENJAMINE QUINN WARD b. Mar. 5, 1827 Palmyra, Mo.; d. 1912 in San Antonio, Texas.
2. SAMUEL ROGERS EVANS b. Jackson Co. Texas, d. 1926 m. ELIZABETH BRIZENDINE of Austin, Texas; no issue.
3. CARSON JACKSON EVANS b. Jackson Co. May 20, 1861; d. Dec. 7, 1931 at Comanche, Texas; m. May 11, 1893 at Trinidad, Colo.; ELIZA ANN CAULISON; b. in England.

ALFRED B. EVANS, m. (2) MALINDA GUTHRIE FLETCHER, widow. Issue:

4. ELIZABETH B. EVANS b. 16 Dec. 1873; d. 11 Sept. 1952; m. 20 Dec. 1893, CHAS. AUGUST ASBECK.

When the Methodist Church was organized at Ganado, Texas in 1880, ALFRED BURTON EVANS and his second wife, MALINDA B. EVANS, were among the eighteen Charter Members and he was named its' first Sunday School Superintendent.

Among the other first members, all except five, were known to have been related either to him or his first wife, CATHERINE ROGERS JACKSON, deceased, before this date. Her father, SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS, who is credited with being "The Father of Methodism in Jackson Co., Tex." and his third wife, MARY EVELYN, who was EVANS' sister, probably were the inspiration for this movement and their daughters LIZZIE LAURA ROGERS and Mrs. ROSE RUTH WITT were also signers of the Charter.

*See NOLEN letter on page 1 of Chapter VI.

Also included in this list were W. P. JACKSON and his wife, the former MALISSA GRIMES and HENRIETTA JACKSON and her husband MATTHEW GRIMES. The JACKSONS were the children of CATHERINE ROGERS and her first husband and were the grandchildren of SAMUEL ROGERS. After the marriage of their mother to ALFRED EVANS about 1854, they had been brought up in the home of their step-father.

There were also CARSON JACKSON EVANS, youngest son of ALFRED and CATHRINE, and NANCY and SALLIE EVAN, who, we believe, were his nieces. In the 1880 census, the year in which the Ganado Methodist Church was organized, SARAH EVANS is enumerated in the family of ALFRED EVANS and is described as his niece.

II. SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his third wife, MARY EVELYN EVANS, had issue:

1. WASHINGTON MONTAGUE ROGERS, b. 1853; d. 1868.
2. ROSA RUTH ROGERS b. Aug. 11, 1855; m. Feb. 20, 1873, EDWARD LEE WITT.
3. SUSAN b. 1858; d. 1871.
4. FRANK WHITE ROGERS b. May 26, 1859; d. 1927; m. Jan. 3, 1883, MARY ATKINSON.
5. CLARK OWEN ROGERS b. Feb. 21, 1863; d. 1958; m. May 22, 1887, IDA LOU BABCOCK.
6. SAMUEL MACK ROGERS b. July 4, 1865; d. Aug. 31, 1907; m. Dec. 20, 1893 NETTIE McGOWAN.
7. LAURA LIZZIE ROGERS b. Dec. 24, 1868; d. Mar. 12, 1932; m. Dec. 9, 1885 THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND II).
8. EMMA ROGERS b. Sept. 1, 1871; d. Feb. 18, 1964; m. Dec. 8, 1889, WM. DEPRIEST SUTHERLAND.
9. MINNIE MALISSA ROGERS b. April 8, 1874; d. June 25, 1959; m. Oct. 21, 1891 ROBERT LEE SUTHERLAND.

These SUTHERLAND men were brothers, the sons of THOMAS S. SUTHERLAND, SR. Their descendants will be found under SUTHERLAND in Vol. II), of "We Cousins." Other later descendants of MARY EVELYN EVANS, can be found under ROGERS.

In the letters written 1930-1932, by NANCY WILLIAMS NOLEN (born 1849) to Mrs. B. W. WARD of San Antonio, who before her marriage was FRANCES MARY EVANS, eldest daughter of ALFRED BURTON EVANS, much information is recorded.

According to her, JESSE EVANS' brother, JOSEPH EVANS, and his family were in Texas before JESSE came. Their cousin, FELIX ERNEST from Green Co. Tenn. had received a grant of land in Jackson Co. and dying before he married, he left his tract of land to JOSEPH W. LOONEY, whose wife was his aunt, and to his first cousin, JOSEPH EVANS, JR. Mrs. NOLEN stated that the mother of JESSE and JOSEPH EVANS was a Miss ERNEST, the sister of her grandmother, LAVINIA ERNEST, who married JOSEPH W. LOONEY in Tenn. in 1807. She stated in another letter that the sisters were Penn. Holland Dutch which may be in error. That term is often used for Pennsylvania German. She recalled that the brothers lived on the FELIX ERNEST land when she first knew them.

The will of FELIX B. EARNEST is recorded in Jackson Co. Texas. Will Bk. A p. 31. He mentions his cousin JOSEPH EVANS and his youngest son, FELIX EARNEST EVANS; his uncle JOSEPH W. LOONEY. He named his friend, JOHN A. ROGERS executor. The will was dated 28, Mar. 1842.

CLARK ROGERS; grandson of JESSE and RUTH EVANS, thought that they were buried in the Newt. White Cemetery, close to Morales and north of Edna in Jackson Co. Descendants have tried to penetrate the brush that has now taken the spot, but to no avail. If the graves are there they are probably unmarked.

JESSE EVANS appears in Jackson Co. in the 1860 census, his brother in that of 1850. Before 1860, JOSEPH had moved to Gonzales Co. Texas and before 1870, both JESSE and RUTH were dead.

JOSEPH EVANS, brother of JESSE, married in Morgan Co. Ala. Nov. 10, 1828, ALICE THOMPSON the daughter of JAMES and VIOLET THOMPSON. Five years later on December 2, 1833, JESSE EVANS bought part of the THOMPSON family estate after the death of JAMES. In the 1850 Jackson Co. census, ALICE does not appear and so is deceased and her mother, VIOLET THOMPSON, 62, born in S. C. is living with the family.

From the 1850 census return and from Mrs. NOLEN'S letters, we have compiled the following information of this family:

Children of JOSEPH EVANS, born in Kentucky in 1807, and his wife ALICE THOMPSON:

1. JOHN EVANS, never married, died as young man.
2. CEILIE EVANS, never married, died in youth.
3. MARTHA EVANS m. ROBERT ANDREWS, the oldest son of JACK ANDREWS, who came to Texas 1830. They had: MARGARET, ABBIE, JOHN, CHARLES, ROBERT, CASANDRA and ANNIE ANDREWS.
4. JOSEPH H. EVANS born in Ala. in 1835, was first corporal of Company "D" of the First Texas Calvary of Confedeate Army and died in the war.
5. FELIX ERNEST EVANS b. in Texas in 1841, never married. He served as private in same comp ny as his brother.
6. CLARK OWEN EVANS b. in Texas 1843, m. MARTHA EWING, sister of JESSE and THOMAS EWING. There were children of this union.

7. ALLIS S. or SUSAN A. EVANS b. in Texas 1845, m. (1) DOCK HOLIMAN and had one child. HOLIMAN served in the Confederate Army and probably died there. Later SUSAN moved to Fayette Co. and m. (2) MATT MULLEN.
8. JULIA EVANS b. in Texas 1848, m. EDGAR POWELL MOORE and had CLARENCE, ALICE, MYRON, POWELL and AYOR. This family also moved to Fayette Co.

Mrs. VIOLET THOMPSON, the grandmother in 1850, was 62 years old. According ot the 1832 document which records the sale of a part of her husband's estate, she had the following children: JOHN, JAMES THOMPSON JR., ALICE, who m. JOSEPH EVANS, CELIA who m. ABRAHAM SKIDMORE and EDWARD, EMMALIA and ELIZABETH THOMPSONS who were minors and under the guardianship of SKIDMORE at the date of this document.

Evidently, VIOLET THOMPSON died within the ensueing 10 years.

The 1860 census of Jackson Co. Texas lists the younger children of JOSEPH EVANS, JESSE'S brother, in a household devoid of either parent. This enumeration begins with JOSEPH H. EVANS age 24, and ends with JULIA A. age 11 also including FELIX EARNEST age 19, CLARK O. age 17 and SUSAN A. age 15, all of whom were said to have been born in Ala.

JOSEPH EVANS II), father of this family, was not deceased but was probably living in Gonzales Co. with his second wife, NANCY. He died in Jan. 1874 and his will was recorded in both Jackson and Gonzales Co.

In this will he mentions his wife NANCY: his sons FELIX E., CLARK O. and ROBERT D., evidently the child of the second marriage. He also mentions daus. JULIA ATHELDRIA MOORE, MARTHA J. ANDREWS and ALICE SUSAN MULLENS, their married names all agreeing with those given in Mrs. NOLEN'S old letter.

Actually, only JOSEPH H. EVANS JR. was born in Ala., the younger brothers and sister all having been born in Texas according to the 1850 census. That census return fixes the date of JOSEPH EVANS migration to Texas as 1836 to 1841 so he probably came soon after the Texas Revolution. Records of Morgan Co. Ala., show that he sold two tracts of land in that Co. in 1837.

The Descendants of ALFRED BURTON EVANS, b. 8 Feb. 1830 in Ala.; d. 14 Aug. 1918, Houston, Texas, son of JESSE and RUTH PRIDE EVANS; m. (1) CATHERINE ROGERS JACKSON, widow, b. 1830; dau. of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his first wife, MARY WHITE; m. (2) MALINDA GUTHRIE FLETCHER, widow, b. 16 Nov. 1833, Ky.; d. 29 April 1906. Issue of 1st marriage:

I. FRANCES MARY EVANS b. 18 Aug. 1856 in Jackson Co., Texas d. 5 July 1952 in San Antonio; m. about 1875 BENJAMINE QUIN WARD in Jackson Co., Texas on which occasion his wife's grandfather, SAMUEL ROGERS, remarked to him, "Now, BEN, you are kin to Jackson County." (Ref. letter of RUSSELL WARD 14 July 1960 to compiler) Issue:

1. RUSSELL EVAN WARD b. Jackson Co., Texas about 1876; d. Luling, Texas 30 Aug. 1967; B.A. from U.C.L.A.; m. (1) SUSIE MAUD MITCHELL of Victoria, Tex.; m. (2) VIVIAN BAKER. (It was for his great-grandson, RUSSELL WARD that SAMUEL ROGERS related and wrote the true story of the "Wild Woman of the Navidad River," who was thought to have been an escaped slave.
   Issue of RUSSELL and SUSIE MAUD:
   (1) SUSIE MAUD WARD m. EDWIN EISCHOLY and divorced; had: A. EDWIN EISCHOLY WARD m. DORIS; B. RUSSELL EISCHOLY WARD, B.A. -U.C.L.A.; m. VIVIAN and had step-son, BILLY WARD.
2. REIFFERT QUINN WARD b. Jackson Co. Texas about 1878; d. Pasadena, Texas; m. GERTRUDE BELLE McCUTCHEON b. Houston, Texas; Issue:
   (1) CONSTANCE BELLE WARD b. Houston, Texas; m. SAMUEL RAYMOND BLACKBURN. Issue:
      A. SHERRY DIANA BLACKBURN b. Houston, Texas m. CLYDE THOMAS RENFROW and had: a. SUZETTE RAINA RENFROW.
      B. JOHN BENJ. BLACKBURN; C. JEANNE STAR BLACKBURN; D. GLORIA ANNE BLACKBURN; E. PHILIP DAVID BLACKBURN; F. PAUL DANIEL BLACKBURN.
      All born in Houston, Texas.
   (2) MILDRED ADELE WARD, dau. of REIFFERT b. in Houston; m. (1) CHARLES ALLEN COOK b. Hutchinson, Kansas; d. in Houston, Texas; m. (2) JOHN STEELE BRECKENRIDGE of Houston.
   Child of first marriage:
      A. LARRY ALLEN COOK b. Houston; m. LOIS ANN FRANKLIN b. Oregon.
   Children of second marriage:
      B. DAVID STEELE BRECKENRIDGE; C. MARK BENJ. BRECKENRIDGE; D. ANN MARIE BRECKENRIDGE, all born in Houston since 1956.
3. CORNELIA SUSAN WARD b. 22 April 1879; d. 27 Oct. 1963; B. L. Kidd Key College, Sherman, Texas; m. EDWARD PARFIT, Col. U.S. Infantry; b. Toronto, Canada; d. 9 Aug. 1960; no issue.
4. RILEY DEAN WARD b. Cresent V. Ranch after 1880 census of Jackson Co. Tex.; m. RUBYLEE MELGAARD b. and d. at Brazoria, Texas. Issue:
   (1) RUBYLEE CHRISTINE WARD b. Fort Worth, Texas; m. JULIUS L. COLSON.

(2) RILEY DEAN WARD JR. b. Port Lavaca, Texas; m. BEATRICE THOMPSON b. De Riddler, La. Issue:

A. WANDA JEAN WARD b. DeRiddler, La.; m. LARRY GENE WILLIAMSON, Major U.S. Air Force; B.A. Baylor Univ. Issue:

a. CHERYL DEAN WILLIAMSON b. DeRiddler, La.;

b. GREGORY WILLIAMSON b. Biloxi, Miss.

B. LARRY DEAN WARD b. Lake Charles, La.; B.S. La. Poly. Institute; candidate for Masters Degree; m. SHARON SUE PALMER.

C. REIFFERT VASSAR WARD b. Uvalde, Texas; m. RETHA JONES b. Rusk, Texas. Issue:

a. RETHA LORAINE WARD b. Bay City, Texas m. JESSE JAMES WISEHART. Issue: (a) BEVERLY LORAINE; (b) CHRISTOPHER JAMES WISEHART.

b. REIFFERT DONOVAN WARD b. Bay City, Texas, m. DOROTHY DIANA LIVORICE. Issue: (a) ROGER QUINTON WARD, b. Sweeney, Texas.

c. MARCUS ROGERS WARD b. West Columbia, Texas; 4th Infantry Div. 2 Bn. 22 Inf. Medic. wounded in action.

d. DOLORES FAY WARD b. West Columbia, Texas; m. JIMMY CAMURAL MANSIL.

D. FRANCES LORAINE WARD b. Uvalde, Texas; m. LUCIAN WARD. Issue:

a. JIMMIE GENE WARD b. West Columbia, Tex.; m. (1) BRENDA ——, m. (2) BARBARA DRUCEILIA MEALER, widow. Issue of first marriage: (a) LENA WARD b. Huntsville, Texas.

b. CARL DEAN WARD b. Bay City, Texas.

5. BENJAMINE QUINN WARD JR. m. DORAH POWER; no issue.

6. ELEANOR CATHERINE WARD b. Austin, Texas; m. STERLING DURYEE FREEBORN b. San Antonio, Texas. Issue:

(1) ELEANOR CATHERINE FREEBORN b. Colorado Springs; m. (1) DAVIS DUNBAR GRAVES, killed in W. War II); m. (2) JOHN M. BENNETT JR.; B.A. Univ. of Texas; Col. U.S. Air Force W. War II, Banker and Rancher. Issue of first marriage:

A. ELEANOR WARD (GRAVES) BENNETT b. Washington, D.C.; B.A. Middlebury College, Middlebury, Vermont; m. HUGH WILLIAM MARLOW b. Brookline, Mass. Issue:

a. DAVE OGDEN MARLOW; b. CHRISTOPHER HUGH MARLOW; c. ANDREW GRAVES MARLOW.

B. CAROLYN DURYEE (GRAVES) BENNETT b. San Antonio, Texas; B.A. Middlebury College, Middlebury, Vermont; m. RICHARD LAMBERT WOOD. Issue:

a. SHANNON MARIA WOOD; b. RICHARD LAMBERT WOOD JR.

C. DAVIS DUNBAR (GRAVES) BENNETT b. San Antonio, Tex.; m. WENDY ANN CONDON b. New York City. Issue: BENITO JAREZ BENNETT b. Mexico City, Mex.

Issue of second marriage:

D. JOHN STEPHEN BENNETT.

(2) STERLING DURYEE FREEBORN JR. died without issue.

7. SAMUEL ROGERS WARD b. Edna, Texas m. GERTRUDE DOWDEN of San Antonio, Texas. Issue:

(1) BENJ. QUINN WARD III), b. San Antonio, Texas; B.S., M.A. and Ph.D. Univ. of Texas; m. (1) JEAN STEWART of Beaumont, Texas; B.S. Univ. of Texas; divorced; m. (2) DOVENE WINANS of McCord, Miss. Issue of first marriage:

A. BENJ. QUINN WARD IV); (SHOFNER); B. STEWART WARD (SHOFNER).

Issue of second marriage:

C. MICHAEL STIRLING WARD; D. SUZANNE ADELE WARD.

8. FRANCES MARY WARD b. Cresent V Ranch Jackson Co., Texas; B.L. Kidd Key College, Sherman, Texas.

II. SAMUEL ROGERS EVANS b. 1859 Jackson Co. Texas; d. 1926; m. ELIZABETH BRIZINDINE of Austin; no issue.

III. CARSON JACKSON EVANS b. Jackson Co. Texas; 20 May 1861; d. 7 Dec. 1932 in Soda Springs Community, Comanche Co. Texas; m. 11 May 1893 in Trinidad, Colo., ELIZA ANN COWLISHAW b. 25 Mar. 1877 in Pilsley, Chesterfield, Eng., dau. of GEORGE and ANN COWLISHAW; d. 3 Mar. 1960, buried with her husband in Taylor Chapel Cemetery, Comanche Co., Issue:

1. SAMUEL JACKSON EVANS b. 2 Mar. 1894 Trinidad, Colo.; d. 15 April 1967 at Odessa, Texas; m. 10 Dec. 1916 in Comanche Co. EDNA BESSIE FLIPPO. Issue:

(1) LEILA IRENE EVANS b. 4 Feb. 1918 Comanche Co. Tex.; m. 23 Sept. 1939, THOS. WILLARD GAY, b. 26 July 1915 in Kaufman Co. Texas. Issue:

A. THOMAS WILLARD GAY JR. b. 15 May 1946 in Corpus Christi, Texas; m. 3 June 1966 SHERRY LOU TESTOR b. 2 Aug. 1947 at Seminole, Texas.
B. MICHAEL EVAN GAY, b. 20 April 1949, Odessa, Texas;
C. ERROL DEAN GAY, b. 3 Nov. 1952 at Odessa;

(2) VERNON RAY EVANS, b. 7 Nov. 1927 Dublin, Texas, married and had issue; m. (2) 4 Feb. 1952 OFELIA HERNANDEZ.
A. VERNON RAY EVANS JR. b. 23 Oct. 1950.
B. SANDRA KAY EVANS (twin) b. 23 Oct. 1950. Children of first m.
C. BARBARA EVANS b. 3 May 1953 in New Mexico, dau. of second marriage.

2. ELIZABETH FRANCES EVANS b. 31 Dec. 1895 Jackson Co. Tex.; d. 15 Sept. 1897 Ganado, Texas.
3. MARY RUTH EVANS, dau. of CARSON JACKSON EVANS and ELIZA ANN COWLISHAW, b. 7 Dec. 1897; m. (1) 24 June 1924, LUTHER W. HARRIS b. 25 June 1888; d. 16 June 1948; m. (2) 28 Dec. 1952, JIM DOLBERRY. Issue:
(1) LUTHER W. HARRIS JR. b. 28 June 1927; dec'd without issue.
4. HENRIETTA EVANS b. 15 Oct. 1900 Austin, Tex.; m. 5 Aug. 1923, at Comanche, Texas, KIEFFER JOHNSON b. 19 Aug. 1894; d. 12 Sept. 1968. Issue:
(1) LUCILLE JOHNSON b. 23 May 1924; m. 1947 HUGH MONSELLE O'BRIEN JR., b. 27 Mar. 1913. Issue:
A. NANCY O'BRIEN b. 7 Sept. 1948, Brownwood, Texas; m. 16 Dec. 1967 RONALD DAVID HICKS b. 20 Jan. 1948.
B. KAREN O'BRIEN b. 13 May 1950; m. 16 Aug. 1968 JAMES ROY COPLEN b. 1 Oct. 1946, Baytown, Texas.
C. CHRISTY MONCILE O'BRIEN b. 20 Jan.1953.
D. SUSAN EMILY O'BRIEN b. 31 Mar. 1955.
E. BECKY ETTA O'BRIEN b. 16 Oct. 1957.

(2) J. C. JOHNSON b. 19 Feb. 1926; m. 15 Nov. 1947, MARIE TINNEY b. 31 Jan. 1932. Issue:
A. SHERRY ELAYNE b. 5 June 1949; Comanche, Texas B. JIMMY DWAIN b. 23 Aug. 1951; C. JERRY GLEN b. 13 July 1958; D. PATRICIA ANN b. 14 Feb. 1967.

5. ALBERT DENMARK EVANS b. 21 Oct. 1903; d. 17 Nov. 1906.
6. ALICE ISABELL EVAN b. 29 Sept. 1906, Comanche, Texas; m. 30 April 1924 DENVER PITTMAN. Issue:
(1) MILDRED PITTMAN b. 5 Feb. 1925; m. 3 June 1944 LA ROY STUBBS d. July 1959. Issue:
A. SAMMIE LA ROY STUBBS b. 10 June 1945.

(2) AUVIS PITTMAN b. 13 May 1926; m. July 1952 ANNIE BELL EMERSON. Issue
A. FLORENCE ANN PITMAN b. 12 Mar. 1953, Haskell Co. Tex.

(3) EUGENE PITTMAN b. 15 Aug. 1927; m. Oct. 1947 JESSIE FAE HAYNES. Issue:
A. RICKEY PITTMAN, b. 23 Sept. 1952.
B. JIMMY PITTMAN, b. 21 April 1954 in Dallas, Texas.

(4) ALVIN PITTMAN b. May 1933; m. 1 April 1953 NOEL RAE BEASON. Issue:
A. SHERRY DIANA b. 21 June 1954; B. BECKY ANN b. 9 Nov. 1955; C. DEBBIE LENN b. 17 Mar. 1960; E. CHRISTIE LEE b. 21 May 1961.

7. CLARK HOWELL EVANS b. 4 Dec. 1909; never married.
8. ALFRED WILLIE EVANS b. 7 Mar. 1912, Sidney, Texas; m. 16 June 1940 AUDREY LOMETA GAINES, b. 10 Nov. 1919. Issue:
(1) ALFRED WAYLAND EVANS, b. 6 Oct. 1941 Gorman, Texas; B.S. Southwest Texas Univ.; M.S. Our Lady of Lake.
(2) PEGGY CARMLETA EVANS b. 19 Jan. 1948; m. 3 June 1966 SAMMIE HOYT VINEYARD at Comanche, Texas.
(3) SHARON NADINE EVANS b. 9 Aug. 1949 at Gorman, Texas.
9. RIEFFERT RILEY EVANS b. 30 July 1915; d. 26 Oct. 1944 in World War II) 9th U.S.A. Infantry; Purple Heart; m. 19 Dec. 1933 DONA CARLETON; she m. (2) 16 Jan. 1947 D. JOSEPH CARISIO. Issue:
(1) KENNETH RIEFFERT EVANS, b. 30 July 1935; Gorman, Texas; d. 12 Jan. 1938.
(2) BOBBY GAYLE EVANS, b. 28 July 1937, Rising Star, Texas; m. 25 Sept. 1962 MARIE ELAINE ABBOTT, El Paso, Texas. Issue:
A. BOBBY JOSEPH EVANS b. 6 Jan. 1964.

(3) JERRY DON EVANS, b. 5 June 1940, Comanche, Texas; m. 25 Sept. 1964 SHARON KAY BUTLER. Issue:
A. WENDI RENEE EVANS b. 31 Mar. 1966, El Paso, Texas.

10. CARSON GRADY EVANS b. 15 Aug. 1917; m. CORA BRADLEY of Comanche, Texas. Issue:
    (1) GANELL EVANS (2) GRADY EVANS

The data relating to the family of FRANCES MARY EVANS and her husband, BEN Q. WARD was compiled by their dau., FRANCES MARY WARD.

That relating to the family of CARSON JACKSON EVANS was compiled by ALFRED W. EVANS of San Antonio, Texas.

WM. PRIDE, brother of RUTH PRIDE who m. JESSE EVANS came to Texas before his death sometimes before the 1850 census was taken. The returns of Lamar Co. Texas lists MATILDA PRIDE his widow, with sons CARSON, age 25 and JACKSON age 10. This indicates that these names came through the PRIDE family, rather than EVANS.

The 1880 Census of Jackson Co. Texas shows ALFRED B. EVANS age 50 born in Ala. and his wife MALINDA F., age 47 born in Ky.

Their one dau. ELIZABETH B. was then age 6. In addition there were EVAN'S three step-sons. HARPER J. FLETCHER age 23 was born in Texas, while his deceased father was born in N.C. He had brothers WILLIAM A. FLETCHER age 20, and GEORGE W. age 18 all living in the household of ALFRED and MALINDA GUTHRIE EVANS.

NANCY C. EVANS, described as EVANS niece, was either living or visiting in the ALFRED EVANS' home.

IV. ELIZABETH B. EVANS, only surviving child of ALFRED BURTON EVANS and his second wife MALINDA GUTHRIE, b. 16 Dec. 1873; d. 11 Sept. 1952 in Houston, Texas; m. 20 Dec. 1893 at Edna, Texas, CHARLES AUGUST ASBECK d. 18 Oct 1937, Houston, Texas. Issue:

1. CHARLES ALFRED ASBECK b. 6 April 1895; d. 30 June 1912.
2. WALTER ERVIN ASBECK b. 6 Dec. 1896 at Edna, Texas; m. 16 Mar. 1919 BESSIE ELLEN SHOFFNER. Issue:
   (1) MILDRED RUTH ASBECK b. 28 Sept. 1920; m. 7 Nov. 1940 JOHN A. BUTTERFRAS. Issue:
      A. JOHNELLE ANN BUTTERFRAS b. 22 Oct. 1941; m. JOHN W. KENNEDY. Issue:
         a. STEPHEN KENNEDY; b. PHILLIP KENNEDY.
      B. PEGGY RUTH b. 20 Mar. 1945; m. EDWIN M. ECHOLS and have SUZANNE.
      C. JOYCE ELAINE b. 20 Dec. 1947.
      D. JOHN ALBERT JR. b. 29 Jan. 1950.
      E. WALTER PAUL BUTTERFRAS.
   (2) ERNEST RAY ASBECK b. 18 May 1922 m. 14 Feb. 1942 CLARA EARL BAGGETT; divorced. Issue:
      A. LAURA LOUIS E ASBECK, b. 25 Aug. 1942 m. JESSE E. BRADY and have DONNA KAY BRADY.
      B. DELORES RAY ASBECK, b. 10 July 1943; m. R. E. WHISENANT and have STACEY and CHRIS WHISENANT.
      C. BEVERLY ANN ASBECK b. 26 June 1947; m. VERLE WHITESEL and have JULIA WHITESEL.
   (3) WALTER ERVIN ASBECK JR., b. 7 Feb. 1930; m. WANDA ELLEN HARMS 2 Feb. 1948. Issue:
      A. CYNTHIA ASBECK b. 19 Jan. 1950; m. BILLIE A. GOULDING.
      B. RITA GAIL ASBECK, b. 11 June 1951.
      C. KIM ASBECK b. 27 May 1958.
3. EMMA ASBECK b. 18 Oct. 1898; m. 30 June 1926 WILLIAM HENRY SHOFFNER: no issue.
4. LORENA ASBECK b. 8 April 1903, in Houston; m. 20 June 1923 JASPER ELWOOD SHOFFNER; no issue.
5. BERTHA MILDRED ASBECK b. 29 Oct. 1905; m. 5 Mar. 1930 JOHN W. SPENCER. Child:
   (1) NINA SPENCER (adopted) b. 16 Dec. 1938; m. CHARLES ROGGE and have CINDY and JOHN BLAKE ROGGE.
6. GEORGE LOUIS ASBECK b. 31 Mar. 1909 in Fisher Co. Texas; m. 1 Aug. 1931 MYRTLE WATERS; no issue.
7. MARY FRANCES ASBECK b. 5 Feb. 1916 in Houston; m. 20 April 1938 CLARENCE J. HOLM. Issue:
   (1) CAROLYN FRANCES HOLM b. 27 Oct. 1939; m. JAMES CRAWFORD and have DONALD and KEVIN CRAWFORD.
   (2) JUDITH LORAINE HOLM b. 15 July 1943; m. BYRON MURRAY.
   (3) RONALD WAYNE HOLM b. 7 Oct. 1946; m. PATSY and have TAMMIE HOLM.

(4) RODNEY LYNN (twin) b. 7 Oct. 1946 m. SHIRLEY and have THOMAS EDWARD HOLM.
(5) GARY ALLEN HOLM b. 30 Sept. 1953.
(6) GLEN ERVIN HOLM (twin) b. 30 Sept. 1953.

The data relating to the family of ALFRED B. EVANS and his second wife, MALINDA GUTHRIE FLETCHER, was submitted by LORENA ASBECK SHOFFNER.

EVANS Brothers of Morgan Co. Ala. - Part B.

The marriage bond of JOSEPH EVANS and ELIZABETH EARNEST is recorded in Green Co. Tenn. May 10, 1785, and reads as follows:

"JOSEPH EVANS and JAMES HOUSTON bound to his excellency and his Justices for the sum of fourteen pounds to be —— on condition that there be no lawful cause or impediment to conduct the marriage of JOSEPH EVANS to ELIZABETH EARNEST ——— given under hands and seals the 10th day of May 1785.
Signed: JOSEPH EVANS
JAMES HOUSTON

The letter from ISSAC EARNEST, of this county, to his brother FELIX, of Navidad, Texas, furnished the clue as to where to look for it and the long story of the migration from their first home and the residence of their sons in Morgan Co. Ala., beginning thirty years later, is told in the story of JOSEPH EVANS which follows. No trace of him was found in Ala. but the records of his sons begins there as early as 1815.

Examination of the early records of Madison and Morgan Cos. Ala. indicates that there was a very close relationship, between JESSE EVANS, later of Texas, and two others of his name and era - HENRY and NATHANIEL EVANS. The letters of Mrs. NOLEN prove that JESSE and JOSEPH JR. of Texas were brothers.

HENRY EVANS was the first in Northern Ala. He married in Madison Co. May 13, 1815, SALLIE BRAND, widow, and on July 8, 1818 he received in the same county a grant for 159½ acres. Both HENRY and NATHANIEL were granted land in Cotaco, later Morgan Co., in 1818 when NATHANIEL would have been only 21 years of age.

On Jan. 29, 1818, NATHANIEL EVANS married JANE PRIDE. We have already said that on Oct. 15, 1824, JESSE EVANS married in Morgan Co., adjacent to the then MADISON and once a part of the older Co., RUTHA PRIDE.

In the will of BURTON PRIDE, dated May 11, 1835, and the division of his estate in June 1838, we have proof that these three EVANS wives were his daughters and so sisters. The EVANS had followed the frequent custom of that day in choosing their mates from the same family.

On Oct. 17, 1831, NATHANIEL and JESSE EVANS received in Morgan Co. a joint grant for the same acreage as HENRY, while SAMUEL EVANS who m. SARAH FRENCH Mar. 14, 1818, received two such in adjoining Marshall Co. very near to NATHANIEL.

In the very early days of Morgan Co. it was called Cotaco, during which time on June 20, 1820, after having previously entered a suit against NATHANIEL, HENRY EVANS, having declared he no longer wished to pursue the matter, accepted, at the hands of JAMES ANDERSON, bondsman, $1 as payment from NATHANIEL EVANS who was indebted to him for $1103. This leniency certainly indicates a close relationship.

In Book IV Orphan Court Records of the County under date of Nov. 13, 1831 - "Came JESSE EVANS saying - that SARAH EVANS, widow of HENRY EVANS, deceased, who died intestate, having declined to serve as administratrix now petitioned the court that NATHANIEL EVANS be appointed."

Continuing in the Orphan Court Records (Bk. 5 p. 28) on Oct. 1, 1833, NATHANIEL EVANS admx. of the estate of HENRY EVANS has paid to the said SARAH EVANS, widow of HENRY EVANS, the full amount decreed as her share of the estate and SARAH EVANS was made guardian of MARY ANN, LOUISA, MALAKIAH, WILLIAM ANDERSON, SUSANNAH, and HENRY REID EVANS orphans of HENRY EVANS, deceased.

We believe that the interchange of signatures and consequent responsibility in these documents, proves that HENRY and NATHANIEL were also brothers of JESSE as was JOSEPH who lived in Morgan Co. before moving to Texas. They were all sons of JOSEPH EVANS, SR. and his wife, ELIZABETH EARNEST. One daughter, MARY, has also been so identified and was the oldest child.

JOSEPH EVANS, Sr. and HENRY, both signed a 1809 petition to the U.S. Government, at which date HENRY would have had to be of age which fixes his birth at about 1788 and means that he, too, was among the older children of this couple m. in 1785. (Miss. Territorial Records. - Miss. Territory included for a period, Madison Co. Ala. which covered all of Northern Ala.)

In the Land records of Morgan Co. there are the following recordings:

HENRY EVANS to NATHANIEL EVANS, Sept. 28, 1831. Signed by HENRY EVANS and SARAH EVANS. HENRY was deceased before Nov. 13 of the same year and this was probably his last conveyance.

NATHANIEL and JANE EVANS to ELI ALLEN Mar. 4, 1837. Before the final settlement of her father's estate

in June 1838, JANE, the wife of NATHANIEL, was also deceased. In 1842, he m. CATHERINE BETTS, widow.

JESSE and RUTH EVANS made two grantor deed in Morgan Co. the first to JOSEPH KLOB on Aug. 13, 1835, and the last to JOHN McWILLIAMS on Feb. 19, 1838. This is their last appearance in the records of Morgan Co. although we know that they didn't come to Texas until after JESSE, JR. was born in Ala. in 1839. Of their children, only NATHANIEL H. was born in Texas in 1846.

JOSEPH and ALICE sold land to MATTHEW BAILEY Nov. 15, 1837. They came to Texas some time between the birth of their son JOSEPH H. in 1835 and that of their son FELIX E. in 1841, so it is possible that they came to Texas shortly after they sold this property.

While an extensive search has been made in Madison and Monroe and adjoining Cos. of Alabama for records pertaining to JOSEPH EVANS SR., no trace of him was found in Ala.

However, the census return of 1840 and 1850 of the family of NATHANIEL, the only one of the four brothers still living in Morgan Co. at that time, suggests that ELIZABETH EARNEST EVANS, his mother and a sister, MARY EVANS were then living with him.

ELIZABETH is almost certainly the female 80-90 who is enumerated in NATHANIELS household in 1840. He himself is 47 and unmarried, his first wife, JANE, having died before June 1838, and his second marriage taking place in 1842. This elderly woman is not his first wife's mother for she was dead before BURTON PRIDE married ELIZABETH MILLWEE in 1820. This is not the step-mother, ELIZ. for she was a much younger woman. There is every reason to believe that she was ELIZABETH EARNEST EVANS, NATHANIEL'S mother.

NATHANIEL who was born in Ky. (or Tenn.) in 1797, was then a widower and ten children were living with him. It has been 55 years since ELIZABETH EARNEST, his mother, married, but had she married in her 25 or 26 year she would now be past 80.

Next door in the household of MARY EVANS was a female 50-60 years old and one male child 5 to 10 year of age.

In the 1850 returns, the members of the family are named and age and state of birth given. NATHANIEL who was born in Tenn., gives his age as 55. His 2nd wife, CATHERINE, is 45 and was born in Va. The elderly female 80-90 is gone, but MARY EVANS now in her 66th year, b. in Tenn. is a part of the household and the young boy 5 to 10 in 1840, has now taken his place in his father, NATHANIEL'S, home, making three instead of two in the 10 to 20 category.

MARY EVANS, then, was the first child of her parents marriage and was named for her grandmother EARNEST, the former MARY STEVENS, as her brother HENRY was named for the grandfather, HENRY EARNEST.

Of the eleven children which NATHANIEL had in 1840 (9 boys and 2 girls) in 1850 only REUBEN 19, WILLIAM 18 and JOSEPH 16 were living at home. Three additional children by the second wife, CATHERINE, were CLINTON EVANS, 7, FREEMAN EVANS 4, and ANN C. 2 years. All of these children by both marriages were born in Morgan Co.

SARAH PRIDE EVANS, widow of HENRY and sister of NATHANIEL'S first wife, JANE PRIDE; was still living in Morgan County. She is now 52 years of age and claims to have been born in Tenn. (1798)

Her daughter, SUSAN, is 23 years old, LOUISA is 20 and HENRY 18, evidently born after his father's death in late 1831. Near by lived MARY ANN 21, born in Morgan Co. and now wife of DAVID WILLIAMS.

The other two of her six children who were left orphans when their father died in 1831 are also married and in their own homes. MALAKIAH EVANS m. 6 Sept. 1837, LOUISA KING and WILLIAM ANDERSON EVANS m. 30 July 1845 MARY LOVE, both in Morgan Co. Ala.

Before the 1870 census, NATHANIEL EVANS had moved to De Soto Co. Miss. and his two living children, FREEMAN and ANN by his wife, CATHERINE, are still with them.

None of the ages agree with those given 20 years earlier.

NATHANIEL now admits to being 78, born in Kentucky. Perhaps, the reader says, this is 73, but according to the 1850 census it would be 75. His wife, CATHERINE, is 67 instead of 65. FREEMAN is 23 instead of 24, ANN is 21 instead of 22. In other words the children are younger than they should be by the 1850 returns and the parents older. So much for the accuracy of early census takers. MARY EVANS in 1850 was probably 64 instead of 66.

NATHANIEL was buried in DeSoto Co. Miss. on Jan. 12, 1877, at the age of 80, so his tombstones states. This means that he was born in 1797 whether in Tenn. or Ky.

Some of the sons of NATHANIEL and JANE EVANS followed their uncles, JESSE and JOSEPH, the sons of JOSEPH SR. and ELIZABETH EARNEST, to Texas even to Jackson Co. These men were WILLIAM JEFFERSON EVANS and JOSEPH MORGAN EVANS. This is a copy of a letter found among the effects of WILLIAM JEFFERSON EVANS which told him of the death of his father.

Sentobia, Miss.
January 23, 1877
W. J. EVANS, Esq.
Navarro Mills, Texas

Dear Brother,

I seat myself to write you a few lines that will inform you that we are all as well as can (scribble) except Papa. He has been sick for sometime as you are aware and on the morning of the 14th inst. the Death Angel taken him from us and I trust he has been transplanted from us into that Heavenly family that siteth at the right hand of God.

He gave Bro. Joe his horse, bridle and sadle and our little girl his bed and bed clothes and he left me $35.50 in money and I have $35.00 Dr. bill to pay for him and $6.50 drug bill with Mabray and Hill at Senatobia to pay and his burial expenses to pay out of that - the Drs. bill and drug bill and burial expenses amounts to $56.50.

We have had one of the roughest winters I have witnessed in a long time, times is very hard.

For the want of news I will close. Write soon.

F. C. Rash

Family tradition, among the Texas descendants, said that his wife was a PRIDE. Since, this letter was written by the husband of his youngest dau. without mention of his name it was of little help in identifying the father, other than the obvious fact that they knew the letter referred to an EVANS, the father of WILLIAM JEFFERSON EVANS.

However, it was evident to the compiler, who had documents to prove the family of BURTON PRIDE, that, of the three EVANS brothers who married daughters of PRIDE, this could only be NATHANIEL EVANS since the names of the children of JESSE and HENRY, which were already established did not include WILLIAM JEFFERSON EVANS or his known bro., JOSEPH MORGAN EVANS.

An entergetic descendant, Mrs. JAMES HUTCHINS of Dallas, Texas, has shown that to be a fact and has proved several children of NATHANIEL who were not mentioned in the available census returns and other pertinent data.

Part of these were taken from a lengthy deed recorded in Morgan Co. Ala. in which the property of NATHANIEL including 1240 acres of land and 43 slaves was transferred to a trustee, HENRY P. SCRUGGS, under date of 1 Oct. 1851.

The last known document in Morgan Co. Alabama referring to NATHANIEL, was dated 6 Jan. 1854 (Bk. C. p. 18) and granted permission to NATHANIEL EVANS to erect 2 gates, one at each end of his lane on the road from Somerville to Watkins Ferry.

The first date concerning him in De Soto Co. Miss. is 18 Feb. 1867 when he and his wife, CATHERINE, purchased 360 a. in that county.

F. C. RASH who wrote the 1877 letter to WILLIAM JEFFERSON EVANS is identified as the husband of ANN CATHERINE EVANS in a deed dated 6 Oct. 1874 in which NATHANIEL EVANS, SR. acted with Power of Attorney, to sell J. FREEMAN EVANS' interest in his mother's land to his sister ANN C. RASH. (Children of CATHERINE)

The family of NATHANIEL and his two wives, JANE PRIDE and CATHERINE BETTS which have so far been established by various means is as follows:

NATHANIEL EVANS b. 1797; d. 12 Jan. 1877 in De Soto Co. Miss; m. (1) in Morgan Co. Ala. 29 Jan. 1818 JANE PRIDE; d. 1837-39; m. (2) 1842 CATHERINE BETTS, widow. Issue of first marriage:

1. NATHANIEL EVANS, JR. m. 3 Nov. 1847 in Morgan Co. Ala., SARAH JANE RICHARDS.
2. HAMILTON P. EVANS m. 18 Mar. 1845 in Morgan Co. Ala., ANN BUSH.
3. FRANKLIN EVANS m. 18 Mar. 1845 in Morgan Co. Ala. ELIZA JANE BUSH.
4. REUBEN EVANS b. 1831 according to 1850 census.
5. WILLIAM JEFFERSON EVANS b. 1832 (1850 census); d. 29 July 1916 in Purdon, Texas; m. 4 Aug. 1871 in Limestone Co. Texas MARGARETTE JANE WARREN.
6. JOSEPH MORGAN EVANS b. 1834 (1850 census); d. at Baird, Texas; m. ELVIRA COOK McDOWELL.
7. MARTHA B. EVANS m. 1 April 1845 in Morgan Co. Ala., JACKSON L. CRABB; lived at Mansfield, Texas.
8. SUSANNAH EVANS m. 22 Jan. 1851 DAVID H. WILLIAMS, Jr. (HENRY had dau. of this name).
9. MARY ANN EVANS m. 18 Dec. 1846 SAMUEL D. WHITE. (HENRY also had MARY ANN.) Census records prove that NATHANIEL EVANS SR. and JANE PRIDE had, in the twenty years of their marriage, at least 12 children but there are no known records of the others.

Issue of second marriage to CATHERINE BETTS:

13. CLINTON EVANS b. 1843 in Morgan Co. Ala., d as a child.
14. J. FREEMAN EVANS b. 1846; m. (2) MOLLIE GAGE. d. in Matador, Tex.
15. ANN CATHERINE EVANS b. 1848 m. (1) before 1877 F. C. RASH; m. (2) W. S. McLEOD. (Suit in Miss.)

NATHANIEL EVANS JR. and his brother, HAMILTON P. and FRANKLIN EVANS and brothers-in-law, DAVID H. WILLIAMS and SAMUEL P. WHITE, are all mentioned in the 1851 document NATHANIEL EVANS SR. to HENRY F. SCRUGGS.

So also were JESSE EVANS, perhaps the brother of NATHANIEL SR.; BARBEE BETTS, who could have been a son of CATHERINE'S first marriage; and DAVID BUSH admt. of FRANKLIN EVANS. Others who were also probably related in some way either to PRIDES or EVANS were: JONATHAN BURLESON, JOSEPH KOLB, JOHN KING, JOSIAS EVANS, PETER EARNEST, ROBT. K. BYRD, DAVID MOORE and GARLAND BEAN.

ROBERT K. BYRD is evidently ROBERT KING BYRD, the grandson of BENJ. PRIDE of Rhoan Co. Tenn. son of his dau. ANN and her husband, JOSEPH BYRD.

The children of the second marriage and REUBEN, WILLIAM and JOSEPH were named in the household of NATHANIEL EVANS SR., in the 1850 census of Morgan Co.

5. WILLIAM JEFFERSON EVANS, son of NATHANIEL SR., and JANE PRIDE EVANS, according to family records was born May 1830; (instead of 1832 as given in the 1850 census) m. 4 Aug. 1871 MARGARETTE JANE WARREN b. 12 Oct. 1871 at New Madraid, Mo.; d. 13 June 1910 at Purdon, Texas, dau. of JAMES Y. WARREN and PEGGY YEATS. Issue:
   (1) JAMES WARREN EVANS b. 12 May, 1872; d. 10 Oct. 1936 at Edna, Texas; m. 24 Aug. 1910 at Corcicana, Texas, NINA LENORA PHILLIPS; survived by one son CALVIN CECIL EVANS, who married 1 Mar. 1938 THELMA WILEY WILLIAMSON and has CHARLES WARREN, EDNA LENORA and MARY SUE EVANS.
   (2) WILLIAM BENJAMINE EVANS b. 26 Sept. 1876 at Purdon, Texas; d. 20 Jan. 1951; m. Nov. 1913 HUNTICE E. FAVOR b. 1896; d. 1969 at Austin, Texas; dau. of CHAS. AUGUSTUS FAVOR, b. 1867 At Sedalia, Mo. and his wife MARY JULIA WHEELINGTON. Issue:
      A. ALICE WILLOUGHBY EVANS b. 21 Feb. 1915; Teague, Texas; m. 24 Dec. 1940 EUGENE GANTT. Has EUGENIA GANTT.
      B. WILLIAM BENJAMINE EVANS JR. b. 21 Oct. 1916; m. MARY SUE HAROLDSON and have GWINNIE ELAINE EVANS.
      C. HUNTICE VELIE EVANS b. 23 Nov. 1919; m. 1 April 1941 FLOYD STASNEY. Have; POPE ALLEN b. 1941 and JAN NUNTICE STASNEY b. 1949.
      D. CHARLES SAMUEL EVANS b. 17 Jan. 1922; m. 1946, CAREY ROCKEY. Have: CHAS. SAMUEL JR. b. 1949, MARY ALICE b. 1947, ELIZ. CAREY b. 1951, WM. HALL b. 1953 and THOS. ROCKEY EVANS b. 1955.
      E. JAMES WARREN EVANS b. 16 Nov. 1927; m. 1958 EUNICE DOLSON.
      F. CHARLES EUGENE EVANS b. 12 Dec. 1929.
   (3) EDNA VIVIAN EVANS b. 27 Sept. 1877 at Purdon, Texas; d. 26 July 1968 at Waco, Texas; m. 13 Sept. 1908 JACK ERMIT BERRY, Methodist minister b. 22 Feb. 1885 in Navarra Co. Texas; d. 6 Sept. 1959 Lubbock, Texas, son of JAMES ALEX. BERRY and FRANCES CAROLINE HUTSON. Issue:
      A. GRACE BERRY b. 22 Dec. 1909, Purdon, Texas; m. 10 Oct. 1930 at Dawson, Texas, RUSSELL VINCENT HOUSTON. Have: EDNA FAUNEIL HOUSTON and HELEN RUTH HOUSTON, both married.
      B. MARGARETTE FRANCES BERRY b. 5 April 1914; m. 8 Aug. 1939 at Georgetown, Texas JAMES THOMAS HUTCHINS. No Issue.
      C. LOYD EVANS BERRY b. 18 June 1917 at Dawson, Texas; m. 10 Feb. 1944 at Waco, Texas; PATTI RUTH WARREN. Have: JACK ALBERT BERRY, FREDA CAMILLE BERRY.
      D. JACKIE VIVIAN BERRY b. 4 Sept. 1919; m. 20 Feb. 1946 at Waco, JAMES WALTER COLLINS. Have: LESLIE FRANCES COLLINS.
6. JOSEPH MORGAN EVANS, son of NATHANIEL EVANS, SR. and his first wife, JANE PRIDE, b. 1834 in Morgan Co. Ala. (If census is correct) m. ELVIRA COOK McDOWELL. Issue:
   (1) MATILDA b. 22 June 1873 at Brinkley, Arks., (2) WILLIAM, (3) CHARLES, (4) D. (5) JOSIE, (6) LYDIA, also three sons who died young. This family lived in Morgan Co. Ala., Brinkley, Arkansas and Breckenridge, Texas.

The research on the family of NATHANIEL EVANS has been done by MARGARETTE BERRY HUTCHINS with some assistance from her sister, GRACE BERRY HOUSTON.

We are especially interested in the name JEFFERSON used in NATHANIEL'S family as a given name for one of his sons. This interest stems from the fact that THOMAS BURTON and WILLIAM PRIDE of Henrico Co. lived on Swift Creek as did also THOMAS JEFFERSON, grandfather of the Founding Father,THOMAS JEFFERSON, later President of the United States. Even before 1700 they were friends and neighbors but no direct connection is made

except a deed from the executors of THOS. JEFFERSON'S I) estate to WILLIAM PRIDE in compliance with the 1731 will which instructed that certain lands be sold.

We note also that NATHANIEL EVANS had other sons - HAMILTON and FRANKLIN named for nationally known patriots and this could be the case with the naming of WILLIAM JEFFERSON EVANS.

However, every evidence bears record that BURTON PRIDE, father of the three PRIDE sisters who married the three EVANS brothers, sons of ELIZABETH EARNEST and her husband JOSEPH EVANS, SR., was the product of both the BURTON and PRIDE families of Henrico Co. Va. who were neighbors of THOMAS JEFFERSON I) on Swift Creek in that county.

CHAPTER V - Part C
JOSEPH EVANS

This compiler has done extensive and expensive research on JOSEPH EVANS after it was established that it was he who married the Miss EARNEST of Mrs. NOLEN'S letters. This search began in Morgan Co. Ala. and spread to Tenn., Va., Maryland, Kentucky, and Pennsylvania. It began with the writing of dozens of letters, was one of the subjects of two field trips to the east coast and then was the reason for many more letters.

Morgan, Limestone and Madison Cos. Ala. records were thoroughly and personally searched without yielding any information about the father of the four EVANS brothers - HENRY, NATHANIEL, JESSE, and JOSEPH who lived variously from 1815 to 1850 in Morgan Co.

Before Ala. became a state on Dec. 14, 1819, she had been a part first of the Miss. and then the Ala. Territories of the U.S.

In Vol V. p. 689, Territorial Records of the former, a report is given of the population of Madison, then the only county in the territory in what is now Ala. This was 1808. This census showed a JOSEPH EVANS' with 4 in his family including himself and wife - 1 male over 21, one male under 21 and the same information on females.

This was not JOSEPH who married ELIZ. ERNEST for census records prove that he had sons born in 1797, 1803, and 1807. Also a daughter born about 1786, who never married. All of these should have been enumerated in his family, in this census, if this JOSEPH was he.

No doubt there were other children of this 1785 marriage, perhaps daughters and especially in the period 1787-1788, when their son HENRY was born to 1797 the year of NATHANIEL'S birth. Before 1818 Madison Co. Ala. covered all of Northern Ala. and part of Central Tenn. There are many EVANS marriages recorded there before 1819. Those of daus., only, include: NANCY m. 1810 JOHN SCALLORN, LOIS m. 1814 ALLEN WARD, NANCY EVANS m. 1816 SAMUEL MANNING, ELINOR EVANS m. (no date) WM. MORRISON, ELIZ. m. 1818 JOHN B. RICE, MARGARET EVANS 1818 to JOHN MORRISON, POLLY m. 1818 ALFRED HOLDER, SALLY m. 1818 JAMES McNEELEY, SARAH EVANS m. 1819 WM. STANDIFER. The list includes also THOS., JOHN, JOSEPH, WM., JOSIAH, SAMUEL, EPHRIAM and JOHN R. EVANS besides HENRY and NATHANIEL who married daus of BURTON PRIDE.

In 1804, the P.O. Master at Loftus Heights advertised that there was a letter waiting there for NATHANIEL EVANS but this was not NATHANIEL, son of JOSEPH who then was 7 yrs. of age.

In these same Miss. territory Papers Vol. 6 pp. 106-113, is a petition made by the Miss. Territory Elk's River Settlement address to the President and Congress of the U.S. Among the good number of signers were a JOSEPH EVANS followed by HENRY EVANS. The date is 1809, and HENRY EVANS, if among the older children of JOSEPH and ELIZABETH as of that date could have reached his majority. This looked as if it were our EVANS, since HENRY EARNEST, father of ELIZABETH, wife of JOSEPH EVANS, would have been grandfather of their son, HENRY EVANS.

"The problem set forth is that, understanding that all the lands N. of the Tenn. River had been purchased from the Indians and that the land was for sale in the form of grants for $2 per acre - - -

"Under these and many other impressions of mind, that appeared inviting to us to settle here, a great many of us sold our possessions and came and settled here in the winter and spring of 1807 without any knowledge or intention of violating the laws of the government or infringing on the rights of another nation. We remained in this peaceful situation until the fall of 1807, when Gen. ROBERTSON came and, running the Chicasaw boundary line, informed us that, though the Cherokee had sold the land, yet the Chicasaw had a claim to it."

Elk River flows through Franklin and Lincoln Cos. Tenn. across the corner of Giles, then into Limestone Co. Ala. and Lauderdale and into the Tenn. River near Muscles Shoals.

Finally, in the records of Franklin Co. Tenn. a document was found which might well explain the presence of the EVANS in Northern Ala. This was in the vicinity of Maury Co. Tenn. where, according to the NOLEN letters, JESSE and JOSEPH EVANS JR. had been born (mistake) and raised. Maury Co., too, had been thoroughly searched but the ELIZABETH EVANS, widow, there in the 1820, was the widow of DANIEL EVANS and her son JESSE was conducting business before JESSE, son of JOSEPH, was of legal age.

Franklin Co. was made in 1807, from Bedford and Warren, which two counties were created in the same year,

Warren from White and Bedford from Rutherford. So although, the grant was issued for 200 acres lying in White Co. on August 26, 1807, to JOSEPH EVANS assignee of JOHN NELSON, the document was registered in Franklin Co., Tenn., which lies adjacent to Madison Co. Ala. on the south and on the west one county over from Maury Co. Tenn. Lincoln Co. Tenn., also created from Bedford, but in 1809, was the intervening Co.

This grant is recorded in Deed Bk. A., page 18 and reads: "The state of Tenn. grant No. 129. By virtue of Warrent No. 1119 dated July 10, 1784 to JOHN NELSON by JOHN ARMSTRONG officer of claims for N.C. Western Lands; Entered Aug. 26, 1807 by No. 90, granted by the state of Tenn. to JOSEPH EVANS, assignee of sd. JOHN NELSON, 200 acres lying in White Co. on Beans creek of Elk River adj. ROBT. BEANS corner and JOHN RUTLEDGE'S line and to a black oak supposed to be on THOS. DILLONS line, surveyed Sept. 11, 1807 for the said JOSEPH EVANS, his heirs etc." JOHN SEVIER, governor -- Dated April 20, 1808. R. Houston, Secretary -- Registered Jan. 22, 1809"

Unfortunately, there is no further record of this land or the EVANS ownership in Franklin Co., nor in those cos. made from Franklin. The question of Indian Prior ownership was not settled until after the War of 1812-15, and the final cession by the Cherokees and Chicasaws was made in 1816.

Did JOSEPH EVANS become discouraged with the situation and walk off and leave the land as so many did cheap land of that day? Or is this our JOSEPH? With no later documents available, it is difficult to say, but we believe that JOSEPH of this grant and the JOSEPH and HENRY of the Territorial petition are ours.

Perhaps JOSEPH EVAN went to fight in the War of 1812. Mrs. NOLEN makes the statement that he did and according to the Office of the adjutant General in Nashville, Tenn. one JOSEPH EVANS who served as a private enlisted in Lincoln, Co. Tenn. 10 Dec., 1812, in Capt. JAMES McFERRIN'S Co.; was transferred by consent to Capt. ISIAHS RENSHAWS Co. and was mustered out exactly a year later at Murfreesboro, Tenn. in Rutherford Co.

Since MARGARET EVANS m. 10 May 1834, JOHN JONES in Rutherford Co. and LAVINIA EVANS m. 16 Sept. 1834, JAMES WILLIAMS in the same Co. it was hoped that this county would prove to be the final residence of JOSEPH EVANS who died before 1840, since both LAVINIA and MARGARET are names that are found in the EVANS connection.

However, he does not appear in the census of Rutherford in either 1820 or 1830. Neither was he in Franklin or Lincoln.

Not being able to pick up his trail either in the Elks River Settlement or in Rutherford, effort was directed to Green Co. in East Tenn. since it is in Green Co. that the marriage bond of JOSEPH EVANS to ELIZABETH EARNEST, dated May 10, 1785 and the 1809 will of HENRY EARNEST which identifies ELIZABETH or BETSY EVANS, as his oldest daughter are filed.

The Green Co. EARNESTS of the era, 1785 to 1840, were certainly the EARNESTS of the letter written in 1832 from ISSAC EARNEST JR. of Green Co. to FELIX EARNEST of Navidad, Texas. All of the uncles appear in the will as sons of HENRY EARNEST, SR.

Although we now knew the names of the parents of the four EVANS brothers who lived in Morgan Co., in order to establish the names of JOSEPH'S other children and his parentage, it was necessary to begin in Green Co. and follow the migration of JOSEPH of that Co. in trying to differentiate between JOSEPH, the husband of ELIZABETH, and other JOSEPH EVANS.

This was not easy to do for several reasons. EVANS is a common name and there were at least four JOSEPH EVANS of the same era in the same general locations. Tenn. counties were established rapidly in this era and so it was necessary to search many counties as lands and people were cut off in new counties. Then, too, this generation did tend to continue to move westward. Finally, JOSEPH EVANS was a Methodist minister and probably an itenerate preacher and if so, no doubt did not own any land at all in many places of residence.

Washington Co., the first Tenn. Co., was created in 1777. In 1783, Green was made from it, in 1792 Jefferson from Green and in 1794, Sevier from Jefferson. To add to the difficulty the records of Sevier were destroyed in the war between the States. As a mere beginning all of these counties must be searched.

In a Washington Co. tax list before 1783, is named a NATHANIEL EVANS who owned horses and cattle, but no land and a JAMES GIBSON, who owned 750 a. of land and horses and cattle.

In the first Green Co. Tax list of the same year, the names of JONATHAN and EVAN EVANS were found. The 1821 will of HANNAH, widow of JONATHAN identifies, JOHN, EVAN, ROBERT, JONATHAN, WILLIAM and JAMES C. as the sons of their union.

In the early records of the county, before Jefferson was made from it in 1792, ANDREW, JESSE, JOSEPH, NATHANIEL, and SAMUEL EVANS appear, as well as members of JONATHAN'S groups.

On Sept. 20, 1787, NATHANIEL EVANS was granted 600 in Green Co. N. side of French Broad River on Longs Creek adj. EDWARD'S claim and along ISAAC TAYLORS line. (grant No. 285 Recorded 6/10/1792 on p. 208 of Deed Bk. No.III Green Co.)

At about the same time he received a grant for another 600 a. on the south side of French Broad in the Eastern Dist. below the mouth of Boyd's Cr. (Grant No. III, Reg. April 4, 1792, D. Bk. III p. 151)

While living in Green Co., NATHANIEL and JOSEPH EVANS had applied jointly for a grant of 300 acres which,

when granted 12 June 1793, fell in Jefferson Co. as did most of NATHANIEL'S other land and that of the other EVANS except JONATHAN and Sons.

On Feb. 11, 1794, NATHANIEL and JOSEPH EVAN sold, in Jefferson Co., for L34, the 300 acre grant to THOMAS STOCKTON. The deed speaks of Stockton as of Jefferson Co. and NATHANIEL and JOSEPH EVANS as of Knox Co. Territory of the U.S. (Tenn.) (Bk. B. p. 43 Jefferson Co. Deeds) They were engaged in Indian fighting at this time and evidently were in Knox Co. temporarily.

According to "Watauga Pioneer Settlers" NATHANIEL and JOSEPH EVANS came to East Tenn. from Va.

The "History of the Lost State of Franklin" on page 319, speaks of them as brothers, as would seem likely by the joint ownership of land.

It was in 1785, that Washington Co. and vicinity declared themselves to be the Independent state of Franklin. In 1790, Tenn. became the Territory of U.S. south of the Ohio, until 1796, when it became a state.

The state of Franklin was organized by the frontiersmen to protect themselves against the Indians and NATHANIEL EVANS became a famous Indian fighter.

In 1786, as a Major, he commanded 300 men for the protection of Davidson Co. in middle Tenn. (Tenn. Volunteer State p. 188)

In 1788, Capt. NATHANIEL EVANS (the same) raised a company to put down an uprising in Blount Co. (p. 18 "History of Blount Co.")

In 1795, NATHANIEL EVANS was first major and JOSEPH EVANS Captain of Calvary in Hamilton's Dist. (p. 466 Vol. III American State Papers).

This was, without doubt JOSEPH, brother of NATHANIEL, his superior officer. Probably after the Indian troubles were over, JOSEPH returned to his family and the county where he had last owned property, now Sevier instead of Jefferson.

A JOSEPH was named Col. of Sevier Co., Militia in 1796. This too was surely the JOSEPH who had acted as captain in Hamilton District under Major NATHANIEL EVANS whom we believe was NATHANIEL'S brother.

In the account from the "Lost State of Franklin," is is stated that:

"NATHANIEL EVANS was a native of Va. It seems he first settled near Jonesboro later near Bean's Station and subsequently removed to the county south of the French Broad. His contemporaries pronounced him a good soldier noted for bravery and daring exploits. He was loyal to Gov. SEVIER to the last and one of his favorites. A brother, JOSEPH, settled in Sevier Co. In the war (indian) of 1792 the two brothers had their horses stolen by the indians. They disguised themselves as indians, stole into the Indian Camp recovered their horses and reached home. In the campaign which followed the attack on Houston's Station, EVANS was in command of a company and as a reward for his gallentry, it was proposed that he be raised to a colonelcy. He declined the promotion saying he could serve better as a captain.

In 1793 Gov. BLOUNT made him captain of Knox Co. Calvary and as such, he led a large detachment of mounted troops to aid in the protection of the Cumberland settlement. He was advanced to 1st major of Calvary of Hamilton Dist. in 1795. It was said that he stood 6 ft. tall and weighed 200 pounds."

NATHANIEL EVANS died in White Co. Tenn. The inscription on his grave states that he was born in 1756 and died in 1826. He had married in 1800, MARY REYNOLDS b. 1775. A son, SEVIER EVANS, was b. 1803 and died 1848. A descendant's D.A.R. papers state that NATHANIEL was born in Botetourt Co. Va.

What became of his brother, JOSEPH and was he the JOSEPH who married ELIZ. EARNEST?

We know that there were at least three other JOSEPH EVANS in the same vicinity at approximately the same time.

Chalkey's Augusta Co. Records Vol. II p. 64 states tha among the early settlers of Wolf Hill Tract in Washington Co. Va. were THOMAS WALKER and SAMUEL EVANS. In 1803, the EVANS heirs: JOSEPH, ANDREW, JAMES, DAVID and SAMUEL C. EVANS, children and representatives of SAMUEL EVANS who purchased in Washington Co. in 1773, 672 acres part of Wolfs Hill tract. In court it was stated that in 1796, SAMUEL sold to MARTIN HAZEY and moved to the S.W. Territory.

In Knox Co. records of Jan. 1799, a JOSEPH EVANS and ANDREW CRISWELL acted as admix. of SAMUEL EVANS decd. with WM. SNODDY and WM. PRUITT, their securities to the sum of $1200.

The Jan. 1836, the will of JOSEPH EVANS of Knox Co., names his wife, ANN and his two oldest sons, WILLIAM and JAMES H. as executors. It was witnessed by ANDREW CRISWELL, THOS. PATTON, JOSEPH BLAKELY. Following this, there are recorded in Knox Co. D. & W. Bk. 2 pages 183 and 184, three deeds from WILLIAM EVANS to ANN, SR., ANN, JR., DAVID, JOSEPH, JAMES H., ROBERT C. and SAMUEL EVANS; and one individually to HENRY EVANS. These were the heirs of JOSEPH of Knox and certainly indicate that he was son of SAMUEL, Part of the names are right for JOSEPH and ELIZABETH but the wife is ANN and there is no JESSE, NATHANIEL or MARY in this family.

ANDREW EVANS, another son of SAMUEL, applied for a Rev. War pension while living in Rhea Co. Tenn. Sept. 24, 1824. He was born April 4, 1763, in Frederick Co. Va. He was living in Washington Co. Va. when he substituted for his father, SAMUEL EVANS, who was drafted in April 1779. In Sept. 1780, he substituted for his

brother, JOSEPH EVANS, who was also drafted in Washington Co. -- He had moved to Washington Co. Va. before the War and after the war he moved to Knox Co. Tenn. then to Grainger, then to Sevier and finally to Rhea where he died.

Was ANDREW EVANS memory playing tricks on him or was there truly another ANDREW who owned land (a 37 acre island) in Green Co. 1792, bought land from NATHANIEL EVANS when he was cut off in Jefferson and was a member of the first court of Sevier Co. on Nov. 8, 1794? Could it be that NATHANIEL and JOSEPH had a brother, ANDREW, who did all of these things and then moved to Grainger where he was joint owner with JOSEPH of land purchased therein 1798 by JOSEPH EVANS of Sevier Co. Tenn? There are documents to prove all these movements of the latter mentioned, ANDREW.

NATHANIEL of Ala., son of JOSEPH and ELIZABETH, seemed uncertain as to where he was born, saying in one census return that he was born in Tenn. in 1795 and in another that he was b. in Ky. in 1797.

His tombstone confirms the latter date. If true, and born in Ky. in 1797, JOSEPH of Sevier Co. in 1798, could hardly be his father. But, if he was born in Tenn. in 1797, then this JOSEPH, who moved to Ky. before 1802, may have been the one we are trying to trace.

A later deed on record in Grainger Co. reveals that the JOSEPH EVANS, of Sevier Co. in 1798, who bought the 300 acres, was on Nov 24, 1802 of Pulaski Co., Ky. and that he and the ANDREW of Grainger Co. discussed above, are joint owner of 1/3 of the same 300 acres, which they sell to THOS. HODGES.

Pulaski Co. Ky. is adjacent to Wayne Co. where JESSE EVANS, son of JOSEPH, SR. and ELIZABETH, was born in 1803. In fact, until Jan. 1801, WAYNE was part of Pulaski. But before we start research on JOSEPH EVANS in Ky. we must first consider other JOSEPHS of Tenn.

One JOSEPH EVANS, SR. shows up in the 1820 census of Smith Co. Tenn., but his name is followed by JOSEPH EVANS, JR. and at this date JOSEPH JR., of JOSEPH and ELIZABETH EARNEST, was only thirteen years old, certainly not old enough to maintain a separate home and this is a list of householders.

Another JOSEPH EVANS made application in 1820, in Claiborne Co. Tenn. for a Rev. War Pension. He stated that at that time his family was composed of himself 61, and for 10 years incapacitated for work; a sickly wife, 58; a son, 18, and a daughter, 16. When he sold land in Claiborne Co. later, to comply with Pension requirement, the deed was witnessed by POLLY EVANS and DENIS EVANS. This JOSEPH was not the JOSEPH we are trying to trace. He and ELIZABETH had JESSE b. 1803, then 17 and JOSEPH, JR. b. 1807, then thirteen and probably daughters in between. They also had a dau. MARY b. 1786, who never married and at that date would have been 34 and living in their home.

This looks like the JOSEPH of the 1809 census in Madison Co. Ala. He was drafted in Baltimore Co., Md., enlisted in Fincastle Co. Va. and in 1831, moved to Montgomery Co. Ill. where all of his children resided.

There is also another clue, probably relating to JOSEPH EVANS, the brother of NATHANIEL, which is recorded in Knox Co. Tenn. in 1799, and refers to a JOSEPH EVANS then in Ky. Its contents are recorded in the Superior Court Minutes of Knox Co. Book I, 1793-1808 March Court 1799. (Was this our JOSEPH?)

"JAMES GIBSON vs. JOHN SEVIER and ADAM MEEK executors of ISSAC TAYLOR, decd."

"It is ordered by the court that this suit be continued until next term that the parties have leave to amend the bill and the commissioners to issue for the defendants to the state of Ky. to take the deposition of JOSEPH EVANS and others." JOSEPH and ELIZ. could have been in Ky. this early.

It will be remembered that NATHANIEL EVANS and JAMES GIBSON were both in Washington Co. Tenn. in 1783, that JOHN SEVIER was a special friend and benefactor of NATHANIEL and JOSEPH, and that the first grant made to NATHANIEL in Green Co. 1787, was for 600 a. adj. to ISAAC TAYLOR.

We shall also see that NATHANIEL and JOSEPH EVANS had no doubt, been acquainted with TAYLOR, or his father even before they came to the Tenn.

A descendant of NATHANIEL has stated that he was born in Botetourt Co. Va. in 1756. In September 1772, an older NATHANIEL EVANS with ANDREW EVANS, Issac Taylor, and ADAM, JOHN and JOSEPH LOONEY were all members of the same Jury panel in Botetourt Co. (Annals of Southwest Va. p. 158).

Mrs. NOLEN in her 1932 letter to Mrs. WARD gives good records of the Looney Family. She was descended from WM. JOSEPH LOONEY and LAVINIA EARNEST who married in 1807, she said in Maurey Co. Tenn., but no record was found there of this marriage. LAVINIA was the dau. of HENRY EARNEST as was ELIZABETH EVANS. WM. JOSEPH was a grandson of ADAM LOONEY.

We have clues, now, concerning JOSEPH EVANS of Pulaski Co., Ky., Wayne Co., Ky., and from Knox Co. Tenn. to an undisclosed county in Ky.

The first firm date we have of our JOSEPH'S so journey in Ky. is the birth in 1803, of JESSE EVANS in Wayne Co. in which county an 1801 Tax list show DAVID EVANS, and ——— EVANS with one white male over 21 which could have been JOSEPH. In 1802 and 1803, there was only JAMES and in 1804 JAMES and ANDREW.

If JOSEPH EVANS was there in 1801, he sold or left within a year, but there are earlier records of a JOSEPH in Cumberland Co. Ky. Cumberland was established in 1796, from Green; Pulaski in 1798, from Green and Lincoln; and Wayne Dec. 1800, from Pulaski.

On May 1st, 1799, when the first Tax list of Cumberland Co. Ky. was made, both JAMES and JOSEPH EVANS owned 200 a. in that county on Beaver Creek. NATHANIEL EVANS also owned land in that county.

This information is all from tax-lists and doesn't necessarily mean that the owner was a resident of that county. Also, in creating new counties, it is quite possible and did happen that slight adjustments were made in old boundaries. So it is entirely possible, that this JOSEPH of Cumberland, who owned land on the Beaver Cr. with JAMES in 1799, is the ——EVANS listed with DAVID in 1801. It is also possible, that he was living in Pulaski in 1802, and in Wayne in 1803, when JESSE was born. What we are saying, is that the JOSEPH who was to be sought in Ky. in 1799, to make a deposition concerning ISAAC TAYLOR'S est., the JOSEPH of Pulaski Co. Ky. who sold land in Grainger Co. Tenn. in 1802, the JOSEPH who owned 200 in 1799, in Cumberland Co. Ky., and in 1801, in Wayne Co., could have been and probably were one and the same as the JOSEPH who married ELIZABETH EARNEST. However, these other EVANS of this locality (JAMES, DAVID, ANDREW and later SAMUEL) carry the names of the sons of SAMUEL C. EVANS.

As we have stated, JOSEPH was a Methodist preacher and not necessarily a land owner. Then, too, ELIZ. no doubt had relatives in Wayne Co. who may have provided them with a home. Her mother was MARY STEVENS, and we understand was German, so the name in that language would be STUBEN. Many of MARY'S relatives migrated from Frederick Co. Va. to Ky., and it was no doubt they who founded the town of Stubenville, located in Wayne Co. about 5 miles north of the county seat, Monticello. We know that JOSEPH and ELIZ. were in Ky. until after the birth of JOSEPH, JR. in 1807. Shortly, thereafter, we find him and his son, HENRY, in the Elk River Settlement of the Miss. Territory and at about the same time owning land in Franklin Co. Tenn., which is in the Elk River Valley.

Although, there is no positive proof that this JOSEPH was the brother of NATHANIEL II), the Indian fighter born 1756, in Botetourt Co. Va., by a process of elimination, this seems to be the best likelihood. If so, then there is little doubt that they were the sons of an older NATHANIEL EVANS I) of Augusta and Botetourt Cos. Va. and his wife, MARY who died between 1765 and 1774. NATHANIEL died some twenty years later.

JOSEPH and ELIZABETH had a son, NATHANIEL II), of Ala. and JESSE and RUTHA PRIDE, also had a son named Nathaniel, born in Texas, the youngest member of that family.

Botetourt Co. was made from Augusta in 1769-70 and NATHANIEL EVANS I), as well as PETER EVANS, his brother, were cut off in it.

Twice, we have found mention of a small mill on the EVANS property in Augusta, when the Moravians got supplies there in Oct. 1753, and as it was mentioned in DANIEL'S 1755 will. Someway, the land on which it stood, was left out of the early EVANS surveys and, according to a 1784 Botetourt patents. NATHANIEL I) remedied this by entering a claim for 58 acres, a tract on Mill Cr. "on which a small stone mill stands."

A notation in Botetourt records, credits him in 1770, with being issued certificates for 4500 pounds of hemp. Certificates were required for its cultivation and sale, no doubt, because not only was its fiber used for rope, but a narcotic drug could also be made from the plant.

Botetourt records state, that NATHANIEL I) moved to the South West Territory (Tenn.) in 1785. As we have found no known records of him, he probably moved just across the state line into Sullivan Co. Tenn. which has lost most of its early record, only 2 or three deed books now being available.

He died in the territory about 1794, and a notation in Botetourt County which gives this information also states that his will was probated in Henrico Co. Va. However, there is no trace of the will itself in Henrico or Botetourt.

In addition to NATHANIEL II and JOSEPH and perhaps an ANDREW of early Tenn., it is possible that the wife of THOMAS KING, with whom NATHANIEL EVANS II, received a joint land grant in 1796, was dau. of NATHANIEL I).

It is possible, too, that he had a son, JOHN, who owned land on Potts Cr. in Botetourt Co. in 1771. Orange and Augusta Co. Records prove NATHANIEL I) was of age in 1743.

A JOHN EVANS served with NATHANIEL EVANS II and JOSEPH, from Sullivan and Washington Cos. Tenn. with N.C. troops in the Rev. War. A JOHN EVANS received a N.C. land grant for his war service April 7, 1786, 202 acres in Davidson Co. Later he, or another of the same name, received one for 640 acres.

His will is probated in Davidson or Williamson Cos. It was his grandson, DANIEL, who was husband of ELIZABETH, the widow of Maury Co. and father of the JESSE EVANS of the same county who was older than JESSE EVANS, son of JOSEPH and ELIZABETH.

Mrs. NOLEN claimed that JOSEPH and JESSE EVANS of early Texas were born in Maury Co. Tenn. and while we know that not to be a fact, the evidence is that they did live briefly in that vicinity and from this accumulation of bits of information converning him, we believe that JOHN EVANS the soldier of the revolution was related to NATHANIEL and JOSEPH, probably their brother.

CHAPTER V - Part D

MARK EVANS of Virginia and Sons

There is no doubt that NATHANIEL I) of Augusta and Botetourt Cos. Va. was the son of MARK EVANS of Augusta born 1690-1695. Much about MARK is given in "Kegleys Virginia Frontier." pp. 523, 188-191.

Mr. KEGLEYS credits MARK EVAN'S survey at Cedar Springs, "a small bold spring" that bubbled up near the head of a draft that sloped toward Buffalo or Tinker Cr. in Augusta Co. as being the beginning of civilization in that region." MARK EVANS selected the best land and waters for himself and made application for patents to three 400 acre tracts in which Cedar Springs, Evan's spring and Evan's Spring Branch were recognized as land-marks. This was about 1745-6, but MARK EVANS had been here as early as 1742, when he and a STEPHEN EVANS served in Capt. ROBINSON'S Co. There is no further record of STEPHEN in Augusta Co.

In the same year, Capt. JOHN BUCHANAN company, Lt. WM. EVANS and Ensign JOSEPH COTTON, made a census of a certain part of August in which lived the following families: WALKER, HAYS, KANADA (KENNEDY), SAYERS, ANDERSON, ROBINSONS, MOORE, MITCHELL, NATH. EVINS, STEPHENSON, ISAAC TAYLOR, etc.

In March 1745/6, MARK EVANS. WM. KEVINE, JOHN McFARREN, and JAMES McGOMERIE were approved by Orange Co. Va., as Road Blazers from the inhabitance on Roanoke, to the top of the Blue Ridge, to bounds of Brunswick Co. This was the first road over the Blue Ridge Mts.

On Nov. 19, 1746, JAMES CAMPBELL and MARK EVANS were made overseers of a road along a ridge dividing the waters of New River from the waters of the south branch of Roanoke which is to end in the road that leads over the Blue Ridge.

MARK EVANS was indeed a pioneer. When he came to what was at that time a trackless wilderness, he probably came by way of Pennsylvania and through the mouth of the Shenandoah Valley.

He died intestate in 1748. His eldest son, DANIEL EVANS, was made administrator of his estate in Feb. that year. At that time, according to English Custom, the oldest son of a family inherited his father's estate. Mr. KEGLEY states that the inventory of this estate is interesting because it shows the equipment of perhaps the most well-to-do man in the community. The most interesting item was "31 books in an old library."

The patents for the EVANS land were issued after MARK'S death when his son, DANIEL, was in charge of the estate. The three tracts "Cedar Springs," "Naked Farm" and "The Barrons" were supposed to contain 400 acres each, but really comprised 1910 acres. JOHN McNEILL, THOS. BARNES and JAMES MASON obtained patents for lands adjacent to EVANS and JOHN SMITH, MALCOLM CAMPBELL, NATHANIEL EVANS and GEO. SPATTS looked after the corners.

DANIEL EVANS lived on the home place until his death in 1755. His widow, RHODA, was still there in the fall of 1756, when GEORGE WASHINGTON lodged at her home on his return from visiting the Southern forts. She afterwards married RICHARD DOGGETT and moved to Drapers Meadows.

It was in 1753, during the life time of DANIEL, that the Moravians on their way from Bethlehelm, Pa. to Winston-Salem N.C. recorded in their diary their trip through Augusta Co. and an incident of their descent of Purgatory Mt. At Looney's Mill they got a new supply of freshly baked bread. They camped on the bank of the Roanoke River on Nov. 1st and next day secured supplies at Evan's Mill.

It will be remembered that both JOSEPH EVANS and JOSEPH WM. LOONEY married daughters of HENRY ERNEST and Mrs. NOLEN, the source of this information, insisted in her letters that the EVANS and LOONEY families were neighbors of long standing.

DANIEL EVANS sold, before his death, two of this father's patents to his brother, PETER.

DANIEL EVANS will was dated July 30, 1755. Beside his wife, RHODA, he left two small daughters who later married brothers and in Dec. 1792, as JOHN NEELEY and wife, SUSANNAH; and JAS. NEELEY and CATHERINE, his wife, and as sole heirs of DANIEL EVANS for the sum of £50, gave deed of release to PETER EVANS for the third tract of 400 acres which had come to their father DANIEL, from his father, MARK EVANS. (Deed Bk. 4, p. 421 Botetourt Co. Va.) DANIEL mentioned the mill on his plantation, and his ward, SUSANNAH GRIFFITH, who was to have a Christian education. More important was the fact that he named his brothers NATHANIEL EVANS and PETER EVANS, leaving to each a small legacy. His executors were PETER EVANS, MARK COLE of Bedford Co. and his wife, RHODA. One of the witnesses was no other than LAWRENCE STEVENS, grandfather of ELIZABETH ERNEST, wife of JOSEPH EVANS of Tènn., Ky. and Ala. Although LAWRENCE STEVENS is said to have been from Frederick Co. Va., he was in Augusta as early as 1748, when he entered a suit for debt against JAMES GORDON of Gwynned in Phila. Co. Pa.

PETER kept the MARK EVANS estate together until his death in 1797. He left a widow, MARY TOSH EVANS, and two daughters, BETSY and CATHERINE to whom he willed slaves, horses and saddle and £25, each, from a land sale. His other lands were divided between his sons, MARK, THOMAS, JONATHAN, WILLIAM, and JOHN.

NATHANIEL EVANS I), received patents for two tracts of land in Orange Co., later called Augusta as early as Jan. 29,. 1744. Both of these were on the South River, one for 161 acres and another for 289. On the same day, a WM. EVANS received a patent for 150 a. on the same river.

Earlier, on March 13, 1743, WM. EVANS purchased a tract of 267 acres from BENJ. BORDEN and NATHANIEL EVANS was a witness to this transaction. BORDEN received a large grant in 1737, and this was part of it. (Orange Co. Deeds 1742-1743)

The will of ANDREW BAXTER d. 15 Sept. 1748, and extracted in Vol. 1 p. 29 of CHALKEYS abstracts of Augusta Records, names his wife, MARGARET, who is to have his 100 acres for lifetime and then it is to go

ANDREW STEVENSON, who is named as executor.

The other residue legatees are NATHANIEL EVANS, ANDREW EVANS, JOHN PAL and JACOB ANDERSON.

This ANDREW BAXTER is an aged man at this time and is no doubt a relative, perhaps their grandfather and these men of various family names are evidently the sons of his married daughters. There is nothing more to indicate a definite relationship of his to them, but two-ANDREW STEPHENSON and ANDREW EVANS-were likely his namesakes. At the time of his death in 1753, ANDREW BAXTER was 83 years old. The fact that both DANIEL and PETER EVANS had daughters named CATHERINE could indicate that their mother, a wife of MARK EVANS was also CATHERINE. We do not have names of daus. of NATHANIEL I).

Since NATHANIEL was closely associated with the early WM. EVANS and named in the will with ANDREW, there is strong reason to believe these two were probably his brothers and also sons of MARK EVANS whose wife (or at least first wife) could have been the daughter of BAXTER and account for the name NATHANIEL as well as ANDREW in the EVANS family. A NATHANIEL BAXTER made his will in Orange County at an earlier date.

WM. EVANS m. HANNAH WATSON, who before her death in1787, bore him WM. JR., JOSEPH, ELIZ. who m. SAMUEL McFARLAND, DOROTHY who m. JOSEPH PAIGH, HANNAH who m. MICHAEL McCONNELL, MARGARET who m. JOHN MOWRY, and JANE EVANS, (Aug. Records Vol. II page 126).

It will be recalled that MARK COLE of Bedford Co. was named by DANIEL EVANS, with his wife, RHODA and his brother, PETER, as executors of his will. MARK COLE may have been grandson or nephew of MARK EVANS, or his son-in-law.

In Bedford Co., too, at this time or a little later were ANDREW EVANS and his wife, NANCY, who on 9 Feb. 1773, sold to JOHN WARD of Augusta for L100 a tract of 347 a. which was granted to ANDREW EVANS, 20 June 1753, at which time this land, then in Fincastle Co. was part of Augusta. (Recorded in Bk. A p. 24 Montgomery Co. Va.)

No effort has been made to prove that this ANDREW and WM. are those of early Augusta Co. but this could easily be a fact.

NATHANIEL EVANS appears in the processionals of Augusta Co. in 1748, 1759, and 1767. He and JOHN STEPHENSON were in charge of it in Capt. MOORE'S Co. in 1760.

In 1758, he was paid L5 for a horse stolen in the Shawnee Campaign. Perhaps he was in the Militia at that time for he is listed as a member of it in 1759.

NATHANIEL must have been born about 1720. He would have reached his majority before he owned his first land in 1743. His wife was MARY. She is a co-signer with NATHANIEL in grantor deeds of 1761 and in 1765 in Augusta. She does not appear in the records of Botetourt County in which their property was cut off in 1769-70, and we know that she was dead before 1774. She was the mother of NATHANIEL, the indian fighter, born in 1756. JOSEPH, the subject of our long search, is always named after NATHANIEL and seems to accept his leadership, so we assume he was just younger. He married in May 1785, so he was probably born 1760-1765. We have said that ANDREW, joint owner of property with JOSEPH in Grainger Co., and residing close to the others in Green, Jefferson and Sevier Cos. was probably another brother.

We have a hint as to MARY'S family name. The given name, JOSEPH, seems to have begun with JOSEPH who married ELIZ. EARNEST in 1785. His grandson, son of NATHANIEL and JANE PRIDE had the full name JOSEPH MORGAN EVANS.

A search of Wills and Admx. of Va. revealed that a JOSEPH MORGAN died in Frederick Co. Va. and on Feb. 8, 1748, in that county ELIZABETH MORGAN and THOMAS SWEARINGER were appointed admxs. of his estate.

RICHARD MORGAN and GEORGE PARIS acted as their bondsmen.

The fact that Frederick Co. is adjacent to Augusta and was created from Orange Co. about the same time gives this added significance.

Another clue not unravelled is that the middle initial H. appears repeatedly among the grandchildren (boys) of JOSEPH and ELIZ. EVANS, and could not come from ELIZABETH'S family. A deed recorded in Augusta Co. Bk. 10 pages 4 and 5 from WILLIAM HENDERSON and wife, SUSANNAH, to NATHANIEL EVANS, on Aug. 17, 1761 bears all the earmarks of a gift. The tract of 350 acres was already occupied by EVANS, who paid only 5 shillings for it. The deed also contained a provision that the deed not to become final for one full year at the end of which EVANS was to pay one "pepper corn" if the same shall be lawfully demanded and said NATHANIEL EVANS may be in actual possession and there by enabled to accept or take a grant or release of the revision and inheritance to him and his heirs." While the will of WM. HENDERSON makes no mention of NATHANIEL EVANS, that does not rule out the possibility that his wife was HENDERSON'S daughter. We believe she was.

Cross signatures in Augusta Co. indicate that there may have been a family connection between NATHANIEL EVANS and the HAYS family. An ANDREW HAYS, probably son of GEORGE, reminds us again of the ANDREW BAXTER connection, through which this HAYS-EVANS connection probably came.

There are numerous references in early Augusta recordsto several LOONY'S who were cut off later in Botetourt as were the descendant of MARK EVANS.

The last deed which NATHANIEL and MARY made in Agusta Co. in Oct. 1765, was for 120 acres on Looney Cr.

We have no definite proof of the residence of MARK and NATHANIEL EVANS before we find them in Augusta Co. Va. Of course, they show up briefly in the records of Orange, the parent Co. of Augusta and Frederick. It is in Orange Co., too, that the will of NATHANIEL BAXTER was probated.

However, as Augusta Co. encompassed parts of several states in its beginning, so did Orange, shortly before the split.

We know that because the Blue Ridge was considered well nigh inaccessable, since there were no roads and because it was infested with savage Indians, that it acted for more than 100 years as an effective barrier to westward migration. Historians tell us that when the Shenandoah Valley and other Western Va. areas were opened up that the point of migration was through the mouth of that Valley in Pennsylvania.

We suspect that ambitious pioneers from other colonies migrated first to Pa. and, having fulfilled there the allotted period of time to be classified as immigrants, proceeded south into the Valley of Va.

In 1737, and a bit later, a MARK EVANS acted as Justice of Peace in Lancaster Co. Pa. from which county many of the Augusta Co. pioneers, including the CROCKETT family, came. (Pa. Archives Vol. IX Series 2 pp. 742, 770) This was shortly after the Valley was opened to migration 1732-37.

In the index of Deeds of Maryland, STEPHEN EVANS receives land from one, OSMOND, in 1717, in Charles Co. Md. and a MARK EVANS appear in Somerset on the Eastern Shore a bit later in an interchange of property between JOHN EVANS SR., JOHN JR., MARK and NATHANIEL EVANS which looks like the division of an estate. STEPHEN EVANS served with MARK in the early Augusta Co. Va. militia.

The will of NICOLAS RICE of Somerset Co. Md. was dated Jan. 5, 1670, and proved Mar. 15, 1677. In it, he bequeathed certain legacies to ELIZA. dau. of ROBERT HARDY and also to the three children of PHILIP and MARY BISHOP. He made RICHARD CROCKETT and JOHN EVANS executors and residue legatees.

Later deeds prove that they inherited his land which indicates that they were the closest male kin and of equal closeness. They were probably either his sons-in-laws or nephews.

In Somerset Co., Nov. 4, 1679, RICHARD CROCKETT of Somerset, planter, and JOHN EVANS of same, planter, divided their inheritance from Rice by deeds, one to the other, in which the details of the bequest was recorded - "The said NICHOLAS RISE -- did give and bequeath unto the above named RICHARD CROCKETT and JOHN EVANS among other things, all his goods, cattle, chattle, movable and immovable, money, debts, bills, bonds with all his lands, tenements, houses or buildings did convey to the same and their heirs forever one tract of land called Rise Land -- lying and being on the Easter Shore of the Northernmost side of the said River on the easternmost side of Taylor's Creek separating the sd. lands from the land of JOHN TAYLOR.

Also, one other tract or dividend of land called by the name of Noble Quarter being on the east side of Chesepeak bay in the county of Somerset." Witnesses: JAMES DASHIELDS, WM. JONES, CHAS. JONES.

On Aug. 15, 1730, in the same Co., JOHN EVANS deeded to ROBERT CROCKETT, a parcel of land called Shiles Crook being part of a tract of land called Nobles Quarters and part of a tract called Little Monmouth 200 a. in Somerset, Co. Wits: JOHN W. CARTER, HENRY DASHIELD, JOHN EVANS, JR. This was evidently the JOHN EVANS and JOHN JR. who are in an estate division including MARK and NATHANIEL EVANS 1742-1746, in this same Co. and Noble Quarters and Rice land was part of.

It will be noted that the plantations in Md. were given names. It will also be remembered that MARK EVANS gave names to the tracts of land for which he applied for patents in Augusta. They were called "Cedar Springs," "Naked Farm" and "The Barrons."

It should also be remembered that in 1745/6, at least three years after he took up residence in Augusta, MARK EVANS was one of four approved men as Road Blazers from the inhabitance on the Roanoke to the top of the Blue Ridge to the bounds of Brunswick Co. Blazing roads preceeds roads.

It is almost certain then, that when the EVANS came into the Valley of Va., there being no roads, they came by way of Pa. MARK of Lancaster Co. Pa. was probably MARK of Somerset Co. Md. and son of JOHN EVANS of the Rice will.

As yet, we have found no connecting link between the EVANS of Augusta Co. Va. and those of Pennsylvania and Maryland, other than the identical name, but there is one of sorts for SAMUEL and JOSEPH CROCKETT who went from Lancaster Co. Pa. to Augusta Co. Va. A document filed in Testamentary Proceedings of Baltimore Co. Md. on Sept. 10, 1746, and recorded in Bk. 32 p. 13 states:

Testamentary bond for the will of WM. SMITH by JOHANNAH SMITH of Baltimore Co. and THOMAS SMITH of Lancaster Co. Pa., his executors with JOSEPH CROCKETT and SAMUEL CROCKETT of Baltimore Co. aforesaid their securities to £100 sterling.

There are documents in Augusta Co. Va., that prove that SAMUEL and JOSEPH CROCKETT imigrated there in the late 1740's and came by way of Lancaster Co. Pa.

SAMUEL CROCKETT died in Augusta Co. Va. in 1749. His appraisement shows that he came into the county with a four horse wagon, with chains and with a good supply of household and kitchen furniture. His wife, ESTHER,

and JAMES MONTGOMERY were executors. JOSEPH CROCKETT was guardian of his minor children.

Later JOSEPH CROCKETT, in order to help the widow and minor children of his deceased bro., SAMUEL, took up a joint grant in Augusta with her.

In a later legal dispute between the ROBINSON and CROCKETT descendants, a sworn statement was made in court that the CROCKETTS and ROBINSONS had been neighbors in Lancaster Co. Pa.

No doubt the CROCKETTS had lived briefly in Lancaster and then had come down the Shenandoah Valley by way of the great wagon road.

There is no doubt in the mind of the compiler, that this SAMUEL and JOSEPH CROCKETT of Lancaster Co. Pa. to Augusta Co. Va. by 1749, were the same men of the same names of Baltimore Co. in 1746.

The Great Philadelphia Wagon Road passed through Lancaster and York Cos. Pa. thense across the Potomac to the entrance of the Shenandoah and through later Winchester and Staunton before it turned eastward through the Staunton River Gap.

We believe that MARK EVANS followed the same path as did the CROCKETTS - that he was born and reared in Somerset Co., Md., son of JOHN of the Rice will, lived briefly in Lancaster Co. Pa. and perhaps even periodically and that he then traveled down the Great Wagon Road to Augusta. This conclusion has been reached after exhaustive research done in Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia in all indicated counties.

It is probable that the fore-parents of JOHN EVANS of the Rice will, lived in Accomack and Northampton Cos. Va. out on the Eastern shore of Va. as Somerset is of Md. There are many Evans wills and other documents in these early Va. counties and many of the early residents of Somerset Co. came up from Va. especially those seeking freedom of religion for the Church of England, only, was recognized in Va.

CHAPTER VI

Part A

EARNEST - STEVENS

On August 13, 1930, NANCY WILLIAMS NOLEN wrote a letter concerning their relationship, to her cousin in San Antonio, Texas. She addressed it to Mrs. FRANCES WARD, widow of BEN. Q. WARD.

She begins "Dear FANNIE, I am going to dedicate this to you, and you can send it to your daughter, MARY."

We will quote only those parts of the letter which concern the EVANS-EARNEST genealogy.

"JOSEPH W. LOONEY and LAVINIA ERNEST were married in Tenn. Oct. 1807, and were the father and mother of 10 children.

FELIX ERNEST came to Texas in the early day, previous to 1837. He was here in time to get an allotment of land. He was grandmother LOONEY'S nephew and at his death, he left his land to Grandfather LOONEY and his cousin, JOSEPH EVANS,(SR. of Texas) JOSEPH W. LOONEY was his uncle by marriage.

Your grandfather, JESSE EVANS, SR. and JOSEPH EVANS (SR. of Texas) were brothers and their mother was an ERNEST, sister to grandmother LOONEY.

My father, NEAL WILLIAMS, was married to SUSANA BLYTH LOONEY in October 1848 and I, NANCY WILLIAMS, was born 25 October 1849.

My grandfather, JOSEPH WILLIAM LOONEY and his son, HENRY EARNEST LOONEY came to Texas in 1837 - - - don't know just when your grandfather JESSE EVANS and his brother, JOSEPH, came to Texas but think they came sometime in the early thirties. When I first remember them they lived on the FELIX ERNEST tract, three miles above the JOB WILLIAMS tract.

JESSE EVANS wife's given name was RUTH, don't remember her parent's name. JOSEPH EVANS married ALICE THOMPSON.

Your father, ALFRED EVANS, married CATHERINE JACKSON, nee ROGERS, daughter of SAMUEL C. A. ROGERS and his first wife, MARY WHITE. ROGERS' third wife was MARY EVANS, sister of ALFRED, dau. of JESSE."

A letter from ISAAC EARNEST of Green Co. Tenn. to his brother, FELIX EARNEST of Navidad, Texas, dated Oct. 7, 1832, not only gave the location of the EARNEST family, but also much news about individual members.

He mentioned his brother, HENRY, who is now dead, his Uncle HENRY EARNEST, Uncle ISSAC EARNEST, Uncle LAWRENCE and Aunt HANNAH, Uncle JACOB, Uncle PETER EARNEST.

He said that Grandmother EARNEST is alive and lives with Uncle PETER. Sister AMY lives with Uncle HENRY, Brother STEPHEN is a preacher and HANNAH and BETSY are married to brothers, named ROBINSON. (Recall the ROBINSON relative of the CROCKETTS of Augusta Co. Va.?)

After trying for three years to get information from the county seat of Green Co. without receiving an answer, the compiler appealed to the East Tenn. Historical Society to find out whether there are any records available in that Co.

POLLY ANNA CREEKMORE, director of the Society, replied that there were good records in the county and gave the address of Mrs. GERTRUDE SODERBERG of Greenville N.C., whom she said had been working on a prominent EARNEST family of that county from whom she is descended. We are indebted to Mrs. SODERBERG for much of the genealogical information on EARNEST.

The will of HENRY EARNEST, dated Feb. 25, 1803, and probated 1809, in Green Co. Tenn. states in the first item - "I give and bequeath unto my eldest daughter, BETSY EVANS, the sum of thirty-three dollars and one third of a dollar to be paid to her by my son, PETER EARNEST, one year after my deccase." BETSY is a nickname for ELIZABETH.

The marriage bond of JOSEPH EVANS and ELIZABETH EARNEST is recorded in Green Co. May 10, 1785, and we will repeat it here:

"JOSEPH EVANS and JAMES HOUSTON bound to his excellency and his Justices for the sum of fourteen pounds to be---- on condition that there be no lawful cause or impediment to conduct the marriage of JOSEPH EVANS to ELIZABETH EARNEST----- given under hands and seals the 10th day of May 1785.

Signed: JOSEPH EVANS - JAMES HOUSTON

HENRY EARNEST, father of ELIZABETH, was born in Switzerland in 1732, or perhaps 1730, and came to Virginia as a child and an orphan. It is said that as such he was bound out to LAWRENCE STEPHENS and later married his daughter, MARY. Since there is evidence that the Court action between EARNEST (or the court in his behalf) and STEPHENS took place in York Co. Va., one wonders if perhaps his parents were lost in a vessel which went aground in Lynnhaven Bay in 1738, in which only 60-90 out of 300 Swiss Settlers were saved. (Norfolk Antiquity Vol. II) Lynnhaven is only a short distance away from York and it is unlikely that minor children would have set out alone for the new world. Children were given priority, no doubt, and the parents lost in this disaster.

During the French and Indian Wars, HENRY EARNEST served in the Colonial Militia as a private in Capt. GEORGE MERCERS Co. This was one of the companies endorsed by GEORGE WASHINGTON who was Colonial Commander during this affair (Croziers Va. Militia pp. 114 and 117)

EARNEST married MARY STEVENS, daughter of LAWRENCE STEVENS, his benefactor, who in return for his services not only taught him a trade, but gave him a basic education. HENRY EARNEST wrote and signed his own will. They were married 1755 to 60. In 1769, they sold out in Frederick Co. Va., seat of the STEVENS family, and moved to Lincoln Co. N.C. where they lived briefly before moving to Sullivan Co., Tenn., then to Green Co. while it was still Washington, one source says in April 1777. Goodspeed in his "History of Tenn." says: "When HENRY EARNEST became a pioneer in Green Co., but one family was west of him on the North side of Unaka Mt. They had to depend on the forts for safety to avoid massacre by the Indians."

On Nov. 10, 1784, HENRY EARNEST received from the State of N.C. Grant No. 659 for 600 acres priced at 50 shilling for every 100 a. Land lying and being in the county of Washington on the South side of the Nolichicky River on a corner touching ALEX. ERVIN. This grant is recorded in Book III p. 84, Green Co. Tenn. Green was made from Washington in 1784, but evidently EARNEST had applied for this land while it was still a part of the parent county.

On a roadside in Green Co. is an historical marker which reads:

"EBENEZER"

"1½ miles south, the first Methodist Society in Tennessee was organized here in 1790. The family of HENRY EARNEST who settled here in 1779 comprised four-fifths of the membership. The annual convention of the Western Conference was held here in 1795. Stone-Dam Campground was nearby"

This church, "EBENEZER," was built on EARNEST'S land and still stands. Fittingly, HENRY EARNEST and his wife, MARY STEPHENS, are buried there. Their tombstones read: HENRY EARNEST born 1732; died March 6, 1809. MARY EARNEST born 1742; died August 1838. A new double granite marker has been placed in front of the two old marble ones and on this MARY'S name is given as MARY STEPHENS.

Issue:

1. ELIZABETH EARNEST b. 1755-1760 (over 80 years old in 1840) m. JOSEPH EVANS 5/10/1785, had at least 4 sons and 1 dau. Probably several more.
2. FELIX EARNEST (eldest son) b. 8-19-1762, at Newport Va. in Frederick Co. d. 7/16/1842, m. (1) SARAH NORTH 8/15/1786, m. (2) SARAH OLIPHANT 5/14/1808. Had nine children by each wife including FELIX JR. of Navidad, Texas 1832.
3. LAWRENCE EARNEST, evidently named for his grandfather, LAWRENCE STEPHENS, died May 1838, m. HANNAH NORTH, sister of SARAH, had 11 children.
4. JACOB EARNEST - will dated 8/3/1840 p. Nov. 1840, m. MARY D. WARREN 8/27/1799, reared 8 children to adulthood. Lost two.
5. HENRY EARNEST JR. b. 12/12/1772; d. 11/21/1851; m. about 1820, KITTY D. REEVES b. 3/11/1801; d. 11/19/1848. Perhaps was m. twice before this, but had no children by those wives.
6. PETER EARNEST b. 7/27/1777, near Gilford Court House N.C.; d. 8/17/1862; m. 12/15/1803 RUTH FAIN, had 11 children.
7. ANNA EARNEST d. 11/7/1799; m. 3/8/1793, STEPHEN BROOKS had 3 or 4 children.
8. SARAH EARNEST b. 1778; d. 1843; m. 2/26/1798, CHARLES HENRY WARREN, 17 children.
9. REBECCA EARNEST m. 1/27/1808; SAMUEL D. WARREN no record of children.
10. MARY EARNEST b. 1/25/1771; d. 10/14/1855; m. Aug. 1799, GEORGE WELLS, had 9 children.
11. LAVINIA EARNEST, youngest dau. b. Nov. 27, 1782; d. Aug. 21, 1826; m. Aug. 20, 1807, JOSEPH W. LOONEY.
12. ISAAC EARNEST.

ISAAC EARNEST in his 1832 letter to his brother, FELIX JR., mentions Uncle ISAAC EARNEST. So there were 12 instead of 11 children of this union. ISAAC EARNEST had 4 children in 1832.

In the "History of Methodison in Tenn. by JOHN B. McFERRIN, pages 96 to 102 are devoted to a letter written by F. W. EARNEST, Esquire of Blountville, East Tenn. April 9, 1869. Mr. EARNEST was the son of HENRY EARNEST JR. and grandson of HENRY and MARY EARNEST of Green Co. Tenn.

Among other things he said, was one paragraph concerning his father's sister:

"Four of the six sisters of my father married Methodist preachers- The first was the Rev. STEPHEN BROOKS who married ANNA EARNEST and who was for more than half a century a Methodist preacher. The next was the Rev. GEORGE WELLS who married MARY EARNEST and only died a few years ago, full of years and full of honors. The third was the Rev. CHARLES WARREN who married SARAH EARNEST and was probably local all his life. The fourth was the Rev. Mr. EVANS who married ELIZABETH EARNEST and who died before my time and whose given name I do not know." (JOSEPH EVANS)

Of the EARNEST brothers he said, "My father and his four brothers (perhaps except one) joined this church (EBENEZER) in early life, lived to a ripe old age and died triumphant in the faith." FELIX EARNEST, his father's eldest bro., was licensed to preach and by 1795, was spoken of as a local preacher. He was ordained deacon by Bishop

ASBURY on 16 Sept. 1806, at Ebenezer Church and on 3 Oct. 1825, he was ordained elder at Jonesboro by Bishop SOULE. He was still preaching in 1842, when he was 80 years old, the same year in which he died.

Speaking of Ebenezer Church in "Holston Methodism," Mr. PRICE, the author states: "The establishment of this Society was an important event in Holston Methodist History. It became a flourishing church and exerted a great influence in East Tenn. The EARNEST family has been financially, socially and religiously one of the most prominent families in the State of Tenn. It (the family) has retained to the present day the Methodist bias given it in 1792."

Both HENRY EARNEST and his oldest son, FELIX are listed in the DAR Patriot Index; HENRY for civil service in North Carolina and FELIX as an Ensign in a N.C. outfit.

The Rev. FELIX EARNEST of Green Co. Tenn. on Feb. 28, 1823, certified:

"That I was in SEVIER'S regiment, Capt. WILLIAMS company at the Battle of King's Mountain -- that I was at the surrender and saw the enemy stacking their arms and a guard placed around them, but tha' I did not see Col. CAMPBELL at the place of surrender for some minutes afterwards." "King's Mountain" Draper.

FELIX was promoted to Lieutenant of North Carolina Volunteers before the war was over.

I. The known children of the eldest daughter, ELIZABETH EARNEST and her husband, JOSEPH EVANS are: MARY b. 1786; HENRY b. 1788; NATHANIEL b. 1797; JESSE b. 1803; and JOSEPH EVANS, JR. b. 1807; spread over a period of 21 years.

If they followed the custom of the time for large families they probably had at least, five more during this period. They have been discussed at length in the EVANS Chapter.

II. Only 7 of the children of FELIX EARNEST, SR. are named in the letter of his son, ISAAC to FELIX JR.in Texas in 1832. They are beside those two: Brother HENRY d. before 1832, Sister AMY, Brother STEPHEN and HANNAH and BETSY m. to ROBINSON brothers. Another son was LEWIS EARNEST.

III. MARY EARNEST b. Jan. 25, 1771; d. Oct. 14, 1855; m. Aug. 1799; Rev. GEORGE WELLS. Issue:

1. MARY ANN WELLS b. 6/10/1800, m. JEREMIAH FARNSWORTH.
2. REBECCA WELLS b. 3/9/1802 - Second wife of LALSPRECH
3. HUMPHREY WELLS b. 11/6/1803, m. MARIA EARNEST
4. HENRY EARNEST WELLS b. 4/24/1805 m. CHARITY BROOKS
5. FELIX WILKERSON WELLS b. 12/31/1806 m. ANN BARRON
6. LAWRENCE BROUND WELLS b. 8/22/1808 m. JANE WHEELOCK
7. SARAH BOWMAN b. 4/12/1810 m. FELIX ROBINSON
8. ELIZABETH DAVIS b. 12/30/1811 m. JOHN GOURLEY
9. JACOB PORTER b. 9/21/1814 m. CYNTHIA HARRISON

Mrs. GERTRUDE SODERBURG is descended from the line above.

IV. JACOB EARNEST m. 8/27/1799, MARY D. WARREN. Issue:

1. BARTON L. EARNEST m. NARCISSA L. REEVES
2. MARIA EARNEST m. HUMPHREY WELLS
3. FELIX EARNEST m. RACHELL EMBEE in 1831
4. THOMAS EARNEST m. Miss KING
5. RUTH EARNEST m. GUSTAVUS BARRON
6. MARTHA EARNEST m. JOHN KING
7. LYDIA JANE EARNEST m. CHARLES EMBEE
8. ROBERT EARNEST m. Miss TELFORD
9. LOONEY EARNEST d. unmarried
10. EMELINE EARNEST d. unmarried.

This is the line of Mr. JAMES E. WARREN, JR. of Atlanta, Ga.

V. LAVINIA youngest dau. of HENRY and MARY STEVENS b. Nov. 27, 1782, d. Aug. 21, 1826; m. Aug. 20, 1807, JOSEPH W. LOONEY. Issue:

1. POLLY E. LOONEY b. Nov. 3, 1808 m. May 31, 1832, CONSTANSTINE FRAZIER.
2. ELIZABETH LOONEY b. May 1, 1810; d. Oct. 25, 1819.
3. DAVID LOONEY b. Oct. 4, 1811; d. Oct. 20, 1826
4. SALLY LOONEY b. Mar. 8, 1814; m. Jan. 18, 1837 FREEMAN JENKINS.
5. ANNA B. LOONEY b. Mar. 30, 1816; d. June 17, 1825.
6. JANE LOONEY b. April 1, 1818 d. June 3, 1819
7. HENRY EARNEST LOONEY b. Mar. 27, 1820; m. July 1, 1858
8. REBECCA LOONEY b. Mar. 27, 1822; d. July 7, 1837.
9. LAVINIA K. LOONEY b. Mar. 30, 1824; m. May 7, 1857 JOHN M. WHITE
10. SUSANNAH BLYTHE LOONY b. probably 1826; d. Aug. 1758, m. Oct. 11, 1848, NEIL WILLIAMS. Those living of this family came to Texas in 1837.

The oldest daughter of SUSANNAH LOONEY and NEIL WILLIAMS was NANCY WILLIAMS born Oct. 25, 1849. She later married and as NANCY WILLIAMS NOLEN was the author of the family letters to Mrs. BEN Q. WARD from which we have so often quoted.

Beside NANCY, SUSANNAH and her husband had before her death in 1858; DAVID WILLIAMS b. Dec. 22, 1851, THOMAS WILLIAMS b. Nov. 22, 1853, and SARAH MELINDA WILLIAMS b. July 1858.

NEIL WILLIAMS later remarried and had a second family of children.

Mr. JAMES E. WARREN who authored "The EARNEST Family in Switzerland and America" states in his forward:

"For the Swiss Ancestry, I am indebted to Dr. ALFRED ERNEST, Emeritus Professor of Botany of the Univ. of Zurich, whose father, Dr. HEINRICH ERNST had done much research into the family."

Dr. ERNST, feels that HENRY EARNEST of Va. was descended from the ERNST family of Dattlikon a little town on the Toss River which empties into the Rhine. He comments that "the inhabitance are German, descendants of the Alamannen who came to this region in the Second and third centuries A.D. The town and country-side also have a Rhineland aspect."

Dr. ERNST declares that the name ERNST (EARNEST) goes back to the German word ernust or ernost and he adds that the meaning then was the same as it implies today - sincere, earnest, serious.

The old first name became the family name when family names were first used and so the name EARNEST.

This name first appears in Dattlikon in the year 1308. In the year 1634, a census showed that there were 46 ERNSTS, its largest family.

The authenticated line which Dr. ENRST believes produced HENRY EARNEST of Va. is:

1. HANS ERNST married VERENA KREBSER on June 21, 1606.
2. Their son, HANS JAKOB ERNST, b. May 24, 1608, married ELSBETH STAMM, Sept. 20, 1633.
3. Their son, HANS HEINRICH ERNST, born Feb. 6, 1642, m. Jan. 10, 1669, BARBARA MEISTERHANS and
4. Their son, Ulrich ERNST, b. May 1, 1671, m. Feb. 7, 1699, JUDITH FISCHER.
5. Their son, FELIX ERNST, b. Jan. 25, 1705, m. March 2, 1728, ELSBETH WEIDMANN. Their children were ANNA and HEINRICH ERNST b. June 8, 1730, the future HENRY EARNEST of Va. and Tenn.

Others who have spent much time in research believe that Dr. ERNST is in error and that HENRY descended from another family of Switzerland.

Tradition says that ANNA, HENRY EARNEST'S sister also survived the voyage to Va. and was taken into another home in the new land but all trace of her has been lost.

HENRY'S birth date on his tombstone is given only as 1732, no month or day. If HENRY, after the death of his parents, was unable to tell the month and day of his birth, he could have been mistaken about the year as well. The discrepancy between the June 1730 Swiss birth date and his indefinite one is not conclusive, and it is still possible that he was born in 1730, and came to Va. in 1738 on the boat that went aground in 1738, in Lynhaven Bay.

CHAPTER VI - Part B
Some STEPHENS of Frederick Co. Va.

MARY STEPHENS, the wife of HENRY EARNEST, who lived in Frederick Co. before he pioneered in Green Co. Tenn., was the daughter of LAWRENCE and grandaughter of PETER STEPHENS, both of Frederick Co. Va.

There have been two full sized books written and published about the STEPHENS family, but unfortunately they are both, now, out of print.

"STEPHENS Family Genealogies" by DAN. V. STEPHENS published in 1940, by Hammond and Stephens Co. of Fremont, Neb., is an excellently documented book and one of which every descendant of PETER STEPHENS could be proud. But since it cannot be purchased, we will use some references from it and add some of our own to give a brief sketch of this family as it concerns MARY STEPHENS and her descendants.

PETER STEPHENS was in the first group of white settlers, who took up residence in that part of Virginia west of the Blue Ridge Mts. Only the VAN METERS preceded JOST HITE into this region and when HITE took up their patents and came to the Shenandoah Valley in 1732, bringing with him his entire family connection, he was also accompanied by PETER STEPHENS, ROBERT McKAY, WM. GREEN, ROBERT DUFF and others to take up the land he had obtained from the VAN METERS.

HITE was an immigrant and was said to have been born in Alsace Germany. However, in Frederick Co. records his name appears as JOST VAN HEYDT, which is Dutch. No doubt, he was among those Germans who, tiring of the constant warfare along the German-French border, took refuge first in Holland and then in America, or, since he first settled in the Colony of New York, which was colonized by the Netherlands, perhaps it was there that he began using the Dutch version of his name.

This is important to the descendants of PETER STEPHENS because there is similar confusion about his nationality. The name seems to be strickly English, but in the records of Frederick Co., it is found written in German

and LAWRENCE STEPHENS, PETERS second son, made the statement in his naturalization papers that he was a German Protestant.

Mrs. NOLEN, in her letters to Mrs. BEN Q. WARD, said that ELIZABETH and LAVINIA EARNEST, daughters of HENRY EARNEST and MARY STEPHENS, were "Pennsylvania Holland Dutch Girls. LEWIS STEPHENS translated a will in Frederick Co. which was written in Dutch.

However, it is conceded today, that the people whom we refer to as Pa. Dutch are in reality German and that the earliest settlers in the Valley of Va. were German, not Dutch in the sense that they were born in Holland.

Their former homes were chiefly in the Lower Palatinate and the adjacent states of Mainz, Borden, Alsace, Lorraine and Wurtenburg.

One of the largest early grants in Augusta Co. just south of Frederick was made to BENJ. BORDEN, a German.

Many Europeans knew several languages, but these misplaced Protestants, fleeing from continual warfare and no doubt persecution, may have learned their Dutch in Holland, which was a refuge on the continent for persecuted Protestants of Europe, in the late 17th century, as England was in the Early 18th Century. Many went from Holland to England where they may have learned English and assumed the English spelling of their name.

However, as we have said, they may have learned their Dutch in New York and English there, or in which ever other colony they lived on this side the Atlantic, for more than twenty years before they went to Va.

It is thought that PETER STEPHENS may have come to America with JOST HITE, who was found located in 1710, at Kingston, N.Y. At this same time or in 1711, a PETER STEPHENS was living near Kingston. In 1717, HITE was living on a large tract of land above Philadelphia, Pa. where Germantown was laid out in 1683. It was also in this locality that PETER STEPHENS married MARIA CHRISTINA RITTENHOUSE in 1730.

We already know that PETER STEPHENS was in HITES party when he arrived in Western Va. in 1732, coming by way of York Pa. and thense by way of the Indian trail, along the Conochohegue, through the Cumberland Valley to the Potomac and, by passing through the gap in the Blue Ridge, at the future location of Harpers Ferry, entered the Valley of Va. and made there, in what was later Frederick Co., the first settlement by white men.

If we are correct in our assumption that PETER STEPHENS came to the New World with HITE in 1707-1710, then he probably married the first wife as well as MARIA CHRISTINA in the colonies. Since his first two sons were LEWIS and LAWRENCE, it is assumed that his first wife came from a family of one of these names and its quite possible that he may have been married twice in that twenty year period, his wives being, first a Miss LEWIS and later a Miss LAWRENCE before he married the third time.

His oldest son, LEWIS, was 60 years old in1774, having been born in 1714.

MARY EARNEST, daughter of LAWRENCE, was born in 1742, so it is estimated that her father was born 1715 1720.

LEWIS and LAWRENCE are both Welch names and many Welchmen migrated to Pa. from 1684 to 1730, because of its promise of religious freedom. So whether PETER STEPHENS married once or twice before 1730, his two older sons were probably half Welch.

There was a PIETER LAWRENCE in New Netherlands as early as Feb. 28, 1657, on which day he received a grant for a plantation near Ft. Casamier.

The first grant to PETER STEPHENS was made in Orange Co. Va. and is recorded in D.B. 16 p. 336. This was for 674 acres on the western side of the Shenandoah River on the north branch of Crooks run, adj. HITES land.

Frederick Co. was formed from Orange in 1744, and it was probably from the tract described above that PETER STEPHENS on May 2, 1749, deeded to his eldest son, LEWIS, 205 acres of a greater tract of 3395 acres granted Oct. 3, 1734 to JOST HITE and by HITE conveyed to PETER RITTENHOUSE and by RITTENHOUSE to PETER STEPHENS. (D. Bk. 2 p. 65)

On April 4, 1745, PETER also conveyed land to his second son, LAWRENCE STEPHENS, a tract of 225 acres in Frederick Co. (D. Bk. I, p. 204).

Then on Nov. 10, 1752, in the Northern Neck of Va. 572 additional acres adjoining his own land, were patented to him.

PETER STEPHENS, SR. died in Frederick Co. Va. and his will is recorded there in Will Bk. 2 p. 266.

He left to his wife, MARIA CHRISTINA, his mansion house and 25 acres which was for her use in her lifetime and then was to go to his son, LEWIS.

To his son, LEWIS, he left 400 acres and £10 money.

To his eldest dau., MARIA CHRISTINA £10 (this may indicate he had no daus. by his previous marriage or marriages.)

To dau. MARIA MAGDALENA £10

To dau. MARGARET £ 10

To second son, LAWRENCE STEPHENS, the land, 225 acres which he deeded him in 1745 and £10.

To third son, PETER STEPHENS, JR. 200 a. and £10 (PETER JR. was born about 1732).

To fourth son, HENRY STEPHENS 300 a. and £10 (HENRY was born April 8, 1734)

This will was dated Dec. 6, 1756, and recorded April 28, 1757, and was witnessed by MARTIN GRIDER,

ANDREW OTT and JOSEPH CARROLL.

PETER STEPHENS made his wife and his two older sons, LEWIS and LAWRENCE STEPHENS, executors.

From this will we deduct that by wife or wives other than MARIA CHRISTINA, PETER had only the two sons. If there were daughters other than those named in the will, they were either deceased or had forfeited their place in their father's family by remaining with their mother's people.

The reason we question that there were only two children born to PETER between 1714 and 1730 is that the intervening 16 years was sufficient time, in that day, for the birth of half-dozen children in the average family. Unless, of course, PETER remained unmarried for an unusually long period after the death of his earlier wife or wives.

In his naturalization oath, LAWRENCE STEPHENS, stated that he came to Va. in 1740 and we know that LEWIS had friends in Salem Co. N.J. after he lived in Frederick. Both of these facts indicate that these two older sons of PETER may have been mature men before they arrived in Va. We have no definite knowledge that they accompanied their father and their new-step-mother to the Shenandoah in 1732.

Salem Co. N.J. is directly across the Delaware River from Chester Co. Pa. and in that county there lived about the proper time, a family which seemed to combine the possibility of LAWRENCE and LEWIS being family names of one wife of PETER.

On Feb. 1, 1710, DAVID LAWRENCE, a young unmarried man, son of DAVID SR. and his wife, ELINOR, made his will which was witnessed by DAVID LEWIS and HENRY LEWIS. It was customary in that era to have relatives and close friends testify to such important documents.

DAVID LAWRENCE left to his mother, ELINOR, the use of the plantation. To his bros., THOMAS, HENRY and WILLIAM various legacies. He mentions his sister ELINOR WILLIAMS and her children DANIEL and SARAH WILLIAMS. He also mentions a sister SARAH. 1710 would be a proper date for the future wife of PETER STEPHENS to have been a younger, unwed sister of this young man and SARAH was used as a favorite female name in early generation of this family.

There are also interesting Records in Sussex Co. N.J. which was made in 1753, from Morris Co. which was in turn, erected 1738, from Hunterdon while that county was organized 1692, from Somerset when it was only four years old, having been cut off in Middlesex an original Co. in 1688.

The most significant of these is a letter from Fort Cumberland written Dec. 6, 1756, by ADAM STEPHENS in which he mentions, Gov. DINWIDDIE of Va., LEWIS STEPHENS, eldest son of PETER, had a son, ADAM STEPHENS. The fact that he was discussing the Va. governor makes it likely that this was ADAM STEPHENS of Frederick Co. Va. and that he was serving in the French-Indian War. (p. 293 Printed Records of Sussex Co., N.J.)

Earlier, before Sussex was organized there was a JOHN STEVENS in this area in 1676 (p. 13) and in 1680 a HENRY H. STEPHENS.

In the Duke of York Records of land surveyed in Delaware, but which was later, declared to be in Chester Co. Pa. there is record of 700 acres surveyed July 9, 1675, for OLIE FRANSON and MARCUS (MARK) LAWRENCE and MIELE MULSON situated on the Western side of the Delaware River in a place called ye Bowght on a small cr. called Dagg Cr. (p. 34)

On April 24, 1676, a parcel of land was surveyed for HYBERT LAWRENS land for Mr. CASPER HERMEN, land on W. side of Delaware on St. Augustine Cr. (p. 75)

Some of the STEPHENS of early Montgomery Co. Pa. were originally EVANS, according to "Biographies and Annals of Montgomery Co. Pa." p. 447, "WILLIAM M. STEPHENS, one of the best known farmers of Upper Merion Township is a descendant of EVAN ap EVANS, original immigrant.

The children of STEPHEN EVANS and MARY DAVIS were ap STEPHENS but soon dropped the ap and became STEPHENS. The system by which the children took the first name of the father was Welch and was abandoned after a generation or two in America."

Of course, if we accept the statement of LAWRENCE STEPHENS which he made in his naturalization papers, that he came to Va. in 1740, and in 1747 had fulfilled the 7 year period of residence required for citizenship and that he was a German Protestant, these records are of no avail and it is possible that LAWRENCE may have lived in Germany with his paternal grandparents or relatives until he attained his majority.

Be that as it may, LAWRENCE spent his entire adult life as a citizen of Frederick Co. Va. However, that does not mean that he was limited to the confines of that co. as we are sometimes tempted to assume was a circumstance of the early settler.

We know that LAWRENCE was one of the witnesses to the will of DANIEL EVANS of Augusta county in 1752. In Augusta in 1749, he entered a suit to collect a debt from JAMES GORDON of Gwynned of Philadelphia Co. Pa.

There are no apparent clues as to the maiden name of the first wife of LAWRENCE STEPHENS, which is unfortunate because she was the mother of MARY STEPHENS, later wife of HENRY EARNEST. MARY had full brothers and sisters, JOHN, PETER, and SARAH STEPHENS.

PETER, of course was named for his grandfather, STEPHENS, and more than likely, JOHN for his maternal grandfather and these two daus. the first MARY, for her mother's mother while the second, SARAH was named for LAWRENCE'S mother. This is the German way of naming their first several children. It will be recalled that young

DAVID LAWRENCE of Chester Co. Pa. had an unmarried sister SARAH in 1710 as well as kinsmen DAVID and HENRY LEWIS.

LAWRENCE married second, about 1752, MARY BOWMAN, dau. of GEORGE BOWMAN and his wife, ANNA MARIE HITE. MARY was born Nov. 9, 1735, in Frederick Co. Va. and was the grand-daughter of JOST HITE.

The will of LAWRENCE STEPHENS recorded in Frederick Co. Va. will Bk. 4, p. 338, was dated, July 10, 1773, and recorded Nov. 5, 1776.

He mentions other lands, but directed that his original farm of 225 acres was to be left to his wife for the support of her children. He leaves £10 each to the children of his first marriage who were PETER, JOHN, MARY and SARAH. To the five sons of his second wife, he gave each £40 and the land which he had left to his wife after her decease. These sons, were, GEORGE WM., JACOB, ISAAC, JOSEPH LAWRENCE, and BRYAN MARTIN. He appointed his wife, MARY STEPHENS together with Col. JOHN HITE, DAVID BROWN and JOSEPH SMITH of Md. executors.

His will was witnessed by JOSEPH HOLMES, JOSEPH STEPHENS, JOHN EMMETT, ROBERT THROCK-MORTON, and ISAAC ZANE.

A series of Wills substantiate the division in the children of his two wives and prove that his sons prospered in material things and were blessed with many offsprings.

LAWRENCE died when he was probably 55 to 60 years old.

According to the information given by DAN. V. STEPHENS in his book "STEPHEN Family Geneaologies" an outline of the family of LAWRENCE STEPHENS, second son of PETER STEPHENS and a first and second wife would include:

LAWRENCE STEPHENS b. 1716-20 married (1) wife's name unknown; m. (2) probably 1752, MARY BOWMAN dau. of GEORGE BOWMAN and ANNA MARIA HITE b. Nov. 9, 1735, in Frederick Co. Va. granddau. of JOST HITE.

Issue of first marriage:

1. PETER STEPHENS b. 1740, never married died Dec. 1794 in Rockbridge Co. Va. his bro. JOHN acting as executor.
2. MARY STEPHENS b. 1742, d. 1838, m. 1755 to 1760 HENRY EARNEST b. 1732, d. March 6, 1809.
3. SARAH STEPHENS b. about 1744 m. ABRAHAM BOWMAN.
4. JOHN STEPHENS b. about 1748; died Mar. 17, 1819, in Preble Co. Ohio m. (2) Mar. 9, 1779 in Shenandoah Co. Va. JEANETTE VANCE had 12 sons.

Issue of 2nd marriage to MARY BOWMAN.

5. GEORGE WM. STEPHENS bachelor. Will d. Dec. 22, 1784, Recorded April 1789 in Lincoln Co. Va. later Ky. names his half bros. PETER and JOHN and half sisters MARY EARNEST and SARAH BOWMAN.
6. JACOB STEPHENS b. Sept. 2, 1759 in Shenandoah Co. Va.; Served in Rev. War. in Va. Militia; m. (1) April 10, 1784 ANN WARREN in Lincoln Co. Ky. m. (2) Dec. 2, 1820, ELIZABETH MERCER JAMES. JACOB died 1841. His 13 children were all by his first wife.
7. ISAAC STEPHENS b. about 1762; d. 1831 m. (1) May 12, 1788, MARY WRIGHT m. (2) about 1804 CATHERINE CUMAN BRIGGS of Nelson Co. Ky. Served in Rev. War, had 7 children by 1st wife.
8. JOSEPH LAWRENCE STEPHENS b. April 12, 1764 in Shenandoah Co. Va.; m. June 3, 1784 in same Co. NANCY SHACKELFORD, moved same year to Bourbon Co. Ky. m. (2) Jan. 12, 1792, LUCY GARRARD, niece of Gov. JAMES GERRARD of Ky. d. Feb. 14, 1848 at Rundells Mill Ky. Was a soldier of the Rev. Had 5 children by first wife and 14 by his second wife.
9. BRIAN MARTIN STEPHENS b. in 1767 in Shenandoah Co. Va.; d. July 19, 1847; m. in 1788 EMMA SIMMS b. 1771 in S. C. had 14 children.

JOHN STEPHENS, son of LAWRENCE, served as a Lt. in Capt. ROBERT DOAKES Co. of Militia in 1774 in Lord Dunmores War.

HENRY EARNEST and his wife, MARY, daughter of LAWRENCE STEPHENS' had been gone from Frederick Co. some years before her father's death in 1776.

On March 7, 1765, HENRY EARNEST of Frederick Co. conveyed to JOHN ORR for 5 shilling lot No. 45 in the town of Stevensburg which he had obtained May 2, 1755, from LEWIS STEPHEN said lot being part of a tract of 454 acres to LEWIS STEPHENS from PETER STEPHENS part of a greater tract of 674 granted by patent to the said PETER STEPHENS 3 Oct. 1734. Wits: JOHN ALLEN, DAN'L BUSH.

HENRY EARNEST is said to have left Frederick with his family in 1769. About 1771, his name appears on a tax list in Lincoln Co. N.C. At the time of LAWRENCE'S death they were in Washington or Sullivan Co. Tenn. We pick up land records concerning them in Green Co. Tenn. in 1784, and there, HENRY and his wife, MARY lived the remaining years of their lives.

The compilers oldest brother, T. S. SUTHERLAND III, once stated that JAMES STEPHEN HOGG, former governor of Texas, was related to the SUTHERLAND-ROGERS clan. If this be correct, it was probably through this STEPHENS family. A WILLIAM STEPHENS was in Madison Co. when the EVANS were living there in the first half of the 19th century. We believe that Governor HOGGS mother was the daughter of a STEPHENS of Cherokee Co. Texas.

CHAPTER VII

Part A

The PRIDE Family of Virginia and North Carolina

A marriage license registered in Morgan Co. Alabama supplied the last name of RUTH, the wife of JESSE EVANS, later of Texas, and further research there proved that her father was BURTON PRIDE.

The license for the marriage of RUTH PRIDE and JESSE EVANS was issued 12, Oct. 1824.

A brief outline of the early life of BURTON PRIDE, father of RUTH, wife of JESSE EVANS, was given by him in his application for a Rev. War Pension, which he filed in Morgan Co. Ala. on August 28, 1832. According to this document, he was born in 1758, in the state of Pa., and removed to Orange Co. N. C. when he was five years old.

He further stated, that he enlisted in Caswell Co. N.C. and that he entered the service of the United States on the first day of September 1776, and served a year until September 1777, under the command of Gen. McINTOSH, Col. HABERSHAM and Capt. HUNTLY. He entered the service for a second tour on the first of Oct. 1778, and served 6 months under General RUTHERFORD and Col. LOCKE.

This information should have made it easy to trace the parentage of BURTON PRIDE, but for a variety of reasons this did not prove to be the case. Pa. is a big state and no trace of PRIDES was to be found in any over-all listings until 1810, when the census shows one PRIDE male in the Pittsburg Area.

Still, PRIDE is not a common name. In the first census of the United States 1782-1790, which was reconstructed from the tax-lists, there were only 27 heads of families with the name PRIDE in the entire U.S. None of these were in Pa. Three lived in N.C. and 7 in Va. (A century of Population Growth)

The absence of PRIDES in Pa. in this first census is one of the reasons we doubt BURTON PRIDE was born in Pa. unless his parents were there temporarily.

In an effort to definitely establish the parentage of BURTON PRIDE, the records of 12 key counties in N.C., 18 in Va. and 12 in Tenn., were searched. We found PRIDES living in three counties of N.C., eight of Va. and four in Tenn. In some instances, these were the same people, living in the same location, but cut off in a new county when it was created.

This search for BURTON'S parents began in Orange Co. N.C. where, as he stated in his Pension Application, he had removed at the age of 5 years or in 1763. Reasoning that, at that tender age, he would have been living with his parents, the hunt for adult PRIDES began there.

There are no land grants, deeds, wills, marriages-no records of any kind in the name of PRIDE in Orange Co. N.C. However, in Caswell, made from Orange in 1776, and the county in which BURTON PRIDE (age 18) enlisted that same year, his marriage bond to SALLY BURWELL was recorded on Oct. 29, 1780, and there are land records involving THOMAS PRIDE, and a WOOLSEY PRIDE. These are the same family names that we find associated with BURTON in the records of East Tenn.

On Dec. 8, 1778, an application was entered by THOMAS PRIDE for a grant of 300 acres of land in Caswell Co. N.C., the land lying on the waters of Cooney Cr. and South Hyco. This grant was issued to PRIDE on Nov. 10, 1784, (Entry No. 351 Bk. 56 p. 90 Land Grants of N.C.)

THOMAS PRIDE had full possession of this tract for only 6 months before he sold May 1, 1785, to AARON VAN HOOKS of Caswell Co. for £135, this same tract of 300 a. lying on waters of Cooney Cr. and S. Hyco. The deed was witnessed by THOMAS DOUGLAS and H. HARALSON. (Deed Bk. E. p. 104)

More important, according to this deed, on May 1, 1785, THOMAS PRIDE, formerly of Caswell Co. N.C. was then of Botetourt Co. Va. This looked like a wonderful clue, but sadly and surprisingly, after intensive research there, we learned that this western Va. county is devoid of any PRIDE records, even as Orange Co. N.C. is and for the same reason, confusion about state boundries.

Not knowing whether this THOMAS PRIDE of Caswell was father or brother of BURTON, the search continued in all probably N.C. and Virginia counties adj. Caswell and Orange.

A closer search yielded another deed in Caswell Co. recorded in Deed Bk. B. p. 386 and Dated May 3, 1784. WOOLSEY PRIDE, in right of his wife, RACHEL, of Caswell Co. N.C. sold to JAMES ROBINSON of same co. for £ a tract of 263 acres on both sides Cane Crk. Wits: AL MURPHY, SUSANNAH VAUGHN, SHADRACK HUDSON.

Knowing that state boundries were not firmly established in the 1760, and even later and Caswell Co. being on the North Carolina-Va. state line, the search was continued across the boundary into Halifax and Pittsylvania Cos. Va. The latter yielded nothing but in Halifax we found that on 16 Sept. 1765, JOHN CASON of that Co. sold to THOS. PRIDE of same Co. for £6 a tract of 136 a. lying on both sides of Eans Cr. in Halifax Co. (Deed B. 6 p. 4 Halifax Co. Va.) This deed was dated just 2 years after BURTON'S date for removal to N.C. as given in the pension application.

Six years later on Jan. 10, 1771, THOMAS PRIDE of Halifax Co., Va. sold to JAMES HARPER for £20 a tract

of 130 acres in Halifax Co. on both sides of Eans Cr. part of a tract of 235 acres granted by deed to DAVID CALDWELL and he, on May 2, 1762, to JOHN CASON. Wits: JACOB MILLER, WM. EANS, MICAJAH WATKINS.

This THOMAS PRIDE owning land 1765 in a Va. county adjacent to Parsons Co. which was then part of Orange Co., N.C. was old enough to be the father of BURTON PRIDE b. 1758, and no doubt was. He was probably also the THOMAS PRIDE of Caswell in 1778. We assume so.

There was another PRIDE, WILLIAM, in Halifax Co., Va. who was living there when the first census of Va. was made in1785, which showed that he had, beside himself: 7 whites in his family, 1 building and 4 minor buildings on his property.

This evidently was not WM. PRIDE, JR. who left a will in this county dated 29 April 1790, and recorded Feb. 29, 1791, in Will Bk. 2 p. 432 at which time he was unmarried. To his father, WM. PRIDE, he left all the money which came to him from his Uncle FRANCIS PRIDE'S will. He names his mother, and his sister, MARY TOWNS PRIDE, his brothers, FRANCIS PRIDE, HALCOT PRIDE and JOHN PRIDE.

His father and his bro-in-law, SHIELDS BOOKER, were executors.

This will accounted with its 2 daus., 4 sons, husband and wife for the 8 persons in the family of WM. PRIDE of Halifax Co. in the first census.

This was not the family of BURTON PRIDE.

This WM. PRIDE, SR., married MARY TOWNS in Amelia Co., on Aug. 31, 1764, and when he bought his land in Halifax, 17 Sept. 1778, from PHILIP MANOR, he was identified as WM. PRIDE of Amelia Co. He continued buying land in Halifax Co. even after he begun to sell. There are in all 10 conveyances involving WM. PRIDE recorded in Halifax Co., the last of which was dated 24 Oct. 1791, and was signed by WM. and MARY PRIDE.

In one of these document, we learned, that they had lived in Halifax at an earlier date, probably shortly after their marriage, and had returned to Amelia Co. before 1778, for on 25 Jan. 1771, WM. PRIDE and MARY, his wife of Halifax Co. for £48 sold to PEACHY PRINDLE 100 acres in Halifax Co. on the branches of Difficult Cr. bounded by THOS. PALMER and JOSEPH MOOREHEAD. (He evidently moved back to Amelia and in 1778, returned to Halifax Co.) Witnesses: THOS. PRIDE, BAKER ROBERTS and EDWARD STUBBLEFIELD. (Registered 28 Feb. 1791).

There is no will or estate settlement for WM. PRIDE, SR. in Halifax Co. Va. or vicinity, so we do not know if he is the WILLIAM PRIDE who received a grant for 122 a. in Monangalia Co., Va., on Nov. 18, 1796, the WM. PRIDE of South Carolina, Greenville Co. Bk. C. deeds 1791-1794, or the WILLIAM PRIDE who appears in Tenn. about this same time.

We are, however, able to trace his ancestry to determine whether THOMAS, BURTON or WOOLSEY PRIDE of Halifax Co., Va. and Caswell Co., N.C. might be related to him.

It should be noted that THOMAS PRIDE witnessed WILLIAM and MARY PRIDE'S 1771 deed to PEACHY PRINDLE which was dated 25 Jan. 1771, while THOMAS PRIDE'S to JAMES HARPER in the same Co. was dated 10 Jan. 1771. Evidently, THOMAS had not as yet given possession or he remained in Halifax for a period of time after delivering the land to HARPER.

The PRIDE wills in Amelia Co. when compared with the will of WM. PRIDE, JR. of Halifax make it easy to place WM. SR. of Halifax in the family of JOHN PRIDE, SR. of Amelia Co. whose will was dated April 5, 1773. He mentions by name his wife, FRANCES: his sons, JOHN JR., FRANCIS, ROWLETTE and WILLIAM PRIDE, who is to keep a negro boy, ROGER, which he already has. He has daughters, SUSANNAH BOOKER, MARY PRIDE and MARTHA PRIDE. The will was witnessed by WM. POLES (or BOLES), MATT. ROBINSON, and JOHN PARKINSON.

FRANCIS PRIDE, son of JOHN and FRANCES, died in 1776. He left to each of his two sisters, MARY and MARTHA, £100, and his part of his father's estate. To his nephew, THOMAS PRIDE, the money his brother, ROWLETTE, was to give him. To his nephew, THOS. PRIDE BOOKER, his land in Buckingham Co., Nephew, JOHN PRIDE, son of JOHN JR., Nephew WM. PRIDE, son of WM., negro and residue of estate. Wits: JOHN C. COBB, WM. WATERS. This is the will of FRANCIS PRIDE, uncle of WM. PRIDE, JR., of Halifax Co. who left to his father, Wm., "the money left me by my uncle FRANCIS PRIDE'S will."

The will of ROWLETT PRIDE, son of JOHN PRIDE, SR. of Amelia was dated May 17, 1779, and was recorded in 1780. (Will Bk. 4, p. 9 of Amelia Co., Va.) His wife was ELIZABETH COLLINS PRIDE. He names his sons, FRANCIS, JOHN, and THOMAS, who is the THOMAS, nephew of FRANCIS of 1776 will. He also mentions a daughter, ELIZABETH W. PRIDE and decrees that minor children be educated. His wife, ELIZABETH, JOHN PRIDE, and JOHN ANDERSON, JR. extrs. Wits: HENRY ANDERSON, HENRY WALTHALL, J.B. WILSON.

The will of the other son, JOHN PRIDE, JR. (III) is recorded in Bk. 5, p. 110, Amelia Co. He left his entire estate to his children: JOHN, REBECCA and ANNE CARY PRIDE. Friends THOS. WATKINS, PINKERHAM DAVIS BOOKER, and ROBERT CAREY extrs., dated 1796.

In this county, Amelia, FRANCIS ANDERSON made his will in 1787, in which he stated: "To my daughter, ELIZABETH PRIDE the land she now lives on which is to go to my grandson, ANDERSON PRIDE, and if he dies to my grandau. ELIZABETH PRIDE." (This ANDERSON PRIDE seems young to have been brother of BURTON.) He names his son, FRANCIS, JR., and his daus: ANNE PAULINE, SARAH, FRANCES and ANNE ANDERSON, MARY

GOODE, ANGELINA MURFORD, EDITH BOOKER and ELIZ. PRIDE who was living in Amelia not Botetourt Co. Va. or vicinity. Could she have been the widow of ROWLETT with a young son not named in his father's will?

FRANCIS ANDERSON was the son of HENRY ANDERSON SR. who died in 1751, in Amelia. These ANDERSON came here from Henrico and Prince George Cos. Va. as did the PRIDES and BURTONS of this county.

FRANCIS ANDERSON, JR. son of FRANCIS of 1787 will in Amelia Co., died in Madison Co. Ala., the first county in Ala. in which BURTON PRIDE lived and the permanent home of WILLSEY PRIDE who was related to BURTON. As we have seen, Madison is adjacent to and preceeded Morgan Co. Ala., in which BURTON lived and died. ANDERSON left the bulk of his estate to his three children, WILLIAM C. ANDERSON, HARRIET PRIDE, wife of THOMAS PRIDE, and SALLEY WOOD (or WARD, wife of JOHN) who were living in Amelia Co., Va. He left his sorrel horse to SAMUEL H. EVANS. He appointed Capt. EDMUND EGGLESTON and Col. SAMUEL FORD of Amelia Co., Va. trustees to carry out part of his will which was dated and probated in 1824.

In spite of the fact of proximity here in Alabama and of Association in Halifax Co., Va. and the location of an ANDERSON PRIDE in Amelia County as well as in the family of BURTON, we have found no definite connecting link between THOMAS PRIDE of Halifax Co. Va. and Caswell, whom we can safely say was the father of BURTON PRIDE, and the PRIDES of Amelia Co. from whence WM. PRIDE of Halifax came.

While this was true, we found from the wills of FRANCIS and ROWLETTE PRIDE of Amelia, who were brothers of WILLIAM PRIDE of Halifax, that two of the nephews of the latter who were grandsons of JOHN PRIDE, SR. of Amelia carried the name THOMAS PRIDE. These were THOMAS PRIDE, son of ROWLETTE and THOMAS PRIDE BOOKER, son of SUSANNAH.

This encouraged a continued search for earlier records of THOMAS PRIDE, father of BURTON, and his parents.

JOHN PRIDE, SR. of Amelia, peer of the PRIDES of Amelia, was the earlier JOHN PRIDE, JR. of Henrico Co. In his will, he names his wife, FRANCES.

On April 7, 1746, JOHN and FRANCES PRIDE of Amelia, sold land in Henrico Co. and on Oct. 6, 1749, they sold property in Chesterfield Co. which had been organized from Henrico Co. earlier that year.

There are some discrepances, but perhaps the latter deed is for the 399 acres in Henrico Co. which was patented to JOHN PRIDE, JR., Jan.10, 1740, land adj. JOHN RUSSELL and Deep Creek (Pat. Bk. 19 p. 650) The deed in Chesterfield says 309 acres, but the numerical discrepancy could have been due to a mistake in copying. The other conveyance, dated April 7, 1746, and recorded in Deed Bk. 1744-1749, Henrico Co. is more rewarding.

In this, JOHN PRIDE of Amelia Co., Va. with the consent of his wife, FRANCES, sells to JOHN VEST of Dale Parish, Henrico Co. for the sum of 40 pounds, current money, a plantation or tract of land that he is now possessed with, lying in Henrico Co. on ye North side of Swift Cr. being the land formerly, by will, given by WM. PRIDE, deceased, to his son, JOHN PRIDE, deceased and by sd. JOHN given to the aforesaid JOHN PRIDE, his son (now of Amelia Co.) tract containing 313 acres and adjoining RANDOLPHS line to the head of Timsberry including the said 313 acres being all the land the said JOHN PRIDE, deceased, held and was possessed of lying on the south side of Timsberry Creek with all houses, orchards, etc. Witnessed by DAN'L NUNLEY, JOHN HILL, JAMES HILL.

This deed takes us back to the original land holdings by PRIDES in Va. for this 313 acres of land are part of a grant of 1278 acres to WM. PRIDE of Henrico in the year 1693, for the importation of 26 persons, including himself and his wife, JANE. However, WILLIAM PRIDE of the land grant, if this was the original emigrant, was not coming to Va. for the first time, for we do have earlier records an outline of which we will include here in order to help determine the place of various PRIDES in future references:

BENJ. PRIDE was imported to Va. 17, Mar. 1659, by WM. SMITH who received 300 a. in Isle of Wight Co. for the importation of 6 persons. "Cavaliers and Pioneers." p. 367

In the year 1668, WM. PRIDE I) made deposition in Surry Co. that he was thirty years old, (p. 216 "Colonial Surry" by Boddie) thus, WM. PRIDE I) was born 1638.

In 1677, WM. PRIDE I) or II of Henrico Co. had a disagreement with WM. BEVAN in an inn owned by JOHN and DOROTHY HOWARD (Court Minutes, Deeds and WillBk. 1677-1692 Henrico Co. Va. p. 10)*

In 1693, WM. PRIDE II) was granted 1278 acres in Henrico Co. for the importation of 26 persons including himself and his wife, JANE. The fact that WM. PRIDE and wife were immigrants to the colony in this year does not fully mean that they had not lived in Va. before, as we know, land was allowed for importation of persons as many times as they returned to the new land from the old. However, later records indicate that this WM. PRIDE of the grant had a son, WILLIAM, born not later than 1690, but not necessarily as early as 1670-1680, so we believe that WM. 1693, husband of JANE, was WILLIAM II) and that it was he who married, secondly, in Henrico Co., ANN HILL, widow in 1708.

WILLIAM II) also shows up in the 1704 Quit Rent Roll of Va. as the owner of the 1200 odd acres of this grant. As no other PRIDE appears in this early census, we are to assume that he was the only adult male PRIDE in Va. except perhaps in the Northern Neck of Va. which lay between the Rappahanock and Potomac Rivers and which was not included in the Quit Rent Roll.

By his wife, JANE, or earlier wives, we believe that WM. PRIDE II) who died in 1724, but whose will is missing from Henrico Records, had WILLIAM PRIDE III) of Henrico and Prince Geo Cos. Va., JOHN PRIDE I) of Henrico

*The record states that WILLIAM PRIDE was accompanied by his wife.

and daughters, ANN, JANE and MARY PRIDE and perhaps another son, HALCOTT PRIDE I).

On Oct. 9, 1708, a license was granted WM. PRIDE II) to marry ANN HILL, widow of JOHN HILL, in Henrico Co. (Page 69 Henrico Co. Records 1706-1709) With the loss of WILLIAM'S will and perhaps other pertinent Henrico Records, it is impossible for us to say whether WILLIAM II) had issue by ANN before his death in 1724. We do know that she had a grandson, JAMES HILL, who was of age in1746. JAMES was son of her son, JOHN HILL, who must have been born about 1700, and she around 1670-1680.

Some of our strongest reasons for believing that WM. PRIDE II) was not the man of that name who was born in 1638, or the WM. of Henrico who was married in 1677, is that he evidently had no sons who were of age and land owners in 1704, when the Quit Rent was taken. Then too, this WM. PRIDE II) and wife, JANE, of the 1693 land grant were spoken of as immigrants. While WM. PRIDE I) born 1638, would have been 70 years of age at the time WM. PRIDE married ANN HILL in 1708, if he was WM. PRIDE I). Not impossible, but improbable.

If this latter, WM. II) and his second wife, ANN, did have issue, it is possible that THOMAS PRIDE, the father of BURTON PRIDE, was their son. Perhaps this circumstance, being the younger son of an elderly man by a second marriage, could partly explain the comparative poverty of THOMAS and the other Va. PRIDES of this area whose wills we have examined.

JOHN PRIDE I) of Henrico Co. was born about 1685-1690, and died 1736-1746. He could have been the JOHN PRIDE Of Bristol Parish 1721-1729, who had son WM. PRIDE IV), born Dec. 19, 1721. WM. PRIDE, JR. son of JOHN PRIDE I) was of age in 1746, and so must have been born before 1725. Bristol Parish records are authority for the fact that JOHN PRIDE and his wife, SUSANNAH, not only had son WM. but another son, PUCKETT, born Sept. 11, 1729. Because of this name and because ELIZABETH PUCKETT, widow of JOHN, included a WM. PRIDE in her 1735 will, we believe that SUSANNAH, wife of JOHN PRIDE I) was ANNE the dau. of JOHN and ELIZABETH PUCKETT named in her father's will.*

When Dale Parish was created from Bristol, the land which WM. PRIDE II) patented in the latter parish in 1693, and the residence of JOHN PRIDE I) of Bristol 1721 and 1729, evidently fell in Dale Parish since both JOHN PRIDE I) and WILLIAM PRIDE III) are spoken of later as of Dale Parish.

"In 1736 JOHN PRIDE I) of Henrico was charged by JOHN NASH, sheriff, with 6 levevs on 1162 acres which was the county clerk's fee for WM. PRIDE'S deed to you which had mistakenly been charged to JOHN PRIDE, JR." WM. PRIDE II), father of JOHN PRIDE I), was deceased in 1724, so we assume that the deed referred to in this court record was from WM. III) to his brother, JOHN PRIDE I). This 1200 acres was the tract of that acreage which was patented to WM. PRIDE in Henrico in 1728, when he was granted a like amount in Prince George Co. on the south side of the Appomatox River. Perhaps WM. PRIDE III), who was probably the heir of his father, was making provision for his younger brother who received a smaller share of his father's estate.

This document indicates that JOHN PRIDE, JR. was of age in 1736, so he would have been born before 1715. He later became JOHN PRIDE, SR. of Amelia Co. and we have already extracted his will and also those of his sons in that Co. We also noted that two of his older grandsons carried the name THOMAS PRIDE as did also the father of BURTON PRIDE, who lived neighbors to JOHN PRIDE'S son, WILLIAM, in Halifax Co. Va.

JOHN PRIDE, SR., or I) of Henrico Co. had beside JOHN PRIDE, JR. of Henrico and Amelia, a son WILLIAM PRIDE, JR. who is so identified in a deed which is recorded in Henrico Co., Feb. 26, 1746, on p. 350 of Deed Bk. 1744-1748. It states that "WM. PRIDE, JR. and JAMES HILL both of Henrico Co. and Dale Parish deed to EDWARD HILL of the same Co. and Parish, 247 acres of land patented August 17, 1725, to JOHN PRIDE, father of the sd. WM. PRIDE, and given by will of sd. JOHN PRIDE, dec'd, one half to WM. PRIDE and one half to JOHN HILL, father of sd. JAMES HILL." These HILL signatures that appear here and in several other documents are of the descendants of ANN HILL, later PRIDE, second wife of WILLIAM PRIDE II.

The area around Petersburg, county seat of Prince Geo. County and Richmond, county seat of Henrico, is very populous today so it is indeed hard to realize that in 1742, before Chesterfield Co. was formed, wolves were a constant menace to the residents of that vicinity. To remedy the situation bounties were offered for wolves heads and THOMAS JEFFERSON and JOHN BURTON became especially proficient at bringing them down. Sometimes hunters became over zealous and in 1730, WM. BURTON and SAMUEL LIGON were fined for having "catched" an unmarked pig.

It was in 1749, that Chesterfield Co. was erected out of Henrico from a large part of her land which lay north of the Appomatox River.

WILLIAM PRIDE JR. who was the son of JOHN PRIDE I) of Henrico and in reality WM. PRIDE IV), was one of those whose property now fell in the new county.

There on Oct. 4, 1749, WM. PRIDE, JR. of Chesterfield County, made his will which was not probated until some years later for it is recorded in Will Bk. II p. 167.

In it, he left to his son, JOHN, all of his land in Amelia Co.

To his son, PETER, he left the plantation on which he then lived.

He mentions another child, but not by name, and the possibility of his wife being with child.

He made his wife, ELIZABETH PRIDE, Field Archer and JAMES HILL executors. Witnesses were ISHAM

*ELIZ. relick of JOHN PUCKETT was an ALLEN, probably dau. of TIMOTHY ALLEN. KENNON, BAUGH and WALTHALL are families early associated with PUCKETT and later with PRIDE. "PUCKETT Family tree" - Gee.

RANDOLPH, PARKER PRIDE; JAMES HILL.

Actually, we believe that this WM. PRIDE lived until 1761.

There is a deed recorded in Amelia Co. in D. Bk. 6 p. 145, and dated Feb. 22, 1756, in which WM. PRIDE of Chesterfield sold to ROBERT THOMPSON of Amelia for L275, a 400 a. tract adj. STEGAL and JOHN HERBERT. This deed was signed by both WILLIAM and ELIZABETH PRIDE and this land was evidently, the land which WILLIAM designated in his 1749 will, which was not in effect because, as yet, WILLIAM the legator, is still alive

In 1761, a bridge was built in Chesterfield Co. over the Appomatox River at Pocahontas, where the river was little wider than some nearby creeks.

WM. PRIDE with JOHN BOLLING, RICH EPPES, WM. KENNON, ROBERT BOLLING and others were trustees for its building. We feel that this was WM. JR., son of JOHN I) and SUSANNAH PUCKETT born Dec. 19, 1721.

The estate of WM. PRIDE, we beleive the same, was inventoried in Chesterfield Co., Oct. 17, 1761. In it, fourteen slaves are enumerated by name and among other things are listed: a parcel of books, 1 punch bowl, a sword, three pistols, three leather chairs, 1 gold ring, sundry European goods, a silk purse, a fountain pen, silver knee buckles and silver buttons, 1 black silk vest, silk and linen hankerchiefs, a Crimson eloth vest, etc.

The will of a THOMAS PRIDE was recorded in Chesterfield W. & D. Bk. III p. 264. It was dated June 22, 1779, and was witnessed by JESSE COGHILL, ALEX BAUGH, and WM. HORTON. He left his entire estate to his brother, JOHN PRIDE of Chesterfield Co. We believe he was either the unborn or unnamed son of WM. PRIDE of the 1749 will.

The will of JOHN PRIDE of the same Co. dated Nov. 26, 1795, is recorded in Chesterfield W.B. 4 Pt. 2, p. 606.

He left to his son, THOMAS PRIDE, the plantation on which he lived, to be divided with his other children, JOHN ALEX PRIDE, SALLY, ELIZABETH, PRISCILLA and SUSANNAH PRIDE, this plantation which was called Frogpen.

To son, PETER PRIDE and his heirs, my tract of land on N. side of Stanton R. in Charlotte Co., Va.

To sons, JAMES, PETER and JOHN, all my lands in Kentucky. Excts: JAMES PRIDE, CAPT. JESSE COGBILL (or COGHILL), HILL COGBILL.

Codicil: Frogpen Plantation including the lower part 600 acres, to my sons, JAMES PRIDE and JOHN PRIDE.

To son. PETER PRIDE, 120 acres adj. Capt. JOHN HILLS line. Wits: MARTHA DANCE, HILL COGBILL, RICHARD COVEINGTON, JR.

Knorrs "Chesterfield Marriages" include these PRIDE marriages:

PETER PRIDE m. MARY DANCE, 4 April 1772; PETER PRIDE m. REBECCA SMITH Aug. 6, 1795, Sur. JAMES PRIDE; JOHN A. PRIDE (probably JOHN ALEXANDER PRIDE) m. Feb. 16, 1814, MARTHA COVINGTON; W. WM. COVINGTON; On Oct. 23, 1815, THOMAS PRIDE m. MARY L. BURTON dau. of RICH BURTON.

According to a deed dated Feb. 25, 1801, and recorded in Charlotte Co., Va. D. Bk. 9 p. 120, PETER PRIDE of Chesterfield Co., Va. sold to THOS. FITZGERALD of Prince Geo. Co. for L80 a tract of land in Charlotte Co., containing 154 acres lying on the North side of the Stanton River as per a patent to THOMAS PRIDE, 10 July, 1767, and was sold by PRIDE to JOHN DABNEY and by DABNEY sold to MARCOS GIBBINS and by sd. GIBBINS conveyed to JOHN PRIDE and by the will of JOHN PRIDE bequeathed to his son the aforesaid PETER PRIDE sd. land adj. RANDLOPH'S line. Wits: ARCHER BAUGH, ANDREW BAUGH, SAML HART, FRANCES EPPES.

It will be remembered that the purpose of this search is to locate and place in a genealogical line, THOMAS PRIDE, the father of BURTON PRIDE, who was born in 1758. Here in the family of WM. PRIDE, JR. or IV, we find the name THOMAS being used as we found it used by the children of JOHN PRIDE of Amelia who was brother of WM. of Chesterfield. This WILLIAM and JOHN were the sons of JOHN PRIDE I) of Henrico Co. whose will is among the early wills of that Co. which are destroyed. Did JOHN PRIDE I) have a younger son, THOMAS, who dropped out of sight?

THOMAS PRIDE, unnamed and if unborn when the will of WM. PRIDE, JR. was written in 1749, and who died unmarried in 1779, was probably not old enough to have been the THOMAS PRIDE who received the patent of land in 1767. This is probably true of THOMAS PRIDE, son of ROWLETTE of Amelia, most of whose children were minors in 1779 and no son was named among his executors.

Is this the THOMAS PRIDE who was living in Halifax Co. Va. in 1765, and in Caswell Co. in 1778, the only PRIDE of that vicinity at that exact time and one whom we believe to have been the father of BURTON PRIDE b. 1758?

A new and unexplained PRIDE appeared as a witness to the will of WILLIAM PRIDE, JR., or IV on Oct. 4, 1749. This was PARKER PRIDE. The others were JAMES HILL and ISHAM RANDOLPH.

We have no connecting links between PRIDES and PARKERS, but WM. BURTON married MARY PARKER in Henrico Co. between Oct. 1688 and Oct. 1689.

After his father's death in 1724, JOHN PRIDE I) of Henrico Co. was active in taking out land patents in Henrico Co. On July 9, 1724, he received a patent for 400 acres in that Co. lying on the main branch of Swift Creek, north side and adj. JOHN PRIDE. (Pat. Bk. 12 of Va. p. 6) PRIDE was probably living at that time on the land, or part of it, which he had inherited from his father's 1278 acre grant which was also described as on Swift Cr. in the 1693 patent

to WM. PRIDE II.

On August 17, 1725, JOHN PRIDE received two more patents in Henrico Co. The first was for 328 acres and lay on the north side of the Appomatox River adj. JOHN PRIDE (Pat. Bk. 12 p. 315) The other was recorded on page 321 of the same book and was for 247 a. and lay in Henrico on the North side of Horspen Br. of Deep Creek.

This is the tract of land which JOHN PRIDE I) of Henrico left in his will jointly to his son WM. PRIDE JR. and his, JOHNS, step-brother, JOHN HILL. This will, like the 1724 will of WM. PRIDE II), is lost.

On the same date, August 17, 1725, for 40 shillings, a grant of 391 acres was made to ANNE, JANE and MARY PRIDE, who were evidently sisters and all of age though that may have been eighteen for girls. This land was in Henrico on North side of Appomatox River, as was another grant for 328 acres to JOHN PRIDE on the same date.

We believe, that JOHN PRIDE, SR. of Dale Parish, ANNE, JANE and MARY PRIDE and WM. PRIDE III), were all children of WM. PRIDE II) and his wife, JANE, of the 1693 grant and we know that at least four of them were of age in 1725. WM., their father died in 1724, the year before and evidently, JOHN PRIDE I), is looking out for the interests of his sisters in helping them obtain land of their own. They were all children of JANE or earlier wife.

Later on Mar. 13, 1735, WM. KENNON and HENRY WOODS sold to WM. PRIDE in Henrico Co., for £10, seventy acres on the south side of Swift Cr. They were impowered by the will of THOMAS JEFFERSON, dated 15 Mar. 1725/6, to sell certain lands, including this tract. Then on July 1, 1736, WM. PRIDE of Dale Parish sold to JOHN PRIDE of same Parish, 2 tracts, 211 acres in Swifts Creek, 111 acres purchased by PRIDE from HENRY RANDOLPH, 11 Mar. 1711. The other purchased of JAMES HILL, Jan. 1, 1724/25.

This places WILLIAM PRIDE III), brother of JOHN, definitely in the Parish with his brother and also shows that his neighbors were no other than THOMAS JEFFERSON, grandfather of the famous Virginian of that name, and HENRY of the illustrious family of RANDOLPH. It fixes WILLIAM'S birth at before 1690. It will be recalled that the 1278 acre grant to WM. PRIDE II) was adjacent to HENRY RANDOLPH.

It is possible that there also was a brother, HALCOTT. The HALCOTT name appears in the name of a son of ROWLETTE PRIDE, son of JOHN PRIDE, JR. or II), of Amelia Co. The records of Bristol Parish under date of Nov. 15, 1727, show that "HAULKEY" PRIDE was fined for gaming."

Under present conditions, HALCOTT PRIDE would have had to have been of age or at least 18 to have appeared before a regular court. Because of these HOLCOTTS of this connection, we believe he was the son of WM. PRIDE II), by his first wife, that her name was probably JANE HOLCOTT and that she and WILLIAM were married in England where her family continued to live. We know WM. and JANE came from England in 1693, and as yet no HOLCOTT records have been found in Virginia.

On Sept. 28, 1732, WM. GOOCH granted to WM. PRIDE of Henrico Co. 830 acres of new land on the south side of the Appomatox River. The patent was applied for in 1730, but was not issued until the second date. This 830 acres was in Prince George Co. in that part that fell in Amelia Co. when it was organized in 1734.

The patentee of this acreage was WILLIAM PRIDE III), his father, WM. PRIDE II, was dead and his nephew, WM. PRIDE, JR., son of JOHN I) PRIDE and SUSANNAH, was only 11 years of age.

It is true that this WILLIAM III), had patented land in Prince Geo. Co. in 1728, but there are many documents in Henrico which prove that he did not move his residence for almost twenty years.

We know that he still lived in Dale Parish north of the Appomatox in 1736, for in August of that year, JOHN TOWNS of Amelia Co. sold to WM. PRIDE of sd. Parish for 50 pounds, 151 acres in Henrico on both sides of Swift Creek adj. HENRY BOWMAN, ANN, wife of JOHN TOWNS, releases dower rights. Witnesses were JAMES AKIN, JR., RICHARD WELLS, WM. TOWNS and JOHN MAN. We will see that JOHN TOWNS and several of these witnesses were among those to whom WM. PRIDE sold the 830 acres (p. 88 Deed Bk. 1725-1737).

We believe that ANN, wife of JOHN TOWNS, was the former ANN PRIDE, joint owner in1725, with JANE and MARY PRIDE in a patent for 391 acres on N. side of Appomatox R. The other reason for this belief being that a HOLCOTT TOWNS appears in the other records of Amelia in the next generation.

On April 16, 1746, WM. PRIDE III), of Dale Parish was still residing there, for in his deed of that date in which he conveyed 417 a. on N. side of Appo. R. to WM. WALTHALL of same Parish, he specified that his family was to retain use of the landing place to load and unload goods, and of the fishing hole, to fish three days a week. (Deed Bk. 1744-1748 p. 149). Witnesses: WM. BASS, JOHN WALTHALL, FRANCIS WALTHALL.

Evidently, the 830 acre grant to WM. PRIDE on the south side of the Appomatox which fell in 1732, in Prince George Co. and in 1734, in Amelia was directly across the Appomatox River from his land in Dale Parish North of the River.

The first of the deeds in Amelia Co. which show the disposal of the grant which was filed for Sept. 28, 1730, and issued Sept. 28, 1732, for 830 acres lying South of Appomatox River in Prince George Co. to WM. PRIDE of Henrico, is recorded in Amelia Co. Feb. 23, 1735, in Deed Bk. I p. 26.

This deed verifies that for £25, WM. PRIDE of Henrico sold to JOHN TOWNS of Amelia Co., 100 a. in Amelia part of a tract of 830 a. patented to PRIDE, Sept. 28, 1730, adj. dividing line between sd. PRIDE and JAMES AKIN, Mircy Brance and Horsepen Branch. Wits: JOHN GREEN, WM. TOWNS, PETER RUSSELL, JNO. NASH.

The records of Caswell Co. N.C. show that there were BAUGHS, WALTHALLS and many BURTONS living in

that co. and area at the time THOMAS PRIDE, father of BURTON was there.

A deed WM. PRIDE of Henrico to JOHN MAN of Amelia is recorded in Deek Bk. 1, p. 23 and dated Mar. 12, 1735. It was for 103 acres part of the 830 patent to PRIDE on Mirey Branch and Horsepen Branch. Wits: WM. DODSON, THOS. BAUGH, JNO. TOWNS, RICHARD WELLS.

The third deed was dated Feb. 12, 1736; recorded in Amelia Co. Deed Bk. 1 p. 145, from WM. PRIDE of Amelia Co. to WM. ARCHER, JR. for L60-265 acres beginning at PRIDE'S upper eorner tree on S. side of Appomatox R., down river ¼ miles to line of RICHARD WELLS.

In Deed Bk. I page 24 of Amelia, dated June 11, 1736, (probably should be 1735), WM. PRIDE of Henrieo for the love and affection whieh he bears to his friend RICH WELLS and for L5 money - 100 acres in Co. of Amelia both sides of Horsepen Br. including the plantation where WELLS lives, to be laid off from JOHN MANN'S line to Horsepen being part of 830 a. to PRIDE.

It is likely that RICHARD WELLS, as well as JOHN TOWNS and perhaps JOHN MANN were either bros-in-law or sons-in-law of WILLIAM PRIDE III), since in many instances, in that era, the custom of referring to in-laws as "good friends" was practiced. Perhaps WM. PRIDE III), was heir to his father and as such inherited the lion's share of his father's land and in these deeds sells for a nominal sum lands he has patented in order to provide for his sisters. This was not an unusual proceedure by heirs of estates.

The last of the deeds from the 830 acre grant to WM. PRIDE III) was made to THOMAS WATKINS of Goochland Co. by WM. PRIDE of Henrico on Sept. 13, 1740, for 265 acres in Amelia Co. on the south side of Appomatox River adj. Col. WM. CANNON, JOHN TOWNS, RICH WELLS and WM. ARCHER. It was witnessed by SAMUEL WALKER, JOHN WATKINS, JOHN HILL and THOMAS RUSSELL.

We are becoming used to HILL referenees in PRIDE doeuments. Here we have two WATKINS and we are reminded that MAKAJAH WATKINS witnessed the deed of THOMAS PRIDE when he sold his land in Halifax Co. Va. in 1771.

WILLIAM PRIDE III Moves to Prinee George Co.

One of great difficultics of doing research is that so many of the old county records are fragmentary or entirely gone. This is especially true of Prince Geo. Co. Va. There are only bits of records left of those before the Civil War in that county and none are left of Dinwiddie Co. which was made from Prince George in 1752.

Some of the PRIDES including WILLIAM III), and HOLCOTT and perhaps PUCKETT, THOMAS and PARKER, who are missing from the Henrico Co. scene, moved to Prinee George Co. sometime between 1725-1745. This was a calamity for the searcher. We are, however, fortunate that part of Prince George was cut off in Amelia in 1734 and that records of that part are preserved inAmelia's rcords, from that date.

Without these missing but important wills, it is many times impossible to establish the names of the children in a family other than that of the eldest son who under English law was his father's heir and inherited the entire estate unless otherwise designated. Often, younger sons shared in the land but seldom daughters. As a result, when we are foreed to trace a lineage by land record many times we can only identify the eldest son.

We believe that this is true of the early PRIDE families when only one male is found in eaeh generation.

On June 13, 1728, WM. PRIDE III), of Henrieo Co. patented 1200 acres lying on the south side of the Appomatox River Henrico Co. beginning at a small spring braneh, running into the river by the Beaver's pond on Fighting Creek thense on either or both sides of the River for that quantity in Prince George Co. At that date, this could only be WM. PRIDE III), son of WILLIAM PRIDE II), and his wife JANE.

We have seen that in 1736, WM. PRIDE III), of Henrico Co. had sold the 1200 in Henrico to his brother JOHN I). There is no record of this transaction save JOHN PRIDE'S paying a levey for the transfer of the land to him.

On Sept. 28, 1732, WM. PRIDE of Henrico received a grant of 830 acres of land lying on the south side of the Appomatox River in the County of Prince George. This was also WM. PRIDE III), of Henrico as WM. PRIDE, JR. or IV, son of JOHN PRIDE I) was not born until 1721, and was only 11 years of age at this date.

This land immediately fell in Amelia and we have reviewed PRIDE'S disposal of it.

The 1200 acres which was granted to PRIDE in Prince Geo., at the same time he acquired that amount in Henrico which he sold his brother, JOHN, WM. PRIDE III) seems to have retained for himself. This was granted June 28, 1728, but for some years PRIDE maintained his residence on other land holdings in Henrico Co.

On April 16, 1746, WM. PRIDE of Dale, Parish Henrico Co. sold to WM. WALTHALL of same 417 acres in two tracts on the North side of the Appomatox River. Since PRIDE specified that he was to have continued use of the landing place on the river to load and unload goods and that his family was to be allowed to fish three days a week in the fishing hole, we have deducted that he lived very near-by perhaps just across the river in Prinee Geo. Co. and near the Amelia Co. line. This deed was witnessed by WM. BASS, JOHN WALTHALL, and FRANCIS WALTHALL and this is the last document recorded in Henrico Co. that concerns WM. PRIDE III. He now disappears into the lost records of Prince George Co. except as he occasionally emerges in records of other counties.

PRIDE had applied for the patent whieh he received in Prince George two years before the date of the transfer on June 13, 1728, or perhaps he had obtained land by deed there, record of which is destroyed.

On Feb. 8, 1727, WM. KENNON patented 1000 acres in Prince George adjoining the lands of WM. PRIDE on the south side of the River.

On this same date, a survey was made for 6000 acres in that county for WM. MAYO and the land was said to lay between the Appomatox River and Flatt Cr. adj. lands of ABRAHAM BURTON, JOSHUA STEPHENS and WM. PRIDE. (All of these patents are recorded in Vol. IV Executive Journal of the Council of Colonial Va.)

As early as 1719, a survey for 308 acres had been made in Prince Geo. for JAMES ANDERSON and in 1723, one for 480 a. to MATTHEW ANDERSON adjoining JAMES, while in the same year JOHN ANDERSON, patented 792 a. Then on Mar. 28, 1723/4, a survey was made for 1144 a. on the head branch of Koabler Cr. and Beaver Pond for Capt. HENRY ANDERSON. HENRY ANDERSON was grandfather of FRANCIS ANDERSON, JR. who died in Madison Co. Ala. in 1824, whose daughter married THOMAS PRIDE; and of FRANCIS' sister, ELIZABETH, who m. PRIDE and had son ANDERSON PRIDE in 1787.

In 1730, both ABRAHAM BURTON and WM. PRIDE III), owned land adj. to WM. KENNON. ABRAHAM BURTON lived on Anderson Rd. as did Widow BEVILLE and ABRAHAM BURTON, JR. married, here, MARY BEVILLE, her daughter.

This is then an ideal setting for the PRIDE-BURTON marriage for which we have been looking, but the wills of ABRAHAM BURTON, SR. and his wife, ANN, which are preserved in Amelia Co. mention only one daughter who married twice, but not to a PRIDE. Perhaps there were other daus. but they are not mentioned.

But as we shall see, these families had been neighbors in Henrico Co. before they moved to Prince Geo. and Amelia.

A deed recorded in Northampton Co. N.C. on Oct. 15, 1749 states that DAN HILL and LEWIS HILL of that county, conveyed to WM. PRIDE of Prince George Co. for £160, two tracts of land for 220 acres which was bequeathed to them by the will of their father, JOHN HILL. This land lay in Northampton Co. and they reserved the plot of ground whereon their father was buried, for use as a burying place.

Two years later, in 1751, EVAN RAGLAND of Granville Co. in the Province of N.C. sold land in Northampton Co. near the Rapids Roanoke on the north side of the Roanoke and Marrattocke Rivers for £115 to WM. PRIDE of Prince Geo. Co., Va.

Earlier by two years, on July 8, 1749, according to a deed recorded in Chesterfield Co. Deed Bk. I p. 19, WM. PRIDE of Prince George Co. sold to WM. SPRUELL of Chesterfield Dale Parish, 100 acres called "the Ward." As far as we know this was the last sale by WM. PRIDE III), of his holdings in what was formerly Henrico Co. AMY wife of WM. PRIDE was first examined.

As PRIDE was about 60 years old at this time, we do not know if AMY was his only wife or one of several.

We presume that WM. PRIDE of Prince George was cut off in Dinwiddie when it was organized in 1752, if, as we believe, the HOLLCOTT PRIDE of Dinwiddie Co. was made bond in Sussex Co. on Nov. 27, 1757, to marry MARY BRIGGS, dau. of Capt. HOWELL BRIGGS, was son of WM. PRIDE III).

We believe that he was because in his will HOLLCOTT mentions the land in N.C. left him by his father. This seems to be the land in Northampton Co. which WM. PRIDE III), purchases.

We presume that this was not the "HALKEY PRIDE" of the 1727 gaming incident who would at this date have been 50 years or older. The HOLCOTT PRIDE I), was probably brother of WM. III).

The will of HOLCOTT PRIDE is recorded in Sussex Co. Va. Oct. 20, 1774, seventeen years after his marriage to MARY BRIGGS; since she is not mentioned in the will, we presume that she is already deceased. (Will Bk. C. p. 138)

His children by the BRIGGS marriage were, of course all minors.

1. To his dau. LUCY PRIDE, he left a lot in Petersburg and his home where he lately lived in that city; the house, furniture, silver plate at Capt. HOWELL BRIGGS of Sussex and all I have in Petersburg, (long list), 9 negroes (by name and £1000 in money when she comes of age or marries.
2. To POLLY (or MARY) PRIDE, his second dau., he left similar lands, negroes and money.
3. To his son, HOLCOTT BRIGGS PRIDE, he left all his land not already or otherwise given. This included three lots and a tract of land at Petersburg given me by my father. Another lot given me by father and 2 lots (all in Petersburg) which I purchased of THOS. LOWE, also 4 acres there I purchased of WM. PRIDE.

Also a tract of land left me by my father in Mush Island in N.C. and another opposite there unto, also a tract in N.C. I purchased of JOHN VAUGHN, three, I purchased of WM. VAUGHN with slaves, stock, etc.

To Captain HOWELL BRIGGS, all land in Sussex Co., all rest of estate to son, HOLCOTT BRIGGS PRIDE.

Should children die or daus. produce no sons, then the estate shall be given to WILLIAM C. PRIDE, ELIZABETH TIMBERLAKE, and WINNIE PRIDE. He also provides that ELIZABETH TIMBERLAKE and her husband should continue to live on the place and supervise the children.

It is evident that WILLIAM C. PRIDE, ELIZABETH TIMBERLAKE, and WINNIE PRIDE are close relatives of HOLCOTT. They could be children of an earlier marriage on whom a settlement was formerly made or they are more probably his brother and sisters.

The bequest of his home and lots and acreage to each of his children in Petersburg the Countyseat is intersting in the light of bits of information concerning PRIDE holdings in that vicinity which are recorded in Historical

Magazines. One of these states that one reason for the selection of Petersburg as the site of Fort Henry was that the location was bountifully supplied with springs, one of which long known as Pride's Spring is situated on the eastern slope and is still used by the neighborhood (WM. and MARY Mag. Vol. III (2) page 3 - 1923).

The May 10, 1766, issue of the "Va. Gazett" carried a story of Pride Race Ground, near Petersburg, for a purse of £100. "Col. LEWIS BURWELL of Gloucester, H. H. JANUS won the first heat. Mr. THOMAS RANDOLPH who was second in the first heat won the second and third and it was judged the course was run swifter than ever before." Va. (Mag. of History Vol. 2 p. 303)

In 1789, we find HALCOTT BRIGGS PRIDE in Halifax Co. N.C. which County lay adjacent to Northampton Co. being separated from it by the Roanoke River.

In Halifax Co. on July 14, 1789, he received two grants one for 86 acres and the other for 597 acres. Later he obtained two grants in Northampton Co., one for 39 acres of island, water and rock registered 20 June, 1790, and issued 27 Nov.1793; the other for 85 a. 16 Jan.1795.

It doesn't seem possible that these PRIDES should have produced only one son in each generation, but the only one we hear of is of course the heir because he inherits the land.

In the case of HOLCOTT BRIGGS PRIDE, it was his son, EDWARD PRIDE who was of age when he received a grant for 160 a. in Wake Co. which was entered 15 June, 1802, and issued 31 Dec. 1803.

The 1790 census of that Co. showed EDWARD PRIDE of that Co. to have in his family 1 male over 16, five females and 14 slaves.

In Sampson Co. lived JOSIAH PRIDE with one male over 16 and two females.

According to North Carolina Marriage bonds p. 591, another EDWARD PRIDE married about 1778, ELIZABETH KEARNE, dau. of SHELTON KEARNE.

One EDWARD PRIDE of Wake Co. did not live long in that locality but moved in early day of Alabama to Franklin Co. where a community grew up which is called Prides Station. This property was originally in Franklin Co. where the early records were burned. It is now in Colbert Co. which was created from FRANKLIN in 1867, and only one county, Lawrence, lies between it and Morgan Co. which was the final seat of BURTON PRIDE. All of these cos. are in Northern Ala.

According to a descendant, EDWARD PRIDE of Pride Station moved from Wake Co. N.C. to Ala. The following is from his Bible Register:

EDWARD MITCHELL PRIDE m. Oct. 9, 1781, SALLY HIGH and their children were RUTH PRIDE, b.1783, ELIZABETH PRIDE b. 1785, SALLY PRIDE b. 1788, JOHN FLETCHER PRIDE b. 1791, NATHANIEL b. 1793. EDWARD MITCHELL, JR. b. 1797, WILLIAM PRIDE b. 1801, HALCOTT b. 1803, and THOMAS PRIDE.

This is the third instance in which we find the BURTON PRIDE line located near those of the known Va. family. In Halifax Co. Va. THOMAS PRIDE, father of BURTON lived near and was witness for a grantor deed for WILLIAM PRIDE, son of JOHN PRIDE II) of Amelia Co. Va.

In Madison Co. Ala., first Ala. home of BURTON PRIDE, FRANCIS ANDERSON, JR. of Amelia Co. Va., who had a sister, ELIZ. PRIDE left his 1824 will and now in Colbert Co. Ala., we find another PRIDE family whom we can trace to Henrico Co. Va., who have, among the sons of their family WM. PRIDE, THOMAS PRIDE and HALCOTT PRIDE.

BURTON PRIDE also had sons THOS. and WM. but not HALCOTT.

CHAPTER VII - Part B
PRIDE Neighbors, the BURTONS

Before we close this section on the PRIDES in Va. we should comment briefly on their neighbors, the BURTONS of Henrico, Prince George, Amelia, Chesterfield Cos. Va. and points west and south in the same state.

In the Quit Rent Roll of Va. taken in 1704, the following adult male BURTONS owned land in Henrico Co: ROBERT BURTON - 1350 a., WM. BURTON - 294 a., ISAAC BURTON - 100 a. No doubt there were others as we find in many instances that the Quit Rent Roll is incomplete. ISAAC BURTON was son of THOS. BURTON, decd. 1685 and his wife, SUSANNAH ALLEN.

The other known children of THOS. BURTON and SUSANNAH were:

1. THOMAS BURTON b. 1664, d. 1691 m. ELIZABETH later of Boston.
2. JOHN BURTON b. 166-; d. 1746; m. ELIZ. FOWLER.
3. ABRAHAM BURTON b. 1669; d. 1736; m. ANN FEATHERSTON dau. of CHARLES FEATHERSTON.
4. ANNE b. 1671 said to be an only dau., m. 8 Aug. 1693 BARTHOLEMEW STOVALL. Did she later m. – HILL and third m. 1708 WILLIAM PRIDE II? According to "Chronicles of Burton Family," ANNE had five children by STOVALL. We know of only one child which ANNE HILL had by HILL before her marriage to WILLIAM PRIDE, II) in 1708. Numerically, it is possible that she was ANNE BURTON and in the intervening 15 years, 1693-1708, was married to both STOVALL and HILL and had born six children.

BURTON estates that have been recorded in Henrico Co. are JOHN 1679 will, JOHN, JR. 1682 inv., THOMAS 1685 i. JOHN 1689 will, JOHN 1741 w., WM. 1751 w. JOHN 1784 w. MARTIN 1792. etc.

In Amelia Co., ABRAHAM'S 1736 will, ANN 1745 w., ABRAHAM, JR., 1758 w., JOHN, JR. 1763 w., JOHN 1776 w., SARAH 1781 w:

In Chesterfield Co., JOHN 1754 w., ELIZABETH 1757 w., BENJ. 1770 inventory, THOMAS 1771 w., etc., Brunswick Co., ABRAHAM 1750 w:

Prince Edward Co., SAMUEL 1799 w.:

Cumberland Co., - WM. 1749 will, WM. ALLEN 1767 will, SETH 1774, inv. and still others in Mecklenberg Co.

In 1683, JAMES BAUGH patented 119 a. on the North side of the Appomatox River in Henrico Co. adjacent ROBERT BURTON.

The will of JOHN BURTON of Dale Parish, Henrico Co.; dated Sept. 25, 1746, left to his son CALEB land adjacent to JAMES HILL. This recalls the marriage in 1708 of WM. PRIDE to ANN HILL, widow, and subsequent references to or associations between later PRIDES and JAMES, JOHN, DAN and LEWIS HILL.

This JOHN BURTON had daus. AGNES FARMER, ELIZABETH, SARAH, JOANNAH, and MARY BURTON who might or might not have become the wife of THOMAS PRIDE before the birth of his son BURTON in 1758, but as yet we find no record of the marriage of THOS. PRIDE, father of BURTON.

BURTON PRIDE'S first wife was SALLY (or SARAH) BURWELL of Caswell Co. N.C. and his four older daughters were named REBECCA, ELIZA. POLLY, ISABELLA, but since we do not know the exact order of their births we cannot apply the rule of second daughter named for father's mother as the German custom is.

In the Will of BENJ. BURTON of Henrico, dated about 1755, he mentions his land which is adjacent to Col. RANDOLPH. It will be remembered that the first PRIDE land in Henrico Co., the 1287 acres patented to WM. PRIDE in 1693, was adjacent to Mr. HENRY RANDOLPH. It is of interest that one of the PRIDES of Tenn. associated with BURTON was BENJ. PRIDE. This BENJ. BURTON named his sons, JOHN and JOSIAS and his wife, ELIZABETH but no daughters, but not necessarily because he had none. (of Henrico)

It is of interest to note that in May of 1746, ROBT BURTON of Henrico sold to WM. HOPKINS of same, five lots each containing ½ acre in a certain town called Richmond lately laid off below Shacoe Creek.

In the same month and ten years earlier, HENRY CLAY sold to ISIAH BURTON of Henrico Co., 600 a. in Dale Parish on S. side of James River, part of 17,635 acres.

There is a possibility that some small children of THOMAS BURTON JR. b. 1664 d. before 1691, went north with their mother, ELIZABETH who after BURTON'S death married JOHN BUCANON. This THOMAS BURTON, JR. was the son of THOMAS (I) and his wife, SUSANNAH ALLEN and there is a letter dated Nov. 9, 1691, in which the BUCANONS wrote from Boston inquiring for details of the death of her dear husband, Mr. THOMAS BURTON. The letter was addressed to Mrs. SUSANNAH BURTON, mother of the deceased THOS.

We have seen that on July 9, 1724, JOHN PRIDE received 400 a. in Henrico Co. on the main branch of Swifts Creek, north side of creek by patent and on July 1, 1736, WM. PRIDE sold to JOHN PRIDE 211 acres in 2 tracts on Swifts Creek one tract 111 ac. which he purchased of HENRY RANDOLPH in 1711, the other of JAMES HILL 1724/5.

A certain ABRAHAM BURTON, son of THOMAS and SUSANNAH and brother of THOS. JR. of the 1691 letter, lived first in Henrico Co., then in Prince George and like the PRIDES and ANDERSONS of Amelia, was cut off in that Co. in 1734. He made his will on May 13, 1735, and left to his son, CHARLES BURTON, his land on Swifts Creek in Henrico Co. 200 a. I purchased of Capt. THOMAS JEFFERSON. This is the CHARLES BURTON, later of Caswell Co. N.C.

ABRAHAM BURTON and his wife ANN FEATHERSTONE, also had:

1. ABRAHAM JR. d. 1758 m. MARY BEVILLE in Prince Geo. Co. Va.
2. CHARLES BURTON m. LOVEDAY FRANKLIN, d. in Caswell Co. N.C.
3. THOS. BURTON b. about 1699 went to live in Ga.
4. SUSANNAH BURTON m. twice but not to a PRIDE.

WM. PRIDE III of Henrico and then of Prince George, not only owned, during his residence in Henrico, the 211 acres he sold to his brother, JOHN PRIDE I, situated on Swift Creek but in 1735, he purchased from WM. KENNON and HENRY WOOD 70 a. in Henrico Co. on the south side of Swifts Creek they being impowered by the will of THOS. JEFFERSON dated 15 Mar. 1725/6.

So we find the early PRIDES and BURTONS living, in the same county, Henrico; and the same Parish Dale; and on the same Swift Creek with the same neighbors, the JEFFERSONS, HENRY RANDLOPH, JAMES HILL, etc.

ABRAHAM BURTON and WILLIAM PRIDE were also neighbors in Prince Geo, Co. and the sons of ABRAHAM BURTON lived in Amelia at the same time as the JOHN PRIDE II), family, one of whom, WILLIAM, lived in Halifax Co. Va. during the same period that THOMAS PRIDE lived there.

CHARLES BURTON, son of ABRAHAM, received in four different grants in 1779, and 80, a total of 1190 acres in Caswell Co., N.C. from which THOMAS PRIDE migrated to Botetourt Co. Va. in 1785.

And while we were unable to find any records of PRIDE in Orange Co., at the proper time, both JOHN

ANDERSON and RICHARD BURTON appear on the 1755 tax list of that county.

In Chesterfield Co. in 1754, JOHN BURTON b. 1666, son of THOMAS BURTON and SUSANNAH ALLEN and Brother of THOMAS, JR. of the 1691 letter and ABRAHAM BURTON, SR. of the 1735 will of Amelia, died at the age of 88. He and his wife, ELIZABETH, the former ELIZABETH FOWLER, had been married more than 60 years at that date. He names his sons:

1. WILLIAM BURTON (This WM. was too late to have been the one of that name who married MARY PARKER between 1688-1689)
2. ROBERT BURTON 1690-1730, 3. JOHN BURTON 1693-1749, 4. ISIAH BURTON m. OBEDIANCE and lived in Albamarle, 5. JAMES BURTON, m. JUDITH and died 1783 in Charlotte Co., 6. THOMAS BURTON 1702-1773, no further information concerning him. JOHN'S daus. in 1754 - were: 7. SARAH JACKSON, 8. ELIZABETH TURPIN, 9. PHOEBE JOHNSON, 10. SUSANNAH TANNER, 11. ANN BURTON, who later m. PAYNE, 12. and a daughter who married a SHEPARD.

Note that son, JAMES BURTON, died in 1783, in Charlotte Co. Va. We have already discussed, under PRIDES of Chesterfiled, that in 1801 PETER PRIDE, son of JOHN PRIDE of the above Co. sold a tract of 154 acres in the Charlotte Co. which had been conveyed 10 July 1767, to THOMAS PRIDE, but had been sold to JOHN DABNEY and by DABNEY to MARCUS GIBBONS, who sold to JOHN PRIDE father of PETER PRIDE.

We have voiced an opinion that THOMAS PRIDE who received the patent in 1767, may have been THOMAS, the father of BURTON, who was in Halifax Co. Va. 1765-1771 before he appeared in Caswell Co. N.C.

It is interesting and perhaps significant that ROWLETTE PRIDE, son of JOHN SR., of Amelia purchased 248 in Prince Edward Co., Va. from MICHAEL TURPIN of Charlotte Co. Among others who owned adjacent land was MATTHEW TURPIN. The date of this deed was April 20, 1772.

Six months later, on Nov. 18, 1772, ROWLETTE PRIDE of Nottoway Parish, Co. of Amelia sold to JOSEPH TANNER of the same Parish and Co. the 248 acres lying in Prince Edward Co. which county is adjacent to Charlotte and her parent county.

This has more significance when we recall that JOHN BURTON'S 1754 will named his daus. ELIZABETH TURPIN and SUSANNAH TANNER.

No definite information, but a strong reason to believe that JAMES BURTON'S brother-in-laws TURPIN and TANNER may have joined him in the Prince Edward-Charlotte Cos. area and that there were PRIDES who were interested in this area at the same time.

It seems evident, when we take into consideration all of these circumstances surrounding the BURTONS and PRIDE families of Va. from 1677 to 1785, that BURTON PRIDE, son of THOMAS of Halifax Co., Va. Caswell Co. N.C., and Botetourt Co. Va. was product of both the BURTON and PRIDE families which had their new world beginning in Henrico Co. Va.

BURTON was certainly mistaken about his family having lived more than briefly in Orange Co. N.C. if at all for there are absolutely no records of them there.

He was old in 1832, when he applied for his pension and his then wife, ELIZABETH, was not the wife of his youth, so BURTON had evidently forgotten and his wife probably never knew the details of his early life. We have therefore, discounted his statement that he was born in Pa., if indeed he so stated, feeling certain that if this were true, his parents were there only temporarily.

His own name BURTON PRIDE and the name of his son, THOS. B. PRIDE, and the locality from which they came to Tenn. certainly indicate that he was from the line of the PRIDES and BURTONS of early Henrico.

CHAPTER VII - Part C
Early PRIDES of Tennessee and Alabama

Having located, THOMAS PRIDE and WOOLSEY PRIDE in Caswell Co., N.C., and having found, there, BURTON PRIDE'S bond for his marriage to his wife, SALLY BURWELL, in the same county from which he enlisted in the Rev. War, we also picked up a clue as to the post-revolution migration of that particular PRIDE family.

The THOMAS PRIDE, who sold his 300 acre tract in Caswell Co. in 1785, had already established his residence in Botetourt Co. Va., before May 1, 1785, the date of his deed to AARON VAN HOOK of Caswell.

A year before, WOOLSEY PRIDE had sold the land, that came to him through his wife RACHEL, to JAMES ROBINSON.

There is no further mention of these PRIDES of this era in this county or in this vicinity of Va. or N.C., so we moved our search to Botetourt Co., Va. which is in the extreme western part of that state.

Our search was now focused on THOMAS PRIDE for two reasons - first because Botetourt was officially given as his residence, and because every indication pointed to his having been the father of BURTON PRIDE.

The search for him in Botetourt, however, was fruitless, there being no record of his ever having lived there.

However, in 1770, when Botetourt Co. was formed, it included all of Western Va. from the corner of Frederick and Rockbridge Cos. and territories which were later Southern Ill. most of Indiana and Ill., all of Ky. and the Southwestern corner of Wis. with the Miss. River as its western Boundary. A search into its' neighboring daughter

counties of Western Va. proved them to also be devoid of PRIDE documents.

Immediately across the Va. southern boundary from Botetourt was Sullivan Co. Tenn. founded 1779. From a history of that Co., we learned that previous to that date, it was supposed to have been in Va.; first as a part of Augusta, then Botetourt and finally Fincastle Cos. Official organization took place at the home of MOSES LOONEY, February 7, 1780. LOONYS were long time neighbors of the EVANS

Once again the search spilled over the Va.-N.C. state line, this time from Va. to N.C. in contrast to the Caswell Co. Halifax Co. Va. situation.

Sullivan Co. is probably the first location in which the EVANS family and the PRIDES became acquainted for we have already concluded that Sullivan is the first Co. in which the EVANS had residence in Tenn., probably the county in which NATHANIEL of the Southwest Territory lived after he left Botetourt in 1784.

The two or three deed books of Sullivan which survived an early fire in that county-seat, contain no reference to PRIDE in that county.

Sullivan Co. at least part of it, was made from Washington Co. which was formed in 1777, as the first county in the future state of Tenn. and in the beginning it covered the entire state. There are no PRIDE records in Washington Co. Tenn. files, that is of the early era.

Green was made in 1783, from Washington and Hawkins in 1786, from Sullivan, but they too yielded no information of PRIDE'S early residence there.

In 1791, at least six years after they left Caswell Co. N.C., we pick up the trail of these PRIDES in Knox Co. Tenn. which was erected from both Hawkins and Green Co. in that year.

From Knox Co. Court Records, we learn that BENJ. PRIDE was constable of that county in 1792, and that BURTON PRIDE was witness there on May 7, 1794, in a case JOHN FEE (or KEY) vs ANDREW PAUL administrator of the estate of JAMES PAUL dec'd. The PAULS were from Botetourt Co. Va. and in this same county 1799, one of them appears in the case in which a justice of Knox Co. was commissioned to go to Ky. to take the deposition of JOSEPH EVANS and others in the settlement of the estate of ISAAC TAYLOR II. WM. PRIDE also appears in Knox Co. records, so it became necessary to establish the relationship of BURTON to BENJAMINE and WILLIAM PRIDE, if possible. No definite conclusion could be reached, but we believe they were brothers.

In Green Co. a deed of conveyance, dated Dec. 12, 1812, BENJ. PRIDE of Rhoan Co. to ROBERTS revealed that between Nov. 6, 1786, and the former date, PRIDE had married RUTH TOOLE, widow of JOHN TOOLE, late of the Co. of Washington Co. N.C., but later of the Co. of Green Co. Tenn. (PRIDE married her before 1795)

This deed was witnessed by JOHN SEVIER and VALENTINE SEVIER, friends of NATHANIEL and JOSEPH EVANS of Tenn.

RUTH PRIDE, wife of BENJAMINE, is the RUTH PRIDE who lies buried in Blount Co., age 56 years at the time of her death Dec. 25, 1824. TOOLES are buried in the same plot.

BENJAMINE PRIDE received a grant for 80 1/3 acres in Blount Co. Tenn. June 13, 1809, before he lived in Rhoan Co., where he died 1821.

His estate was partitioned on Feb. 8, 1821, in the latter Co. His heirs were BENJ. PRIDE, JR., still a minor, whose guardian was THOMAS BROWN, SAMUEL PRIDE, ALLEN PRIDE and JOSEPH BYRD the husband of ANN PRIDE, his wife.

ANN PRIDE was born July 20, 1797, and married JOSEPH BYRD in Roane Co. May 6, 1816, with THOS. BROWN acting as BYRD'S bondsman.

JOSEPH was sheriff of Rhoane Co. for 8 years and ran a boat on the Tenn. River from Kingston, Tenn. to Huntsville, Ala. He and his wife, ANN PRIDE had 9 sons and 3 daus. Their sons were JESSE BYRD b. 1820, ROBERT KING BYRD, THOMAS BROWN BYRD, JAMES STANDIFER BYRD, WM. HARDIN BYRD, JOHN HAMILTON BYRD, GEO. GILLESPIE BYRD and JOSEPH BYRD, JR. (RAY'S Tenn. Cousins)

BENJAMINE PRIDE, JR. married CATHERINE WROE in Rhoane Co. Tenn. Sept. 19, 1836, and SAMUEL PRIDE became a prominent doctor of Blount Co. and died serving in that capacity in the Con. Army during the Civil War.

Jefferson Co. Tenn. was cut off from Green Co. in 1792, and we remember that JOSEPH, NATHANIEL and ANDREW EVANS were some of the Green Co. citizens who found themselves in the new Co. We have evidence that JOSEPH returned there before 1797, after a tour of duty in putting down Indian uprisings with his brother, NATHANIEL in the Tenn. Militia.

Jefferson Co. Court minutes Bk. 1 1792-1798 p. 52, records the fact that THOMAS PRIDE served on a jury in that Co. May 1794.

It is hard to account for the presence in Jefferson Co. of THOMAS PRIDE in 1794, when there is no evidence of land ownership of PRIDES in either Washington or Green Cos. including no land grants. Jefferson Co. adjoined Knox Co. before Sevier Co. was created from the former in 1794, and Blount from Knox in 1795. Both were large Cos. If THOMAS PRIDE, SR. was cut off in Seviere in 1794, and did not change his place of residence, all future records of him, including an estate settlement, would have been lost when the records in Sevier were burned at an early date.

A THOMAS PRIDE, who is listed in the 1830 census of Rutherford Co. Tenn. and who was 60-70 years old at that date, would have been born 1760-1770, and would fit into the family of THOMAS PRIDE, father of BURTON born 1758, as THOMAS PRIDE, JR. of that family.

When Blount Co. was cut from Knox in 1795, most of the PRIDES of Knox, at that date, became residents of Blount which had Sevier Co. as its eastern boundary. THOMAS PRIDE of Jefferson 1794, probably now of Sevier could have been a near neighbor of theirs.

The PRIDES, now, finally and briefly became land owners in the county of their residence.

On Dec. 29, 1808, THOMAS PRIDE received a grant in Blount Co. No. 395 for 202 acres (Bk. I. Tenn. Grants p. 344).

BENJ. PRIDE 80 1/3 a. No. 583 in Blount Co. (Bk. I. p. 571) BURTON PRIDE -619½ a. Blount Co. Sept. 28, 1809 (Bk. V. p. 689); July 29, 1812, a grant to WM. PRIDE in Blount Co. Grant No. 2435 for 130 a.

On Dec. 24, 1810, BURTON PRIDE'S deed to JOHN TARBET for 219 acres of land in Blount Co. was recorded. This land must have come to PRIDE, but no deed, or grant has been found to explain it.

BURTON PRIDE served on the jury in Blount Co. August 24, 1808. On Nov. 30, 1808, BURTON PRIDE and WM. PRIDE witnessed a deed, CAYWOOD to JAMES ANDERSON. On June 25, 1810, ISOM BLANKENSHIP was suing BURTON PRIDE and JOHN MONTGOMERY, his son-in-law. The court action included:

"On motion of the plaintiff and for reasons given in his affidavit, it is ordered that a commission issue to any two justices in Maddison Co. Miss. Territory to take the deposition of HENRY FERGUSON, DAVID LINDSAY, JOHN DENTON and THOS. LINDSEY. This was, in reality, Madison Co. Ala.

It was while living in Blount Co. in 1809, on the first Monday of March, that BURTON PRIDE was chosen to a jury for District Court which convened in Knoxville. GEORGE SUTHERLAND served from Anderson Co. on this same jury.

WOOLSEY PRIDE served on the Blount Co. jury in 1806, (p. 211 Blount Co. Court Order Bk. I) On Feb. 22, 1808, WILSEY PRIDE and DAVID THOMPSON proved a plot or survey (p. 263); same Bk. p. 263 WM. PRIDE and JOHN BURNETT proved an assignment of land from ED. BURNETT to BENJ. PRIDE.

WM. PRIDE on Jury 9/28/1814, and in the same month he was declared delinquent on his 130 a.

On Oct. 1, 1814, BURTON PRIDE was delinquent on his 619½ acres for the full time of his ownership. The owner being gone out of the county and there being no goods of his to attach, the court ordered the sale of the property.

Actually, BURTON PRIDE had been gone from Blount probably every since he sold his 219 acres on Dec. 25, 1810.

His daughter, RUTHA, wife of JESSE EVAN, in the 1850 census of Cherokee Co. Texas, where they then resided, said that she was 39 years old (born 1811) in Alabama. In the 1860 census of Jackson Co. Texas, she gave the same information saying she was born in Madison Co. Ala. and was then 49 years of age.

We have certainly found a congregation of PRIDES in Blount Co., BENJAMINE, BURTON, THOMAS, WILLIAM and WOOLSEY (WILSEY).

THOMAS seems to have been a better businessman. He was in a suite - THOMAS PRIDE vs. JAMES CURRY and was awarded $120. He also managed to sell the 202 acres which he received by grant on Dec. 29, 1808. He sold this land to JOHN STRAIN and his heirs for $600 on Feb. 29, 1809. Both THOMAS PRIDE and STRAIN are spoken of as of Blount Co.

In less than five years, or by 1815, the PRIDES had all disappeared from the scene in Blount Co. and in 1830, only SAMUEL PRIDE, son of BENJ. lived in that Co.

THOMAS PRIDE, father of BURTON, was born about 1730, so would have been eighty in 1810. We doubt that he migrated with his sons and grandsons to Ala. at that age, but believe that he died in Tenn., his last county of residence, as his first, being one of the counties which have lost their records, was probably Sevier Co. made from Jefferson in 1794, and lying cheek by jole to Blount where his sons lived. We will assume that BENJ., BURTON, WILLIAM, and THOMAS of early Blount were his sons. We believe that THOMAS PRIDE of Rutherford Co., who in 1830 was 60-70 years old, having been born 1760-1770, was the son of THOMAS, SR. and brother of BURTON PRIDE and moved there from Blount.

We have seen that BENJAMINE PRIDE married in Tenn., RUTH TOOLE, widow before 1795, and died leaving SAMUEL, ALLEN, BENJ. JR., and ANN PRIDE BYRD.

WOOLSEY (or WILSEY) THOMAS and WILLIAM PRIDE who appear on the scenes 1801-1810, could have been sons of BURTON by his first marriage to SALLY BURWELL in 1780, in Caswell Co. N.C. as far as indicated ages are concerned. Actually, a THOMAS and WILLIAM are named as sons in the division of his estate, but we have assumed that WILLIAM, named well down the list of 15 children was the son of BURTON'S second wife and near the age of the son-in-law JESSE EVANS who was born in 1803. THOMAS married 1813, was probably b. in late 1780's.

WILLIAM PRIDE, son of BURTON, married in Morgan Co. Ala., MALTILDA MILLWEE on Mar. 28, 1825, so we believe the WM. PRIDE of the 1812 grant in Blount Co. was a brother of BURTON as was THOMAS of Rutherford Co. Tenn.

WELSEY PRIDE of Madison Co. Ala. 40-50 years old in1830, could have been the WOOLSEY (WILSEY) PRIDE who first appears as a juror in 1806, in Blount Co. Tenn. in fact, the WOOLSEY-WILSEY PRIDE of that county could have been either WOOLSEY of Caswell or WILSEY of Madison, but was probably the later.

The first census of Madison Co. Ala. in 1816, included WILSEY PRIDE, but he was there by 1811. The early marriage records in that county also reflect the arrival of the PRIDES. Before 1815, Madison was the only county in the Miss. Territory so the marriages registered there up to that date probably included people who lived at some distance, perhaps even out of the later bounds of the state of Ala.

In Madison Co. the following certificates for marriage were issued on the stated dates:

THOMAS PRIDE and ANN GIBSON, June 1, 1813.

PEGGY PRIDE and JOHN BURLESON, Feb. 14, 1814.

SARAH PRIDE BRAND and HENRY EVANS, May 13, 1815.

JANE PRIDE and NATHANIEL EVANS, Jan. 29, 1818.

ELIZABETH MILWEE and BURTON PRIDE, Oct. 29, 1818.

This was the third marriage for BURTON PRIDE. This we know from his will in which he makes a provision for the children of his first two wives after having provided for his wife, ELIZABETH, and their three children. The rest of the marriages of BURTON'S children who married in Ala. are recorded in Morgan Co. to which he removed between 1820 and 1824.

WILSEY PRIDE received a grant for 75 acres in Morgan Co. Ala. in 1818, and a JOHN PRIDE, still not placed, was a member of a jury in Madison Co. Ala. Sept. 14, 1819, to mark out a road from the first Dam ford on Flint Cr. to McDonald's Ferry.

To have supported his large family in any fashion, BURTON PRIDE must have had another trade other than farming, for, as far as we know, he had been in Ala. twenty years before he owned land there.

In the 1830 census, WM. ANDERSON, BURTON PRIDE and JESSE EVANS were living side by side in Morgan Co. Ala.

At this time, JESSE EVANS had been married to PRIDE'S dau., RUTHA for several years, and we believe that the second wife of BURTON PRIDE was either daughter or sister of WM. ANDERSON. We found WILLIAM, JAMES and JOHN ANDERSONS in Blount Co. Tenn. where they were associated with the PRIDES. There are ANDERSONS of the same given names in Jefferson Co. Tenn. and in Morgan Co. Ala. In at least two instances we find the EVANS brothers, who married PRIDES daughters, in legal records concerning one or the other ANDERSON families.

In 1820, HENRY EVANS who had brought suit against his brother, NATHANIEL, for a debt of $1103 accepted $1 at the hands of JAMES ANDERSON, bondsman, stating he did not wish to persue the matter further.

Later, NATHANIEL and JESSE EVANS acted as executors of JOHN ANDERSON'S estate.

The strongest reason for believing that PRIDE'S second wife was an ANDERSON, is that his first son by her was WILLIAM PRIDE and his second was ANDERSON PRIDE. Also, according to the 1850 census and a 1833 orphan's court record in Morgan Co., PRIDE'S dau. SARAH and HENRY EVANS had a son WILLIAM ANDERSON EVANS.

On May 18, 1831, when he was past 70 years old, BURTON PRIDE acquired his first acreage in Morgan Co. the N.W. ¼ of section 15, Township 6 Range 3 West. This he left in his will to his wife ELIZABETH and her children.

On Sept. 7, 1832, BURTON PRIDE of Morgan Co. bought of WILLSEY PRIDE of Madison Co. Ala. for $200 a tract of 40 acres of land in Morgan Co. This deed was acknowledged by ELEANOR PRIDE, wife of WILLSEY and was witnessed by NATHANIEL EVANS and JOHN SHARP.

On August 24, 1833, WILLSEY PRIDE and wife, ELEANOR, sold another tract of 40 acres to BURTON PRIDE for $240. These two 40 acre tracts, totaling 80 acres, probably comprised the 75 acre grant that WILLSEY PRIDE obtained in Morgan Co. in 1818.

In August of 1832, on the 28 day, BURTON PRIDE of Morgan Co., personally appeared in Court and made oath that he was a Rev. War Soldier and applied for a pension under the Pension Act. of 1830. A certificate of Pension was issued 2 July, 1833, and at the first session of the 1833-34 Congress, payment was made to date to BURTON PRIDE from Mar. 4, 1831. He received $150 at $60 yearly. Perhaps he had to wait for his pension before he could afford to farm!!

We introduced this chapter with the statements of BURTON PRIDE which he made in his pension application concerning his early life. We have referred to them several times in the course of this PRIDE Chapter, and were unable to prove any of them true except the fact that he enlisted in Caswell Co. and lived in East Tenn. at an early date. In fact, from the skimpy records which we find in those several counties from Sullivan to Blount, it seems he must have pretty well covered East Tenn.

The certificate of BURTON PRIDES death was issued in Morgan Co. as of May 26, 1835, no doubt as part of the conditions of the Pension plan since there were no over-all vital statistics at that date, certainly not in Alabama.

His will was made the 11 May 1835, and was written by JOHN MILLWEE, son of her former marriage of his surviving wife, ELIZABETH. MILLWEE further took oath that with PRIDES knowledge and consent he did affix the name of BURTON PRIDE to his will.

To his wife, ELIZABETH and to her children, he left the land patented in 1831, a quarter section on which he lived which adjoined the field of ANDERSON PRIDE. He names his three children by his third and last wife as

HENRY C. PRIDE, NANCY A. PRIDE, and ELIZABETH H. PRIDE.

In addition to the land, they were to have all household and kitchen furnishings, farm equipment-named in detail, her choice of ½ stock and the feed on the farm for them and a bay saddle horse named John and her side saddle. She was to have all the fowls on the place, five bee stands and four sheep, by choice, also one iron wedge and two blind-bridles, my long chains, my drawing knife and augers which I bequeath to my son, HENRY C. PRIDE.

"To the children of my first two wives, I bequeath 40 acres of land and its appertainences and benefits to be sold at public auction and the money to be equally divided among them. The remaining part of my estate to be divided among the children of my first two wives after all my just debts are paid."

WM. PRIDE and JESSE EVANS were named as his executors.

The final settlement of BURTON PRIDE'S estate was made in 1838, day and month not filled out in records.

State of Ala., Morgan Co. - Came WILLIAM PRIDE and JESSE EVANS, executors of BURTON PRIDE deceased and offer final settlement. It appears to the satisfaction of the court that there remains in the hands of said executors the sum of $962.50 to be distributed between JOHN KING in right of his wife, REBECCA KING, etc.

To each of his twelve children, by his first and second wives, the court awarded $80.20.

The family of BURTON PRIDE and his three wives is summarized below. We know that he married first in Caswell Co. Oct. 29, 1780, SALLY BURWELL, and that he married, third, in Madison Co. Ala. Oct. 5, 1820, ELIZABETH HOUSTON MILLWEE.

We would again venture the opinion that, his second wife was NANCY ANDERSON, daughter of WILLIAM ANDERSON and that in spite of the fact that PRIDE had many daughters there was none who bore her name. In that day it was not unusual if a wife or husband had no heir bearing their name, that a succeeding spouse produced an heir to whom this name was given. In fact this practice is Biblical for male heirs.

The first daughter of BURTON and his third wife, ELIZABETH, was NANCY A., and the NANCY C. shown in the 1850 census as first dau. of JESSE and RUTH PRIDE EVANS was probably NANCY A. written with an open-mounth "A" that looked like a "C". We have already seen that both BURTON PRIDE and his dau. SARAH, wife of HENRY EVANS' had sons who carried the full name of WILLIAM ANDERSON who was next-door neighbor of both PRIDE and his son-in-law, JESSE EVANS, according to the 1830 census of Morgan Co. Ala.

BURTON'S children of his first two wives as named in the division of his estate in 1838 were:

1. REBECCA PRIDE m. JOHN KING, June 11, 1800, Blount Co.
2. ELIZA PRIDE m. MOSES TERRY
3. POLLY PRIDE m. JOHN MONTGOMERY
4. THOMAS PRIDE m. (1) June 2, 1813, in Madison Co. ANN GIBSON, m. (2) in Morgan Aug. 15, 1825, REBECCA SANDERS.
5. ISABELLA PRIDE m. JOSEPH WADE.
6. PEGGY PRIDE m. Feb. 14, 1814, JOHN BURLESON.
7. JANE PRIDE m. NATHANIEL EVANS, Jan. 29, 1818, in Madison Co. Ala. JANE PRIDE EVANS died between the date of BURTONS 1835 will and the final settlement in 1838. Her portion was given to NATHANIEL for the use of her children.
8. SARAH PRIDE BRAND m. (1) JOHN BRAND; m. (2) HENRY EVANS in 1815. (who died 1831).
9. WILLIAM PRIDE m. March 28, 1825 ,MATILDA MILLWEE in Morgan Co. Ala. WILLIAM PRIDE was one of the heads in family whom GEO. SUTHERLAND contracted to bring to Texas in Feb. 1830, but for some reason he could not come. His family did come later after his death. In the 1850 census of Lamar Co. Texas, his widow, MATILDA PRIDE, 42, is shown as the head of the family. Her children all born in Ala. were: JOHN B. PRIDE farmer 22, WESLEY (WILSEY?) 13, WILLIAM M. 20 farmer, JACKSON 10, and MARTHA F. 8. Also CARSON PRIDE, 25. According to a descendant JOHN PRIDE, son of WILLIAM, m. ELLEN McDONALD and died young leaving three children: JACKSON, MELINDA and SARAH ELIZ. PRIDE.
10. ANDERSON PRIDE m. Feb. 18, 1830, LOUISA ANN SKIDMORE in Morgan Co. Ala., ANDERSON PRIDE also came to Texas.
11. RUTHA PRIDE m. Oct. 14, 1824, JESSE EVANS in Morgan Co. Ala. They moved to Texas between 1840 and 45, living first in Cherokee and then in Jackson Co. where they are thought to have died between 1860 and 70.
12. ALFRED PRIDE m. Sept. 11, 1832, EVALINE C. BRADLEY in Morgan Co. Ala.

The children of BURTON PRIDE'S marriage to ELIZABETH MILWEE.

13. HENRY CARTER PRIDE m. June 13, 1850 in Sevier Co. Ark., HARRIET D. R. LOCKE; m. (2) 13 June 1858, MARY E. SMITH in the Same Co.
14. NANCY A. PRIDE probably m. CLIFTON.
15. ELIZABETH PRIDE m. in Sevier Co. Ark. Feb. 17, 1848, I. N. Jackson.

It is impossible to ignore the recurring use of CARSON and JACKSON as given names among the descendants of BURTON PRIDE and his second wife. Perhaps the relationship is through the ANDERSON connection.

WILSEY PRIDE of Madison Co. Ala. may have, also, been a son of BURTON PRIDE by his first marriage and have declined a part in the final settlement of his estate. THOMAS PRIDE was omitted from the statement of the executors, but was included in the division of money, receiving a like share with the other children of the first two wives.

Both WILSEY and THOMAS PRIDE are shown in the 1850 census as being 40 to 50 years of age which means they were born 1780-1790, or during the first 10 years of BURTON PRIDE'S married life. They were both probably sons of his first wife, SALLY. THOMAS is named fourth in the list of those receiving a portion of BURTON'S estate. We believe WILSEY was older.

The will of WILSEY PRIDE was proven in Madison Co. Ala. April 14, 1849. It is dated Dec. 14, 1848. When he sold property in Morgan Co. to BURTON PRIDE in 1832 and 1833, his wife was ELEANOR. By her he had four children whom he named as executors of his will. They were WILLIAM G. PRIDE, JAMES H. PRIDE, BURTON T. PRIDE and JOHN MAXWELL, his son-in-law, husband of his dau., MARGARET. He had provided for them out of his estate before his death. His issue by ELEANOR was:

1. JAMES H. PRIDE m. 12-15-1847 AMANDA BUTLER.
2. WILLIAM G. PRIDE m. 11-22-1834 in Madison Co. ELLEN J. GRAY.
3. BURTON T. PRIDE.
4. MARGARET A. PRIDE m. JOHN MAXWELL in Madison Co. Dec. 1, 1835.

WILSEYS children by his second wife, REBECCA W. PRIDE, to whom he left land and slaves were:

5. MARY JANE PRIDE
6. ALEXANDER W. PRIDE.
7. MARTHA W. PRIDE.

The last two were evidently named for his wife's parents.

WILSEY and THOMAS PRIDE b. 1780-1790, were named, evidently, for THOMAS PRIDE, father of BURTON, and for his brother, WOOLSEY, of the 1784 deed in Caswell Co. N.C. or perhaps for his mother's father for whom his brother, WOOLSEY was named.

If this be true, this brings up the possibility that the name BURTON bestowed as a given name to BURTON PRIDE in 1758, came into the family through THOMAS PRIDE, his father, whose mother was supposedly a Miss BURTON, daughter, perhaps, of THOMAS BURTON which name she gave to her son born about 1730. BURTON PRIDE then would have been named for his father as was also his son, THOMAS B. PRIDE of Morgan and his grandson, BURTON T. PRIDE, son of WILSEY PRIDE of Madison Co. Ala.

If the mother of THOMAS PRIDE, born about 1730, was a Miss BURTON, she would have been born, probably 1700-1710, and her father, THOMAS BURTON, 1675-1680, according to where she came in his family, which, according to the custom of that day, were usually large unless one of the parties were deceased early.

There is no THOMAS BURTON family in Henrico Co. into which she would fit if we go by these strict estimates of age.

THOMAS BURTON I, who married SUSANNAH ALLEN, was born 1634, d. 1685, left inventory in Henrico Co.

His son THOMAS BURTON II), b. 1664, d. 1691 at 27 years of age left a widow, ELIZABETH, who shortly married JOHN BUCANON and the two wrote to THOS' mother, Mrs. SUSANNAH BURTON, from Boston Nov. 9, 1691, asking for certain information on the death of her former husband, THOS. BURTON.

Beside THOMAS BURTON II), THOMAS I), and SUSANNAH ALLEN had sons ISAAC, ABRAHAM and JOHN and a daughter ANN who m. 1693, BARTHOLEMER STOVAL.

THOMAS BURTON III), son of JOHN of Henrico, is said to have been born 1703 and died in Chesterfield in 1771. If these dates are correct, he was too young to have been grandfather of THOMAS PRIDE, father of BURTON and he mentions no daughters in his will.

It is the family of ABRAHAM BURTON 1669-1736, which geographically has been found to be closest to the PRIDE Family of Va. and N.C.

His son, THOMAS, born 1690-95, married and is said to have died in Amelia in 1763. A chart in "Burton Chronicles" is authority for the statement that he had THOMAS, CHARLES, and SUSAN BURTON. No will of THOMAS BURTON is registered for that date in Amelia Co. Va.

A THOMAS BURTON migrated to Georgia and was granted a deed in Elbert Co. Ga. Dec. 19, 1766, Bk. 9 p. 195.

Because of the marriage of THOMAS BURTON I) to SUSANNAH ALLEN, ANN and SUSAN are favorite names among their descendants, in fact, they are almost unanimously used if there is even one daughter.

ANN HILL, widow, married WM. PRIDE III in 1708. He died in 1724. Did they have sons born during that 13 years? more than likely they did.

Was ANN another of the BURTON daughters named for SUSANNAH ALLEN BURTON? She could have been. She probably married HILL about 1700. By advancing the birth of THOMAS PRIDE, father of BURTON, from 1730 to 1718 it would make him 40 years of age at the time BURTON was born. Not all sons are born to their fathers between ages 25 and 30. The last date we have of THOS. whom we believe may have been BURTON'S father was when he served on the jury in Jefferson Co. Tenn. 1794, at which time he could have been 76 if born 1718. He could have been born as late as 1724, and have been only 70 years at that date.

Of course, the THOMAS who moved to Botetourt Co. Va. in 1785, from Caswell Co., as well as the one in Jefferson Co. Tenn. could have been BURTONS brother, THOMAS, rather than his father. But the THOMAS PRIDE who owned land in Halifax Co. Va. 1765 could only have been his father.

It is not impossible that THOMAS PRIDE, father of BURTON b. 1758, was son of WILLIAM PRIDE II and ANN HILL. Was ANN HILL, daughter of THOMAS I and SUSANNAH? We have seen that, date-wise, she could have m. both STOVALL and HILL and then WILLIAM PRIDE (either II or III) in 1708.

The name WILSEY is no doubt a corruption of the name WOOLSEY. We found it first as WOOLSEY in the records of Caswell Co. N.C., as both WOOLSEY and WILSEY in Knox Co. Tenn., and as a firm WILSEY in Madison Co. Ala.

In our search on BURTON and PRIDE, we have constantly watched for the name WILSEY as both given and family name and not once have we found it used as either, except WILSEY PRIDE of Madison Co.

In fact, there are few WOOLSEYS in Va. in the period in which we have researched on this line.

Geographically, the nearest WOOLSEY, we found to the residence of THOMAS PRIDE in Halifax Co. Va. and Caswell Co. N.C. were two WOOLSEYS in Brunswick Co. Va. from whence it is possible THOMAS PRIDE himself came. Brunswick was created from Prince George, Isle of Wight and Surry Cos. and we have seen that WILLIAM and HALCOTT PRIDE purchased property in or lived in that part of Prince George which did not become Amelia in 1734, and their records are therefore, lost. It is possible, but hardly probably, that WILLIAM PRIDE had only one son, his heir, HALCOTT PRIDE, and it is probably that other PRIDES, one or several, resided in Prince George having obtained land there by deed rather than grant in which case all record of residence or ownership would have been destroyed with the county records.

The WOOLSEYS in Brunswick were JACOB who on May 5, 1764, bought 67 acres of land from THOMAS GRAYHAM for L10. This land begun at Wm. Towns corner and was adj. Josiah and Wm. Randall. Randall was often used for Randolph in old records. (p. 212 Brunswick Co. Va. W. & E. Bk. 3).

Remember the Towns and Randolphs who were neighbors of WM. PRIDE II) and III) on Swift Creek in Henrico?

There is also, in Brunswick. a will of JOHN WOOLSEY probated in 1782. (W. & D. Bk. 3 p. 212).

The will of THOMAS WASSLEY (WOOLSEY) of Norfolk Co. Va. was proved in that Co. Aug. 15, 1712, (Bk. 9 p. 195) He had daus. MARY CHERRY, ANN and MAUDEEN.

In a similar document about 1710, ELIZABETH CALLOWAY of Norfolk Co. mentions her son, THOS. BURTON. (Bk. 9 p. 86 Norfolk Co. Records)

Norfolk Co. Va. has always been the shipping center of Va. as it is the Naval center of the U.S. today. Ships left its harbors for Boston, Philadelphia, New York and for England and the West Indies.

The letter from Boston, to Mrs. SUSANNAH BURTON in 1691, from ELIZABETH former wife of THOMAS BURTON, JR., could indicate that ELIZABETH'S second husband, JOHN BUCANON, was ship-owner, officer or seaman.

It is not impossible that ELIZABETH CALLOWAY of Norfolk 1710, who mentions her son, THOMAS BURTON, was the former widow of both THOMAS BURTON, JR. and JOHN BUCANON.

Later, about the time THOMAS and BURTON PRIDE moved to that area, there were WOOLSEY records in Washington Co. Va., where the will of THOMAS WOOLSEY was probated in1794. In Green Co. Tenn., before 1818, there were 25 WOOLSEY marriages. EVANS but not PRIDE, we have found in Green.

According to Mrs. HUBBS, a genealogist of Greenville, Tenn., the WOOLSEYS of that Co. are related to those of Washington Co., Va. having come to Green Co. from there. They were Baptists and descended from GEO. WOOLSEY who migrated to New York in 1634.

Although the PRIDES were, for their full residence in Tenn. in the general vicinity of the WOOLSEYS of that area, there are no records to indicate that they were even acquainted.

Mrs. HUBBS indicates that other WOOLSEYS of Va. were also descendants of George of New York and so

were related to those of Green Co. Tenn., but she was not specific.

It is a disappointment, not to be able to produce a document which proves conclusively the parentage of BURTON PRIDE. However, the compiler is certain in her own mind, that he is descended from the first THOMAS BURTON as well as the first WILLIAM PRIDE of Henrico Co. Va. and, as has been pointed out, the most likely place for THOMAS PRIDE, of Halifax Co. to have suddenly emerged from would have been Prince George Co. and the most opportunt occasion for courting would have been afforded by the proximity of the holdings of WILLIAM PRIDE II and THOMAS BURTON I or WILLIAM PRIDE III and ABRAHAM BURTON, the former two in Henrico Co. Va. and the latter two in Prince George Co. which has lost its records.

Every indication is that THOMAS PRIDE of Halifax, Co. Va., Caswell Co., N.C., Botetourt Co. Va. and finally of Sevier Co. Tenn., was the father of BURTON PRIDE and also of WOOLSEY, THOMAS, WILLIAM and perhaps also of BENJAMINE PRIDE, all of Blount Co. Tenn.

Later generations of the descendants of BURTON PRIDE may be found in "EVANS of Ala. and Texas," and also in "SUTHERLAND" and "ROGERS" Chapters.

CHAPTER VIII

MORTON - WOODSON - MICHEAUX

GENERATIONS

I. JOHN WOODSON and his wife, SARAH, who came to Virginia in 1619 from Dorsetshire, England.

I. ROBERT WOODSON and ELIZABETH FERRIS, daughter of RICHARD FERRIS of "Curles" Henrico, County, Virginia.

III. RICHARD WOODSON and ANN SMITH, daughter of OBEDIAH SMITH and his wife, MARY COCKE.

IV. ELIZABETH WOODSON and THOMAS MORTON.

V. RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH QUIN, daughter of JOHN QUIN and his wife, SUSANNE MICHEAUX and granddaughter of ABRAM MICHEAUX and SUSANNE ROCHET, Huguenot refugees.

VI. JOHN MORTON and his wife, TALITHA TINSLEY.

VII. QUIN MORTON and ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, daughter of JOHN SUTHERLAND' and his wife, AGNES SHELTON.

VIII. TALITHA ANN MORTON and her husband JOHN W. HODGES; her sister AMERICAN MORTON, who married J.W.E. HEARD.

The Texas generations - IX, X, XI, XII, XIII, XIV, including HODGES and HEARD and their descendants.

The WOODSON Family is named by Jester in his "Adventures of Purse and Person 1607 - 1625" as one of the First Families of Virginia.

CHAPTER VIII

MORTON - WOODSON - MICHEAUX

MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, who was the wife of THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I) and also his second cousin, is responsible for contributing to the SUTHERLAND heritage not only her HODGES line, but the illustrious lines of MORTON, WOODSON, and MICHEAUX as well.

MARY ELIZABETH was the daughter of JOHN W. HODGES and his wife TALITHA ANN MORTON; the granddaughter of QUIN MORTON and his wife ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND; the great granddaughter of JOHN MORTON and TALITHA TINSLEY MORTON; and the great, great granddaughter of RICHARD MORTON and his wife, JUDITH QUIN.

JUDITH QUIN, in turn, was the daughter of SUSANNA MICHEAUX and JOHN QUIN and her maternal grandparents were ABRAM MICHEAUX, the French Huguenot immigrant and his intrepid wife, SUSANNA ROCHET, the daughter of JEAN ROCHET of Sedan, France.

RICHARD MORTON, her husband, was the son of THOMAS MORTON and his wife, ELIZABETH WOODSON, who was a decendant of Dr. JOHN WOODSON and wife, SARAH, of Dorsetshire, England who came to Virginia in 1619, he as physician to soldiers of the Colony.

There is a huge book, "WOODSONS and their Connections" written by H. M. WOODSON many years ago which gives the records of many distinguished members of this connection and includes, besides WOODSONS; MORTONS, ROYALS, FLEMINGS, CHRISTIANS, and MICHEAUX. Unfortunately copies of the book are very scarce and the compiler of "We Cousins" has not had access to one.

It would be awkward and impractical to try to carry the MORTON, WOODSON and MICHEAUX lines simultaneously although at certain periods they cover the same span of years. It seems best to begin with WOODSON and tract those generations until they merge with MORTON and then go back and do the same for MICHEAUX, bringing it into the MORTON line.

WOODSON

HOLTON in his "original list of Persons of Quality" list JOHN and SARAH WOODSON as coming to Virginia on the "GEORGE" in 1619.

This was three years before the massacre of 1622, when over 300 of the then 1230 Colonists in Virginia were wiped out in one hour by the Indians.

In the following February of 1623, a count and listing was made of those left living. JOHN and SARAH WOODSON are found to be on the list of survivors in Flowerdieu Hundred. (Reference HOLTON'S Lists).

Amidst hardships and conditions, hard for us to imagine, today, but which in the first fifteen years of Virginia History claimed the lives of about 8000 of the Colonists, JOHN and SARAH WOODSON lived to rear a large family of children.

WOODSON Second and Third Generations

ROBERT WOODSON, son of JOHN and SARAH, married ELIZABETH FERRIS dau. of RICHARD FERRIS of "Curles" in Henrico Co., Va. (Ours) Their children were:

1. JOHN WOODSON m. JUDITH TARLETON.
2. RICHARD WOODSON m. ANN SMITH, dau. of OBEDIAH SMITH and his wife, MARY COCKE.
3. SARAH WOODSON m. EDWARD MOSLEY.
4. ELIZABETH WOODSON m. WILLIAM LEWIS.
5. MARY WOODSON m. GEORGE PAYNE.
6. JUDITH WOODSON m. WILLIAM CANNON.

Had also sons:

7. ROBERT WOODSON, JR.
8. JOSEPH WOODSON.
9. BENJAMINE WOODSON.

RICHARD WOODSON, second son of ROBERT and ELIZABETH FERRIS WOODSON, m. ANN SMITH and had:

1. RICHARD WOODSON, JR. m. ANN MICHEAUX, dau. of ABRAM MICHEAUX and SUSANNE ROCHET.
2. OBEDIAH WOODSON m. CONSTANCE WATKINS.
3. JOHN WOODSON m. MARY ELIZABETH ANDERSON, dau. of THOMAS ANDERSON of Henrico Co.
4. ELIZABETH WOODSON m. (1) THOMAS MORTON, m. (2) EDWARD GOODE.
5. JUDITH WOODSON m. JACOB MICHEAUX.
6. MARY WOODSON m. RICHARD TRUEMOND.

7. AGNES WOODSON m. JOSEPH MORTON, nephew of THOMAS MORTON, who had m. ELIZABETH sister of AGNES WOODSON.

Here with the marriage of ELIZABETH WOODSON to THOMAS MORTON the WOODSON line merges with MORTON and will not be carried beyond this fourth generation.

In the MICHEAUX line, generations will not be counted because it is a lateral line but the generations will be picked up again in the MORTON line beginning with the children of THOMAS MORTON and ELIZABETH WOODSON who will be designated as fifth generation. (Ref. on WOODSON: WILLIAM and MARY QUARTERLY Vol. 11, p. 54 and 55).

MICHEAUX

It will be noted above, that two of the children of RICHARD and ANN WOODSON married children of ABRAM MICHEAUX. Another of his daughters, SUSANNE MICHEAUX, married JOHN QUIN and their daughter, JUDITH QUIN, married RICHARD MORTON, first son of THOMAS MORTON and ELIZABETH WOODSON (See fifth generation).

Thus, the French Hugenot MICHEAUX family intermarried with their English neighbors, especially WOODSON and MORTON.

ABRAHAM MICHAUX, the progenitor of the MICHAUX family in Virginia, was a Huguenot, born in Sedan, France, in 1672. On account of religious persecution he left France for Amsterdam, Holland.

The records of the French Church of Amsterdam show that he became a member of that church, January 28, 1691; there he married SUSANNE ROCHET, July 13, 1692; had his children baptized as follows: ANNE, May 7, 1693; JEAN, January 3, 1697; ISAAC, June 28, 1699; and JACQUES, August 15, 1700.

May 8, 1701, he left Amsterdam for London; and from there he soon sailed for Virginia, where, with his family he settled in Henrico County.

ABRAHAM MICHAUX'S mother was a SEVERIN. His Book of Common Prayer bears on its flyleaf the inscription: "Monsr. SEVERIN, Minister, sends this book of Common Prayer to his nephew, ABRAHAM MICHAUX." This book, published in London in 1706, was presented to the Episcopal Theological Seminary at Alexandria, Va., in 1857 by N. F. CABELL. The old Family Bible, published in 1657, contains the names and marriage records of the family of ABRAHAM MICHAUX.

His will, dated May 13, 1717 and proved August 5, 1717, in Henrico County, mentions wife SUSANNE, and children, JACOB, JOHN, ABRAHAM, JOHN PAUL, ANNE, JANE MAGDALEN, OLIVE, JUDE, ELIZABETH, ANNE MADELIN and EASTER MARY.

To these he left an estate consisting of lands in Henrico and "Plantation and land at Manakin Town." SUSANNE ROCHET, his wife, was the daughter of JEAN ROCHET, who sent his daughters to Holland to prevent the priests from placing them in Catholic Schools.

The parents were in good circumstances and were allowed to pay a yearly tax to the French Government to be permitted to live there in peace as Protestants, but this peace did not include the children. The story of the hazardous escape of SUSANNE has been told and retold. The parents often visited their children in Holland, taking with them money with which to buy silks and fine clothes and it grieved them very much to see their daughters eating the coarse food of Holland. SUSANNE ROCHET MICHAUX died in 1744. Her will is recorded in Goochland County. Issue of ABRAHAM and SUSANNE MICHAUX:

1. JANE MAGDALEN MICHAUX, daughter of ABRAHAM, married PETER LE GRANDE, a Huguenot.
2. ANNE never married.
3. SUSANNE MICHAUX married JOHN QUIN of Henrico County, Virginia.
4. JUDITH MICHAUX married ANTHONY MORGAN, a Quaker.
5. ELIZABETH MICHAUX married SANBORNE WOODSON.
6. ANNE MADELIN MICHAUX married RICHARD WOODSON, son of RICHARD WOODSON and ANNE SMITH.
7. EASTER MARY MICHAUX married ALEXANDER CUNNINGHAM.
8. JACOB MICHAUX married JUDITH WOODSON, daughter of RICHARD and ANNE.

SUSANNE and JOHN QUIN had a daughter, JUDITH, who married RICHARD MORTON, son of THOMAS MORTON and ELIZABETH WOODSON.

ANNE MADELIN MICHAUX, mentioned in "Old Churches and Families" by Bishop MEADE, as a woman of strong character, and devoted piety, and "brilliant ornament of Protestantism," married RICHARD WOODSON, they had two children, ELIZABETH and AGNES.

ELIZABETH WOODSON mentioned in the "Huguenots" as a woman of great mental and physical endowments, married NATHANIEL VENABLE, and was fore-parent of Prof. CHARLES VENABLE, University of Virginia; RICHARD VENABLE of Baltimore; ABRAHAM VENABLE; EDWARD VENABLE of Petersburg; and many Venables in Virginia and Tennessee.

AGNES, daughter of ANNE MADELIN and RICHARD WOODSON married FRANCIS WATKINS, Clerk of

Court of Prince Edward County: among her descendants were: Judge JOSEPH VENABLE of Kentucky; Judge F.N. WATKINS, of Prince Edward County, Virginia; PATRICK JOYES, member of Louisville bar; ELLFRETH WATKINS, of Smithsonian Institute, the MORTONS of Shelby County, Kentucky; SUSAN, wife of Rev. MOSES D. HOGE, and Rev. HENRY BALLENTINE.

From ABRAHAM MICHAUX descend all who bear the name in Virginia. ("The WOODSONS and Their Connections" by H. M. WOODSON, page 34.)

HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF FRENCH PROTESTANTISM
54 Rue Des Saints Peres (VII)

8 April 1924

Madamoiselle ELIZABETH VENOBLE
411 East Monroe St., Jacksonville, Fla., U.S.A.

I have the pleasure of sending you herein the answer to your letter of Jan. 28 asking for the genalogy of ABRAHAM MICHAUX, his mother and SUZANNE ROCHET. It took me more time than I first expected to find out, especially everything concerning the family of ABRAHAM MICHEAUX as there existed quite a number of families bearing the same name and Christian names ABRAHAM, ISAAC, JACOB at Sedan during the XVII century.

It was therefore necessary to go through all the registers of baptisms, marriages and burials whose copies are in the library of our Historical Society and to pick up all of the MICHAUX, SEVERIN and ROCHET so as to be able to find those you are interested in. Those registers cover the years 1573-1608 and 1631-1682 leaving a big gap, as you see, between 1608-1631. No trace of MICHAUX is to be found in the registers from 1573 to 1608. But the three families you are interested in are represented by a great many entries in the register 1631-1683 Sedan and the surrounding towns and villages making out, today, part of the department de Ardennes (NE. of France) was during the XVI and the former half of the XVII century an independent country called Principante de Sedan whose Princes became protestants. Most of their subjects adopted the same religion and remained Protestants even when the land (1642) was annexed to the kingdom of France. But, at the revocation of the edict of Nantes (1685) they had to choose between forsaking their faith, in becoming Roman Catholics, or their home and property. A great many amongst them the MICHAUX, SEVERIN and ROCHET preferred leaving their country.

They generally went to Holland, about the nearest Protestant country, fleeing through the big forest which cover the mountain ridge called Le Ardennes. As you will see on the adjoining papers, I made inquiries in the documents referring to refugees preserved and partly published in Holland and in England and was fortunate enough to find their names again.

Here is a short abstract of the complete pedigree:

ABRAHAM MICHAUX was baptised at Sedan Feb. 23, 1672. He was the first child of JACOB MICHAUX and his second wife ANNE SEVERIN. JACOB MICHAUX was the 10th child of ABRAHAM MICHAUX b. @ 1608 who was dead anno 1667 and MARIE GODIN who died Sept. 22, 1676 at the age of 66 years and was consequently born 1610. All the MICHAUX were pewterers or tin plate makers. PAUL SEVERIN, father of ANNE, lace maker and merchant and JEAN ROCHET of a family of pewters, tailor, was the father of SUZANNE ROCHET.

After the revocation, JACOB MICHAUX fled to Holland with his wife and settled in Amsterdam where their 6th child was bapt. March 3, 1689. Two brothers of ANNE SEVERIN, who had been pastors in the Palatinate and France, like their grandfather JEAN TASQUE went to England. ABRAHAM, son of JACOB, followed the father and was, Jan. 28, 1691, received as member of the Walloon French Church at Amsterdam where, July 13, 1692, he married SUZANNE ROCHET.

Perhaps at the suggestion of one of his brothers-in-law he went to England in 1701 where his wife became member of the Huguenot church of Threadmarket St., London Aug. 20, 1702.

As you can see, in the included papers the houses owned at Sedan by ABRAHAM MICHAUX I), the ROCHETS and SEVERINS could yet be exactly located.

N. WEISS.

FRENCH RECORDS Filed in VA. HISTORICAL
SOCIETY LIBRARY - Richmond, Va.
FAMILLE MICHAUX

I. ABRAHAM MICHAUX date of birth unknown (c. 1600) died 1666 or 1667, and MARIE GODIN b. 1610 buried Sept. 22, 1676. Children:

1. Born probably before 1631:
2. MARIE who m. Aug. 31, 1651 PIERRE SERIGNON;
3. SUZANNE who m. May 2, 1655 PAUL CHAYES, pewterer;
4. PIERRE who m. Mar. 23, 1659 JEANNE GODET;
5. Jan. 13, 1629 RACHEL burial at age of 6 mo.

Births and Baptisms:

6. JEREME b. Aug. 11, 1631 bapt. Aug. 13;
7. ELISABETH b. July 3, 1634 bapt. July 5;
8. SUSANNE b. Nov. 19, 1638 bapt. Nov. 21, buried Aug. 4, 1656 at 17 years 8 mo.
9. ELISABETH b. July 6, 1640 bapt. July 8; m. Nov. 9, 1659 THOS. GODET, pewterer;
10. JACQUES b. Sept. 2, 1642 bapt. Sept. 9;
11. JACOB b. Jan. 22, 1644 bapt. Jan. 22, (godparents were TIMOTHY CATEL and MARQUERITE GODIN, his wife);
12. ABRAHAM, b. Aug. 4, 1645 bapt. Aug., 6 buried Jan. 18, 1646;
13. ABRAHAM b. Nov. 22, 1646 bapt. Nov. 25, buried June 17, 1647;
14. MADELAINE bapt. Feb. 14, 1649, m. Nov. 13, 1672 CHAS. BOUVIEL 26;
15. JEANNE bapt. May 5, 1652, buried Oct. 4, 1653;
16. ELISABETH bapt. Jan. 30, 1656, m. April 4, 1677 ISAAC ROSSITER, tailor age 26.

11. After the death of his father, JACOB MICHAUX m. (1) May 1, 1667 ELISABETH GODET d. Jan. 26, 1669 age 18, dau. of JEAN GODET, merchant and his wife ELISABETH PILLON, m. (2) ANNE SEVERIN July 28, 1669, age 20, dau. of PAUL, merchant of Sedan, and ELISABETH DE SERGINON. Children:
    (1) (by 1st m.) PIERRE bapt. July 15, 1668, buried Jan. 31, 1669;
    (1) (by 2nd m.) ABRAHAM bapt. Feb. 23, 1672, godparents THOMAS and MARIE GODET;
    (2) PAUL bapt. June 28, 1673, godparent PAUL and ELIZ. SEVERIN;
    (3) ELISABETH bapt. Sept. 8, 1675, godparents JEAN GODET and ELIZ. PILLON;
    (4) JEAN bapt. Jan. 3, 1680, godparents JEAN HEWAEPUIN merchant and SUSANNE SERIGNON.
    (5) MADELAINE bapt. Aug. 9, 1681;
    (6) SAMUEL bapt. Mar. 3, 1689 in Amsterdam, Holland.

(1) On Jan. 28, 1691 ABRAHAM MICHAUX, son of JACOB and grandson of ABRAHAM, was recieved as a member of the Walloon Church, composed of Walloon and French refugees at Amsterdam. On July 13, 1692 he m. in this church to SUSANNE ROCHET, dau. of JEAN ROCHET and MARIE TRUFET. Children:
    A. ANNE bapt. Mar. 7, 1693;
    B. JEAN bapt. Jan. 3, 1697;
    C. ISAAC bapt. June 28, 1698;
    D. JACQUES bapt. Aug. 15, 1700,

1701 ABRAHAM MICHAUX left Holland for England. Aug. 20, 1702 his wife SUSANNE ROCHET is received as a member of the French Refugee church in Threadmarket St. on certificate of her husband.

Their several other children were born in either England or Virginia, after their removal there.

Genealogy of SUSANNE ROCHET, Wife of ABRAHAM MICHAUX.

I. THOMAS ROCHET and MARQUERITE BEAUCIEL

1. THIERY ROCHET, son of THOMAS ROCHET (deceased) brewer and SUSANNA RONDEAU widow of CHENEAU, b. 1618; d. 1649. Children:
    (1) JEAN b. about 1640; m. 1664. MARIE TRUFET;
    (2) JACQUES bapt. Aug. 20, 1642, buried May 30, 1647;
    (3) ISAAC b. Jan. 6 bapt. Jan. 10, 1644;
    (4) VINCENT bapt. Sept. 18, 1646;

    (THIERY ROCHET aged 36 years 31 days buried Dec. 31, 1649); b. Nov. 30, 1613.

    (1) On Dec. 21, 1664 JEAN ROCHET tailor m. MARIE TRUFET widow of ANTONIE ROISIER. Children:
        A. SUSANNE bapt. Oct. 31, 1665, buried June 29, 1666;
        B. SUSANNE bapt. April 13, 1667 m. ABRAHAM MICHAUX (godfather and mother CHARLES DUFRAY and SUSANNE RONDEAU, widow of THIERY ROCHET, who had m. DUFRAY April 22, 1666);
        C. JEANNE bapt. Jan. 11, 1668, m. 1689 in London JAQUES TRUFFEL;
        D. ISAAC bapt. Aug. 30, 1672, buried Dec. 23, 1672;
        E. LOUIS bapt. June 8, 1676;
        F. DANIEL bapt. Jan. 5, 1679;

        (1692 at Amsterdam solemized marriage of SUZANNE ROCHET to ABRAHAM MICHAUX. 1702 members of Huguenot Church in Threadmarket St. London.

Genealogy of ANNE SEVERIN

I. NICHOLAS SEVERIN, pastor of a refugee church at Ludweiles near Saarlouis Talotnale and SUSANNE CHARLOT.

1. Their son PAUL, b. 1611 at Ludweiles, merchant at Sedan, m. Nov. 16, 1636 ELISABETH DE SERIGNON dau. of JEAN DE SERIGNON a bourgeois de Sedan and ANNE MARTIN. They owned a house at Sedan (place de la Halle.). Children:
   (1) ANNE b. Feb. 10, 1638 bapt. Feb. 14, buried Dec. 3, 1643;
   (2) JEAN b. Jan. 8, 1640 bapt. Jan. 10, buried April 16;
   (3) JACQUE b. Feb. 15, 1641 bapt. Feb. 17; m., at La Menges near Sedan, Mar. 30, 1664 JUDITH DE VARY, dau. of NICHOLAS DE VARY, pastor at Laon, pastor 1677-1679 at Chery Dgs del (Aisne) 1689 in England where he became minister of the Church of England.
   (4) JEAN b. April 20, 1643 bapt. April 28, pastor 1667-72 at Trouville (Dept. de la Lorraine 1683-1687 at Thorpe Eng., 1682 Greenwist and 1695-1704 at Dublin. Probably he and his brother decided MICHAUX to go from Holland to Eng.
   (5) RASHEL b. Mar. 6, 1646 bapt. Mar. 8, buried Mar. 16, 1646;
   (6) ANNE b. Jan. 26, 1649 bapt. Jan. 28, m. July 1669 JACOB MICHAUX;
   (7) DANIEL bapt. May 4, 1651 buried May 5, 1653;
   (8) MARIE bapt. June 3, 1653;
   (9) SUSANNE bapt. June 4, 1654, m. Mar. 1, 1676 at 22 years to HENRY GUERIN, goldsmith - 34;
   (10) JOSUE bapt. June 13, 1656, m. Nov. 17, 1678 ANNE ARCHAMBAUD.
   Their child MADELAINE bapt. Feb. 3, 1680.
   (PAUL SEVERIN died Dec. 28, 1678 buried Dec. 29)

With grateful acknowledgement to Miss ELIZABETH VENABLE who caused this research of French Records to be accomplished.

Copied and submitted by MARY STANCLIFF.

MORTON

Listed in the Battle Abby Roll and Doomsday Book of English Records, is the name of ROBERT COMTE DE MORTAINE, half-brother of WILLIAM the Conqueror, who is considered to be founder of the English MORTON family. (Ref. "Ancestral Heads of New England Families" - Homer)

Burkes General Armory lists thirty-two coat of Arms used by different MORTON Families or different branches of the several English MORTONS.

Others who have studied the records have claimed the Arms of the MORTONS of Kent and Surry and earlier of Dorsetshire and Yorkshire, as the one to which the Va. branch of MORTONS are entitled.

However, there is a possibility that the Henrico Co. family may be of the Warwickshire line.

A close study of the early records of Henrico County shows that the original MORTON and RANDOLPH Families there were neighbors and were closely associated in land transactions.

We have no definite knowledge of the origin, of JOHN MORTON, presumably the immigrant, but WILLIAM RANDOLPH, his neighbor who came to Virginia about 1680 was the son of RICHARD RANDOLPH who lived at "Morton Hall" in Warwickshire, England. His son JOHN RANDOLPH became Sir JOHN RANDOLPH of Williamsburg. (Ref.: WILLIAM and MARY Quarterly Vol. 7., p. 122).

Capt. JOHN MORTON of Prince Edward County, grandson of the first JOHN MORTON of Henrico County, was spoken of as Capt. JOHN of "Morton Hall." (Va. Mag. Vol. 17, 314)

The first record that we have of the MORTONS in relation to Virginia concerns one, RICHARD MORTON who as early as 1612 was a stockholder in the Virginia Company of London. By 1618, he had increased his holdings to twelve shares and by November 15, 1620, we know that a RICHARD MORTON had lived nearly three years in Virginia and returned to London.

"RICHARD MORETON in his petition craving an allowance of one share of land for the adventure of his son having been in Virginia almost three years" answer was made that his request could not be granted unless he had ctoninued there the full three years either at one or at several times. (Ref. Virginia Company of London Records, Vol. I, p. 426)

Whether this RICHARD MORTON returned to Virginia and completed his full three years of residence, we do not know.

The only MORTON reported living in Virginia after the 1622 Indian Massacre was WILLIAM MORTON reported living in Elizabeth City County. This was probably WILLIAM MORTON, age 20, who came to Virginia in 1620 on the "Margett and John," ("Persons of Quality" - Holter)

Between 1620 and 1665, at least twelve men, by the name of MORTON, came to Virginia, including THOMAS in 1649 and JOSEPH in 1650. WILLIAM MORTON, either the same or different ones, was recorded as entering seven different times between the first in 1620 and the last in 1664. (Holten's - "Persons of Quality" and Nugent's "Cavaliers and Pioneers.")

The records of the MORTON family of Henrico County which is definitely connected with the MORTONS of "We Cousins" begins with the marriage of 1682 of JOANE HUGHES, thought to be a widow, to JOHN MORTON (Henrico M. Bk. I, p. 225 Virginia State Archives).

This JOANE HUGHES may have been the ANN HUGHES who with SUSANNAH SYMONDS was imported to Virginia by HENRY RANDOLPH. (Henrico Co. Records 1682-1701; p. 413).

On the other hand in 1710 JOHN MORTON claimed that he had imported himself and wife from England and was entitled to land grant. (Henrico Co. Records by Standard).

If these records all refer to the same couple they seem to refute one another until we remind ourselves that many of the colonists made trips back and forth, on business or pleasure, to the mother country. JOANE could have entered Virginia before her marriage in 1682 entitling HENRY RANDOLPH to a fifty acre grant. Having married JOHN MORTON in Virginia, she may have returned, with him, from a trip to England before 1710 which was the basis of his claim in that year.

This reasoning reconciles the records above to one another but if the importation of JOANE and JOHN MORTON was from a visit to England, then we have no date for the entry of JOHN MORTON, himself, and in that case he need not have been the immigrant but could have been a descendant of one of the MORTONS who came earlier to Virginia.

Whatever his ancestry, land transactions in Henrico County between the MORTONS, WOODSONS, and WILLIAM RANDOLPH late in the seventeenth and early in the eighteenth century definitely indicate that JOHN and JOANE MORTON left sons, THOMAS, JOSEPH, and JOHN JR.

In 1700 JOHN MORTON transferred 200 acres in Chicohominy Swamp to WILLIAM RANDOLPH "being one half of the tract of land I bought of JOHN WOODSON where I now live." (Deed) Bk. 1697-1704 p. 192 Henrico Co.

Ibid (page 201) gives the date of the former transaction as August 1, 1695.

The will of WILLIAM RANDOLPH signed Mar. 6, 1709 left to his sons RICHARD and the honorable JOHN RANDOLPH all of his three tracts of land pruchased from JOHN WOODSON, JOHN MORTON and SAMUEL KNIBB amounting to about 900 acres.

(Ref: Val. Papers Volume III, p. 1369)

When JOHN MORTON sold to RANDOLPH in 1700 he had retained half of his original tract of land in Chicohominy Swamp. On May 20, 1720 JOHN RANDOLPH of York Co., Va., son of WILLIAM RANDOLPH, "Conveyed to THOMAS MORETON, JOSEPH MORETON, and JOHN MORETON of Henrico County, planters, 436 acres on the south side of White Oak Swamp in Henrico County, to be divided 212 acres next to Chicohominy Swamp to THOMAS MORETON; 112 acres adjacent to the 212 to JOSEPH MORETON; 112 acres remaining unto JOHN MORETON. Which said tract of land descended to the said JOHN RANDOLPH from his deceased father, WILLIAM RANDOLPH." (Ref. Vol. III, p. 1375).

This exchange of deeds indicates that sometime after 1700 JOHN MORTON, SR. died leaving his remaining land to his three sons THOMAS, JOSEPH, and JOHN MORTON, JR.

Sometime after 1709 and before 1720 WILLIAM RANDOLPH died and his son JOHN RANDOLPH received his part of the land devised to him in his father's will. On May 20, 1720 JOHN RANDOLPH is deeding back to the sons of JOHN MORTON, SR. the 200 acres sold to his father, WILLIAM RANDOLPH, by MORTON in 1700 and an additional 236 acres beside.

The deeds also show that the WOODSONS, MORTONS and RANDOLPHS were neighbors and closely associated from the very early days of Henrico County.

More important, they prove that JOHN MORTON, SR. of that county left, at least three sons: JOHN MORTON, JR. born about 1684, THOMAS MORTON born about 1690, and JOSEPH MORTON born about 1693.

The middle son, THOMAS MORTON, married about 1720 or before, ELIZABETH WOODSON, daughter of RICHARD WOODSON and his wife, ANN SMITH, ELIZABETH being the fourth generation of WOODSONS in Virginia.

This THOMAS MORTON died in 1731 and his will was proven in Henrico County that year and mentions his children: RICHARD MORTON, JOHN MORTON, THOMAS MORTON, ANN MORTON, JUDITH MORTON, and "My dearly and well beloved wife, ELIZABETH." These children were the fifth generation of WOODSONS and at least the third generation of MORTONS in Virginia. - THOMAS MORTON served as an officer during the Colonial Wars. (Vol. 10 p. 329 Va. Mag. of History and Biography).

Fifth Generation

Children of THOMAS MORTON and ELIZABETH WOODSON:

1. RICHARD MORTON, b. about 1720; d. prior to Feb. 27, 1815, (W. Bk. III, p. 432 Clark Co., Ky.); m. JUDITH QUIN, dau. of JOHN QUIN and SUSANNE MICHEAUX, who was the daughter of ABRAHAM and SUSANNAH MICHAUX.
2. THOMAS MORTON (of Prince Edward Co., Va.), d. 1802; m. 1762 ANN MUSE.
3. ANN MORTON m. WILLIAM GATHRIGHT of Henrico Co.
4. JUDITH MORTON m. EDWARD GOODE, JR.
5. JOHN MORTON (of Prince Edward Co., Va.) b. Feb. 9, 1730; d. Dec. 1, 1796; m. Sept. 15, 1750 MARY

ANDERSON, b. Nov. 17, 1736; d. Nov. 20, 1822 (Ref: Notes of W.S. MORTON, genealogist, Farmville, Prince Edward Co., Va.).

JOHN MORTON, youngest of the family above, was the Capt. JOHN MORTON of Revolutionary War Fame. His company of Prince Edward County Militia became a part of the Fourth Virginia Regiment and before the war was over in 1783, Capt. MORTON had had eight sons and many nephews under his Command. His home was spoken of as "Morton Hall" and he is said to be related to Col. WILLIAM MORTON. Two of his sons, Capt. HEZEKIAH and Maj. JAMES MORTON, earned commissions in the Revolutionary Army. His son, JOSEPH, was the aneestor of OLIVER P. MORTON, Gov. of Indiana, and his daughter, BETSY, who married a WOODSON, was the ancestress of Gov. SILAS WOODSON of Missouri. (Ref: Virginia His. Mag. Vol. 17, p. 314).

RICHARD MORTON, the oldest son of THOMAS MORTON and ELIZABETH WOODSON and the progenitor of the MORTON line in "We Cousins," received from his father's will the plantation on which they were then living which was the home place in Henrico Co.

Later he was a merchant in Prince Edward Co., Va., but in the middle and late 1780's he and his son, JOHN MORTON, took up large land grants in Kentucky, and he moved there in 1790, with his wife, the former JUDITH QUIN, and the family of his son, JOHN MORTON.

The Will of RICHARD MORTON was proven in Clark County, Kentucky on Feb. 27, 1815 and is given in full below:

Copy of RICHARD MORTON Will - Book 3, page 432 Clark County, Kentucky Records:

In the name of God, Amen,

I, RICHARD MORTON of Clarke County, being in health and well in my senses, blessed be God, do make and constitute this my last will and testament as followeth. In the first place, it is my will that my Executors pay all my just and lawful debts and if it should be found necessary that any part of my estate should be sold for that surface, it is my will and desire that they sell such part thereof as they in their discretion shall think can be best shared so as to keep the principle together as much as possible.

Secondly, it is my will that my son, SAMUEL MORTON, should remain in full possession of one hundred acres of land on which he now lives during his life and after his decease to be equally divided between his two sons, ARCHIBALD and RICHARD MORTON, that now lives on said land lying on the branches of Stoner in Clarke County to them and their Heirs forever. Thirdly, I give to my son, QUIN MORTON, one Negro Man named DICK that he hath now in possession to him and his heirs forever. Likewise, my estate furnish him with a horse or mare to the value of twenty-five pounds.

Fourthly, I gave to my son, JOHN MORTON, one hundred and twenty-five acres of land after his mother's decease and not before lying on the waters of Joett's and Boone's Creeks in Clarke County including the plantation on which the said JOHN and myself now lives and joining Hickman's Line. I, likewise, give my said JOHN one Negro man named LEWIS to him and his Heirs forever.

Fifthly, I gave to my son, DAVID MORTON, the remaining part of the tract of land I bought of HARRISON be there eighty acres moreorless; likewise, I give to my son DAVID one Negroe Man named ISAAC and one Negroe Man named TOM to him and his Heirs forever.

Sixthly, I give to my son JONATHAN MORTON one Negroe man named JAWNEY (?) to him and his Heirs forever as he had his portions in land.

Seventhly, I lend to my daughter, SARAH TANNER, one Negroe woman named MILLEY and all her children during her life and after her decease to be equally divided among her children to them and their heirs forever.

Eightly, I give to my daughter SUSANA TINSLEY, one hundred and twenty-five acres of land at her mother's deeease and not before being part of the tract I now live on and I likewise lend her one Negroe woman named CLOE and all her children during the said SUSANNA'S life and after said SUSANNA'S decease, to be eqully divided amongst her children to them and their Heirs forever.

Ninthly, it is my will and desire that my dear and well beloved wife, JUDITH, should have all the remaining part of my estate both real and personal to dispose amongst my children, but to no other person or persons, as she shall think proper; that is to say, five negroes named WILL, PATTY, LETTY, SNAKY and SALLY, all household furniture, horses, cattle, sheep, hogs and plantation Eutentiols.

And all the before mentioned parts of my estate, give and bequeath to my wife and children as they are mentioned to them and each of them and their Heirs forever, it is my will that my estate be not appraised and I do hereby appoint my well beloved wife the sole executor of this my will and testament and she be not obliged to give security for the same, signed, sealed and acknowledged in presence of us this forth day December Eighteen Hundred and Four.

JAMES JENKINS
WILLIAM CANADAY
GRAHAM HAZELRIGG

(Signed) RICHARD MORTON

At a court held for Clarke County, February 27, 1815, this last will and testament of RICHARD MORTON

deceased, was proven by the oath of JAMES JENKINS, a witness thereto subscribed as in part and ordered to be certified. Clarke County July Court 1815.

(Signed) Test. JAMES P. BULLOCK.

MORTON-Sixth Generation

Children of RICHARD MORTON and his wife, JUDITH QUIN:

1. SAMUEL MORTON b. 23 Sept. 1745; d. 19 July 1834 in Madison Co., Ky. m. in Va. before 1787, PHILADELPHIA WADE, dau. of PHILIP WADE.
2. QUIN MORTON b. 1749; d. 1 Jan. 1805; m. in Va. MARY ANDERSON b. 27 Dec. 1757; d. 17 July 1818.
3. JOHN MORTON b. 16 Aug. 1757; d. 29 May 1839; m. 11 Sept. 1778, in Va. TALITHA TINSLEY, dau. of THOMAS TINSLEY of Prince Ed. Co. Va. and granddaughter of ISAAC TINSLEY of Spotsylvania and later Amelia Co. Va.
4. DAVID MORTON b. 1750-55; d. after his father made his will in 1804. Is possibly the DAVID MORTON who died while on business trip to Ill. as per family letter.
5. JONATHAN MORTON m. 25 Nov. 1784, in Prince Ed. Co. Va. LETITIA McCARGO, dau. of JOHN McCARGO.
6. SARAH MORTON b. in Va.; d. 1819 in Clark Co. Ky.; m. in Va. before 1787 ARCHELAUS TANNER who died 1795 in Clark Co. Ky.
7. SUSANNAH MORTON b. in Va. m. 17 Nov. 1786 in Prince Ed. Co. Va., WM. TINSLEY in presence of RICHARD MORTON.
8. LUCY MORTON b. in Va.; m. 18 Jan. 1786 RADFORD McCARGO in Va.

From the notes of WM. S. MORTON, genealogists of Farmville, Prince Ed. Co. and from records of Prince Ed. Co. and Clark Co. Ky.

JUDITH QUIN was the sister of GEO. QUIN of Dinwiddie Co., who in his will dated 20 Jan. 1758 devised the residue of his estate to the children of JUDITH and another sister, ESTHER CARTER.

Henrico County Deed Book No. 1 - 1781-1785

This indenture made the fifteenth day of November in the year of our Lord Christ one thousand seven hundred and seventy nine between SAMUEL MORTON, QUIN MORTON, JOHN MORTON, ARCHER TANNER and SARAH his wife, surviving children of RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH his wife, SAMUEL LOVE and SARAH his wife, MARY CARTER, SAMUEL CARTER, suriviving children of Theodorick (?) CARTER and ESTHER his wife of the one part and ANTHONY GEOGHAHAN (?) of the County of Henrico of the other part. Whereas a certain GEORGE QUIN, late of the County of Dinwiddie deceased did by his last Will and Testament bearing date the twentieth day of January one thousand seven hundred and fifty-eight and now of record in the County Court of Dinwiddie. Reference being thereunto had may more fully appear after sundry devises and bequests, give unto the then surviving children of his sisters JUDITH MORTON and ESTHER CARTER all the residue of his Estate real and personal and to be divided among them equally, part of which residue is a certain half acre lot in the town of Richmond and County of Henrico . . . . four thousand pounds.

Signed sealed and delivered	Samuel Morton	
in presence of	Quin Morton	
Charles Allen	Archer Tanner	
Henry Young	Sarah Tanner	
Richard Morton	Samuel Love	
John Morton		her
Francis Watkins	Sarah Love	X
		Cross
	Mary Carter	
	Samuel	
	John Morton	

Henrico County December Court, 1779. This deed from SAMUEL MORTON and others to ANTHONY GEOGHAGAN (?) is proved by three of the witnesses thereto and admitted to record.

Teste William White, Clk Court

At a court held for Henrico County at the Public buildings in Richmond the 6th day of October 1783 (?) this Indenture with the Clerk's Certificate endorsed certifying the proof of the said Indenture (the Record of which has been destroyed by the Enemy) was presented in Court and ordered to be again recorded.

Teste Adam Craig CC

See MICHEAUX for the maternal pedigree of JUDITH QUIN.

MORTON - Seventh Generation

I. SAMUEL MORTON, son of RICHARD and JUDITH QUINN MORTON. Born in Virginia ca. 1745. He married PHILADELPHIA WADE, daughter of PHILIP WADE of Prince Edward County, Virginia ca. 1766. In 1787 SAMUEL

and DELPHIA WADE MORTON were living in Halifax County, Virginia; ten years later they moved to Clark County, Kentucky with their family and settled on Stoner Creek, about a mile distant from his sister, SARAH MORTON TANNER.

Children of SAMUEL MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON and his wife, JUDITH QUIN. SAMUEL m. PHILADELPHIA WADE, dau. of PHILIP WADE of Prince Ed. Co. Va.

1. RICHARD MORTON b. in Va.; m. (1) in Clark Co. Ky. 22 April 1795 NANCY TANNER, his cousin, dau. of ARCHLAEUS TANNER and SARAH MORTON; m. (2) 28 Jan. 1805 POLLY NOLIN in Clark Co. They moved to Madison Co. Ky.
2. ARCHIBALD MORTON b. in Va.
3. SARAH MORTON m. WILLIAM PERKINS.
4. AGNES MORTON b. in Va.; died before 1841; m. 23 July 1795 DAVID BRANDENBURGH in Clark Co. Ky.
5. ELIZABETH MORTON b. in Va.; m. 7 Jan. 1802, in Clark Co. Ky. ELIAS PETTY.
6. POLLY MORTON m. (1) 5 Dec. 1797 NICHOLAS EASTIN; m. (2) 26 Oct. 1826, at Winchester, Ky. LEROY HAMELTON.
7. PHILADELPHIA MORTON m. 30 Aug. 1804 ROLLY PALMER.

From Office of Clark County Circuit Clerk
Case of JOSIAH HART and JUDITH T. HART
vs.
RICHARD TANNER and others
1817 (case of continuance)
JOHN MORTON, SR. makes deposition for the defendants:

Under oath JOHN MORTON stated that he lived about 100 yards from his father's home and had been so located since 1790. States that in many conversations with his father, RICHARD MORTON he heard his father say that the reason he loaned negroes to his daughters instead of giving same was because he did not wish the negroes to fall into the hands of his sons-in-law and did not want them sold.

SAMUEL MORTON makes deposition for the defendant:

States that in the year 1787, he SAMUEL was a resident of Halifax County in the State of Virginia, living about forty miles from RICHARD MORTON, his father. At the same time, previous to the year 1787 there was one ARCHELAUS TANNER who intermarried with SARAH MORTON, sister to the deponent and sometime after they married he heard his father RICHARD say that he intended to give ARCHELAUS TANNER and SARAH his wife a negro girl named SARAH. Sometime after, perhaps in the same year the said RICHARD MORTON and his family and said TANNER and his wife and family moved to this state (Ky.) in company with each other. Seven or eight years later deponent moved from Virginia to Kentucky and settled about a mile from his sister SARAH TANNER who was then widow of said ARCHELAUS TANNER, deceased.

Madison County Courthouse - Richmond, Kentucky - Will Book F - page 220

Will of SAMUEL MORTON, son of RICHARD and JUDITH

In the name of God amen. I, SAMUEL MORTON, knowing the uncertainty of this mortal life, but of sound and perfect mind and memory do make and publish this my last will and testament in manner and form as follows; that is to say first, it is my will that my wife, PHILADELPHIA, after the payment of all my debts, have her dower assigned to her according to law. Secondly, I do hereby give and bequeath to my son RICHARD MORTON a negro boy named TRAVIS and to his heirs forever. I also give to the heirs of ARCHIBALD MORTON, deceased, one negro boy named SILAS to them and their heirs forever. I also give to my daughter SALLY PERKINS after the assignment of my wife's dower and the taking out of the legacies above mentioned an equal portion of the remainder of my negroes with my other children, AGNES BRANDENBURG, POLLY EASTIN, PHILADELPHIA PALMER and the heirs of my daughter ELIZABETH PETTY, deceased. After the above bequests have been fulfilled it is my wish that my other slaves and all of my estate, goods and chattels of what ever kind and description be equally divided among my children, AGNES BRANDENBURG, POLLY EASTIN, PHILADELPHIA PALMER, and the heirs of ELIZABETH PETTY, deceased.

Lastly for the management of my estate after my death, I hereby appoint my wife executrix and JOHN C. CHILES and SAMUEL M. TAYLOR my executors hereby revoking all former wills by me made. In witness whereof I hereunto set my hand and seal this 5th day of March 1828.

SAMUEL MORTON

Signed sealed and acknowledged as his last will by the above named SAMUEL MORTON in the presence of us.

GEORGE SMITH
P. B. HOCKADAY
ALFRED BOWEN

State of Kentucky
Madison

II. QUIN, son of RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH QUIN, married MARY ANDERSON, daughter of CHARLES ANDERSON and ELIZABETH CHAMBERS. Issue:

1. THOMAS, born 1777, married MARTHA LOCKETT, daughter of STEPHEN LOCKETT and MARY CLAY.
2. CHARLES MORTON, born 1779, married MARY LOCKETT, daughter of STEPHEN LOCKETT.
3. ELIZABETH, born 1782, married WILLIAM LEWIS MORTON, son of JOSIAH MORTON and ELIZABETH VENABLE.
4. JOHN MORTON, born 1784, married ELIZABETH ANN LE GRANDE, daughter of NASH LE GRANDE and MARGARET HOLMES.
5. RICHARD MORTON, born 1787, married MARTHA SPENCER, daughter of THOMAS SPENÇER and LUCY WATKINS.
6. FANNY, born 1789, married Dr. ARCHIBALD ALEXANDER.
7. MARY, born 1792, married HENRY MADISON.
8. WILLIAM QUIN MORTON, born 1794, (died 1850) married 1816 ELIZABETH McROBERTS VENABLE, daughter of Judge JOSEPH VENABLE and ELIZABETH WATKINS.
9. ANDERSON COCKE MORTON, born 1797, married SARAH WATKINS, daughter of HENRY WATKINS.

Some of the descendants of QUIN and MARY MORTON are Professor WILLIAM THORNTON of University of Virginia; Professor JAMES THORNTON, Hampden Sidney College; EMMET R. MORTON, Richmond; QUIN MORTON, of Ronceverte.

III. The Seventh generation children of JOHN MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH QUIN, and his wife, TALITHA TINSLEY:

1. DAVID MORTON b. 8 Sept. 1779; d. 17 Oct. 1824 m. perhaps SARAH WAGGONER.
2. JONATHAN MORTON b. 8 Sept. 1779; in Va.; d. 11 Nov. 1852 Clark Co. Ky. Buried in MORTON graveyard on Grimes Mill Rd.; m. CHINA (perhaps THOMPSON).
3. QUIN MORTON b. 6 June 1781 in Va.; d. in Ala. July 4, 1837, (dates taken from his tombstone in Oakwood Cemetery in Tuscumbia Ala.) m. 26 June 1802 in Pittsylvania Co. Va. ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN and AGNES SHELTON SUTHERLAND. (Pitts. Co. Va. Marriage Records and SUTHERLAND Bibles in Univ. of Texas Archives)
4. MARY MORTON b. 11 May 1783 died early.
5. ELIZABETH MORTON b. 13 April 1785; d. before 1841; m. 21 Dec. 1805 GEORGE CRAIG.
6. TALITHA MORTON b. 8 May 1787; d. 6 Nov. 1858; m. THOMAS GHOLSON, 10 Dec. 1807 in Clark Co. Ky.
7. LUCY MORTON b. 5 Mar. 1789; d. before 1841; m. 13 Mar. 1812, DAVID G. OWEN.
8. WILLIAM MORTON b. 18 May 1891; d. 10 Sept. 1858; m. MARY ——————, moved to Shelby Co. Ky.
9. RICHARD MORTON b. 22 Nov. 1793; d. before 1841; m. 1 Mar. 1812 ELEANOR PETTICORD in Clark Co. Ky.
10. SUSANNA QUIN MORTON b. 20 May 1796; d. 20 Nov. 1835 m. Dr. WILLIAM WEBB.
11. JOHN MORTON JR. b. 8 July 1800; d. Oct. 8, 1863 and is buried in MORTON Cemetery on Grimes Mill Rd., Clark Co. Ky.; m. (1) ELIZABETH ROGERS dau. of JEREMIAH ROGERS and niece of Gov. CLARK of Ky.; m. (2) LU ANNA B. CHRISTY b. 12 Feb. 1810; d. 15 Nov. 1860.

There are documents in Prince Edward Co. Va. which relate to JOHN MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON, later of Clark Co. Ky. "On 12 Dec. 1780 JAMES TINSLEY of Bedford Co. Va. sold to JOHN MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON of Princc Ed. Co. for £1600, 332 acres in Prince Edward Co., on the branches of Sandy River and Saylor's Cr. which is that tract of land that fell to JAMES TINSLEY by heirship from his father, THOS. TINSLEY.

Acknowledged by JAMES and ELIZABETH TINSLEY and witnessed by JOEL JOHNS, SABAN HAWKINS, PAUL MICHEAU CUNNINGHAM and ROBERT FERGUSON." (B,. D. p. 396-7 Prince Ed. Co.)

JAMES TINSLEY was the brother of TALITHA TINSLEY as proved by court records in Amelia Co. Va. (See TINSLEY)

On 30 Dec. 1782 JOHN MORTON deeded this same 332 acres to JOHN MITCHELL. (D. Bk. 7 p. 137 Prince Ed. Co.)

On 23 Oct. 1794, after they moved to Clark Co. Ky. in 1790, Lt. Col. JOHN HOLDER or 17th Reg. Ky. Militia reported that the following officers in his command had been commissioned, among them Capt. JOHN MORTON and Lt. WILLIAM TINSLEY. (Ky. Historical Register 1930) Exerpts from the Exccutive Journal of Gov. ISSAC SHELBY).

In the pension application of JOSIAH JACKSON, of Clark Co. Ky., d. 6 Oct. 1832, JOHN MORTON made affidavit that in 1777, 1778, 1779 and 1780 or 1781, he was well acquainted in Amelia Co. Va. with JOSIAH JACKSON and had no doubt that JACKSON served in the Rev. War. The affiant JOHN MORTON was age 76 on Aug.

16 last. He moved from Prince Edward Co. Va. in 1790 and has lived on his present farm in Clark Co. ever since. (Clark Co. Ky. Pensions by ANNIE WALKER BURNS - Section 37).

Unfortunately the information concerning the seventh generation family of JOHN MORTON and TALITHA TINSLEY has been hopelessly confused with another JOHN MORTON who was captured at the Blue Licks in Feb. of 1778 and held prisoner for three years.

This inaccuracy came about in Nov. 1854 when a Mr. ABRAM MORTON wrote from Washington City a letter literally filled with misinformation which has been circulated among the MORTONS of Ky. for 100 years.

Part of this misinformation was recorded in the Bible Records of Judge JERRY MORTON of Lexington which quotes inaccurate birthdates for most of the children of JOHN and TALITHA MORTON.

The grave markers of DAVID and JONATHAN in the MORTON graveyard on Grimes Rd. Clark Co. and that of their brother, QUIN MORTON, in Oakwood Cemetery at Tuscumbia, Ala. as well as these many other records, which we have reviewed herein and others which we shall present, prove conclusively that JOHN MORTON, husband of TALITHA TINSLEY, was the son of RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH QUIN and disproves the birthdates and other allegations made by Mr. ABRAM MORTON and repeated by others for 100 years.

An important evidence is contained in a letter from the librarian of the Ky. Historical Society to the compiler in 1956, and quoted herein. This letter quotes a document from the files of the Society which gives the proper birthdates of JOHN and TALITHA MORTON'S children and proves that they had three sons born during the three years captivity of the JOHN MORTON taken at Blue Licks. The birth dates of these three, DAVID and JONATHAN, twins, and QUIN MORTON, third son and child of JOHN and TALITHA, are the same as those carved on their tombstones and are therefore indisputable.

The letter follows:

KENTUCKY HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Mrs. Charles E. Hudson
787 N. Houston
San Benito, Texas

Frankfort, Kentucky
May 10, 1956

Dear Mrs. Hudson:

The Bible records I mentioned in my letter to Mrs. Stancliff, were typed copies of the records. I have checked all of these and the William Quin Morton, Bible, but none of them list John Morton's children.

In going through our file again, I did find the following information. It is taken from "MORTON", by James M. Bourne, and was written 1898.

"Copy of family record of JOHN MORTON and his wife, TALLITHA TINSLEY, given by J. WARREN DYE (or DAY)"

JOHN MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON, and JUDITH, was born August the 16th, 1757 (interlined) "d. M. 29, 1837." (Should be May 29, 1839 F.S.H.)

TALLITHA, his wife, was born February 17, 1757.

"The Age of Their Children."

DAVID and JONATHAN were born September 8, 1779.

QUINN was born June 6, 1781.

MARY was born May the 11, 1783, died in early life.

ELIZABETH was born April the 13, 1785.

TALLITHA was born May the 8th, 1787. (interlined) TALLITHA lived to November 6, 1858.

LUCY was born March 5, 1789.

WILLIAM was born May the 18, 1791. (interlined) WILLIAM MORTON died September 17, 1859.

RICHARD was born November the 22, 1793.

SUSANNA QUINN MORTON was born May the 20, 1796, Friday night, 10 o'clock. (interlined) SUSANNA, SUSAN, died 20th November, 1835.

JOHN MORTON was born July 12, 1800.

NOTE BY J. M. BOURNE. Write to the Clerk of Spottsylvania County, Virginia, for copy of the marriage of JOHN MORTON and TALLITHA TINSLEY on the 10th day of September 1788 or 1778. (Not there, F.S.H.).

"Mr. DYE writes Mr. JONATHAN B. MORTON of Lexington, Kentucky, that 'Your father, DAVID, and his twin brother JONATHAN were born according to the record of JOHN MORTON and TALLITHA TINSLEY. 8th September 1779, nine years before the marriage of their parents according to Mr. ABRAHAM MORTON I think Mr. MORTON has the aunts of Capt. MORTON confused and states them to be his sister.

"Captain JOHN MORTON (RICHARD) b. August 16, 1757; died May 29, 1839; married Sept. 10, 1778, TALITHA TINSLEY, born February 17, 1757, died 1850, aged 92 years. He and wife made a deed to son JONATHAN, date April 1st, 1839, conveying ¾ of 182 acres bought by said JOHN from the heirs of Wyatt Bush, on Boone's Creek, in Clarke County (Kentucky)."

The above information is a typed copy, and we have no record of where Mr. BOURNE got his information, except the children from Mr. DYE. The odd name, TALLITHA, seems to go through the family, as one of

RICHARD'S daughters was named TALLITHA and others.

I regret that I did not find this information for you the first time you wrote.

Sincerely,
(Signed) FRANCES COLEMAN
Librarian

MORTON GRAVEYARD

Morton graveyard is located about a mile down Grimes Mill road and about three quarters of a mile from the road through the farm of a Mrs. SLOANE. An unusually large enclosure, the old rock fence still remains although parts of it have fallen. It is assumed that RICHARD and JUDITH Q. MORTON are buried here since it was on this farm that he died in 1815. Most of the stones are broken, some in fragments and a few are illegible. Those remaining include:

JOHN MORTON born Aug. 16, 1757; died May 29, 1839.
JOHN MORTON Born July 8, 1800; died Oct. 8, 1863.
LU ANN B., Consort of JOHN MORTON; Born Feb. 12, 1810 - Died Nov. 15, 1860.
JOHN W. MORTON (stone broken, no dates available)
DAVID MORTON born Sept. 1779; died Oct. 17, 1824
JONATHAN MORTON Born Sept. 8, 1779 died Oct. 11, 1852; age 73 yrs.
CHINA B. MORTON Born Oct. 1787; died Jan. 17, 1862.
SHELBY MORTON Born Oct. 28, 1819; Died May 16, 1886 ("Died as he lived, an honest man.")
DAVID, Son of DAVID and MARIA MORTON Born April 18, 1868 - Died Oct. 17, 186–.
SALLIE, dau. of DAVID and MARIA MORTON Born Sept. 18, 1861 - Died Apr. 18, 1862.
MARY P., Dau. of A. P. and S. F. GRIMES Born June 12, 1846 - Died Nov. 12, 1879
(Stone with letters JO ——— M rest missing)
Stone with JOSEPH J. rest missing
Baby's stone with dates 1857-1858; name illegible
Baby's stone with name MORTON 1857-1858 rest missing)

I swear that the above is a true and correct copy of the grave stones which I found and copied in the Morton graveyard, October 1960.

Kathryn Owen

State of Kentucky
County of Clark
Subscribed and sworn to me this July 3, 1961

IVA JOHNSON NOTARY PUBLIC CLARK COUNTY

by Kathryn Owen
My Commission expires March 1, 1962

Iva Johnson
Notary Public for Clark Co Ky.

JOHN MORTON, SR. to JOHN MORTON, JR.
one half interest in 147 A.
1 March 1837; Deed Book 28 page 179

"JOHN MORTON, Sr. to JOHN MORTON, JR. ½ interest in 147 a. on waters of Boones Creek. Boundary beginning with corner of WILLIAM PEDDICORD to a stone pointing thence N.E. 145 poles to a stake in Hickman's line thence S. 87 poles W. 162 poles to a sugar tree on HICKMAN'S line thence E. 144 poles to a stone and white oak stump, west side of ROGERS Mill Road, corner to WM. PEDDICORDS thence with PEDDICORDS line W. 85 poles E. 164 poles to beginning. Land on which JOHN and TALITHA MORTON are living."

According to the deposition of JOHN MORTON, JOSIAH HART vs. RICHARD TANNER. JOHN SR. lived within 100 yrds. of his father, RICHARD MORTON, and many documents already cited prove that RICHARD and his family were from Prince Ed. Co. Va. before removing to Clark Co. Ky.

JOHN MORTON SR., husband of TALITHA, died May 29, 1839 and at the August Court of that year his son JOHN MORTON JR. was granted adm. on the estate of JOHN MORTON SR. (Clark Co. Ky. Order Bk. 10 p. 478).

In the inventory and appraisement of the personal property and slaves JOHN MORTON SR. dec'd. is spoken of as "Capt. JOHN MORTON" while his son JOHN MORTON JR. is called Col. MORTON. (Wills and Estate Bk. No. 9 p. 406 - 18 Sept. 1839 Clark Co. Ky.)

Dower rights were granted TALITHA MORTON, widow of JOHN MORTON SR. on 23 May 1841. (Ibid p. 605)

The division of the estate of Capt. JOHN MORTON SR., was effected at that May court of Clark Co. and many of the grand children of his deceased sons and daus. were named including those of QUIN MORTON who died in Alabama in July 1837 almost two years before the death of his father in May 1839 at the age of 82.

JOHN MORTON, Exec. (524) vs. JOHN MORTON Heirs, Filed Oct. 1839, 1840 March Traverse Court, September Traverse Court, March 1841-hearing set aside, June Exhibit filed by Complaintants and bill and cross bill discont. without prejudice.

Records from Clark County Circuit Clerk's office.

To the Judge of Clark County Court in Chancery sitting, Complaintants JOHN MORTON, WILLIAM MORTON, WILLIAM WEBB and SUSANNAH, his wife, JONATHAN MORTON, TALITHA GHOLSON, TALITHA MORTON.

On day ——— year ———— JOHN MORTON died without having made a will, seized of a tract of land lying on

Boones Creek in Clark County, containing about 73½ acres where on he was living at the time of his death and leaving your complaintant TALITHA MORTON, his widow, and your other complaintants, his children who together with the following named persons who are prayed to be made defendants to this bill constitute the whole of his heirs.

To wit: SUSAN ANDERSON, AMERICA HUNT, wife of WILLIAM HUNT, TALITHA HODGES, wife of JOHN HODGES, LUCY MORTON and AGNES HAYMIE, wife of JAMES HAYMIE and MARY W. MORTON, who are the children of QUIN MORTON deceased, who was another son of JOHN MORTON.

And WILLIAM MORTON, JOHN W. MORTON, DAVID MORTON, JONATHAN MORTON, CATHERINE MORTON and TALITHA ALLEN, wife of JAMES ALLEN who are the children of DAVID MORTON, deceased who was another son of JOHN MORTON.

And WILLIAM MORTON, GEORGE GREENUP MORTON, JAMES F. MORTON, RICHARD MORTON, TALITHA PARRISH, wife of ISAAC PARRISH and HARRIET MORTON and LUCY BARNES, wife of ALVIN BARNES, who are children of RICHARD MORTON, deceased who was another son of JOHN MORTON.

And TALITHA OWEN, REBECCA OWEN, SUSAN OWEN, QUIN OWEN, and MARY MEZRICH wife of JOSEPH MEZRICH, who are all children of LUCY OWEN, deceased, who was a daughter of JOHN MORTON.

And MORTON CRAIG, NANCY MENDENHALL, wife of MILES MENDENHALL, who are children of BETSEY CRAIG, deceased; GEORGE PATTEN, only child of SARAH PATTEN, deceased, late SARAH CRAIG, another daughter of BETSEY CRAIG, who was another daughter of JOHN MORTON.

And the said husbands of the aforesaid named defendants are also prayed to be made defendants to this bill. Your complaintants state that your complaintant, JOHN MORTON (JR.) obtained from the Clark Court letters of administration on the estate of his father and in that character sundry negroes, eleven in number, and some personal estate came to the hands of your complaintant, JOHN MORTON. They state that your complaintant, TALITHA MORTON has not yet had her dower allotted to her in said slaves and land which they hope will be done by a decree of the Clark County Court. We ask sale of the negroes and proceeds distributed to heirs, ask a division of land amongst the heirs of JOHN MORTON SR.

(In the third paragraph, relating to the children of QUIN MORTON, the names of AMERICA HEARD and her husband, WILLIAM HEARD, are mistakenly given as HUNT.)

STATE OF KENTUCKY)
)SCT
COUNTY OF CLARK)

I, L. C. ALDRIDGE, Clerk of the Clark Circuit Court, certify that the contents of the above brief of Suit No. 524, wherein JOHN MORTON Executor, Plaintiff Vs.; JOHN MORTON'S Heirs, Defendants, which was filed in the Clark Circuit Court, at Winchester, Clark County, Kentucky, as far as the names of the litigents and all heirs are true and correct, which brief was made by KATHRYN OWEN of Winchester, Kentucky, from the records of the office of the Clerk of the Clark Circuit Court, at Winchester, Kentucky, this March 1, 1962.

L. C. ALDRIDGE, Clerk
By
Deputy Clerk

This letter, written at age 82, and produced by a relative after the publication in 1957 of "We Cousins Vol. I." had some valuable help, if produced before lengthy research was completed. Also has some errors.

Flatonia, Texas.
Jan. 22, 1901

Miss MATTIE G. WELLS -
Mr Dear Niece -

I received your letter last Friday & will now try to answer it. You asked me to tell you all I know of the MORTONS. I will commence with my grandmother. She was a Miss TALITHA TINSLEY. She professed religion at the age of 13 - married JOHN MORTON in Prince Edward Co., Virginia. Moved to Kentucky in her very early days. They had six sons & two daughters - Aunt SUSAN WEBB & Aunt LUCY OWEN. The boys are QUINN MORTON - DAVID & JONATHAN twin brothers, RICHARD and JACK and WILLIAM - who was next to QUINN. QUINN MORTON was my father - he was a Methodist preacher for twenty years - backslid & died in '37. Uncle WILLIAM & Uncle JACK were Campbelite preachers. Uncle RICHARD married & had two children - a son & daughter & died - I don't remember what year. His son was named GREENUP - for a county in Kentucky - his widow moved to Missouri. GREENUP afterwards became Governor of Missouri - I don't know the dates of his term. Uncle WILLIAM & Uncle JACK married - but had no children. Uncle DAVID Never married - he went to Ill. to see about some land & died while he was on his trip. Uncle JOHNATHAN married and had a good many children. I don't know how many. I have seen two of his children - Coz. MARY & Coz. WILLIAM. The last I heard of Coz WILLIAM he was doing well, as a young physician, in Louisville, Ken.

Aunt LUCY OWEN was left a widow with several children - I don't know anything about them tho. Aunt SUSAN married a Dr. WEBB - I don't know anything of her children either. I have told you about all of my Uncles

now I'll tell you about my father. My father & mother were married in Pittsylvania Co. Va. They had a son JOHN SHELTON he died in infancy - they moved from there to North Carolina. They had a son there, named DAVID TINSLEY - who died there. They then moved to East Tenn. - Anderson Co. and there thcy raised eight children - the eldest one was your great great grandmother - TALITHA - then the rest was AMERICA - then WYLIE BLUNT and DAVID SHELTON - then SUSAN McKENDREE - and AGNES SUTHERLAND and then LUCY MARIA which is me - and THOMAS WILLIAM & MARY WALKER the baby. WYLIE BLUNT died when he was 15 years old - he professed religion on his death bed & died praising God. THOMAS WILLIAM died when he was four yrs old. DAVID SHELTON died in '37 - leaving a wife and two boys who are now dead - one was named QUIN & the other DAVID. QUINN died & DAVID married & had four children three girls & one boy his children are now living in Ark. - the girls are highly educated & are teachers. The boy hasn't finished his education yet - I suppose you know what became of my other sister - they in Egypt, Texas, but one SUSAN SAMPLE died in Miss. - nine years ago. I am the only one of the family that is living now & I am now eighty two, 82 yrs old - Now we will go back to my grandmother TALITHA MORTON - Grandfather lived to be 86 or 87 yrs. of age. I don't know whether he was ever a Christian or not - From the time grandmother was 13 yrs. old till the time of her death - she read her Bible through every year - had family prayers night & morning with her children and trained them up in the way they should go. The whole family connection are rather of a literary character - and were all Campbelites except my father who was a Methodist. I can not write myself and my dear granddaughter, FRANCES LANE, wrote this for me - she is visiting us now from Austin. She came down to stand up with LIZZIE MENEFEE - who was married last Wed. - and everybody says shc was the prettiest one of the girls - and when you go to Austin you must go to see my daughter BETTIE and her girls - they will be glad to see you. FRANCES is my favorite - give my love to Coz. AGNES and Coz. ED. - and all of them - but keep a good share for yourself - Write to me again when you can.

Your loving Aunt LUCY

The testimony here, and else-where, to the fact that JOHN MORTON was the father of four sons, who were ministers of the Gospel, is an aid in establishing the Rev. War Service of JOHN MORTON, son of RICHARD, according to the following quotation:

"JOHN MORTON was a Capt. in the Continental Army. His father, being a Quaker, was opposed to the war and restrained his sons from joining the regular army until the traitor ARNOLD, invaded Virginia in 1781. At this time JOHN MORTON enlisted and served under General WASHINGTON when CORNWALLIS surrendered. Four of his children were preachers."

It is not likely that there was more than one JOHN MORTON of this era who had four sons who became ministers of the Gosple.

The "Aunt LUCY" of this letter was actually Aunt to MARY ELIZ. HODGES grandmother of the addressee, MATTIE WELLS. LUCY MORTON, dau. of QUIN and his wife ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, m. ------ SULLIVAN and moved with him to Fayette Co. Texas in 1856.

Their son ROBERT A. SULLIVAN fell in the Battle around Richmond 27 June 1862. His cousin, QUIN MORTON MENEFEE, wrote a touching tribute to him and the Confederate cause he espoused.

Seventh Generation - MORTON (Continued)

IV. Children of JONATHAN MORTON, son of RICHARD and JUDITH, and his wifc LETTIE McCARGO whom he m. 25 Nov. 1784 in Prince Ed. Co. Va. Issue:

1. MARTHA MORTON b. 21 July 1785; m. 4 Oct. 1804 WILLIAM PALMER, son of JOSEPH and ELIZ. LANGSTON PALMER, in Clark Co. Ky.
2. POLLY MORTON m. 30 July 1804, in Clark Co. Ky., THOMAS SANDERS; d. before 1824.
3. SUSAN MORTON m. ARMISTEAD C. BRAGG; d. before 1836.
4. QUINN MORTON m. ANGELINA BLANKENSHIP.
5. HEZEKIAH MORTON m. 1827 HANNAH BURTON.
6. DAVID MORTON.
7. JOHN MORTON m. MARY.

V. SARAH MORTON, dau. of RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH QUIN b. in Va.; d. 1819 in Clark Co. Ky.; m. in Va. before 1787 ARCHELAUS TANNER d. about 1795. Issue:

1. JUDITH TANNER b. 1772 in Va.; d. 2 Aug. 1825 in Clark Co. m. JOSIAH HART.
2. BRANCH TANNER b. 1782 in Va.; d. 25 June 1870 m. HANNAH COOPER.
3. DAVID TANNER b. 29 Oct. 1785; d. 16 Mar. 1862; m. 5 Aug. 1813 LYDIA FRANKLIN, dau. of REUBEN FRANKLIN.
4. JONATHAN TANNER b. 1793 in Clark Co. Ky., d. 1819; m. 1818 ELISA WILLIAMS who died in 1819.
5. ARCHELAUS TANNER JR. d. before July 1840.
6. RICHARD M. TANNER named for his grandfather, RICHARD MORTON, m. ELIZABETH.
7. NANCY TANNER d. before 1826; m. 22 April 1795 her cousin, RICHARD MORTON, son of SAMUEL.
8. JOEL TANNER died before 1825; did not marry.
9. JOHN TANNER died before 1825; did not marry.

Will of SARAH MORTON TANNER. (Will Bk. 4 - Clark Co. Clerk's Office. p. 383)

In the name of God, Amen: I, SARAH TANNER of Clark County, State of Ky. being weak in body but sound and perfect in mind and memory do make and publish this my last will and testament in manner and form following:

I appoint my two sons, ARCHELAUS and BRANCH TANNER my executors, second to pay all debts. I give and bequeath to my daughter, JUDITH HART, two hundred and fifty dollars in the following manner. She is to have the full right of said $250 in her lifetime and at her death I give it as follows: $50. to MORGAN HART; $100 to POLLY HART, and the balance, $100, to JOEL HART.

To RICHARD MORTON, who married my daughter, NANCY TANNER, I give one dollar. To my son, ARCHELAUS TANNER, I give and bequeath all of my household furniture, cattle, hogs, my mare and every article on my place also my negro man JOHN and give POLLY ––––– to pay my son RICHARD M. TANNER $200. To my son BRANCH TANNER I give and bequeath my negro man, ISAAC, and to my granddaughter SALLY ANN, dau. of my son BRANCH TANNER, I give $100. To my son DAVID TANNER, I give and bequeath one negro boy, WILLIAM and $100. To my granddaughter SARAH ANN, dau. of my son DAVID TANNER, I give my negro boy LUOIZ (?). To my son JONATHAN M. TANNER, I give and bequeath my negro woman NINA and he to pay my son RICHARD M. TANNER $100. My son JONATHAN M. TANNER is not at liberty to sell, take or cause to be sold or taken said negro woman NINA, a greater distance from this place than where he now lives. To my son RICHARD M. TANNER, I give $300. which with the $200. to be paid him by my son ARCHELAUS and $100. by my son JONATHAN, making in all six hundred dollars.

The above $750. is to be obtained by the hire of PATRICK, ISAAC and JOHN ––––– paid as follows: out of the first year hire to pay my son RICHARD M. TANNER $200. and to my daughter JUDITH HART, the interest of the balance of the year. Second year to be paid RICHARD M. TANNER, balance to JUDITH HART, to have her full interest on $25. per year. The $250. to be placed in some persons hands and she to receive the interest only. The balance of the legatees, DAVID and SALLY ANN to have their legacies as soon as it can be obtained by hire of said negroes. After all the above is paid, my negro man PATRICK to be sold and the money equally divided between my sons ARCHELAUS, BRANCH, DAVID and JONATHAN M. TANNER. Should they, the above negroes not want to be sold out of the family, one of the above named sons to take him and pay the others their part, all to take possession of the above named property at my death except the above named negroes who are to be hired and they to be given up as soon as the hire is obtained.

In witness whereof I hereby set my hand and seal this 31 of Oct. 1818.

Signed: SARAH TANNER

VI. Seventh generation, children of SUSANNAH MORTON m. 17 Nov. 1786 in Prince Ed. Co. Va. WILLIAM TINSLEY.

TINSLEY was one of the several individuals, kinsmen of TALITHA, wife of JOHN MORTON who moved to Clark Co. Ky from S. C. in the years 1790 to 1800. More of this in the TINSLEY Chapter.

"On 31 Oct. 1805 in Clark Co. Ky. WILLIAM TINSLEY and SUSANNA his wife and JONATHAN MORTON (who was brother of SUSANNAH) and LETTICE, his wife, of Clark Co., State of Ky., to JOHN DUNCAN of said Co. and state, 105 acres in Clark Co. on west fork of Stoner, part of Gen. BENJ. HARRISONS preemption conveyed by HARRISON to JONATHAN MORTON who conveyed part of same to WILLIAM TINSLEY." (D. Bk. 5 p. 416)

WILLIAM died the year after this conveyance and in the division of his estate, a sizeable one for that day and for a minister, his wife and daughters were named.

Book II Will and Settlements - Clark County, Ky.

Agreeable to an order of the worshipful county court of Clarke we, RICHARD HICKMAN, EDMUND HOCKADAY, SR., ISSAC HOCKADAY and ISAAC TINSLEY having sworn, have appraised in current money the slaves and personal estate of WILLIAM TINSLEY, deceased as follows, viz;

(follows a list, four pages in length, of household goods)

At court held for Clark County on 22nd day of Sept. 1806.

Book No. III Will and Settlements - page 183

We the undersigned companions appointed by the worshipful county court of Clarke have provided and divided the estate of WILLIAM TINSLEY deceased in the following manner, to wit: to SUSANNAH MINOR (formerly SUSANNAH TINSLEY), widow, we have allotted one negro man, MICHAEL, girls PHILLIS, CLOEY, ELISA and boy, BILLY together with sundry the household kitchen furniture, stock amounting to $1764.56. To PUGH PRICE and LETTIS, his wife, one negro woman named MALINDY, boy named FORD, girl named MIRTY and sundry other articles amounting to $882.28 also to JESSE LANDSDELL and ELIZABETH, his wife, one negro woman named FANNY, boy DAVID, boy DICK and girl LUCINDY and other sundry articles amounting to $882.28. To TALITHA TINSLEY, one negro girl named NANCY, boy NAT, boy ISAAC and girl SUSANNAH, amounting $882.28 and to SALLY TINSLEY one negro woman named JANE, boy ISAM, girls MARY and JUDY amounting $882.28.

Given under our hands this 12th day of Feb. 1813.

RODES SMITH
ANTHONY LINDSAY
ROBERT BOND

This seems to be the estate settlement of WILLIAMS TINSLEY, who married in Prince Ed. Co. Va. 17 Nov. 1786 SUSANNAH MORTON, dau. of RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH QUIN. He was the bro. of TALITHA, wife of JOHN MORTON.

This division comes more than six years after the death of WILLIAM in 1806. During that period TINSLEYS widow had married ----- MINOR.

His daughters were: LETTIS, wife of PUGH PRICE, ELIZABETH, wife of JESSE LANSDELL, TALITHA TINSLEY, SALLY TINSLEY.

He is said to have had sons ISSAC and RANSOME and others in the twenty years of his marriage to SUSANNA. They no doubt, inherited the land and other slaves of this rather substantial estate for a minister of that day.

VII. LUCY MORTON, dau. of RICHARD and JUDITH, m. RADFORD McCARGO in 1786 in Prince Ed. Co. Va.

RADFORD McCARGO'S Revolutionary War Service S 16955 Virginia

State of Kentucky, Fayette County, on the 20th day of February 1834 personally appeared before WILLIAM BOON, a Justice of the Peace, the above named soldier, RADFORD McCARGO, a resident of Fayette Co. Kentucky, aged 72.

He was a resident of Cumberland Co., Va.; enlisted August 1779 for three months in company of Captain LANGHORNE and served during said tour, rendezvoused at court house and was marched to Hillsborough N.C. where they came under the command of General Stephens and marched from there to Guilford courthouse where he remained until discharged at expiration of his tour.

While still a resident of Cumberland Co., Va. he enlisted as a private in June 1781 for three months in company of Captain HARKNESS (HASKINS?) rendezvoused with his company at Petersburg, Va. and was marched to Cabin Point, thence to Smithfield, thence to Stony Hill, then to Suffolk, where he continued until expiration of his term of enlistment.

He again enlisted in April 1781 as private, for 3 months in company of Captain CHARLES YEARBY, was marched to court house in Prince Edward County where he remained until expiration of enlistment.

He again enlisted in July 1781 for three months in company of Capt. ALEXANDER GUTHRIE was attached to regiment commanded by Col. HOLCOMB, was marched from Prince Edward Co., Va. to Amelia Co., Va. thence marched to join army of General LaFayette, was attached to Brigade of General LAWSON. Continued with the army for a short time in operation against the British under CORNWALLIS and was then detailed under Captain DAVIS as part of a guard for stores near Brock's Bridge in Orange Co. Va. where he remained during the whole of residue of his tour and at termination thereof a company of militia under Captain JAMES UPSHAW came as a guard and he immediately entered service in said company for two months and remained there during whole period and at termination was discharged and went to his father's house in Prince Edward county, Va. to which county his father had removed during the time he was in service.

He was born in Cumberland County, Va. in 1762 and was living in that county when called into service but afterward he left service and went to Prince Edward Co. Va. where he continued to live until 1787 and then moved to Fayette Co., Ky. and from there to Clark County and then back again to Fayette Co., Ky.

Although McCARGO moved to Clark Co. with the many other Virginia MORTONS, there is no proof there of his children.

Eighth Generation

Descendants of RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH QUIN; children and grandchildren of SAMUEL MORTON and his wife PHILADELPHIA WADE.

I. RICHARD MORTON, son of SAMUEL and PHILADELPHIA WADE MORTON was b. in Va. He m. (1) NANCY TANNER, his cousin April 22, 1795, dau. of ARCHLAEUS and SARAH (MORTON) TANNER. NANCY TANNER d. previous to 1805 and RICHARD MORTON m. (2) MARY (POLLY) NOLIN on Jan. 28, 1805 in Clark Co., Ky. They later moved to Madison Co., Ky. Issue:

1. WADE MORTON son of RICHARD and NANCY TANNER MORTON d. prior to 1824. Left no heirs. Names of possible children of POLLY NOLIN MORTON are not known at present time.
2. ARCHIBALD MORTON, son of RICHARD and NANCY T. MORTON. ARCHIBALD MORTON of Clark Co. and RICHARD MORTON of Madison Co. convey to BRANCH TANNER their interest in tract of land which descended from ARCHELAUS TANNER to his children and to which they acquire a right by reason of the death of WADE MORTON, brother of said ARCHIBALD.

Deed Book 6, p. 122

RICHARD MORTON sells and conveys to DAVID BRANDENBURGH of Clark Co. Ky. his interest in negroes as willed by PHILLIP WADE of Prince Edward Co. Va. to "My mother, DELPHIA MORTON" of County of Clark, State of Ky. Jan. 26, 1807.

1811 Deed - RICHARD MORTON and POLLY his wife of Madison Co. Ky. and SAMUEL MORTON and ARCHIBALD MORTON both of Clark Co. convey to RICHARD BEAN their interest containing 52 acres in Clark Co. Part of a tract of 241 acres patented to said RICHARD MORTON, May 30, 1811 granted by Co. of Clark in 1802. Land on Waters of Four Mile and Stoner and upper Howard's Creek.

II. ARCHIBALD MORTON, son of SAMUEL and PHILADELPHIA WADE MORTON; b. in Virginia. (No further information).

III. SARAH MORTON, dau. of SAMUEL and PHILADELPHIA WADE MORTON m. WILLIAM PERKINS. Issue:

1. PHILADELPHIA PERKINS m. WILLIAM S. BURRUS Feb. 2, 1825.
2. TALITHA PERKINS m. BEVERLY HAMILTON Feb. 2, 1825.
3. MARTHA PERKINS m. ROBERT ANGEL Jan. 12, 1822.

IV. AGNES MORTON, dau. of SAMUEL and PHILADELPHIA MORTON b. in Va. came to Ky. with her parents around 1795; m. DAVID BRANDENBURG July 23, 1795 in Clark Co. Ky. Date of death is not known but court records show that she died before her father, his death was prior to 1844. Children of DAVID and AGNES MORTON BRANDENBURGH:

1. PATSEY m. JOHN MARCH;
2. HENRIETTA m. ----- IRVINE;
3. DAVID;
4. SOLOMON;
5. ELIZABETH m. ABSALOM MARCH Apr. 6, 1815.

V. ELIZABETH MORTON, dau. of SAMUEL and PHILADELPHIA WADE MORTON; b. in Va.; m. ELIAS PETTY Jan. 7, 1802 in Clark Co. Ky. Issue:

1. WILLIAMS PETTY;
2. SAMUEL PETTY;
3. POLLY PETTY m. HENRY HODSON;
4. WATSON PETTY.

VI. POLLY MORTON, dau. of SAMUEL and PHILADELPHIA MORTON; m. (1) NICHOLAS EASTIN Dec. 5, 1797; m. (2) LEROY HAMBLETON 26 Oct. 1826 at Winchester, Ky. Issue:

1. JOHN EASTIN, 2. JACKSON EASTIN, 3. NICHOLAS EASTIN, 4. JAMES EASTIN, 5. POLLY EASTIN m. WILLIAM HAMBLETON, 6. MARIA EASTIN m. QUIN MORTON Nov. 13, 1827, 7. RICHARD EASTIN (dec'd. by 1845), 8. ELIZABETH EASTIN m. ----- WILLS.

The following is taken from "Representative Men of Bartholomew and Jackson County, Indiana. Published 1904.

"Among those who figured in Ky. history during the days whose dangers gave it the name of "Dark and bloody ground" may be mentioned the name of HAMILTON. LEROY the first of the name who came to the state of Boone was a Virginian of the type who figured so largely in the early settlement of the Territory along the Ohio. After remaining a quarter of a century in this territory he moved on to Morgan Co. Illinois. WILLIAM HAMILTON, a son of LeROY was born in Clark Co. Ky. and farmed for some years near Winchester. In 1833 he moved his family by wagon to Indiana and eventually settled in Jackson County. He was a man of influence in his community and served many times as justice and trustee of the academy of which he was one of the founders. Before leaving Ky. WILLIAM HAMILTON married POLLY EASTIN of Clark Co. and after their arrival she assisted her husband, like all women of the pioneer times. They were both members of the Baptist faith and of exemplory lives in every way.

POLLY ANN EASTIN was born Jan. 1808, died March 1, 1840.

The above couple were married at Winchester, Ky., Oct. 26, 1826. Children of above couple: PERMELA HAMILTON, born Clark Co., Ky. Sept. 21, 1828, BENJAMINE HAMILTON, born Clark Co. Nov. 4, 1830; ELIZA JANE HAMILTON born Clark Co. Ky. Aug. 16, 1833; RICHARD E. HAMILTON born Jackson Co. Indiana Jan. 3., 1835; DULRENA HAMILTON born Jackson Co. Indiana Feb. 2, 1840. WILLIAM HAMILTON married (2) HANNAH DOUGLAS from Vermont. (Information on EASTIN family from Scrapbook at Winchester Public Library - Clipping from newspaper Column "Kentucky Kinfolks.")

Eighth Generation - MORTON

Descendants of RICHARD MORTON and his wife, JUDITH QUIN, grandchildren of his son, JOHN MORTON, and his wife, TALITHA TINSLEY.

I. DAVID MORTON, son of JOHN and TALITHA MORTON, b. Sept. 1779; d. Oct. 17, 1824); m. probably SARAH WAGONER. Issue:

1. WILLIAM A. MORTON m. JULIETTE;
2. JOHN W. MORTON;
3. DAVID MORTON;
4. JONATHAN B. MORTON;
5. CATHERINE MORTON m. THOMAS SUBLETTE;
6. TALITHA MORTON m. JAMES ALLEN.

Deed Jan. 15, 1841 between WILLIAM A. MORTON and JULIET, his wife, DAVID (T or L) MORTON of Jessamine Co.; JONATHAN B. MORTON of Franklin Co.; THOMAS SUBLETTE and CATHERINE C. SUBLETTE,

his wifc of Shelby Co.; and JAMES ALLEN and TALITHA ALLEN, his wife of Oldham Co., Ky.; to JOHN MORTON of Clark Co., Ky. all interest in 147 acres, same tract of land on which JOHN MORTON, SR. died, interest being undivided 5/6th of undivided 8th of undivided half descended to parties of the first part by descent of DAVID MORTON, descendant of JOHN MORTON.

Will of DAVID MORTON
(Son of RICHARD and JUDITH QUIN MORTON)
Will Bk. 5, page 460

Whereas, by the foreordination of God, it is appointed unto man to die once in Consequence of which when it pleaseth God that I should depart this life, it is my will that my estate shall be disposed of in the following manner: now first it is my will that for the kind affection which I have for my dear wife that she shall have my negro slaves with together all my horses, cattle, sheep, my household and kitchen furniture, all of my out buildings. All other special property as long as she remains my widow. Then second it is my will that my wife shall pay all my just debts out of the property left her. Then it is my will if my wife should marry that all my estate shall be equally divided among my children after her third is taken out, except my negro slave, JIM, who shall be hired for the term of three years privately to some humane person and then may sell him or continue to hire him as may appear best to the interest of my family. Then fourth it is my will that my wife, SARAH MORTON and AMBROSE BUSH shall execute this my last will and testament. Signed this 8th of September 1824.

Test:JAMES BROWNING, WM. CURRY
Clark Co. Nov. Court 1824

The last will and testament of DAVID MORTON, dec'd. was forwarded in court and proven according to law by oath of JAMES BROWNING and WILLIAM CURRY.

P. BULLOCK D. C. C.

II. JONATHAN MORTON, son of JOHN and TALITHA MORTON; b. Sept. 8, 1779 in Va.; d. Nov. 11, 1852 Clark Co. Ky.; buried in Morton graveyard on Grimes Mill Rd.; m. CHINA ——— (probably THOMPSON). (CHINA b. Oct., 1787; d. Jan. 17, 1862).

JOHNATHAN and CHINA MORTON lived on a farm on Boone's Creek adjoining that of his parents JOHN and TALITHA MORTON. Issue:

1. NATHANIEL H. MORTON;
2 DAVID b. Feb. 23, 1824; d. Sept. 12, 1898; m. MARIA W.;
3. SHELBY b. Oct. 24, 1819; d. May 16, 1886;
4. TALITHA A. MORTON;
5. SARAH T. MORTON m. A. P. GRIMES Sept. 2, 1845;
6. MARY A. MORTON m. DAVID GREENUP OWEN Dec. 24, 1849;
7. ELIZABETH b. Nov. 6, 1811; d. Aug. 22, 1881 m. GEORGE G. MORTON;
8. JOHN W. MORTON d. 1852 age 17 years.

Deed dated 1900, DAVID T. MORTONS' heirs to HELEN T. MORTON, 146 acres on Boone's Creek, signed FRANK MORTON, BUTLER T. MORTON, E. B. MORTON, WILLIAM H. MORTON, J. W. MORTON, MAUDE MORTON, STANLEY MORTON, SHERMAN MORTON, ADA MORTON and ——— MORTON, children and heirs of DAVID T. MORTON dec'd.

Will of SARAH GRIMES - Clark County Clerk's Office

I, SARAH GRIMES, of the county of Clark and State of Kentucky, being of sound and disposing mind do make this my last will and testament in manner and form as follows. In case my daughter MARY PHILLIP GRIMES should die without an heir, I bequeath my estate at her death to my sisters MARY OWEN and ELIZABETH MORTON and to my brother SHELBY MORTON, my nephew, BUTLER T. MORTON son of DAVID MORTON, my nephew ANDREW PHILLIP MORTON and neice SARAH MORTON, children of my brother NATHANIEL MORTON, to be equally divided among them all. So that my sister MARY OWEN, shall have my negro servant girl MARY, at a fair valuation. It is my will that my other negro servant girl, REBECCA, should be obtained by some one of the legatees above named at a fair valuation or should not be sold to be carried off. In testimony whereof I hereunto set my hand this ninth day of June in the A. D. 1858.

Witnesses: JOHN MORTON, E. C. BROWNING, SAMUEL CHILES, and DAVID MORTON.

III. QUIN MORTON, son of JOHN MORTON and his wife TALITHA TINSLEY, married ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN SUTHERLAND and his wife AGNES SHELTON.

QUIN MORTON'S marriage bond to ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN SUTHERLAND and his wife AGNES SHELTON, is recorded June 21, 1802 in Pittsylvania County, Va. (Marriage Bond Bk., p. 33). The certificate is signed by JOHN SUTHERLAND, father.

Their marriage date, June 26, 1802 is entered in the JOHN SUTHERLAND family Bible now in the Archives of the University of Texas Library at Austin, Texas, having been placed there by Mrs. BELL SUTHERLAND FARIES,

great granddaughter of QUIN MORTON and ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND.

QUIN MORTON was buried in the cemetery lot in the Oakwood Cemetery at Tuscumbia, Ala. with his father-in-law JOHN SUTHERLAND and his own wife, ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND MORTON McDONALD, who remarried after QUIN'S death in 1837 and who d. 27 Sept. 1847.

The name, QUIN, and the identical birth date alone, are not enough to fully establish QUIN MORTON of Tuscumbia, Ala. as the son of JOHN and TALITHA TINSLEY MORTON, but when we consider that he named his first son, DAVID TINSLEY MORTON, and his first daughter TALITHA ANN MORTON, there is little doubt that this QUIN MORTON was the grandson of JUDITH QUIN and RICHARD MORTON, and the son of TALITHA TINSLEY and JOHN MORTON. (QUIN MORTON'S children's names recorded in SUTHERLAND Bible now is University of Texas Library Archives, Austin, Texas). The 1841 estate settlement of JOHN MORTON SR. recorded in Clark Co. Ky. names his heirs, including the heir of his dec'd. son, QUIN MORTON. It is final and positive proof.

Let us review then the record of QUIN MORTON: b. in Va., June 6, 1781; d. in Ala. July 4, 1837; m. June 26, 1802 in Pittsylvania Co., Va. ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, dau. of JOHN SUTHERLAND and his wife, AGNES SHELTON.

DAVID SHELTON and his son, JOHN SHELTON, father and brother respectively of AGNES SHELTON and grandfather and uncle of ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, who married QUIN MORTON, had large holdings in Kentucky near the home of QUIN MORTON. The grants, like the MORTONS', RICHARD and JOHN, were made in the late 1780's and in the same counties where the MORTONS settled. (Jillson's Kentucky Land Grants).

In 1799, DAVID SUTHERLAND, older brother of ELIZABETH, was given power of attorney in Caswell County, N. Carolina by his grandfather, DAVID SHELTON, to go to Kentucky and there to transact business for him. (Caswell County, N. Carolina Records K-361-1799).

DAVID SUTHERLAND died on June 20, 1800 (Family Bible Record) but it seems certain that QUIN MORTON had opportunity to meet and know these older maternal relations of ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND and perhaps to know her brother, DAVID, also.

The children of QUIN and ELIZABETH MORTON were recorded in the JOHN and AGNES SUTHERLAND Bible (U. of T. Archives) in QUIN'S own handwriting (compiler has seen his signature on documents in Anderson Co., Tenn.)

Children of QUIN MORTON and ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND:

1. DAVID TINSLEY MORTON; b. Mar. 26, 1803; d. Sept. 12, 1804.
2. JOHN SHELTON MORTON; b. Oct. 26, 1804; d. July 23, 1807.
3. TALLITHA ANN MORTON; b. Aug. 6, 1806 in Tenn.; d. Oct. 1, 1839 in Texas; m. Oct. 11, 1827 in Ala. JOHN W. HODGES, b. 1801 in Tenn.; d. April 17, 1858 in Texas. (See HODGES)
4. AMERICA MORTON; b. Mar. 3, 1808 in Tenn.; d. Aug. 8, 1853 at Egypt, Texas; m. W.J.E. HEARD, b. Aug. 16, 1801.
5. WILEY BLOUNT MORTON; b. Jan. 1, 1810; d. 1825.
6. DAVID SHELTON MORTON; b. Jan. 22, 1812; d. June 28, 1837 (date taken from tombstone) just 6 days before his father's death m. MARY ----- and left two small sons, QUIN MORTON and DAVID MORTON II) and his widow, who later m. GEORGE O. RAGLAND, (law suits in Alabama establish this fact).
7. SUSANNAH McKENDREE MORTON, b. Dec. 11, 1813; SUSAN MORTON m. (1) 5 Nov. 1831 ROBERT ANDERSON; m. (2) 21 Dec. 1837 JAMES SAMPLE b. 5 Oct. 1794. SUSAN SAMPLE d. in Miss. in 1892. Had dau. FLORENCE SAMPLE buried in Tuscumbia, Ala. in the SUTHERLAND lot.
8. AGNES SHLETON MORTON b. 25 April 1816; m. JAMES HAYMIE.
9. LUCY MORTON b. 1818; d. after 1901; m. ----- SULLIVAN.
10. WILLIAM THOMAS MORTON, d. at age 4.
11. MARY WALKER MORTON, still single in 1841.

See SUTHERLAND for the earlier generation foreparents of ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND MORTON.

Shortly after their marriage, QUIN and ELIZABETH MORTON had removed to Knox Co., Tenn. and lived in the part that was Anderson Co. after its erection in 1808.

Records show that for ten years QUIN MORTON was very active in the affairs of Anderson Co. beginning on March 30, 1808 when he was commissioned first major of Anderson Co. 13th Regiment of Militia (page 50 "Records of Commissions of Officers of Tennessee Militia"). In the War of 1812, he served as a chaplain, under Brig. General THOS. COULTER with the East Tenn. Militia. (Adjatant Generals Office, Nashville, Tenn.)

The last record of QUIN MORTON in Anderson Co. was January, 1819. In the 1820 U.S. Census, QUIN MORTON is listed in Limestone Co., Ala.

In 1867, Dr. THOMAS STITH MALONE published in the "Athens Post," at Athens, Ala. a series of biographies which he called "Early Civil, Political and Religious Leaders of Athens and Limestone County, Alabama." They were reprinted in the "Alabama Courier" (Athens) in 1943. The one relating to QUIN MORTON as a minister was published first:

REVEREND QUINN MORTON

"Mr. MORTON was a laborer" (for the Lord) "here at an early date, certainly in 1818; how much earlier, I cannot say. At some of our earliest camp meetings, Mr. MORTON was present and preached with much apparent success.

He was a man of warm, arden temperament and acquired somewhat the character of a revivalist, hence, his services were much in demand and for some years Mr. MORTON did much work and with marked results.

He exerted a fine influence until he was seduced into politics, when his moral influence was decidedly weakened and the confidence of many good men lessened in his piety.

The last few years Mr. MORTON lived in this county, his energies were pretty equally divided between the pulpit and the political arena.

He was a man of stout robust physical frame, a strong vigorous mind; and of liberal Catholic views.

He made friends readily and was himself a good reliable friend.

He moved from this county,(Limestone) I think about the year 1828 to Tuscumbia in which place and vicinity he resided, and preached occasionally, for several years and died -- Peace to his memory."

QUIN MORTON represented Limestone Co. in the Alabama State Legislature in 1820, 1821, 1822, 1824, 1825. After he moved to Tuscumbia, Franklin County, he served in the Senate from 1828 to 1834. His son, DAVID SHELTON MORTON, was secretary of the Alabama State Senate in 1834. (Ala. State Records)

Of QUIN MORTON as a politician, Dr. MALONE has this to say in the August 22, 1867 issue of the "Athens Post."

"In politics, Mr. QUIN MORTON differed widely from his colleagues. He was a man of decided characteristics, and of a vigorous, strong mind and large intelligence. He made himself felt and feared by his opponents on all important questions.

He was a man of marked loquaciousness and pretty respectable declamatory powers.

Perhaps politics were not his forte' and if he had eschewed all else and cleaved alone to the pulpit, he would have made a distinguished evangelist.

He settled after leaving this County at the Half-way House between Tuscumbia and South Florence where he engaged in Agriculture and preaching until his death in 1837. He died in peace." (Ref: Copied by MARY E. MASON from Vol. VI of her Athens and Limestone Co. History Scrap Book, June 23, 1956.)

From the newspaper "Flag" published at Tuscaloosa, Alabama July 19, 1837 when Tuscaloosa was the capitol of the state of Alabama, we have the obituary of QUIN MORTON.

REVEREND QUIN MORTON

"Died on the fourth, instant, at his home, five miles from Tuscumbia, Major QUIN MORTON, one of our oldest and, for many years, one of our most valuable public servants."

From the same paper on the same date, the death of his son DAVID was announced:

"Died on the 28th ult., DAVID S. MORTON Esq., son of Major QUIN MORTON, age about 24 years."

IV. ELIZABETH "BETSEY" MORTON, dau. of JOHN and TALITHA MORTON, b. April 13, 1785; m. GEORGE CRAIG 21 Dec. 1805; d. before 1841. Issue:

1. MORTON CRAIG;
2. NANCY CRAIG; m. MILES MENDENHALL;
3. SARAH CRAIG m. ----- PATTEN. Had son GEORGE PATTEN.

V. TALITHA MORTON, dau. of JOHN and TALITHA T. MORTON, b. May 8, 1787; d. Nov. 6, 1858; m. THOMAS GHOLSON Dec. 10, 1807 in Clark Co. Ky.

VI. LUCY MORTON, dau. of JOHN and TALITHA T. MORTON, b. Mar. 5, 1789; m. Mar. 13, 1812 DAVID G. OWEN; d. before 1841. Issue:

1. TALITHA OWEN;
2. REBECCA OWEN;
3. SUSAN OWEN m. FRANKLIN WRAGG;
4. QUIN OWEN m. AMANDA -----;
5. MARY OWEN m. JOSEPH MEZRICH.

These children of DAVID and LUCY OWEN were living in Carroll County when they signed a petition March 21, 1841 asking settlement of JOHN MORTON estate.

VII. WILLIAM MORTON m. MARY-----; moved to Shelby Co. Ky. WILLIAM MORTON was born in Clark Co. Ky. May 18, 1791; d. Sept. 10, 1858. Wife MARY, was b. 1801 and d. Dec. 5, 1874 at age 73 years. WM. and MARY J. MORTON are buried in Versailles Cemetery in Woodford Co.

Elder WILLIAM MORTON served as pastor of Providence (Baptist) Church, accepting the pastorate in Sept. 1822 and serving for one year. He was pastor of Friendship Church for several years. Dr. SPENCER in his History of Ky. Baptists says of Elder MORTON that "he was the first preacher of the region of the state to embrace the teaching of Mr. CAMPBELL, but he affiliated with the Baptists until 1829."

VIII. RICHARD MORTON, son of JOHN and TALITHA MORTON b. Nov. 22, 1793 d. before 1841; m. ELEANOR PETTICORD on Mar. 1, 1812 in Clark Co. Ky. RICHARD MORTON is mentioned in the Book "History of the Churches of Boone's Creek Association of Kentucky "by S.J. CONKWRIGHT - 1923 p. 27. "After the death of Bro. ROBERT ELKIN, the next pastor of Providence Church was Elder RICHARD MORTON who accepted the pastorate in 1822 but on account of poor health was compelled to resign after a few months. His brother WILLIAM, accepted the pastorate for one year, then Elder RICHARD MORTON again became pastor in Oct. 1823. He served the church until Mar. 1827."

About 1827 RICHARD and ELEANOR MORTON and their family moved to Jessamine County, Ky. (A reference to RICHARD MORTON is found in "History of Ky. Baptists" - Spencer, Vol. II p. 351.) Children of RICHARD MORTON and ELEANOR PETTICORD:

1. WILLIAM MORTON;
2. GEORGE GREENUP MORTON m. ELIZABETH MORTON Feb. 10, 1837;
3. JAMES F. MORTON;
4. RICHARD C. MORTON;
5. TALITHA MORTON m. ISAAC PARRISH;
6. HARRIET MORTON;
7. LUCY MORTON m. ALVIN BARNES.

A 1842 deed, JAMES F. MORTON to JOHN MORTON; 1/8th of ½ of 147 acres July 10, 1842 ISAAC O. PARRISH and TALITHA, his wife, GEORGE GREENUP MORTON and ELIZABETH his wife, RICHARD MORTON and JAMES F. MORTON of Jessamine Co. and ALVIN BARNES and LUCY BARNES his wife of Henry County and JOHN MORTON of Clark Co., party of the second part for $200 sell 147 acres tract on Boone's Creek, same tract where JOHN MORTON SR. died.

IX. SUSANNAH MORTON dau. of JOHN and TALITHA TINSLEY MORTON; b. May 20, 1796; d. Nov. 20, 1835; m. WILLIAM WEBB. Will of WILLIAM WEBB, not dated, was probated Aug. 25, 1845. Children mentioned are: WILLIS ANN WEBB, WILLIAM SMITH WEBB, SUSAN Q. WEBB, RICHARD WEBB, JANE M. WEBB, SARAH F. KERNEY wife of THOMAS KERNEY, GEORGE W. WEBB, PRISCILLY B. WEBB.

X. JOHN MORTON JR. b. Clark Co. Ky. July 8, 1800; m. ELIZABETH ROGERS dau. of JEREMIAH ROGERS. ELIZABETH ROGERS MORTON d. prior to 1846 and JOHN MORTON m. (2) LU ANNE B. CHRISTY dau. of AMBROSE CHRISTY. In the obituary of Judge JEREMIAH ROGERS MORTON (Lexington Morning Herald, Dec. 19, 1908) it is stated that JEREMIAH MORTON was a son of JOHN MORTON "one of six brothers, of whom four were ministers of the Gospel." (JOHN MORTONS' name in church records is listed as Elder JOHN MORTON.)

JOHN MORTON d. Oct. 8, 1863 and is buried near his father in the family burial ground on Grimes Mill Road (Clark Co. Ky). His wife LU ANNE is buried by his side. Her tombstone reads: LU ANN B. Consort of JOHN MORTON born Feb. 12, 1810; died Nov. 15, 1860. Children of JOHN MORTON and ELIZABETH ROGERS MORTON;

1. SUSAN FRANCES m. ISAAC WILLIAMS 1853;
2. TALITHA ANN m. GEORGE BRIGHT;
3. JOHN WILLIAM deceased by 1853;
4. ELIZABETH;
5. JEREMIAH ROGERS m. MARY GRATZ.

Children of JOHN and LU ANN CHRISTY MORTON:

6. MARY JANE MORTON; 7. LUCY MORTON; 8. SARAH A. MORTON.

On Oct. 13, 1865, E. BROWNING, executor for JOHN MORTON, stated that JOHN MORTON d. leaving 7 children: J. R. MORTON; heirs of SUSAN MORTON WILLIAMS; ELIZABETH MORTON; TALITHA A. BRIGHT; SARAH A. MORTON dec'd.; LUCY S. MORTON; MARY J. MORTON.

Eighth Generation - MORTON (Continued)

Descendants of SARAH MORTON TANNER and her dau. JUDITH TANNER and husband, JOSIAH HART.

I. JUDITH TANNER, dau. of ARCHELAUS TANNER and his wife SARAH MORTON. She was born in Va. 1772 and died Clark Co. Ky. Aug. 2, 1825 at age of 53 years. In 1792 she married JOSIAH HART son of THOMAS and MARY MORGAN HART of Va. THOMAS HART was a Revolutionary War General.

JOSIAH HART had inherited 800 a. of land where Winchester now stands and he was one of 8 trustees who helped to lay out the plan for the town. JOSIAH HART became improverished when an unscrupulous agent he trusted made bad investments. JOSIAH HART d. in 1845 at the age of 81. He and his wife JUDITH, are buried in the TANNER burying ground on the JOHN K. RAMSEY farm. Morris Rd. Clark Co.

Children of JOSIAH and JUDITH TANNER HART:

1. THOMAS HART b. Dec. 19, 1795 m. LUCY ASHLEY 1824, 2. MORGAN HART b. 1798, 3. ROBERT D. HART b. 1804, 4. MARY M. HART m. JOHN D. WEAVER, 5. JOEL TANNER HART b. Feb. 11, 1810; d. 1877, 6. JOHN HART b. 1802.

THOMAS HART, first son of JUDITH TANNER and JOSIAH HART served as Brigadeer General of the State Militia and represented Clark Co. in the Kentucky Legislature. He was a well known surveyor and lived about 1 miles from Winchester on Eston Rd.

JOEL TANNER HART, son of JUDITH TANNER and her husband JOSIAH HART, Sculptor, poet and inventor, Clark Co.'s most talented and versatile son. This son of JOSIAH and JUDITH T. HART was born in Clark Co. Ky on Feb. 11, 1810. He was a grandson of SARAH MORTON TANNER and great-grandson of RICHARD and JUDITH QUIN MORTON.

HART began his career building stone fences and chimneys around Bourbon County. He later worked in the Purden Marble yards, Fayette Co. dressing and engraving tombstones. Around 1842 JOEL T. HART departed for London where he studied anatomy in preparation for his career as sculptor. He then moved to Florence, Italy where he opened his studio. Here he spent the rest of his life, writing and executing his many wonderful work in marble.

Among the most famous of HART'S sculptored works were a life size statute of HENRY CLAY (now in Capital at Richmond, Va.) bust of ALEXANDER CAMPBELL, bust of ANDREW JACKSON, bust of CASSIUS M. CLAY. The lovely Il Penseroso; Morning Glory and his most famous work on which he endeavored for 20 years, called Woman Triumphant. 'Woman Triumphant' represented Venus with an arrow in her hand, lost from Cupids' bow. All the rest from his quiver lie borken at her feet. This last one she held over her head while the small cupid, on tiptoe stretched forth his arm to claim it. He hoped for this last chance to reach her heart, which he could not take by force but might take by entreaty. Force had failed and he must plead for his last dart, now the only means of reaching her heart. It was HART'S way of saying that woman must be wooed, not conquered. This rare piece of art was brought to Lexington, Ky. and placed in the Fayette Co. court house where it was destroyed by fire in 1897. The tower bell fell, striking the statue and shattered it.

JOEL T. HART died in Florence, Italy 1877. He was buried in the English Cemetery at Florence by the side of his friend Mrs. ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING. Later the Legislature of Ky. appropriated money for the purpose of returning his remains to Frankfort. His body was reinterred there on June 18, 1887. A handsome monument was erected over his grave, with the inscription, "Seek him not here but in the stone where he lives in his art's immortality."

JOEL TANNER HART came to Ky. in 1860 bringing with him two exquisite little marble tombstones for the graves of his father and mother, carved by himself, of the rarest carrara marble and erected them at their graves in the old family burying place, which is now owned by JOHN K. RAMSEY. It is situated a few hundred yards north of the Iron Work pike near little Stoner pike. The old graveyard has been sadly neglected and it is to be sincerely hoped that it will be restored and maintained as tribute to the parents of Kentucky's greatest sculptor.

II. BRANCH TANNER, son of ARCHELAUS and SARAH M. TANNER; b. 1782; d. Jan. 25, 1870; m. HANNAH COOPER. Abstract of BRANCH TANNER will: will written Aug. 1866, mentions sons, JOHN and ARCHY, children of dec'd. dau. SARAH A. RAMSEY, children of dec'd. son WILLIAM. Will probated Jan. 28, 1870. Exec. JOHN TANNER and ARCHY TANNER. Issue of BRANCH and HANNAH COOPER TANNER:

1. WILLIAM TANNER b. 1811 d. July 30, 1852; m. SUSAN PALMER;
2. JOHN M. TANNER m. MARY RAMSEY 1839;
3. SARAH ANN TANNER, b. Aug. 25, 1817; d. Aug. 30, 1856; m. S. A. RAMSEY;
4. ARCHY TANNER m. MARY E. STEVENSON.

III. DAVID TANNER, son of ARCHELAUS and SARAH M. TANNER, b. Oct. 29, 1785; m. LYDIA FRANKLIN, dau. of REUBEN FRANKLIN Aug. 5, 1813; d. Jan. 25, 1862. DAVID and LYDIA FRANKLIN TANNER moved to Bourbon Co. and were living there in 1825. Notes on SKINNER family by LEE IRVING PARKS says that DAVID TANNER m. (1) NANCY ALLEN (2) LYDIA FRANKLIN. Issue of DAVID and LYDIA FRANKLIN TANNER:

1. BRANCH M. TANNER (1817-1888); m. REBECCA SKINNER 1841;
2. REUBEN TANNER (1814-1840) m. HARRIET SKINNER 1838;
3. WILLIAM H. TANNER m. ELIZA ECTON 1841.

L. I. PARKS lists other children of DAVID and LYDIA F. TANNER as SARAN ANN b. 1812; PEGGY A. TANNER 1818-1822; LUISA ELIZABETH TANNER 1826-1827; JULIA ANN TANNER 1830.

IV. RICHARD M. TANNER, son of ARCHELAUS and SARAH M. TANNER b. ———— m. ELIZABETH ——————. RICHARD and ELIZABETH TANNER moved to Bourbon Co. and were living there in 1825.

V. JONATHAN M. TANNER, son of SARAH and ARCHELAUS TANNER, b. 1793 in Clark Co., Ky. In 1818, he married ELSIA WILLIAMS. One source of information says that he moved to Carlisle, Ky. in 1815 and a deed of 1825 between ARCHELAUS TANNER and BRANCH TANNER shows JONATHAN M. TANNER as a resident of Nicholas Co., Carlisle. ELSIA WILLIAMS TANNER had one son, his name not known but his son was named JOHN B. TANNER b. Oct. 9, 1846. He resided for a time in Jackson, Ky. moved later to Georgetown, Ky. and still later to Lexington where he lived with his son, JOHN B. TANNER, JR. JONATHAN M. TANNER was lawyer and teacher. He died in 1864 at the age of 71. ELSIA W. TANNER died in 1819.

Eighth Generation - and Later Generations

Descendants of JONATHAN and LETITIA MORTON and of his parents RICHARD and JUDITH MORTON of Clark Co., Ky.

1. MARTHA MORTON, dau. of JONATHAN and LETITIA b. 21 July 1785; d. about 1865; m. 4 Oct. 1804 WILLIAM PALMER d. 22 Mar. 1856. Issue:
   1. LUCY PALMER b. 19 June 1806; d. 18 Jan. 1834; m. JOHN LAWSON. Had: SOPHIA and JAMES LAWSON.
   2. ELIZABETH ANGEL PALMER, b. 20 Aug. 1809; d. 31 Dec. 1881 m. JAMES W. COLE b. 5 Dec. 1806; d. 27 Mar. 1872; son of JESSE and ELIZ. MEADOWS COLE. Issue:
      (1) SARAH CATHERINE COLE b. 12 Oct. 1828; d. 8 Feb. 1895; m. 18 Jan. 1844 JAMES BALLARD b. 22 Jan. 1812; d. 16 Oct. 1873.
      (2) LUCY JANE COLE b. 21 Feb. 1830; d. 23 Aug. 1868; m. GEORGE LEWIS BALL, son of JOHN and FANNY PITMAN BALL.
      (3) JESSE WILLIAM COLE, m. ANN HAZEL, moved to Missouri.
      (4) MARTHA ELIZ. COLE, did not marry.
      (5) JAMES HENRY COLE, died as infant.
      (6) MARY SUSAN COLE, died as infant.
      (7) REBECCA ANN COLE, b. 31 Mar. 1841; d. 30 Nov. 1924; m. 19 Nov. 1857 HEZEKIAH S. OWEN b. 19 Nov. 1831; d. 11 Feb. 1923.
      (8) JOHN MILLS COLE, did not marry.
      (9) AUGUSTUS MILLS COLE m. LOU GEORGE in Clark Co. Ky.
      (10) ROBERT DIDLICK COLE died in infancy.
      (11) JAMES ROBERT COLE b. 1854; d. 1915; m. ANNIE MEREDITH b. 1858; d. 1937.
   3. POLLY PALMER b. 4 Oct. 1811; d. 20 Nov. 1839; m. (1) JOSEPH STORM; m. (2) C. HARRIS.
   4. SUSAN PALMER b. 28 Mar. 1814; m. WILLIAM TANNER, son of BRANCH TANNER and his wife HANNAH COOPER. WILLIAM b. 1811; d. 30, July 1852.
   5. LETITIA PALMER b. 19 Dec. 1816; d. 6 Sept. 1894 m. JOHN WALDRIDGE.
   6. JOHN PALMER b. 22 Nov. 1820; d. 25 Sept. 1856; never married.

MORTON - Ninth and later Generations

Descendants of JONATHAN MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH QUIN, and his daughter MARTHA, who m. WILLIAM PALMER whose second dau. ELIZ. ANGEL married JAMES W. COLE.

I. LUCY JANE COLE b. 21 Feb. 1830; d. 23 Aug. 1868; m. GEORGE LEWIS BALL, son of JOHN and FANNY PITMAN BALL. Issue:
   1. MARTHA ELIZABETH BALL, b. 2 May 1853 in Clark Co. Ky.; d. 18 Feb. 1895; m. 6 Jan. 1886 JAMES JONES, son of JOHN JONES and MARY ANN LAWRENCE.
   2. FANNY PITMAN BALL, b. Clark Co. Ky. 1855; d. 14 April 1941; m. 9 Dec. 1879 JAMES G. WILLIAMS and moved to Kansas.
   3. CATHERINE CORDELIA BALL, b. 1857 in Clark Co. Ky. d. 1933; did not marry.
   4. WM. HIBBARD BALL b. 1860; d. 1936; m. (1) MARGARET WILSON; m. (2) KATIE PARRIS.
   5. ANNIE AUGUSTUS BALL, b. 1863; m. WEBSTER BRADFORD.

MORTON - Tenth Generation and Later

1. MARTHA ELIZABETH BALL, dau. of LUCY JANE COLE and GEORGE LEWIS BALL; granddau. of ELIZ. ANGEL PALMER and her husband, JAMES W. COLE; great granddaughter of MARTHA MORTON and her husband WILLIAM PALMER; great, great granddaughter of JONATHAN MORTON and his wife LETITIA McCARGO; m. 6 Jan. 1886, JAMES JONES. Issue:
   1. REBECCA OWEN JONES b. 20 Jan. 1889; d. 25 June 1961; m. Prof. M. A. PYLES.
   2. LUCIE CLIFTON JONES b. 31 July 1890; m. 10 Nov. 1914 BEN ROBERT OWEN son of HENRY CLAY OWEN and LEONA SOUSLEY OWEN. Issue:
      (1) HELEN PALMER OWEN b. 24 May 1916 m. JAMES WYCHERLEY. Issue: a. HELEN PALMER WYCHERLEY b. 8 Sept. 1944.
      (2) LEWIS COLE OWEN, b. 4 Jan. 1918; m. 6 Jan. 1946 HYCINTH LEIGH HOLLIDAY of Rockdale, Texas. Issue:
         a. NANCY CATHERINE OWEN b. 12 Dec. 1948;
         b. DEBRA LEIGH OWEN, b. 27 Sept. 1950;
         c. BARBARA ANN OWEN, b. 15 Jan. 1953;
         d. REBECCA COLE OWEN, b. 7 Sept. 1955;
         e. JOHN CLIFTON OWEN, b. 17 Mar. 1958.
      (3) BEN CLAY OWEN b. 6 Jan. 1920; unmarried.
      (4) NANCY KATHERINE OWEN, b. 24 Oct. 1921; unmarried.

The compiler of "We Cousins" Vol. II wishes to express her appreciation to NANCY KATHERINE OWEN for her excellent and generous contribution of Clark Co. Ky. Records of the MORTON family, which are recorded in this volume.

MORTON - Ninth Generation and Later

Descendants of JOHN MORTON and his wife, TALITHA TINSLEY, and their son QUIN and his wife, ELIZ. SUTHERLAND.

I. TALITHA ANN MORTON, dau. of QUIN and ELIZABETH MORTON; m. 11 Oct. 1827 in Franklin Co. Ala. JOHN W. HODGES, son of DAVID HODGES, SR. and his wife NANCY WARD b. 23 April 1801 in Smith Co. Tenn.; d. 17 April 1858 in Jackson Co. Texas at the home of his son-in-law, THOS. S. SUTHERLAND SR. Issue:

1. DAVID WILEY HODGES, b. 1 Jan. 1829; m. June 1956 OPHELIA C. LOTT.
2. QUIN MORTON HODGES, b. 4 July 1830; d. 11 Feb. 1832.
3. MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, b. 8 April 1832; d. 9 Jan. 1872; m. 17 Jan. 1848 THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND.
4. JOHN SUTHERLAND HODGES b. 28 Aug. 1834; m. 23 Oct. 1861 SARAH B. PETTUS.
5. SUSANNAH ANDERSON HODGES, b. 14 May 1836; m. 6 Sept. 1855 GEORGE W. BELL b. 25 Dec. 1834; d. 27 Dec. 1891.
6. TALITHA ANN HODGES b. 24 June 1839; d. 18 Aug. 1840 or 41.

JOHN W. HODGES m. (2) SUSAN LEWIS MENEFEE, his first wife's first cousin and had 7 more children.

Information from the Bible Records of the JOHN W. HODGES Bible now in possession of AGNES FANT RAMSAY of Dallas, Texas.

Later Generations in HODGES and SUTHERLAND Chapters

II. WM. JAMES ELLIOT HEARD b. Aug. 16, 1801 in Tenn.; d. Aug. 8, 1874 at Chapel Hill, Texas; m. (1) about 1826 in Ala. AMERICAN MORTON, dau. of QUIN MORTON and his wife ELIZ. SUTHERLAND; m. (2) Mrs. CHASE. Issue of 1st marriage:

1. ELIZABETH HEARD m. Dec. 24, 1845 MENTOR NORTHINGTON. Had:
   (1) WILLIAM NORTHINGTON m. PAULINE JONES; no issue.
   (2) GEORGE HEARD NORTHINGTON m. JESSIE VIRGINIA SIMMONS, dau. of JOSEPH and SARAH LOGAN SIMMONS. Issue:
      A. MENTOR NORTHINGTON m. CLARA BEARD: (a) JOSEPHINE NORTHINGTON (b) TOT NORTHINGTON.
      B. NETTIE ELIZ. NORTHINGTON m. REED WESTMORLAND: (a) REID WESTMORALND, JR. (b) JOSEPHINE WESTMORLAND (c) CAMERON WESTMORLAND (d) ELIZABETH WESTMORLAND.
      C. SADIE FRANCES NORTHINGTON m. TOM MENEFEE III) (see SUTHERLAND Section).
      D. MAMIE DUNCAN NORTHINGTON m. GEO. MERRIWEATHER: (a) GEO. MERRIWEATHER, JR. (b) WILL MERRIWEATHER.
      E. GEO. HEARD NORTHINGTON II) m. FRANCES, issue; (a) JESSIE VA., NORTHINGTON (b) GEORGE NORTHINGTON III) (c) HAROLD NORTHINGTON.
      F. RUTH VIRGINIA NORTHINGTON
      G. WM. ANDREW NORTHINGTON m. ESSIE CLEMENT: (a) WM. NORTHINGTON III) (b) CLEMENT NORTHINGTON (c) VIRGINIA LEE NORTHINGTON. (Ref. NORTHINGTON data from Centenial Notes of ROSE McCULLOCH)
2. SUSAN ANN HEARD m. DR. BARTLEY STANCHFIELD Had: (1) MARY STANCHFIELD m. ROBERT ELGIN; (2) OLIVIA STANCHFIELD m. R. E. CARTER; (3) CONCILIA STANCHFIELD.
3. QUIN MORTON HEARD m. (1) Jan. 25, 1855 MARY ELIZ. WILKERSON; m. (2) HENRIETTA CLAY WHARTON, widow of GEO. F. WHARTON, SR. Had:
   (1) AMERICA MORTON HEARD (MECK) b. April 17, 1858; m. ROBERT BURNS KENNON, b. Nov. 19,1856.
   (2) WILLIAM GUY HEARD, b. Aug. 17, 1860; d. May 28, 1937; m. June 4, 1885 JOSEPHINE HEARD b. Jan. 1, 1864; d. Feb. 10, 1925, dau. of JOE HEARD.
   (3) QUIN MORTON HEARD II) b. Mar. 9, 1862; d. 1936 in San Antonio, Texas; never m.
   (4) BARTLEY S. HEARD b. Feb. 25, 1864; died at 15 years of age.

Descendants of QUIN MORTON HEARD, son of W.J.E. HEARD, and his first wife, MARY ELIZ. WILKERSON.

I. WILLIAM GUY HEARD m. June 14, 1885 JOSEPHINE HEARD, dau. of JOSEPH HEARD and AGNES MOORE. Issue:

1. MYRTLE AMERICA HEARD, b. Oct. 23, 1885; d. June 4, 1901; never married.

2. THOMAS LEE HEARD, b. Mar. 8, 1887; d. Oct. 27, 1947; never married.
3. JOSEPHINE MARY HEARD, b. May 15, 1890; d. Mar. 22, 1947; m. DICK HUDSON.
   Had: (1) JOSEPHINE MARIE HUDSON.
4. WILLIE GLEN HEARD b. Mar. 8, 1892; m. Oct. 24, 1915 HERBERT JOHNSON.
   Had: (1) THURSTON JOHNSON (2) WILLIAM SIDNEY JOHNSON.
5. CLARIBEL HEARD b. Oct. 27, 1894; d. Oct. 11, 1927; m. May 30, 1914 CLAUDE APPLING.
   Had: (1) CLAUDE APPLING, JR. (2) DICK HEARD APPLING.
6. JAMES QUIN HEARD b. July 6, 1893; d. Aug. 13, 1952; m. Aug. 27, 1928 JESSIE MAE BARTLEY.
7. HASSIE HEARD, b. Dec. 22, 1901; d. Aug. 21, 1927; m. BOB WALLACE.
8. SAMUEL BUTLER HEARD, b. Jan. 6, 1904; m. Dec. 21, 1928 EDNA MAUDE COOK.
   Had: (1) SAMMIE ELLEN HEARD.

II. AMERICA MORTON HEARD, dau. of QUIN MORTON HEARD, b. Apr. 17, 1856; m. ROBERT BURNS KENNON. Issue:

1. WILLIE CLAY KENNON b. Nov. 8, 1876; d. as infant.
2. MATTIE IRENE KENNON b. Nov. 15, 1878; m. BONEVENTURE T. McGRATH. Had:
   (1) ETHEL IRENE McGRATH b. Nov. 3, 1913; m. D. S. ULLRICH. had:
      A. BARBIE S. ULLRICH; B., J. D. ULLRICH.
   (2) THOMAS B. McGRATH b. Mar. 26, 1916; m. LAURA M. WELCH. Had:
      A., T. R. McGRATH; B., S. J. McGRATH.
3. MATTIE HEARD KENNON, b. Oct. 22, 1888; m. DONALD H. YOUNG. Had:
   (1) DONALD A. YOUNG, b. May 6, 1908; m. WARDEN LOCKWOOD.
   (2) ETHEL IRENE YOUNG (twin) b. May 6, 1908; m. JAMES SCHMUCK
      Had: A. MARY E. SCHMUCK; B. VICTORIA SCHMUCK.

CHAPTER IX

TINSLEY GENERATIONS

I. THOMAS TINSLIE I) - Came to Va. 1638.

II. THOMAS TINSLEY II) of Essex Co. d. 1699.

III. THOMAS TINSLEY III) of Essex Co. and his wife, SARAH JACKSON.

IV. ISAAC TINSLEY of Amelia Co. Va., and his wife, MARGARET RUCKER.

V. THOMAS TINSLEY V) of Prince Ed. Co. Va. and his wife, MARY, or wives one of whom was ——— RANSOM.

VI. TALITHA TINSLEY b. 1757, m. JOHN MORTON, her brothers and sisters, children of THOS. TINSLEY V).

VII. QUIN MORTON and his wife, ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, m. 26, June, 1802, in Va.

VIII. TALITHA ANN MORTON m. 11, Oct., 1827, in Alabama, JOHN W. HODGES.

CHAPTER IX

TINSLEY

The connecting link between the MORTON Chapter and this chapter is TALITHA TINSLEY, daughter of THOS. TINSLEY V of Amelia and Prince Edward Cos., who married JOHN MORTON of Prince Edward Co. Va. in Sept. 1778.

At least seven of their children, including QUIN MORTON, born 1781, were born in Va. before they removed to Clark Co. Ky. about 1790.

They were the foreparents of a big connection of MORTONS of that county and state and of the many descendants of JOHN W. HODGES and THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND SR. of Texas.

According to the records contained in "Cavaliers and Pioneers" by Nugent, the first THOMAS TILSLEY (TINSLEY) in the new world came as a headright of JOHN ROBINS who was granted 1200 acres of land in James City Co. on 25 Feb. 1638 for the importation of his first wife, DOROTHY, and his second wife, ALICE, and twenty-two more persons. ("Cavaliers and Pioneers", p. 102)

The 1200 acres to ROBINS lay on the Chicahominy River in James City Co. beginning at Marsh Island.

THOMAS TINSLEY I) of the new world patented 300 acres on the west side of the Chicahominy River 13 Dec. 1650. This is another entry in "Cavaliers and Pioneers" with the name TINSLEY mis-spelled, but there is no mistaking the identity of THOMAS TINSLIE, who lived in James City Co. 2 Dec. 1655 and whose land was part of the boundry to 100 acres patented to SAMUEL SMITH on that date, said 100 acres lying in James City Co. on the north side of the Chicahominy River, northly on Moses Run along a sandy ridge to THOS. TINSLIES line. "Cavaliers and Pioneers," p. 323.

It is possible that THOMAS TINSLEY I) of Va. came even earlier than 1638 for, although the head-right system was started in 1619 when Virginia became a Royal Colony, in many instances it was 1636, 37 and 38 before the patents were issued under this system.

James City Co. is one of a block of counties including Charles City, Warwick, Gloucester, New Kent made in 1654 from York, James City, King and Queen made 1691 from New Kent, King William made 1701/2 from King and Queen, and Caroline (organized 1727/28 from Essex, King and Queen and King William) which have lost their records.

THOMAS TINSLEY I) of Va. probably was cut off in that part of James City Co. which became New Kent in 1654, and his descendants lived in these burned out counties for at least another generation before THOMAS TINSLEY II) of Essex Co. emerges in 1699, just in time for his death to be recorded in that county.

No doubt, both he and the THOMAS TINSLEY of New Kent Co. whose will was recorded in that county in 1702 were grandsons of the original THOMAS TINSLIE I) of the Colony of Va. in 1638.

It is reported that THOMAS TINSLEY of the 1700 will in New Kent married ELIZABETH PENDLETON. Perhaps there are family documents which prove this claim but there are many public records which indicate that it could have been THOS. TINSLEY II) of Essex Co. whose wife was ELIZABETH PENDLETON.

The best of these clues is that THOMAS TINSLEY III) of Essex and his wife SARAH, named their second son PHILIP TINSLEY.

The two original PENDLETONS in Va. were PHILIP PENDLETON b. 1650 in England and his brother NATHANIEL, a minister, who died shortly after he came to Va. and is thought to have never married.

PHILIP married twice, the first time in England, probably about 1679. The second wife, whom he married in Virginia, was ISABELLA HURT or HART. This name HURT or HART is found associated with the TINSLEYS of Va., South Carolina, and Kentucky who are descendants of THOS. TINSLEY III) of Essex Co.

Furthermore, JOHN PENDLETON, son of PHILIP, married about 1710 a Miss TINSLEY said to have been of Madison Co. Va. which was a daughter county of Culpeper Co. made of Orange, made of Spts. Co. made of Essex.

EDWARD TINSLEY married MARGARET, a daughter of Col. JAMES TAYLOR, whose dau. MARY, was the wife of HENRY PENDLETON, oldest son of PHILLIP.

EDWARD TINSLEY'S eldest daughter was ELIZABETH PENDLETON.

When THOMAS TINSLEY II) of Essex died in 1698 he left a son THOMAS TINSLEY III) who had probably just reached his majority so was born about 1675. When he made his will in 1715 all of his several children were under age.

This would mean that, if THOMAS II) of Essex was the husband of ELIZABETH PENDLETON, she would have been a sister of PHILIP PENDLETON born about 1650 in order to have been the mother of THOMAS TINSLEY born about 1675.

There is no record of the importation of the parents of PHILIP and NATHANIEL into Virginia but the sister may have come with her brothers "who were sent by their mother about 1674 in a ship whereof Capt. JOHN PLOVER was master."

"PHILIP PENDLETON returned to England at the end of 5 years and married there returning the same year and has since married (2) here and has several children, all residing in King and Queen Co." (Testimony of GEORGE WARD, age 57, 10 Aug. 1710 at the request of PHILIP PENDLETON).

THOMAS TINSLEY, whose wife was said to have been ELIZABETH PENDLETON, died in New Kent Co. in 1702. His will is dated 9 Oct. 1700 and in it he names his loving ELIZABETH who is to have the use of his plantation. during her natural life. ELIZ. was evidently his wife.

Their children were:

1. SOELILY (CECILY?) JENNINGS to whom he left one shilling;
2. ANN TYLER - one shilling;
3. SON THOMAS TINSLEY plantation and equipment after the death of his wife;
4. CORNELIUS TINSLEY ½ of residue of estate;
5. JOHN TINSLEY other ½ of residue of estate;
6. Granddaughter DEBORAH PAYNE.

This THOMAS TINSLEY is not the THOMAS TINSLEY II, who died in Essex. Co. before 21 June 1699, unless the date of one or other of these documents has become confused, which doesn't seem possible.

"Judgement was granted against Major WILLIAM MOSELEY, late sheriff of Essex Co. for 900 lbs. of tobo for the non-appearance of THOMAS TINSLEY at the suit of ROBERT PAYNE against the estate of THOS. TINSLEY 21 June 1699. (Essex Co. Court Orders 1695-1699)

Since THOMAS TINSLEY of New Kent had granddaughter, DEBORAH PAYNE, and ROBERT PAYNE of Essex is claiming part of the estate of THOMAS TINSLEY dec'd 1699, it would seem that these two of the same name are one, but unless the dates on the will of the former are in error this could not be true.

In 1698 a THOMAS TINSLEY patented 112½ acres of land in Essex Co. at the foot of Mt. Claybourne Hill on a branch of Portobago Creek adj. JAMES COGHILL and JAMES SCOTT (Land Patents Bk. 8 p. 1). We believe that this was THOMAS TINSLEY III) of Essex Co., who evidently acted as admt. of the estate of THOMAS TINSLEY II) of Essex who died before 21 June 1699.

Even this concurs with the will of THOS. TINSLEY of New Kent Co. for he named his son THOMAS TINSLEY JR. sole executor of his estate.

In 1704 two patents were made to THOMAS TINSLEY III for a total of 2400 acres. These grants were on Portabago and Tucahoe Creeks, one for 1000 acres and one for 1400. The land lay adjacent to EDWIN THACKER. ("Colonial Caroline Co." - Campbell p. 299)

On 26 April 1704, the wife of THOS. TINSLEY III) was SARAH.

On 5 Dec. 1706 THOMAS TINSLEY of St. Ann's Parish Essex Co. and SARAH his wife conveyed to JOHN ZACKERY of Middlesex Co. for 3700 lbs. of tobo, 150 acres, a part of a tract adj. to TINSLEY and belonging to him. This deed signed by THOMAS and SARAH TINSLEY is recorded in Essex Records 1706-1707 p. 317 and extracted in Dorman's Essex Co. Records p. 90. Evidence is that SARAH was dau. of ISAAC JACKSON, dec'd in 1700.

The witnesses were ROBERT COOK and W. J. HARDIE.

A conveyance of Feb. 1706/7 from JOHN MAY of Essex Co. for divers good causes to THOMAS TINSLEY of same, 1100 acres patented to JOHN MAY 20 Oct. 1704, land lying on the branches of Rappahanock and Mattopony Rivers at the head of a valley between Cockleshell Cr. and the head branch of Occupation Cr. adj. CHAS. BROWN and JOHN COLEMAN. (p. 334 of original Essex Co. Records - Dorman)

On the same day, THOS. TINSLEY transferred the said 1100 acres to ROBERT GEORGE and JOHN CHIDELL (Ibid p. 342).

On 8 May 1707 Mr. ROBERT GEORGE and SARAH, his wife, and Mr. JOHN CHEADLE and HANNAH, his wife, of Middlesex Co. planters to THOS. TINSLEY of Essex Co. for divers good causes a patent for 1150 formerly granted THOS. TINSLEY on 20 Oct. 1704 which was delivered to us by bill of sale Feb. 1706-7. (Ibid p. 27 original p. 404)

These deeds involving 1150 acres of land from MAY to TINSLEY to GEORGE and CHIDELL, and then from ROBERT GEORGE and wife, SARAH, and JOHN CHEADEL and wife, HANNAH, to THOS. TINSLEY without any statement of remuneration on the part of either, is certainly a departure from the usual pattern of land transactions, and no doubt involves some kind of family arrangement although it is not clear exactly what the conditions and the relationship are.

On 3 Oct. 1707, THOS. TINSLEY III) and ANDREW JACKSON made oath that on 25 or 26 of March 1706 they cleared and tended one acre of land belonging to Mr. WILLIAM LOWRY of 1040 acres lying near the branches of Tuckahoo and Occupation Creeks (Essex Co. Records 1707-1711 Bk. No. 13, p. 24). Probably ANDREW, like THOS. JACKSON of these Records, was bro. of SARAH.

There are three deeds recorded in this same Book of Essex Records on pages 34 and 35. The grantors in each are THOMAS TINSLEY and his wife, SARAH and the grantees are WILLIAM DANIEL, RICHARD DAVIDSON, and JOHN MAKENNAY. The land conveyed to each was 100 acres and the consideration was a number of lbs. of tobacco. They were all dated either June 17 or 18, 1708 and are recorded on pp. 135-139 and 140-142 in Bk. 13. Because of the uniformity of these deeds, it follows that they were probably part of an estate settlement. They could

not have married his daughters for all of TINSLEY'S children were minors when he died several years later. Perhaps they were SARAH'S family. Records hint that DANIEL had a connection to the JACKSON family.

The deeds to DANIEL and DAVIDSON were from a 1000 acre patent to TINSLEY 26 April 1704 and the one to MAKINNEY were from a 1400 acre tract patented the same day. The tracts adjoined one another and both were on Potobago Cr.

Still in the records of Essex Co. 1707-1711 are to be found two more indentures, these two dated 8 April 1710 both for 125 acres from the 1100 which TINSLEY bought of JOHN MAY. The first was to THOS BELL from THOS. TINSLEY and it was witnessed by ROBERT COOKE and JOHN MILLER as also was the other from TINSLEY and his wife, SARAH, to WILLIAM MAKINNIE. (Ibid p. 304-307)

On 6 July 1710 THOS. TINSLEY III) of Essex Co., 150 acres to THOS. and JOHN EMERSON, sons of HENRY EMERSON Of Middlesex Co. from the grant of 1400 acres dated 26 April 1704 on the head of Potobago Creek.

On April 9, 1713, THOMAS TINSLEY conveyed to WM. KILPIN of Christs Church Parish - Middlesex Co. 316 Acres in St. Ann's Parish bounded by WILLIAM DANIEL'S plantation then across head of Portabago Swamp to a gum in ENOCH DOWTYS old line adjacent a hickory at McKENNYS corner.

Wits: WILL BRIANT, THOS. JACKSON. (VA. Col. Abstracts Vol. VIII Essex Co. - Fleet pp. 43 & 44)

SARAH, wife of THOS. TINSLEY releases dower to JOHN TINSLEY.

All of the children of THOMAS TINSLEY III) were minors in 1715 when he wrote his will so JOHN TINSLEY who was grown in 1713 was probably a brother of THOS. III.

The final deed conveyed by TINSLEY was dated 8 April 1714 in which he sold to LEONARD TARENT for £13 and 1500 lbs. of tobacco the remainder of the 1100 acres to him by JOHN MAY 20 Oct. 1704. The said TINSLEY having already sold part of tract to wit: 150 acres to THOS. SNEED, 150 acres to CORNELIUS VAUGHN, 125 acres to THOS. BELL, 100 acre to JOHN MACKENNY.

The remaining 500 acres to TARENT being bounded by JOHN COLEMAN, JOHN MACKENNY and THOS. BELL.

Wits: LAWRENCE TALIAFERRO, SAMUEL HAWS.

This conveyance not signed by SARAH. (Ibid p. 88)

In reviewing the deeds of conveyance to and from THOMAS TINSLEY III) of Essex Co. and his wife SARAH, it appears that only the latter two to WM. KILPIN of Middlesex Co. and LEONARD TARRANT were actually deeds of sales. The uniformity in dates, acreage, etc., suggest that the other may have been deeds of gift with a token payment to TINSLEY.

These deeds more or less fall into two groups - those from the 1100 acres to TINSLEY from JOHN MAY and his wife GRACE, as of Feb. 1706/7 and those from the 1400 and 1000 acres patents to THOS. TINSLEY himself under date of 26 April 1704.

Those who were associated with the 1100 acre tract from MAY were: JOHN MAY and wife, GRACE; Mr. ROBERT GEORGE and his wife, SARAH; Mr. JOHN CHEADLE and his wife, HANNAH, THOMAS BELL and WM. MAKINNEY, and THOS. SNEED, CORNELIUS VAUGHN, and perhaps JOHN ZACKERY.

Those who were grantees from the 2500 acre grants to TINSLEY and his wife, SARAH, were; WILLIAM DANIEL, RICHARD DAVIDSON, JOHN MAKINNEY and THOMAS and JOHN EMERSON, of HENRY EMERSON.

There is little likelyhood that THOMAS TINSLEY had a total of 14 sisters to whom these lands were conveyed but those connected with the JOHN MAY deed to TINSLEY look as though they might be related. Since TINSLEY was a young man married about 1698-1702, if related, some of these men with various names must be husbands of his sisters.

Probably the wife of ROBERT PAYNE, who entered claim against the estate of THOMAS TINSLEY II) in 1699 was brother-in-law to THOMAS TINSLEY III) as was also the wife of JOHN ZACKARY. The wives of these two and GRACE MAY. SARAH GEORGE, and HANNAH CHEADEL are possible sisters of THOMAS TINSLEY III).

There must also have been a definite relationship between TINSLEY and one of the parents of THOMAS and JOHN EMERSON to whom the former conveyed land.

Fourth Generation - TINSLEY

The will of THOS. TINSLEY III) of St. Ann's Parish Essex Co. Va. was dated 25 Nov. 1715 and recorded 22 Feb. 1716.

All of his children as of that date were minors.

He left to his son THOMAS a heifer.

To son PHILLIP a mare.

To each of his other sons 1 cow, each.

All the rest of estate to wife, SARAH. She to have all lands during her life and afterwards the land I live on to my son THOMAS.

Son PHILLIP to have 82 acres in said Co. when he is of age

Wife, SARAH, exctx.

(Will Bk. 14 Essex Co. pp. 483 & 484)

SARAH TINSLEY gave bond as executrix on the same day the will was recorded.

Since TINSLEY names only the two sons, THOMAS TINSLEY IV) and PHILIP, we cannot be certain as to the exact number and names of his children but below is an outline of those whom we have reason to believe were his children:

1. THOMAS TINSLEY IV) of Essex Co. inherited the home place from his father's estate. Left will in Essex Co. dated 7 Mar. 1749 and Proved 16 July 1764.

THOMAS IV) married MARGARET probably VAUGHTER and according to his will their children were:

(1) JOSHUA TINSLEY had no children in 1749. Probably was the JOSHUA TINSLEY dec'd. in Caroline Co. 1754 with ELIZABETH, wife, his executor.

(2) JOHN TINSLEY of Madison Co.

(3) WILLIAM TINSLEY' Perhaps this is the WILLIAM TINSLEY of Caroline Co. dec'd. about 1779, who acted as executor for JACOB TINSLEY in 1764, for PHILIP TINSLEY in 1774 and for JACOB BURRUSS 1778.

The death of WM. TINSLEY is reported on p. 483 of "Colonial Caroline" by CAMPBELL. His executors were RICH. SHIP, WM. TOOMS and GEO. ALSUP.

(4) ISSAC TINSLEY II) of Essex Co.

THOS TINSLEY IV) of Essex Co. mentions three daughters but does not name them, in his will.

2. PHILIP TINSLEY, named as the son of THOMAS and SARAH in his fathers will, died in Caroline in 1774 and his estate was admt. by WILLIAM TINSLEY his bro. or nephew. In 1732-34 he was owner of 1 slave and in 1768 he and JACOB BURRUSS were fined for allowing their homes to be used for illegal worship.

3. DAVID TINSLEY, of Caroline Co. 1736, had wife, CATHERINE, who for 5 shilling conveyed to GEORGE EASTMAN of Orange Co. Va. 68 acres which was patented to THOMAS JACKSON on 16 June 1730 and by JACKSON conveyed to said TINSLEY beginning at JACKSON'S Corner in Orange Co. (Deed Bk. I page 416 Orange Co. Va.)

SARAH TINSLEY acknowledge a deed to DAVID TINSLEY 9 Mar. 1744 (p. 256 Order Bk. 1741-1746 Caroline Co. Va.)

There are only fragmentary documents of Caroline Co. which was made 1727/8 from Essex King and Queen and King William Co.

Extant records of Caroline show that in 1732-34 DAVID TINSLEY owned five slaves and that between 1732 and 1745 he served as county juror twice.

4. Perhaps the wife of GEO. EASTMAN was the sister of DAVID TINSLEY and dau. of THOS.TINSLEY III) and his wife, SARAH.

5. Perhaps the wife of JACOB BURRUS who died in 1778 and made WM. TINSLEY executor. (p. 486 "Colonial Caroline")

PHILIP TINSLEY and JACOB BURRUSS named jointly as fined for unauthorized worship in 1768. (Ibid p. 436)

6. Perhaps WILLIAM TINSLEY of Caroline was son of THOMAS III) and SARAH instead of THOS. IV) and ELIZ.

7. EDWARD TINSLEY, - In 1733 EDWARD TINSLEY was supervisor of Roads in Caroline (Ibid p. 360) and between 1732 and 1745 he served in that Co. once as a juror (Ibid p. 351-55). EDWARD married MARGARET, probably dau. of Col. JAMES TAYLOR.

On May 19, 1736, THOS. CRAFFORD of St. Marks Parish Orange Co. conveyed to JOHN HOWARD of same 100 acres given to EDWARD TINSLEY by JAMES TAYLOR SR. of Caroline Co.(Orange Co.Deed Deed Bk. I p. 277)

EDWARD TINSLEY, like his brother ISSAC, moved to Southside Va. His will was dated 1783 and is recorded in Amherst Co. Va. Will Bk. 2 p. 118 and his heirs were:

(1) ELIZABETH PENDLETON; (2) WM. TINSLEY; (3) RICH VERNON; (4) EDWARD TINSLEY JR.; (5) ISSAC TINSLEY; (6) JOHN TINSLEY; (7) DAVID TINSLEY; (8) JOSEPH JOHNS; (9) JOSHUA TINSLEY; (10) Col. AMBORSE RUCKER.

Records of the counties considered in this chapter indicate that the daughters of Col. JAMES TAYLOR were wives of the following men besides EDWARD TINSLEY; THOS. RUCKER, THOS. JACKSON, JR., HENRY PENDLETON, EDWARD EASTMAN and ANTHONY GHOLSON. According to his widow's will dated 27 April 1757 and recorded p. 69 Will Bk. 2 Orange Co. Va., he had sons ZACARY TAYLOR, GEO. TAYLOR and ERASMES TAYLOR.

8. ISSAC TINSLEY, 'who married MARGARET RUCKER who is progenitor of the line included in "We Cousins" - Vol. II'

ISAAC TINSLEY, born not later than 1706, certainly was not the eighth and last child of THOMAS TINSLEY III) of Essex Co. He was probably the third son of this marriage with THOMAS JR. and PHILIP being older, but because of his direct connection with THOMAS JACKSON and his mother we have placed

him in the last position in order to continue immediately with the JACKSON data.

We are able to fix the approximate age of ISAAC TINSLEY by the date of a deed to him as of 17 April 1727 from THOMAS JACKSON of Spotsylvania Co., for 100 acres of land in Essex Co., adjoining his mother, SARAH TINSLEY, said land bought of JOSEPH BERRY of King and Queen Co. (D. Bk. 18 p. 298 Essex Co.) The consideration for this conveyance was five shilling (probably a gift) and at the writing of it ISAAC TINSLEY was of King and Queen Co.

Probably he, thereafter, moved to Essex Co. for future documents are fortunately recorded in that county and her daughter Cos.

THOMAS JACKSON was one of the five witnesses to the will of THOMAS TINSLEY III) of Essex and brother of his wife, SARAH TINSLEY.

On 10 May 1720, JOSEPH BERRY of Stafford Co. conveyed to THOMAS JACKSON and SARAH TINSLEY of Essex Co., lease and release for L30 sterling - 200 acres in King and Queen Co. part of a patent of a greater quantity, formerly granted ENOCH DAUGHTERY, beginning at the corner of WM. CRAWFORD'S land, in the line of Mr. ROBERT BEVERLY adj. aforesaid BERRY'S line -- the line of division between said JACKSON and TINSLEY, hers being the lower part of the abovesaid 200 a. Signed: JOSEPH and CATHERINE BERRY. (D. Bk. 16 p. 176, Essex Co.)

No doubt ISAAC TINSLEY was living on the lower 100 acres which fell to his mother, SARAH TINSLEY, when THOS. JACKSON deeded to him the upper 100 acres which extended into Essex Co.

We are confident that SARAH TINSLEY, widow of THOS. TINSLEY III) of Essex Co., was the former SARAH JACKSON, sister of THOMAS JACKSON and daughter of ISSAC JACKSON of Essex Co. who died before 7 of March 1700, ISSAC TINSLEY, her son, being named for her father.

The inventory of the estate of Mr. ISAAC JACKSON was submitted to the court of Essex Co. on the date given above by Mr. JOHN BUTLER and his wife JANE, and was witnessed by EDWARD ROWZOO, WM. HARPER and DAVID JONBINE.

It is logical to conclude that JANE was the widow of JACKSON and that BUTLER was her then husband.

If the 200 acres to THOS. JACKSON and SARAH TINSLEY was part of JACKSON'S estate it would follow that JANE BUTLER, dec'd. before her husband, JOHN BUTLER, who then married CATHERINE who, after his death, married BERRY.

On 21 Aug. 1722, Power of Attorney was granted by CATHERINE, now wife of JOSEPH BERRY, to relinquish dower rights on 200 acres lying in King and Queen Co., to THOS. JACKSON and SARAH TINSLEY of King and Queen Co.

Wits: JAMES LINDSAY, WILLIAM DANIEL.

One of the deeds conveyed June 17, 1708 by THOMAS TINSLEY III) of Essex and his wife SARAH, was to WM. DANIELL who in April 1713 owned land adjoining that of TINSLEY which he later sold to WILLIAM KILPEN of Middlesex Co.

On 14 May 1720 (four days after the deed to JACKSON and TINSLEY) JOSEPH BERRY Of Stafford sold 250 acres to WILLIAM DANIEL of St. Anns Parish Essex Co. The cost was L37 and the land was part of 4763 acres formerly granted ENOCH DAUDY situated in King and Queen Co., corner of THOS. JACKSON and in line of WILLIAM BERRY to corner tree of HONOUR POWELL.

Wits: THOS. JACKSON, JAMES LINDSAY.

Essex Co. Records 1717-1722 p. 16 (p. 173 in original)

A few pages back we learned that ANDREW JACKSON and THOS. TINSLEY,III), father of ISAAC, cleared an acre of land for Mr. WILLIAM LOWREY on 25 and 26 of March 1706.

On 17 June 1735, THOMAS JACKSON of Orange Co. and St. Marks Parish to ISAAC TINSLEY of same, in consideration of five shilling, 100 acres in Orange Co. out of a tract of 732 acres granted said JACKSON land beginning at Crawford's corner on Rapidan River in Orange Co. (Deed Bk. 1 p. 47 Orange Co. Va.)

Orange Co. was made in 1734 from Spotsylvania Co. which was made 1720/21 from Essex, King and Queen and King William.

The will of THOMAS JACKSON in Orange Co. St. Thos. Parish is dated 15 Oct. 1760 and was Probated 27 Sept. 1764.

His wife was MARGARET and his sons were JOSHUA, DAVID, JOSEPH and ----- JACKSON.

The witnesses were CHAS. NEALL, JOHN DAVISON, and WILLIAM RUCKER.

The will was presented in court by DAVID and JOSHUA JACKSON.

Another THOMAS JACKSON whose wife was PHOEBE died in Caroline Co. Va. in 1749. In 1749 PHOEBE was executor of JACKSONS' estate but in 1756 JOSHUA LINDSAY was executor. We believe that these two were father and son.

An earlier JOSHUA LINDSAY died 18 July 1720. His wife was MARY.

In Caroline Co. in 1765 WILLIAM DANIEL was guardian for JOHN JACKSON (JR) and in 1768, JOHN

THORNTON was executor for JOHN JACKSON.

We believe that this accumulation of data is sufficient proof that SARAH TINSLEY, widow of THOS. TINSLEY III) of Essex Co. was the dau. of ISAAC JACKSON, who died in the same co. in 1700, and was the sister of THOMAS JACKSON I) of these records. ANDREW JACKSON and the wives of WILLIAM DANIEL and JAMES LINDSEY, were probably also her bros. and sisters. The names DAVID and JOSHUA used in future TINSLEY generations, as well as that of ISAAC, probably had their origin in the JACKSON family.

ISAAC TINSLEY I) married MARGARET RUCKER daughter of PETER RUCKER who was of St. Mark's Parish - Orange Co. at the time of his death in Feb. 1743.

RUCKER'S will, dated 18 Jan. 1742, was recorded 29 Feb. 1743 on page 299 of Will Bk. 1 of Orange Co. In it he named his wife ELIZABETH, his son-in-law, ISAAC TINSLEY, and his daughter MARGARET TINSLEY and his other children: THOMAS RUCKER, ELIZABETH PEARCE, WILLIAM RUCKER, MARY OFFILL, JAMES RUCKER, EPHRIAM RUCKER, ANN COOK and her husband SHEM COOK. (SHEM COOK was in Amelia Co. in 1756 when ISAAC TINSLEY moved there.)

Excts: JAMES RUCKER - EPHRIAM RUCKER.

Wits: WILLIAM JACKSON, WILLIAM OFFILL and RICHARD HOLT.

Securities for the executors were MICHAEL and GEO. HOLT and RICHARD MAULDIN.

The bequest to his daughter, MARGARET TINSLEY, and her husband, ISAAC TINSLY, was a negro boy named YORKSHIRE and when TINSLEY made his will 13 Mar. 1776 he left YORKSHIRE to his wife, MARGARET.

ISAAC TINSLEY, like his father-in-law, had been cut off in Orange Co. when it was made from Spotsylvania Co. A list of tithables in Orange Co. in 1738 included THOS. RUCKER' ISAAC TINSLEY, WM. RUCKER and PETER RUCKER.

On 17 May 1750 JOHN RUCKER of Orange County conveyed to ISAAC and MARGARET TINSLEY, for 5 shilling, 100 acres of land in Orange Co. beginning at a corner of a patent granted to JOHN RUCKER. Wits: WM. PHILIPS, ROBT. MARTIN (D. Bk. 1 p. 290)

Evidently this deed was a residue settlement of the estate of PETER RUCKER, JOHN RUCKER devising a portion of his land to his sister. We presume JOHN RUCKER was oldest son and heir.

When Culpeper Co. was made from Orange Co. Va., ISAAC TINSLEY who had lived in Essex, King and Queen, Spotsylvania, and Orange Cos. without changing his residence became a citizen of the new county. On 21 Feb. 1752 ISAAC and MARGARET TINSLEY gave certification to JAMES and EPHRAIM RUCKER, executors of PETER RUCKER, dec'd, that they had received all and every part of the estate of said PETER RUCKER bequeathed to them and that they did discharge the said executors of all debts, dues and demands, or any legacy whatsoever, from the said will and testament.

Wits: RICHARD VAWTER, WILLIAM OFFILL.

OFFILL, whose signature has appeared on several of these RUCKER documents, was probably the husband of PETER RUCKER'S dau., MARY OFFILL.

MARGARET'S brother-in-law, SHEM COOK, perhaps led the migration to Amelia Co. since when JAMES HURT sold land to ISAAC and THOMAS TINSLEY, in 1756, the 200 acre tract was bounded by lands of WM. SHEM COOK, in Amelia Co. Va.

PETER RUCKER was an immigrant of 1704, said to have been a French Protestant.

His wife ELIZABETH, was probably the daughter of JAMES COGHILL, formerly of Md., who moved to Va. in 1664 and died in Old Rapp Co. Va. before 2 Sept. 1685 and left his will there.

At the writing of his will 5 Oct. 1684 he had sons WILLIAM, JAMES, DAVID and FREDERICH, the latter two not yet 18. He also had daus. MARGARET and MARY and wife, MARY COGHILL, expecting another child.

Later records of Essex Co. strongly indicate a RUCKER–COGHILL relationship and we believe that ELIZABETH RUCKER, wife of PETER, was the expected child, born after her fathers death in 1684 and married to RUCKER probably even before he applied for naturalization on 24 April 1704.

(JOHN COGHILL (or JAMES), the immigrant, was the son of MARMADUKE COGHILL of Tintergate, York Co. Eng. He came to Va. in 1664. On the parental side he was descended from KARLSBOROUGH 1378 and on the maternal side to SLINGSBY of Scriven Hall 1135.)

Both of these families are included in "The RUCKER Family" by SUDIE RUCKER WOODS and the documents which support this belief are included in the extracted records of Essex Co. which have been printed.

After ISAAC TINSLEY removed to Amelia Co. in 1756 he disposed of his lands in Culpeper Co.

A deed recorded in the latter co. in D. Bk. C. p. 338 and dated 17 Nov. 1759 states that ISAAC TINSLEY and MARGARET his wife, of the Parish of Raleigh and the county of Amelia, in the colony of Va., for the natural love and affection that they have and bear to their son, ISAAC TINSLEY JR. convey to him a tract of land in the aforesaid parish of Brumfield in the County of Culpeper on the Rapidan River, by estimation 100 acres.

Witnesses: EPHRIAM RUCKER, RICHARD VAWTER, DAVID VAWTER. (D. Bk. C. p. 338)

A week before this on 10 Nov. 1759, ISAAC and MARGARET TINSLEY deeded to EPHRIAM RUCKER of the same Parish as ISAACS TINSLEY JR. in Culpeper Co., 100 acres on Elk's Run on the Rapidan and Robinson Rivers. (D. Bk. C. p. 340)

This latter deed was witnessed by RICH VAWTER, DAVID VAWTER, ISAAC TINSLEY, JR.

Fifth Generation - TINSLEY

The will of ISAAC TINSLEY of Amelia Co. was dated 13 March 1776 and his estate was appraised 28 Aug. 1777, in the aforesaid county.

He describes himself as "ISAAC TINSLEY, member of the Baptist Church of Christ on Sandy Creek, Amelia Co., well striken in years."

He left to his wife, MARGARET, three slaves - YORKSHIRE, HANNAH and JANE

The rest of his estate was to be equally divided among his children who were not named.

His executors were WILLIAM FORD, JOSEPH JACKSON and JOSHUA CHAFFIN, and the will was witnessed by DAVID WHITE, CHARLES TINSLEY, and DAVID TINSLEY. (Will Bk. 2 p. 235 Amelia Co.)

The estate of TINSLEY was inventoried 23 April 1776 (Court Order Bk. 14 p. 117)

The last will and testament of ISAAC TINSLEY, dec'd., was proved by two of the subscribing witnesses and sworn to by JOSHUA CHAFFIN, the executor, therein named and ordered to be recorded. (Order Bk. 14 p. 60)

A search for an estate settlement of TINSLEY in the Amelia Court Records was fruitless so the names of his children offered below were selected by a process of elimination and comparison:

1. THOMAS TINSLEY V) came to Va. with his father, had wife MARY, died in Prince Ed. Co. Va. in 1778. Discussed in full in next generation.
2. Probably the wife of JOSHUA CHAFFIN, executor of ISAAC TINSLEY SR., and guardian of the orphans of THOS. TINSLEY of Prince Ed. Co. except the eldest, son JAMES and the two married daus.
3. The wife of WILLIAM FORD who was guardian to JAMES TINSLEY, son of THOS. 1778.
4. WILLIAM TINSLEY who married SUSANNAH MORTON dau. of RICHARD in 1786 and who moved to Ky. with the MORTONS, died 1806.
5. Perhaps CHARLES TINSLEY, who was witness to the will of ISAAC TINSLEY.
6. ISAAC TINSLEY JR. to whom his parent deeded land in Culpeper Co. in 1759. ISAAC JR. married ELIZABETH GOLDING, dau. of WILLIAM GOLDING who lived in Orange Co. Va. but who died in 96 Dist. S.C. His will dated 4 Sept. 1777 names his children:
   JOHN, REUBEN, RICHARD, WILLIAM and ROBERT GOLDING; MILLY GRIFFIN, SARAH FOSTER, ELIZABETH TINSLEY and MARY LEONARD.
   Perhaps GOLDINGS removal from Orange or Culpeper Cos. Va. to 96 District prompted ISAAC TINSLEY JR. to also remove there and eventually was the inspiration for his brothers PHILIP and JAMES and his nephews, sons of THOMAS TINSLEY of Prince Ed. Co. migrating to that state and county.
   ISAAC TINSLEY JR. died in 96th District, South Carolina.
   Administration of his estate dated Nov. 8, 1782, 96 Dist., South Carolina, by ELIZABETH GOLDING TINSLEY, HENRY PEARSON, JOHN RICHEY unto JOHN EWING CALHOUN. Bond £14,000. Inventory made Nov. 28, 1782. by RICHARD GRIFFIN, ANTHONY GOLDING, REUBEN GOLDING.
7. JAMES TINSLEY of 96th Dist. South Carolina.
   Administration of his estate Aug. 1, 1783, 96th Dist., S.C., by NANCY TINSLEY, ISAAC WILLIAMS unto JOHN THOMAS, JR. Bond £2,000. Inventory made Aug. 19, 1783, by HARRY PEARSON, RICHARD GOLDING, ANTHONY GOLDING.
8. PHILIP TINSLEY was also a son of ISAAC TINSLEY and his wife ELIZABETH RUCKER.
   Administration of estate April 27, 1784, 96th Dist., S. C., by ANN TINSLEY, RICHARD GOLDING, CHARLES BRICE, bound unto JOHN THOMAS JR. Sum £2,000.
   Since THOMAS TINSLEY V) of Amelia Co., probably the eldest son of ISAAC TINSLEY, was born about 1720-1727, and migrated to Amelia Co. at the time of his father's coming, it is logical to believe that ISAAC'S sons, JAMES and PHILIP, also lived in that county as part of their father's household before removing to South Carolina. We believe their bros-in-law also changed his residence to that state, probably taking some of the children of THOMAS TINSLEY V) of Prince Edward Co. Va. with him. These orphaned children would have immediately found themselves in a nest of uncles and aunts.
   These TINSLEYS of this decade must needs be sons of ISAAC TINSLEY SR. because the older son, THOMAS TINSLEY, left children who were all minors in 1778. They obviously would not be of age with large families in 6 years when their oldest sister was born in 1757.
   We note, with surprise, that THOMAS, ISAAC JR., PHILIP and JAMES TINSLEY all died within seven years of the death of their father, ISAAC SR., and we wonder if some of them lost their lives in the Revolution or if some physical scourge cut them down in their forties.
9. DAVID TINSLEY, who witnessed the will of his father, ISAAC TINSLEY SR. was among the youngest if not the youngest child of ISAAC SR. and MARGARET RUCKER.
   A statement is made in WOOD'S "RUCKER Family on page 237 that one of the sons of MARGARET RUCKER (wife of ISAAC TINSLEY SR.) was born in Orange Co. in 1749. He was a minister and had a

charge in Albermarle Co. in 1770. He later moved to Georgia settling near Augusta where he died in1801. This was DAVID TINSLEY, evangelist, whose parents, according to "Virginia Baptist Ministers 2nd Series by JAMES B. TAYLOR, written 1859, were of Culpeper Co. where he was born in 1749, but his early years were spent in one of the counties south of the James River."
The article from this book is given in full below:

DAVID TINSLEY, 1749-1801

"This name was familiar to the older disciples of Christ in the Old Dominion. His parents belonged to Culpeper County, where he was born in the year 1749; but his early years were mostly spent in one of the counties south of James River, his parents having removed to Amelia County not very long after his birth." When and where he became a Baptist is not definitely known. It was probably brought about by SAMUEL HARRISS from Pittsylvania County, during his early ministry, as he and TINSLEY were very much together in their labors for the Lord. "He could have been but little more than twenty years of age when he was actively proclaiming the Word of Life." The earliest convictions of WILLIAM HICKMAN, who later became a minister, were under the preaching of TINSLEY. He speaks of hearing him preach, in 1771 from the words, "Thou are weighed in the balance and found wanting."

"At this early period he appears to have been actively engaged in the work of an evangelist. He is said by SEMPLE to have labored in the County of Albemarle in 1770. Through his instrumentality the church in that county, called Totier, was organized." He did not remain long in any one place. Apparently, his longest pastorate was at Powhatan Church, beginning in 1771 and was pastor for five or six years. The name of this church now in Powhatan County is, Old Powhatan. He was the first pastor. The church was constituted in 1771 by JOSEPH ANTHONY and WILLIAM WEBBER who came across the James River from Goochland County.

The church seems to have been in Chesterfield County, as the county of Powhatan had its beginning in1777. Too, DAVID TINSLEY was pulled out of the pulpit and put into the Chesterfield jail where he remained for four months and sixteen days in the dead of winter. "Not content with sundering him from his friends and placing him in a dungeon, various other attempts were made to annoy and distress him. The suffocating effects of burning tobacco and red pepper were applied to the door and window of his cell . . . The Word of God was not bound. From that prison resounded the glorious gospel in strains so melting, so powerful, that scores were brought, as the joyful recipients of salvation by faith in Christ, to put him on in baptism."

"In the year 1782 Mr. TINSLEY was induced to remove to the lower part of Virginia to assume the care of Matthews Church, in Matthews County. Here he remained only two or three years; for in 1785 he was induced to remove to the South.

"He sailed . . . from Yorktown, with his family, for Savannah, which he reached after a voyage of two months, and settled ten miles northwest of Augusta. Here he united with Red Creek Church, now known as Abilene . . . In 1793 he united with others in assisting to organize the African Church in Augusta, and in 1798 took a seat in the Georgia General Association."

"Mr. TINSLEY died in October, 1801, aged fifty-two years. His last sermon was preached in his own house, from the words, 'Remember Lot's wife.'

He was regarded while in Virginia as an excellent preacher, a willing worker and very useful. "He left a numerous and highly respectable posterity. Dr. TINSLEY, his only son, was for some time Professor of Chemistry in Franklin College. Mr. TINSLEY is said by Mr. BENEDICT to have been four times ordained: once to the office of deacon; then as a ruling elder; afterwards as a preacher; and last of all, by SAMUEL HARRISS, as an evangelist, while he officiated as the apostle of Virginia," by H. D. Anderson, Powhatan, Va.

Taken from: Virginia Baptist Ministers, 2nd Series,
By James B. Taylor
Lippincott and Co. Philadelphia. 1859

Sixth and Seventh Generations - TINSLEY

TALITHA TINSLEY, the wife of JOHN MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON of Prince Edward Co., Va., and later of Clark Co. Ky., was born 17 Feb. 1757; married 11 Sept. 1778 in Prince Ed. Co. Va. and died 25 April 1847. She was the daughter of THOMAS TINSLEY of Prince Edward Co. Va. and his wife, MARY ——— , probably MARY RANSOME, and the granddaughter of ISAAC TINSLEY of Amelia Co. and his wife MARGARET RUCKER.

The estate of THOMAS TINSLEY V) who died 1778 was inventoried at the June court of that year in Prince Edward Co. Va. and was signed by MARY TINSLEY, administrator. (Prince Ed. Co. Will Bk. 1 p. 235-36).

Strangely enough, later records concerning his family and his estate are to be found in Amelia Co. instead of Prince Edward.

There are two pages in Bk. 14 Amelia Co. Court Orders numbered 150 in this order, p. 150, 149, 150.

On the first page, 150, under date of 25 June 1778, JAMES TINSLEY orphan of THOS. TINSLEY dec'd. with the approbation of the court, made choice of WILLIAM FORD for his guardian and thereupon the said FORD together with JOSHUA CHAFFIN, his security, entered into an acknowledged bond in the penalty of £2000

according to law.

Aug. 7, 1778 - RANSOM TINSLEY, with the approbation of the court, made choice of JOSHUA CHAFFIN for his guardian who is also appointed guardian of WILLIAM, SILLICA, THOMAS, DAVID, ISAAC and JENNY children and orphans of THOS. TINSLEY dec'd. (Amelia Co. Va. Court Orders Bk. 14 p. 208)

Jan. Court 1779

JAMES TINSLEY, an infant, by WILLIAM FORD his next friend; JOHN MORTON and TABITHA (TALITHA) his wife; DAVID TANNER and MAIDA, his wife; RANSOME, WILLIAM, ANGELICER, THOMAS, DAVID, ISAAC and JANE TINSLEY by JOSHUA CHAFFIN, their next friend vs. MARY TINSLEY admt. of THOMAS TINSLEY, dec'd., defendant.

The court having heard the bill —— it is decreed and ordered that the defendant, MARY TINSLEY, do make up an account of her administration before EDMUND BOOKER JR., MALACHI GOODE, JOHN GILLS and JOSEPH? or any three of them, to examine, state and settle the same and it is further ordered that they divide the estate of THOS. TINSLEY dec'd. (Court Orders - Amelia Co. Bk. 14 pp. 251)

Because MARY TINSLEY, widow and admt. of her deceased husband, THOMAS TINSLEY, was thus, abruptly deprived of the guardianship of his children and the admt. of his estate, one wonders if she may have been a late wife of THOS. and was not the mother of his children.

THOMAS TINSLEY and his father, ISAAC, evidently came to Amelia Co. Va. at the same time. According to a deed dated 26 Feb. 1756 and recorded the same day in Amelia Co., JAMES HURT of the Parish of St. Davids in the County of King William of Va. on the one part and ISAAC and THOMAS TINSLEY of the Parish of Raleigh on the other part for I/40 paid by TINSLEYS 200 acres adjoining HESTER TINSLEY, KEDD JONES, WM. SHEM COOK (D. Bk. 5 p. 405)

THOMAS TINSLEY must have been a young man just recently or soon to be married for his oldest child and daughter, TALITHA, was born in February 1757. Even so, this first deed to THOMAS TINSLEY and his father ISSAC, provided that this 200 acres was also for the children of THOMAS TINSLEY.

On 1 Oct. 1771 THOMAS TINSLEY, of Rawley Parish in Amelia Co., bought for I/100 a 332 acre tract in Prince Edward Co. from SHEM COOK of St. Patrick's Parish in Prince Ed. Co. and JAMES COOK of Rawley Parish in Amelia. This land was bounded by lands owned by MATHEW TURPIN, Chillicoath's line, JOSHUA CHAFFIN and WILLIAM BOOKER.

Wits: WM. DEXON, JOHN CHAFFEN, ROBERT FOSTER. (D. Bk. 9 p. 59 Prince Ed. Co. Va.) SHEM COOK, brother-in-law of ISAAC TINSLEY.

After buying the 332 acres of land in Prince Edward Co. and after the death of his father, ISAAC TINSLEY, THOMAS sold, on 28 Aug. 1777, to JOSHUA CHAFFIN for I/175, a tract of 200 acres in Amelia Co. which was probably the original 200 acres that he and his father bought in 1756 although only the name of WILLIAM HURT among the neighbors sounds familiar. (Deed Bk. 14 p. 145 Amelia Co. Va.)

The 332 acres in Prince Edward Co., which THOMAS TINSLEY bought in 1771, evidently became his place of residence and eventually fell to his eldest son, JAMES TINSLEY, who moved to Bedford Co. Va. and sold the 332 acres 12 Dec. 1780 to JOHN MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON of Prince Edward Co. for I/1600. JOHN MORTON, was husband of TALITHA, oldest sister of JAMES TINSLEY, "and the land lay on the branches of Sandy River and Saylors Creek bounded by WEBB, CALLICOAT, SMITH, GALLOWAY, THOS. TURPIN and MICHAEL TURPIN, now known by the following lines - JAMES CHEAPARE, JOSEPH HAWKINS, THOS. TANNER, and NICHOLAS VAUGHN and is that said tract that fell to JAMES TINSLEY by heirship from his father, THOS. TINSLEY." CHEAPARE is a name of Essex, associatied with TINSLEY.

This deed was signed by JAMES and ELIZABETH TINSLEY and witnessed by JOEL JOHNS, SABAN HAWKINS, PAUL MICHEAUX CUNNINGHAM and ROBERT FERGUSON.

Before moving to Ky., JOHN MORTON conveyed this tract on 30 Dec. 1782 to JOHN MITCHELL.

THOS. TINSLEY, JACK WADDELL, ROBERT GOOD, JAMES WADE, ICAY RICE, bought four acres in Prince Ed. Co. from WILLIAM RICE on1 Aug. 1775 for the purpose of building a meeting house.

BRADSHAW, in his "History of Prince Edward Co.," states that "about 1775 WM. RICE build a meeting house for dissenters from the church of England on the main road, a short distance west of the present RICE. The four acres on which the meeting-house stood were deeded by RICE to JACOB WADDELL, THOS. TINSLEY, ROBERT GOODE, JAMES WADE, ICAY RICE and WM. RICE as trustees in a deed dated 1 Aug. 1775. The deed does not identify the meeting place as connected with any denomination, but the organization there in 1781 of Sailors Cr. Baptist Church with ROBERT FOSTER as pastor, suggests that it was a preaching station of Nottoway Church built for the convenience of members living in that vicinity."

At least three of the sons of THOMAS TINSLEY of Prince Ed. Co. followed their uncles and cousins to 96 District South Carolina and eventually their oldest sister, TALITHA, and her husband, JOHN MORTON, to Kentucky.

The family of THOMAS TINSLEY V) dec'd. 1778 in Prince Ed. Co. Va. and his wife, MARY or wives:

1. TALITHA TINSLEY b. 17 Feb. 1757 in Amelia Co. Va.; d. 25 April 1847 in Clark Co. Ky. m. 11 Sept.

1778 in Prince Edward Co. Va. JOHN MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON and JUDITH QUIN of Prince Ed. Co. Va. and later of Clark Co. Ky.

2. JAMES TINSLEY born 1758, inherited the plantation of his father, 332 acres in Prince Ed. Co., which he sold in 1780 to his bro-in-law JOHN MORTON. At that date his wife was ELIZABETH and he was of Bedford Co. Va.
3. MAIDER TINSLEY born about 1760 married before January 1779, DAVID TANNER.
4. RANSOME TINSLEY. b. about 1762. There is no evidence that he moved to S. C. but he was in Clark Co. Ky. in 1812 when he served as admt. of the estate of his brother, ISAAC TINSLEY.
5. WILLIAM TINSLEY, b. about 1764, evidently moved from Prince Edward Co. Va. to 96th District South Carolina and then to Clark Co. Ky.

An indenture dated 17 Dec. 1798 and recorded in D. Bk. F. p. 338 Sparatanburg Co. S. C. states that WILLIAM TINSLEY of the state of Ky. and county of Clark conveys to GEO. ROALAND of the state of South Carolina and county of Spartanburg for $154. a tract of 250 acres on waters of Pacalot River, land originally granted to LEWIS TURNER.

This deed was witnessed by ROBERT FOSTER, WM. FOSTER and ––– MORTON. It was filed 7 Jan. 1799 and recorded 8 Aug. 1799.

The will of ROBERT FOSTER of St. Anns Parish, Essex Co. was R. 22 Feb. 1715/16. He names his children: ROBERT, JOHN, JAMES, ANTHONY, RICHARD, GEO., THOS. and WILLIAM. ROBERT FOSTER was first pastor of the little church at Rice, Va. and here in Spartanburg S.C., we have another ROBERT FOSTER. We believe they are all of the Essex Co. connection. The STEPHEN FOSTER of the record of this page is said to be the composer or his fore-parent.

WILLIAM TINSLEY, son of THOMAS, had been preceeded to Clark Co. by another of the same name, his uncle WILLIAM TINSLEY, son of ISAAC, who married in Prince Edward Co. in 1789 SUSANNAH MORTON, sister of JOHN MORTON of this article. We believe the former moved to Fayette Co. Ky. and died 1815 and that the latter d. in Clark Co. in 1806.

JONATHAN MORTON of Clark Co. Ky. and his wife LETTICE, sold land on 16 Mar. 1798 to WM. TINSLEY. The date is right for this to have been WM. TINSLEY of Spartenburg S.C. who was of Ky. when he conveyed his land in S. C. on 17 Dec. 1798, however, this was his uncle WILLIAM TINSLEY. (Clark Co. D. B. 5 p. 416)

WILLIAM TINSLEY, son of THOMAS V), died in Fayette Co. Ky. 1815 and left a will there. His widow was MARY and she married (2) HATTIN.

6. ANGELICER TINSLEY b. about 1766; one of the children of THOMAS TINSLEY named in the court orders of Amelia Co. January 1779. There are so many cross references between FOSTERS and TINSLEYS of the Va. and S. C. records, that one wonders if perhaps ANGELICER may have married ––––– FOSTER
7. THOMAS TINSLEY JR. VI) married ONA FOSTER. According to an old family Bible in possession of the late Mr. EBER TINSLEY of Greer, S. C., THOMAS TINSLEY and ONA FOSTER had the following children:
   (1) DAVID TINSLEY b. 20 Jan.1787, (?) m. 4 Jan. 1820, DOLLY WINGO;
   (2) WILLIS TINSLEY b. 13 Nov. 1794; d. 3 July 1808;
   (3) SEFATON TINSLEY b. 3 Nov. 1796; d. 18 Dec. 1818; m. 25 Dec. 1817 ELIZABETH –––;
   (4) THOMAS TINSLEY b. Nov. 1801;
   (5) NANCY TINSLEY b. Nov. 1802; d. 28 July 1819.
   The other children of THOS. TINSLEY and his wife ONA FOSTER were:
   (6) ISSAC TINSLEY b. 1806, (7) MOTON TINSLEY b. 27 May 1808,
   (8) TELEMODUS TINSLEY b. 24 Nov. 1810, (9) RANSOM TINSLEY b. 19 Jan. 1812,
   (10) JOHN TINSLEY b. 25 Dec. 1813, (11) JULIA TINSLEY b. 1 May 1815, (12) JAMES TINSLEY b. 15 Sept. 1817 and (13) ONEY TINSLEY b. 10 May 1820, m. 26 Dec. 1839 ABSOLOM H. BALLINGTON.

   A conveyance recorded on page 70 of D. Bk. H Spartansburg, S. C. was dated 5 Feb. 1805 and seems to be a portion of an estate settlement between the legatees of THOMAS FOSTER dec'd, and JOEL HURT (Same name in Amelia Co.) all of Spartansburg, S.C. District.

   I, JOHN FOSTER, for myself and for STEPHEN FOSTER, and I, THOMAS TINSLEY, for myself and the heirs of POLLY BALLARD decd. and I, WILLIAM FOSTER, all of one part and JOEL HURT on the other part for $750., one hundred acres on the waters of Fairforest Cr.

   Wits: JOHN FOSTER, REUBEN SAMUEL (or DANIEL) and JACOB ULTEY.

   It would seem that THOMAS FOSTER was either father or brother of JOHN, STEPHEN and WILLIAM FOSTER and of ONEY TINSLEY and POLLY BALLARD, decd.

8. DAVID TINSLEY b. about 1770; died in Clark Co. Ky. before 26 April 1798 probably as an unmarried man. His estate was administered by WILLIAM TINSLEY and was inventoried on the date given above by JOEL HICKMAN, LEONARD HILL, CALEB BROWNING and RICHARD HICKMAN.
The small estate of DAVID TINSLEY, son of THOS. of Prince Ed. Co. was divided 22 May 1798. This was about the time that his brother WILLIAM TINSLEY, moved to Clark Co. Ky. and it was probably he who administered the estate.
9. ISSAC TINSLEY III), son of THOMAS TINSLEY of Amelia and Prince Ed. Co. Va. born about 1772 named for his grandfather, ISSAC TINSLEY of Culpeper and Amelia Cos. Va., d. 1811 in Clark Co. Ky., having resided first in Spartansburg S. C.
On Jan. 4, 1797 ISAAC TINSLEY of Spartansburg Co. S. C. conveyed to FRANCIS MASON of same for 1/40 a tract of 211 acres on Ford's Creek being part of a grant to JOHN PARKER which said PARKER hath conveyed by deed to JOSEPH KIRKLAND and the said KIRKLAND to ANN HOLLOWAY and sd. ANN HOLLOWAY to WILLIAM TINSLEY, the same to ISAAC TINSLEY and said ISSAC TINSLEY to said FRANCIS MASON (Bk. E. p. 100 Spartansburg Co. SC)
The next record concerning ISAAC TINSLEY found in the Spartansburg Co. S. C. records, speaks of him as of the state of Ky. This indenture dated 2 Jan. 1806 conveyed, for $200., 600 acres of land on Fairforest Cr. to GEO. WRIGHT (Bk. K. p. 315) It was witnessed by JOHN FOSTER, MOSES FOSTER and JAMES SEAY.
The day before, 1 Jan. 1806 TINSLEY sold land to JAMES MASON and the witnesses were MOSES FOSTER, THOS. TINSLEY and STEPHEN FOSTER.
In Clark Co. Ky. are a few scattering documents pertaining to ISAAC TINSLEY, son of THOMAS and MARY of Prince Edward Co. Va.
Evidently, ISAAC TINSLEY died before 2 Oct. 1811 for on that date the Clark Co. Ky. Court, ordered that a note, given by TINSLEY for $32.00 to ROBERT PATENGER, be paid. The inventory of ISAAC was returned 8, June 1812 by his brother, RANSOM TINSLEY, excr. and admr. and the widow's dower was set 4 Nov. 1814. (Clark Co. Ky. Court Records Bk. C. pp. 344-345).
The 1810 census of his home co. shows ISAAC TINSLEY to have had three sons and one daughter. This agrees with later records in Clark Co. where in court proceedings of April 1827 ADELAIDE TINSLEY is identified as the orphan of ISAAC TINSLEY, decd. Court Orders Bk. 8 p. 26)
Later in Clark Co., suit No. 354; RANSOM TINSLEY, ISAAC TINSLEY, MILTON TINSLEY, ADELAIDE TINSLEY and MARY TINSLEY (widow of ISAAC) are parties in said suit.
10. JANE or JENNY TINSLEY, youngest child of THOMAS TINSLEY of Prince Edward Co. Va. born about 1774. We have no further information concerning JANE.

Since all of the children of THOMAS TINSLEY except JAMES, TALITHA and MAIDER were under the guardianship of JOSHUA CHAFFIN and these younger seven children, with the exception possibly of DAVID seem to have migrated to S. C. one wonders if CHAFFIN, possibly the husband of an aunt, may have moved from Va. to South Carolina while they were still under his care.

The children of TALITHA TINSLEY, daughter and eldest child of THOMAS TINSLEY of Prince Ed. Co. Va., and her husband JOHN MORTON, son of RICHARD MORTON and his wife JUDITH QUIN, are the connecting link to the SUTHERLAND-HODGES clan through their son QUIN MORTON who born 6 June 1781 in Va., m. in Pittsylvania Co. Va. on 26 June 1802 ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND.

Their daughter, TALITHA ANN MORTON, b. 6 Aug. 1806 in Tenn., m. 11 Oct. 1827 in Franklin Co. Ala. JOHN W. HODGES b. 23 April 1801 in Smith Co. Tenn.

MARY ELIZABETH HODGES, b. 8 April 1832, daughter of JOHN W. HODGES and TALITHA ANN MORTON, m. 27 Jan. 1848 in Texas THOMAS SHELTON SUTHERLAND I).

The data pertaining to the children of TALITHA TINSLEY and JOHN MORTON has been well established by documents in Clark Co. Ky. and by further information in the files of the Ky. Historical Society and is as follows:

1. DAVID MORTON b. 8 Sept. 1779; d. 17 Oct. 1824; m. probably SARAH WAGONER.
2. JONATHAN MORTON (twin) b. 8 Sept. 1779 d. 11 Nov 1852; m. CHINA, probably THOMPSON, b. 1787 d. 17 Jan. 1862; buried in MORTON graveyard on Grimes Mill Rd. Clark Co. Ky.
3. QUIN MORTON b. 6 June 1781 in Va.; d. 4 July 1837 in Tuscumbia, Ala. m. 26 June 1802 in Pitts. Co. Va. ELIZABETH, daughter of JOHN SUTHERLAND and his wife, AGNES SHELTON.
4. ELIZABETH "BETSY" MORTON b. 13 April 1785; m. 21 Dec. 1805 GEORGE CRAIG; d. before 1841.
5. TALITHA MORTON b. 8 May 1787; d. 6 Nov. 1858 m. 10 Dec. 1807 in Clark Co. Ky. THOS. GHOLSON.
6. LUCY MORTON b. 5 March 1789; d. before 1841 m. 13 Mar. 1812 DAVID G. OWEN.

7. WILLIAM MORTON b. 18 May 1791 in Clark Co. Ky. d. 10 Sept. 1858; m. MARY ------ , b. 1801 d. 5 Dec. 1874.
8. RICHARD MORTON b. 22 Nov. 1793; d. before 1841; m. 1 March 1812 in Clark Co. Ky. ELEANOR PETTICORD.
9. SUSANNAH MORTON b. 20 May 1796; d. 20 Nov. 1835; m. WILLIAM WEBB.
10. JOHN MORTON JR. b. 8 July 1800 in Clark Co. Ky; d. 8 Oct. 1863 m. (1) ELIZABETH ROGERS d. before 1846; m. (2) LU ANNE B. CHRISTY.

It is claimed that TALITHA TINSLEY was converted at age thirteen and thereafter read her Bible through each year until her death about 75 years later.

Four of her sons were ministers but, in that day and age, most ministers, on the frontier, especially, were not necessarily educated for the ministry but were "called" to do this service.

Future generations of the descendants of this family may be found in the MORTON chapter of this book and those of QUIN MORTON and his dau., TALITHA ANN, are to be found in the SUTHERLAND and HODGES chapters.

Since THOMAS TINSLEY of Amelia and Prince Ed. Cos. Va. began his family within a year of the time he moved from Culpeper Co., it is difficult to determine whether he married in the former or latter counties.

The RANSOM records in all of these counties are meager but because the second son of THOMAS, is RANSOM TINSLEY they may be important. He and several nephews had this same name.

A ROBERT RANSOM of St. Stephens Parish in King and Queen Co., sold 436 acres which he owned in Essex Co. to JOSEPH BROOKS of Gloucester Co. on 6 Oct. 1713. His wife was FRANCES perhaps the dau. of Ed. THOMAS (p. 57 Essex Records).

In 1720 in Essex Co., CATHERINE YOUNG of South Farnham Parish and FRANCES RANSOME, widow and relick of ROBERT RANSOME, decd. late of King and Queen Co. - 500 a. to JOHN BUSH said land part of 714 acres granted Mr. EDWARD THOMAS 23 April 1688. (Essex Co. Records 1717-1723 p. 233)

The 1748 will of THOMAS WARING of Essex Co. provides that the negro man, TOM, belonging to WARING be given into the possession of his Mother RANSON.

In Sept. 1708, a much earlier document shows that JOHN RANSOM owned land adjoining JAMES DANIELL, which two, before 1694 were neighbors of ROBT. PAYNE, who had a claim again at the estate of THOS. TINSLEY II) of Essex in 1699.

In 1740, county boundries were considerably different from today and Surry Co. was the home of a JAMES RANSOME who made his will 19 May 1740 and names his daughters; CATHERINE, ELIZABETH and MARY, his sons JAMES and GWATHENY, his father and mother and a wife without giving her name.

The compiler of "We Cousins Vol. II" is indebted to Mr. JIM BOB TINSLEY of Florida for the data from South Carolina pertaining to the sons of ISSAC TINSLEY SR. and to his grandsons, sons of THOMAS TINSLEY V) and his wife MARY, of Prince Ed. Co. Va.

CHAPTER X

CROCKETT

PART A

I. General Early Colonial Records on CROCKETT.

1. Comparative data as related to the genealogy of DAVY CROCKETT of the Alamo.
2. Extracted Documents on CROCKETT
   - (a) Ireland
   - (b) Pennsylvania
   - (c) Maryland
   - (d) Virginia

Part B

I. Genealogy of Descendants of ROBERT CROCKETT of the Calfpasture.

1. ROBERT CROCKETT and wife MARGARET of Calfpasture in Augusta Co. Va.
2. JOHN CROCKETT of the Waxhaw and MARGARET, wife.
3. ELIJAH CROCKETT and MARY DAVIE.
4. ROBERT KAR CROCKETT and ANGERONA RICHARDSON.
5. EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT and AGNES MERCER.

CHAPTER X - Part A

CROCKETT

The descendants of EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, of this chapter are cousins twice removed from the SUTHERLANDS of Chapter I.

Not too long after CROCKETT made the journey from Decatur, Ala. to Austin, Texas, he married AGNES, the daughter of LEVI MERCER and his wife SARAH MENEFEE who was the daughter of WILLIAM MENEFEE, signer of the Texas Declaration of Independence, and his wife, AGNES SUTHERLAND.

The late MOTON H. CROCKETT SR' of Austin, Texas states, "I well remember that my father E. R. CROCKETT told me that DAVID CROCKETT (hero of the Alamo) was his second cousin and my third cousin. DAVID was born in 1786 and acco ding to the 'Congressional Record' was born at the mouth of Limestone River, in Green Co., Tenn., died at the Alamo, San Antonio, Texas March 6, 1836."

On June 12, 1936, FRANKLIN D. ROOSEVELT, President of the United States, stood in front of the most famous building in Texas, the old Spanish Mission now called the Alamo, in the heart of down-town San Antonio.

As he placed a wreath at the door of this revered shrine he said, "We are not lacking in many monuments of noble deeds, but the Alamo stands out in high relief as our noblest exemplification of sacrifice, heroic and pure. TRAVIS and BOWIE, CROCKETT and BONHAM and the one hundred and seventy-eight who were their comrades, by their supreme sacrifice, made Texas live. Without the inspiration of the cry - 'Remember the Alamo' - The great southwest might never have become a part of this nation. Without the tradition of the Alamo, every community throughout the land, every young man and young woman about to enter upon the duties of citizenship would have lacked one of our noblest symbols of the American Spirit."

(San Antonio Express, June 12, 1936)

The story of the Alamo, where 182 Texans gave their lives in a delaying action that held the Mexicans Dictator, SANTA ANNA, for thirteen days, was the first act in the deadly encounter and was the most important single factor in the victory six weeks later at San Jacinto, which gave Texas its Independence.

Ever school child in Texas thrills to this story and it is natural that every Texan by the name of CROCKETT should ask himself if - and how he is related to DAVY CROCKETT, leader of a small group of volunteers from Tennessee, who fell in that historic shrine.

Mr. MOTON H. CROCKETT, SR., born December 10, 1879, son of EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT and his wife, AGNES MERCER, says that his father told the family repeatedly that he was a cousin of DAVY CROCKETT.

Other relatives who also knew his father bear him out in this statement but neither they nor he, know whether the cousinship was by the traditionally southern system of "cousins once removed," or who the common ancestor was through which the relationship was consumated.

To prove his father's claim of kinship to DAVY CROCKETT, a request which could be expressed in less than a dozen words, invovlves tracing the lineage and establishing the pedigree of both men back to the beginning of the eighteenth century.

To establish the line of MOTON H. CROCKETT has been fairly easy, since many others, including himself, had already worked on it, but to prove the lineage of the famous DAVY about whom so much fiction has been written has been as difficult as the other was simple.

The descendants of EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, proudly and definately, trace their lineage back eight generations from todays youngsters to a Scotch-Irish immigrant of 1740 who came to be called, "ROBERT CROCKETT of the Great Calfpastures" from an excellent article about him and his descendants which was published in the Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. 63 (1955) p. 186-209.

The author, Mr. ROBERT H. MONTGOMERY, lawyer of Boston, Mass. has done valuable genealogical research on both Virginia and New England CROCKETTS. His own roots are in old Augusta Co. Va. in the same Calfpasture setting, he being a descendant of HUMPHREY MONTGOMERY and JANE GAY.

In his article, "ROBERT CROCKETT of the Great Calf-Pasture", which is completely documented his opinions and conclusions are frankly at varience with Mr. WORTH RAY and "The CROCKETT Family," because he works from the premise that ROBERT of the Calf-Pastures was stating facts when he appeared in the court of Orange Co. Va., 22 May 1740 and made oath "that he imported himself, MARGARET, JOHN, ARSBALL, (ARCHIBALD), JANE, SAMUEL and ROBERT CROCKETT JR. from Ireland to Philadelphia and from thense into this colony, at his own charge and that this is the first time of his proving his and their right in order to obtain land -- ordered to be certified. (Orange Co. Va. Circuit Court Bk. 2, p. 156) The late WORTH S. RAY, formerly of Austin, Texas in his publications, "Mecklenberg Signers" and "Lost Tribes of North Carolina," advances the theory that ROBERT Of the Calf-Pastues, was not an immigrant but that he and SAMUEL CROCKETT of Reed's Creek, in Augusta Co. were brothers and were descended from the Somerset Co. Md. and Tangier Island family of CROCKETT which had its

beginning in Old Accomack, later Northampton Co. Va. RAY maintained that ROBERT of the 1740 oath was not an immigrant into the country but only into the recently opened Shenandoah Valley of Va. and that he was a grandson of RICHARD CROCKETT SR. of Somerset Co. Md. whose will was proved in that county 26 April 1728.

This RICHARD CROCKETT does name sons ROBERT, JOHN and RICHARD and states that he has six children "now living with me." His wife was ALICE and the will was witnessed by ROBERT, JOHN and RICHARD CROCKETT, presumedly his sons. (Liber E. Bk. No. 9, p. 114-115)

However, there are no connecting documents. On the other hand JANIE PRESTON FRENCH and ZELLA ARMSTRONG, the co-authors of "The CROCKETT Family and Connecting Lines", which was published in 1928 in Vol. V of "Notable Southern Families," maintain that ROBERT of the Calf-pastures and SAMUEL and JOSEPH CROCKETT, all of early Augusta Co. Va., were first cousins and descendants of French-Huguenot refugees to Ireland, ANTOINE and LOUISE (de SAIX) CROCKETAGNE).

In his autobiography, DAVY CROCKETT claimed that his father, JOHN CROCKETT was of Irish descent, born in Ireland or on a passage from that country to America, that JOHN spent the early part of his life in Pennsylvania, lived for a time in Lincoln Co. N.C. and then removed to (what is now) Tenn.

He further claimed that his mother was born in Maryland near Baltimore.

These statements by DAVY CROCKETT, gleaned from the autobiography, are the basis of the refutation by ROBERT MONTGOMERY in his article that DAVY was descended from ROBERT of the Calf-pasture through his son ARCHIBALD.

This latter theory was advanced by Mr. WORTH RAY in several of his genealogical publications. On page 527 of his Mecklenberg Signers, he says, "DAVID CROCKETT was a descendant of the Tangier Island Family of that name, some of whom lived in Somerset Co. Maryland. Then he presents the idea that ROBERT, one of the three named sons of RICHARD CROCKETT of that county who made his will in 1728 was identical with ROBERT of the Calf-pastures and that DAVY CROCKETT'S paternity was ARCHIBALD (1) of Mecklenberg Co. North Carolina; ROBERT (2) of the Calfpastures and RICHARD of Somerset Co. Md., of course beginning with JOHN, DAVY'S father.

Mr. MONTGOMERY explodes this theory very neatly with his proof from many sources which we will discuss later but he depends mostly on the information from DAVY himself. "DAVID tells in the course of his narrative that his father had the following brothers: "JOSEPH a brother of my father wounded by the indians, JAMES still a younger brother -- deaf and dumb who was taken prisoner by the Indians and discovered nearly eighteen years later by my father and his eldest brother, WILLIAM CROCKETT." Mr. MONTGOMERY then summerizes, "To identify DAVY'S grandfather CROCKETT, we must therefore find an Irish emigrant who had a son JOHN, born in Ireland or on the Atlantic and at least three other sons, WILLIAM, JOSEPH and JAMES." Then he shows ARCHIBALD does not fit this picture for he, himself, was born in Ireland and brought to America in his infancy," and while his will does name a son JOHN, it does not mention, nor is there evidence to prove, that he had sons: WILLIAM, JAMES and JOSEPH.

JOHN CROCKETT, first named son of ROBERT of the Calfpastures, who is a lineal fore-parent of ED. RICHARDSON CROCKETT, also claimed to have been born at sea. He died in S.C. and was buried in Waxhaw Cemetery His tombstone attents to the fact that he "Born upon the sea near Pennsylvania shore, lived in America till almost forescore."

Unfortunately DAVY does not tell us in his story the first names of his CROCKETT grandparents "who were murdered by the Creeks in their own house where RODGERSVILLE, Hawkins Co., Tennessee now stands."

So, in order to establish the pedigree of DAVID CROCKETT born August 17, 1786, who was to acquire immortal fame with his 182 companions on March 6, 1836, in the Alamo in San Antonio, Texas, we find great difficulty in all except the first generation.

We know only that he was the son of one, JOHN CROCKETT and his wife REBECCA HAWKINS.

Only by the most persistant efforts was it possible to establish the name of his grandfather who was killed by the Indians where Rogersville, Tennessee now stands.

The first to sift out this important information were ARMSTRONG and FRENCH and even before their "CROCKETT Family" was published in 1928 the genealogical world was alerted to their very important find in the "Outlook."

"Miss ZELA ARMSTRONG of Chattanooga and Mrs. JOHN FRENCH, with the help of Judge EARNEST CROCKETT, were in the process of tracing CROCKETT Lineage. In a tour of Virginia and East Tennessee, they found many traditions concerning the grandfather of DAVY, but sifting these, the name "DAVID" seemed to have data to support it. Concentrating therefore on DAVID they searched the records of Virginia (for this part of Tennessee was Virginia then) and discovered the estate of one, DAVID CROCKETT, administered in Washington County Virginia in 1778 by his two sons ROBERT and WILLIAM CROCKETT. The real estate as owned by the decendants was given as in Carter's Valley (now Tenn.) and this land was finally located in the present county of Hawkins as the site of Rogersville, which corresponds to what DAVY said in his autobiography.

SUMMERS "Annals of Southwest Virginia" records, on page 1000, the action taken by the court in appointing the administrators to the estate of this DAVID CROCKETT. "On motion of WILLIAM CROCKETT and ROBERT

CROCKETT administration is granted them in Washington County (Virginia) on the estate of DAVID CROCKETT who made oath there to and entered into and acknowledged their bond with JOHN COULTER and JOHN LOWRY their securities in the sum of one thousand pounds for the faithful administration of the said decedant's estate," August 19, 1778.

The appraisal of the estate of DAVID CROCKETT was witnessed on Nov. 21, 1778 in Washington County Virginia by JOHN COCKES, ABRAHAM McCLELEN and WILLIAM INGRAM. Among a list of property consisting largely of live stock, farm equipment and household goods, one item is of significance to us.

"Tract of Land in Carter's Valley No. 100. (Bk. 1 page 54)

While Mr. C. N. BOOTH, clerk of the Circuit Court of Washington Co. Va. says he does not know where Carter's Valley is and never heard of it, Mr. H H. KIPPLER, Register of Deeds at Rogersville Hawkins Co. Tenn. says "Rogersville is in Carter's Valley," and adds that on June 7, 1790 (twelve years after the death of DAVID CROCKETT and his wife) ROBERT CROCKETT, one of the administrators, conveyed 280 acres in Hawkins County to one, JOSEPH ROGERS, for whom Rogersville is named. This ROBERT CROCKETT is probably the one of that name who served in the Rev. War from Green Co. N.C. later Green Co. Tenn. adjoining Co. to Sullivan, parent Co. of Hawkins. (Vol. I, N.C. Army Accts)

An effort has been made by the compiler to trace the title of this tract of land before it came into possession of DAVID the grandfather of DAVY CROCKETT.

Washington County Virginia, Sullivan and Washington County Tenn. all possible sources of this information give a negative reply on deeds; and the Virginia state library also replies in that vein as to land grants.

Search of American State Papers and Territorial Records also failed to disclose either grantor deed or grant of this property to DAVID CROCKETT prior to August of 1778. Effort has also been made in North Carolina to locate such a document but to date has failed.

It is thought that ROBERT CROCKETT, Admt. of DAVID of Carter's Valley, g.father of DAVY CROCKETT, returned to Frederick Co. Va. after he sold his father's land in 1790. In Sept. 1795 ROBERT of Frederick Co. bought in sd. Co. 153½ acres adj. JOHN NEWLAND and JACOB FUNK. In 1811, he acquired from NEWLAND and wife SARAH, 103 acres. Later he bought a lot in Gainsborough. His Rev. War record attests to the fact that he was born 13 Aug. 1755 at the site of Berryville Va. which is on the old Wagon Rd. twenty miles from Harper's Ferry and 10 miles from Winchester Co. seat of Frederick in which DAVID CROCKETT lived 1748-1769.

An item, this time from the records of Washington Co. North Carolina (now Tenn.) is thought by Mr. WORTH RAY to refer to the father of DAVY CROCKETT. "August 28, 1778 Ordered that a commission issue to JOHN COLTER and ISAAC SHELBY Esq. to take the deposition of RUTH MORRIS, LYDIA CROSS, MARY TYE and JOHN CROCKETT in behalf of JOHN RODGERS defendant, the state plaintiff." It would follow that RUTH, LYDIA and MARY might also have been daughters of DAVID CROCKETT of Carter's Valley, if JOHN was a son.

There is good reason to believe that DAVID CROCKETT left another daughter, JEAN, who came into the 17 August 1779 court of Washington Co. Va. and chose JAMES GLEN, her guardian.

She, or another JEAN CROCKETT, married in Green Co. Tenn., twenty years later, on 8 May 1797 GEO. HISON.

Although we know from the recently published diary of WILLIAM BYRD that he surveyed the boundry line between North Carolina and Virginia in 1728 and 29, it was not until 1783 that the western boundry was fixed and Washington and Sullivan Co., Tenn., found themselves in North Carolina, rather than Virginia, as they thought. Sullivan has lost most of its records.

This explains the confusion concerning the place of residence of DAVID CROCKETT of Carter's Valley now Hawkins Co. Tenn., who was grandfather of DAVY CROCKETT.

This particular location was part of what later became known as the Wataugua Settlement and we know that DAVID CROCKETT was there before 22 Aug. 1776 when a group of citizens petitioned the new state of N.C. for annexation. The signatures of both DAVID and his son, WILLIAM CROCKETT were affixed to this document. (N.C. Colonial Records Vol. 10 p. 711)

Having established, then, the identity of DAVY'S paternal grandfather as DAVID CROCKETT by checking it against the information in the autobiography, we move back another step to Lincoln Co. North Carolina created in 1779 from Tyron.

DAVY says that his father, JOHN CROCKETT, spent the early part of his life in Pennsylvania and lived for a time in Lincoln Co. North Carolina before removing to what is now Tennessee. Actually he lived in Lincoln while it was Tyron.

Mr. MIXON in his "Annals of Lincoln Co." wrote, "I find names in records of DAVID and WILLIAM CROCKETT as of March 11, 1771. THOMAS YEATES of Berkley County province of South Carolina conveyed to DAVID CROCKETT of Tyron Co. N.C. 250 acres on the south side of the Catawba River."

This not only is significant because it carries the names of the two Watagua signers and helps to give authority to the autobiography but it also indicates two other facts:

1. DAVID CROCKETT, the grandfather, was already a resident of Tyron Co. prior to this deed of 1771.

2. WILLIAM, an older son, must have been twenty-one or older at this time and so was born 1750 or earlier.

With so many of the neighbors of the CROCKETTS in both North Carolina and Tenn. having come from Pennsylvania by way of Western Virginia, a thorough search was made of the counties of that area and of adjacent West Virginia.

The only records of a DAVID CROCKETT in the counties of the Shenandoah Valley, which was the thorough-fare of the first-settlers who pioneered that section, are found in Frederick Co. Va. which, like Augusta, adjoining it, was made from Orange Co. Va. about 1738-43.

On Wednesday 3 Aug. 1748, it was ordered by the clerk that the name of DAVID CROCKETT and his tithables be added to the tithe list. (Frederick Co. Court Orders Bk. No. 2 p. 456)

On May 3, 1753 CROCKETT entered suit against WM. WILLIAMS but the suit was ordered to be dismissed. (Ibid Bk. 4 p. 494)

The same verdict was reached in Sept. 1762 when CROCKETT refused to prosecute WM. LONG. (Ibid Bk. 10 p. 236)

ON 9 Aug. 1766, 400 acres at the foot of North Mountain on the Tuscarrah was patented to DAVID CROCKETT of Frederick Co. by Lord THOS. FAIRFAX. This land in said Co. (Northern Neck Grant Bk. N. p. 108)

On 3 March 1767, DAVID CROCKETT and his wife, ELIZABETH, of Frederick Co. Va. conveyed, in three parcels, a total of 459 acres on the north side of Tuscarrorah, which had been patented to CROCKETT. (D. Bk. 11 Frederick Co. pp. 258, 260 and 263)

On June 14, 1768 DAVID CROCKETT and ELIZABETH, his wife, conveyed what appears to have been their last piece of property in Frederick Co. to ROBERT WATT of Cumberland Co. Pa. The description reads, "A certain plantation or Tract of Land lying in the County of Frederick within four miles of Watkins Ferry, it being a patent granted to a certain JONAS HEDGE and his wife, ELIZABETH, bearing date of 7th of September 1756 - and bounded as by a survey made by Mr. JOHN MAUZEY the 14th of April 1752 - 352 acres.

Since there is no deed in Frederick Co. conveying this property to CROCKETT, the inferance is that it was inherited from HEDGES either by CROCKETT or his wife.

This is the grant to HEDGES dated 14 Nov. 1754 of 352 acres in Frederick Co. about 4 miles from Watkin's Ferry lying on both sides of the Waggon Rd. and bounded by a survey made by Mr. JOHN MAUZEY adj. Major CARLILSE. Bk. H. pp. 571 and 666. The grant was confirmed to CROCKETT on 7 Sept. 1756 in the latter document.

Since ELIZABETH is given as the wife of both HEDGE and CROCKETT, efforts were made to find a connecting link and to determine CROCKETT'S former residence by locating that of JONAS HEDGE but the earlist patent granted to him in 1754 speaks of him as of Frederick Co. An effort was also made to locate the will or est te settlement of JONAS HEDGES in Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania but to no avail.

Probably ELIZABETH, the wife of CROCKETT was either the widow or daughter of HEDGE and the former's second wife.

Since June 1768, the date of the last conveyance fits well with the 1771 date in Tyron County North Carolina, it would be easy to conclude that the DAVID of Frederick Co. and the one of the North Carolina record were one and the same, except for the fact that we find another DAVID and wife ELIZABETH of that vicinity after the death of DAVY'S grandparents.

On February 19, 1782 DAVID CROCKETT and ELIZABETH his wife, conveyed fifty acres to JOSEPH GALBRAITH in Mecklenberg Co. North Carolina which was the residence of all parties to the transaction. (Mecklenberg Signers - page 321)

On August 21, 1782 a DAVID CROCKETT was defendant in Washington Co. Virginia in a suit brought by JOHN RHEA. (SUMMER'S Annals of Southwest Virginia)

Ten years later on April 12, 1792, a DAVID CROCKETT and wife ELIZABETH, conveyed land in Washington Co. Ga. to one WALTER DENT.

Mr. WORTH RAY in his Mecklenberg signers contends that this is the DAVID CROCKETT from Mecklenberg Co. North Carolina and that he moved to Georgia after the Revolution with several other CROCKETTS families from that area.

The question for us is, do all of the records concerning this DAVID and ELIZABETH CROCKETT refer to the same couple or did DAVID the grandfather of DAVY, also have a wife named ELIZABETH?

If so then of course it could have been he who lived in Frederick Co. Even though in the story of his life DAVY does not mention the residence in Frederick Co., we are going to venture a guess that this DAVID CROCKETT whom we have traced from Northern Virginia to Lincoln Co. was one and the same man and that DAVID CROCKETT of Mecklenberg Co. N.C. and Ga. and Washington Co. Va. in 1782 was Jr. uncle of DAVY, with a wife who was named, ELIZABETH, as was his mother.

We take this position because DAVID of Frederick was there as early as 1748 and then too there is no proven relationship between DAVID Of Mecklenberg and Ga. and the one of Lincoln Co. The reference to DAVID of

Washington Co. Va. in 1782 follows the pattern of the confused records of the estate settlement of DAVID SR. of Carter Valley. Assuming that we are correct, we now can name six sons of DAVID, Senior and his wife who were murdered by the indians: DAVID JR., WILLIAM, ROBERT of the administrative document, JOHN the father of DAVY and the younger sons, JOSEPH and JAMES. They also perhaps had the 4 daughters already named.

Since DAVY stated that his father spent his boyhood in Pennsylvania, and we have established the fact that his grandfather was DAVID CROCKETT whose estate was administered in Washington Co. Va. in 1778, we next made a determined effort to locate data in that state relating to this elder DAVID CROCKETT.

The first and most significant of the Pa. documents and the only ones in that colony which relate to a DAVID CROCKETT of that era, are lifted from RUPPS Thirty-Thousand Immigrants:

On 27 Sept. 1727, fifty-three Palatines, with their families, about 200 persons, were imported in the ship, "JAMES GOODWILL" from Rotterdam last from Falmouth. DAVID CROCKETT-Master.

11 Sept. 1728 - Palatines imported in the ship, "James Goodwill" DAVID CROCKETT-Master- from Rotterdam last from Deal, whence she sailed June 15th.

19 Sept. 1732 - Palatines imported in the ship, "Johnson of London - from Rotterdam last from Deal - DAVID CROCKETT-master.

While there is a tiny community in Stafford Co. Va. called Falmouth, shown only on colonial maps and there also is Deal Island in Chesapeak Bay we know that these references are to Falmouth and Deal, ports of England, especially since the second voyage from Deal to Philadelphia consumed nearly three month.

RUPP'S immigrants entered through the Port of Philadelphia into Pennsylvania and were mostly German.

It is evident from these records that DAVID CROCKETT, master of ships that were English owned, called at the Dutch port of Rotterdam for his passengers and then at an English port before sailing for the North American Colonies.

Working on the theory that DAVID CROCKETT, ship-master, may have decided to become or already was a citizen of the new world no effort was spared in the search for deeds, grants and wills of CROCKETT'S in the original counties of Pa. but no further record of this DAVID CROCKETT has been found. Subsequently records of New Jersey, Deleware, Maryland and Virginia were also searched for references concerning DAVID, the ship-master turned colonists, but the next reference to a DAVID CROCKETT are the records in Washington Co. Va. and Hawkins Co. Tenn. which refer to DAVID CROCKETT the grandfather of DAVY CROCKETT of the Alamo, in 1778.

JOHN CROCKETT son of DAVID and father of DAVY, by his son's statement, was born at sea and we may well have stumbled on a significant clue, but forty-six years passed between the 1732 voyage to Philadelphia and the 1778 Indian massacre in Carter's Valley Tenn. and the latter DAVID with a family, of whom four sons were born by 1755 and several were not of age in 1778, had probably been married about 35 - 40 years or in 1740-45 and was born about 1715-20.

Perhaps DAVID CROCKETT of Tenn. and ROBERT of the Calfpastures were both sons of DAVID the ship-master, ROBERT the older and DAVID the youngest of his family.

ROBERT CROCKETT of the Calf-pastures, in 1740, was a married man with five children, probably was married 1729 and born about 1705.

A gap of 15 or twenty years between an oldest and youngest child was not unusual in that day of big families.

The age of DAVID, the ship-master, may be estimated by several facts. To have been a ship-master in the year 1727 or earlier indicates that he was man of dependability and some maturity, probably forty- or forty-five years of age. If he was the father of ROBERT of the Calf-pastures he must have been born about 1680 which means he would have been 47 in 1727.

While this supposition may be true there is no proof to any of this reasoning concerning the relationship of DAVY CROCKETT'S line and that of ROBERT of the Calf-pasture - only the coincident of both families having claimed to have come from Ireland to the Port of Philadelphia, the tradition in each family that a son was born at sea one in 1730 the other in about 1745-50 and the further fact that a DAVID CROCKETT was ship-master between Europe and Philadelphia in this specific era.

Based on this slim possibility of relationship, it was necessary to search in any probable area for records pertaining to DAVID the ship-master keeping in mind that, according to the customs of the times, it was not unusual that the captain or owner of a boat might take his family with him on a voyage and therefore it did not necessarily follow that if a child was born aboard ship that the family was on its maiden voyage to the new land.

Disappointingly, land records in the colonies, indicate that the very early CROCKETT'S, evidently, were not land owners.

They must either have tarried very briefly in Pa., particularly, or they must not have depended on the land for a livelihood.

In the records pertaining to DAVID CROCKETT, ship-master, Deal and Falmouth are mentioned as Ports of Call for his ships.

These are ports of England and, on the possibility that DAVID might have resided in either and left a will or

other record, letters were sent to the respective county - city of each. From Falmouth we had a negative reply, and from Deal no answer at all.

Because, thus far, colonial records in the various indicated areas, stubbornly refused to give up any further information concerning DAVID CROCKETT, the grandfather of DAVY or the ship-master and because both ROBERT of the Calf-pastures and the fore-parents of DAVY were said to have come from Ireland, a search was begun there.

The descendants of ROBERT were Presbyterians and probably those of DAVID also. Other clues indicated that the CROCKETTS were of Protestant northern Ireland and since JOHN CROCKETT of the 1768 will of York Co. Pa. lived in Donegal Township, the search was started in Northern Ireland in the vicinity of Donegal and Londonderry Counties.

Unfortunately for all Americans of Irish extraction, Irish documents were mostly destroyed in 1922 during their Civil War.

However, a report from the Ulster-Scot Historical Society of Belfast, Ireland gives a few facts from the index of wills and a few records in private files. Sir WILLIAM SCOTT is chairman of this Society.

All wills in this area are destroyed but the index shows that the will of a RICHARD CROCKETT was filed in Armagh 8 Mar. 1729.

ROBERT CROCKETT left a will in the same county which was probated 15 Oct. 1764. One of the sons of JOHN CROCKETT of York Co. Pa. 1768 was named ROBERT and the former ROBERT, could well have been JOHNS' father who lived in Ireland and who was mentioned in JOHN CROCKETT'S will as already deceased.

There was also a GEORGE CROCKET who lived in county Londonderry and left a will in 1771. He paid rentals in that county as early as 1730. Among rentals paid in county Armage in 1711, 1726, 1732 were leases on the BROWNLOW estates by a RICHARD as well as a ROBERT CROCKETT.

Meyer's "Immigration of Quakers into Pennsylvania 1682-1750," published at Swarthmore, Pa. 1902, lists an ELI CROCKETT from County Antrim as a settler at Nottingham, Md. a member of the Bush River Meeting. Before going to Md. he had been a member of the New Garden Monthly. Quaker Meeting in Chester Co. Pa. The records of that meeting state that he and a JOHN CROCKETT had arrived as early as 1722.

On November 24, 1715 ELI CROCKETT and ELIZABETH WILKINSON both of Ballymoney Meeting in Ireland were married at the house of JAMES MOORE. In his will dated Dec. 29, 1727, same parish in Ireland, JAMES MOORE made a bequest to his granddaughter, ELIZABETH CROCKETT.

The ELI CROCKET who came to America in 1722 was probably not a new comer to Northern Ireland.

In 1676 GILBERT CROCKETT of County Antrim suffered persecution for tithes. In 1681 both GILBERT CROCKET and ELI CROCKET, of the same county, had goods seized for tithes. The will of WILLIAM WYLY of County Londonderry made in February 1717/18 mentions his son SAMUEL WYLY and GILBERT CROCKETT son of ELI CROCKETT of Reerin, County Londonderry indicating, perhaps, a relationship to CROCKETTS. Perhaps GILBERT was at the time an infant and the grandson of WYLY as ELI was named as executor of the estate.

There is no certainty at all of what happened to the JOHN CROCKETT who came to Pa. in 1722 with ELI CROCKETT.

Having failed to find any records definitely relating to DAVID CROCKETT, ship-master, in either England or Ireland we returned our search to Pennsylvania, Maryland, and other indicated colonies hoping to find some indirect clue that might contribute to other documents.

First the search was continued in Pennsylvania.

The index of deeds in Philadelphia, Chester, York, Lancaster, Cumberland, Bedford, Bucks and Berks counties have been checked for the period prior to the death of DAVID CROCKETT of Carter's Valley in 1778 for both DAVID and ROBERT CROCKETTS, with negative results in all of them.

Wills in these counties and all others derived from them before 1820 have also been searched for the same names with identical results.

However, for a possible overlooked clue, extracts of wills of CROCKETTS in Pa. and Md. are herein recorded:

1. Will of WALTER CROCKETT of Cheltenham, Co. of Philadelphia, Pa.
   Dated 14 Oct. 1747, p. 18 Oct. 1759.
   He names his wife, CHRISTIAN.
   His children were: ANDREW, ROBERT, JOHN, WALTER, MARY MASON, JENNET BENNER, Brother-in-law JAMES MURRAY.
   Exts: WALTER CROCKETT, JAMES MURRAY, JOHN WATKINS, RICHARD TRENT.
   Wits: JOSEPH LAUGHLIN and JOHN WATKINS.
2. Marriages of Philadelphia. Vol. I
   ANDREW CROCKETT and ANN HARPER June 5, 1756 (Sweedes Church)
3. JANE CROKET and JACOB BENER Nov. 11, 1742 - Abington Pres. Church.
4. Will of WALTER CROCKETT JR. City of Phila - Dated Jan. 7, 1772.
   Brothers: ANDREW and ROBERT CROCKETT.

Sisters: MARY MASON, JANE BENER.
Nephews: JOSEPH BENER, JNO. CROCKETT
Executor: ANDREW CROCKETT.

5. Will of ANDREW CROCKETT Phila. Co. Pa. Dated July 7, 1774.
Proven Aug. 10, 1774, Wife: ANN CROCKETT.
Devisees: LYDIA and JACOB BONER, JOHN BUCHER JR., SAMUEL and BENJ. BUCHER, MARY HUFFTY.
Witnesses: THOMAS BAOLBY, RICHARD STETTAFORE, WILLIAM SUTTON.
It is evident that all of these records, one through five, pertain to the family of WALTER CROCKET SR. who died in 1759.

6. Will of JOHN CROKET - Lancaster Co. Pa. Derry Township -
Dated March 11, 1768 Pr[illegible] April 2, 1768.
Wife JEAN CROKET and ROBERT BRADSHAW were executors.
Sons: THOMAS, ROBERT, JOHN and JEAMS (JAMES)
"I likewise impower any of my children to receive or collect that part of my father's estate left me in Ireland and to divide it equally amongst the other children."
Witnesses: DAVID RAMSAY, SAMUEL REED
Note: Part if not all of children were under age. This evidently was not the JOHN CROCKET who came to Pa. with ELI CROCKETT in 1722 nearly 50 years past.

7. Will of GEORGE CROCKET, Cumberland Co., Allen Township Book D. p. 122, 123 Dated May 2, 1782 - Proven Oct. 3, 1782.
Brothers: JAMES and ANDREW CROCKET.
Sisters: CATHERINE HAWKINS, MARGARET and MARTHA.
Nieces: MARY CROKET, NANCY HAWKIN, Brother ANDREW'S BETSEY.
Sister MARTHA'S BETSEY.
Nephews: ANDREW CROCKET, JAMES CROCKET.
Executors: Brothers JAMES and ANDREW CROCKETT and WILLIAM SCOTT.
Witnesses: WILLIAM SCOTT, JAMES McGOVNEY, BENEDICT LONG.

8. Will of JAMES CROCKET of Cumberland Co. Allen Township (probably father of GEORGE CROCKETT of the 1782 will.)
Dated July 16, 1790 - Proven Dec. 31, 1790
Wife: MARGARET
Daughters: ELIZABETH wife of THOMAS McCORMICK.
AGNESS wife of JAMES McGOVNEY, MARY BRODRICK, MARGARET, wife of ROBERT THOMPSON, JEAN CROCKET, REBECKA CROCKET.
Son: JOHN.
Executors: Wife MARGARET and son JOHN.
Witnesses: GEO. DICKIE, JAMES CROCKETT, WILLIAM SCOTT.

9. Marriages: (late) Cumberland Co., Pa.
DAVID McGOWAN to ELIZABETH CROCKETT Mar. 3, 1791.
ALEXANDER TRINDLE to SARAH CROCKETT
Dec. 19, 1793
THOMAS CROCKETT to ESTHER JOHNSON
Nov. 16, 1797
JAMES CROCKETT to SARAH NIMMONS
Jan. 2, 1798

10. Land Warrents in Pennsylvania to CROCKETTS.
(1) Warrent No. 284 was issued 23 Oct. 1746 in favor of ARCHIBALD CROCKETT for 50 acres of land in Mountjoy Township Lancaster Co. The survey was made 19 Nov. 1762 Returned 21 Jan. 1775 recorded in Survey Book C., Vol. 36, page 68. The tract Minder patented to WILLIAM MILLER Jan. 21, 1775.
ARCHIBALD is of special interest to us because the second son of ROBERT of the Calfpasture is also an ARCHIBALD. Evidently this elder CROCKETT of that name either died or walked off and left his patent. Was he a brother of ROBERT?
(2) ANDREW CROCKET application No. 1087 west side, 1 Sept. 1766 for 330 acres of land situated at foot of Tussy Mts. in Cumberland Co., persuant to survey 3 June 1767. On 24 Nov. 1767 warrent No. 164 to accept survey issued in favor of SAM'L WALLIS a tract called "Crockett's Adventure'. patented to WALLIS 3 Dec. 1767; recorded in Pat. Bk. AA, Vol. 10, p. 200.

The rest of the land warrents through the year 1779 issued in the name of CROCKETT, were to JAMES ANDREW, GEORGE and WILLIAM CROCKETT all for land in Cumberland Co.

They are all too late to be of any value in proving the lineage of DAVY CROCKETT or of ROBERT, of the Calfpasture.

Their value lies in the fact that they, combined with the later wills of Cumberland Co. establish a CROCKETT family three of whom, ANDREW, JAMES and GEO. were adults in 1767.

Because of cross-references it seems evident that these three were sons of JAMES CROCKETT SR. of the 1790 will, and his wife, MARGARET, who also had daus: ELIZ. McCORMICK, AGNES McGOVNEY, MARY BRODICK, MARGARET THOMPSON, MARTHA - perhaps SCOTT; JEAN and REBECCA CROCKETT. There was also an oldest son, JOHN.

As we summerize these Pennsylvania documents on CROCKETT, it is evident that they have offered absolutely no help on ROBERT CROCKETT of Calfpasture and none on DAVID other than those on DAVID CROCKETT, ship-master.

And while it is possible that he was either DAVY'S grandfather or the father of same, there is no proof and there are no further records concerning him in Pa., as yet discovered.

These records do establish the family of WALTER CROCKETT SR., who died in 1759 in Philadelphia Co. They also prove the family of JAMES CROCKETT decd. in 1790, who appears to be the relative of JOHN CROCKETT of Lancaster Co. Pa.

JOHN'S son, ROBERT, was probably forty or more years younger than ROBERT of Calfpasture.

CROCKETT'S in Early Maryland

Having retraced the steps of DAVY'S grandfather from Carter's Valley in Hawkins Co. Tenn., where he was slain by the Indians in 1777, to each of his former places of residence and having found a DAVID CROCKETT astride the Great Wagon Road down which settlers passed from the ports of Pa. to Va., N.C. and S.C., and failing in Pa. to locate him unless he be DAVID CROCKETT, the ship-captain 1727-1732; we turned back to Maryland the home of RICHARD CROCKETT, whom Mr. WORTH RAY, maintained was the father of "ROBERT of the Calfpastures."

Although we had found a DAVID CROCKETT in Frederick Co. Va. and again touching port at Philadelphia, we had found no trace of ROBERT CROCKETT, who came from Ireland to Philadelphia in 1730 and who lived there, presumedly, for the next decade before he applied for land for himself, wife and several children on emigrating into Va. in 1740.

First in Maryland, we pick up the trail of ELI CROCKETT, unmarried, who came to Pa. in 1722 with a JOHN CROCKETT. He was from Ballenacre, Co. Antrim and he first attended New Garden Quaker Meetings in Chester Co. Pa. but soon transferred to the Nottingham settlement in Md. Unless his wife, ELIZABETH WILKERSON, probably widow and daughter of JAMES MOORE of Ballymoney, had deceased since her marriage to ELI CROCKETT in Ireland on 24 Nov. 1715, he was not the same man.

According to the custodians of the records of Nottingham Monthly Meetings in Md., ELI CROCKETT and GILBERT CROCKETT were both members of a committee 17 Aug. 1730. This remainds us that in 1681 GILBERT CROCKETT and ELI CROCKETT of Ballyrashane Parish, Co. Antrim had goods seized for tithes. They were evidently Quakers and we suppose it was the Church of England, rather than Catholics, who were imposing tithes in Northern Ireland.

MARY CROCKETT, widow of GILBERT of Nottingham M.M. married before 19 May 1744, --- HARRISON and was disowned for marrying a non-friend.

ELIZABETH CROCKETT, dau. of GILBERT, the elder, married ----- NELSON out of unity and acknowledged her error 21 Sept. 1747.

GILBERT CROCKETT, son of GILBERT, joined church of England 15 Dec. 1753.

JOHN CROCKETT of Bush River, Quaker Meetings in Maryland, obtained a certificate to marry MARY RICHARDSON dau. of JOSEPH RICHARDSON 13 Feb. 1747.

On 18 Aug. 1753, BENJ. CROCKETT married ELIZABETH CHEW and was disowned by the Church for marrying a non-friend.

West River Quarterly Meetings Minutes:
5 June 1747 and 3 Dec. 1747, MARY CROCKETT was given a certificate of attendance to Nottingham; 3 March 1749 MARY CROCKETT m. JOHN HOPKINS; 29 April 1716 JOHN CROCKETT m. MARY COALS;
14 May 1727 GILBERT CROCKETT m. MARY CHEW.

We believe that MARY CROCKETT, who married HARRISON in 1744 and was put out of the Quaker fellowship, was the widow of GILBERT CROCKETT SR. (JAMES and MARY HARRISON admt. of GILBERT 1744).

GILBERT CROCKETT JR., who joined the Church of England in 1753 died in 1772 and left sons: GILBERT, SAMUEL, BENJAMINE. Executor: WM. WEBB. Witnesses were PHILIP NELSON, probably his bro-in-law, SKIPWITH JOHNS and DANIEL KENLY.

JOHN CROCKETT, evidently the one from Bushy River who married MARY RICHARDSON, died in Baltimore Co. between Oct. and Dec. of 1747.

He left his wife MARY, to whom he had been married since Feb., his land called "Merion." To his sister HANNAH CROCKETT, he left 500 acres on Isle of Caper, he named MARY DORSEY, dau. of my bro-in-law, ELY DORSEY; and NATHAN RICHARDSON, son of my bro-in-law NATHAN RICHARDSON. One of the witnesses, DANIEL RICHARDSON.

We are not certain as to the identity of this JOHN CROCKETT. Perhaps he was son of JOHN who came to Pa. with GILBERT CROCKETT in 1722 and followed GILBERT to Md.

MARY CROCKETT and ELI DORSEY, were married 24 Jan. 1744 according to the Register of St. Johns and St. George Parish Baltimore Co. 1681-1799 p. 192.

Other records in this Register of St. John's and St. George, which was first in Baltimore and later in Harford Co., are rewarding.

The earliest of these have to do with an earlier JOHN CROCKETT, evidently the one whose estate was settled in Baltimore Co. in 1732. Was he the immigrant of ten years before?

JOHN CROCKETT had purchased 200 acres of land for a glebe or church even before 11 August 1726 and six entries through 30 March 1730 recorded in the Vestry Proceedings witness to the fact that he was being repaid in tobacco on a yearly basis.

Among other marriages are recorded one of a JOHN CROCKETT to ANN HICKSON 25 Dec. 1744. We recall that in 1797 in Green Co. Tenn. a JEAN CROCKETT, whom we believe to have been either dau. or granddau. of DAVID CROCKETT of Carter's Valley, married GEO. HISON.

This JOHN CROCKETT who married ANN HICKSON, was probably a descendant of JOHN of the 1732 estate settlement who owned much land on the northern outskirts of Baltimore Town.

Among the births recorded in St. Johns and St. George are two each of the children of JOSEPH and SAMUEL CROCKETT, who later were pioneer settlers in Augusta Co. Va.

This is important because both RAY and ARMSTRONG and FRENCH claim that these CROCKETTS were cousins of ROBERT Of the Calfpasture.

SAMUEL CROCKETT, son of SAMUEL and ESTHER, born 11 Feb. 1739.

JEAN CROCKETT, dau. of SAMUEL and ESTHER, born 24 Feb. 1741.

MARY CROCKETT, dau. of JOSEPH and JANE b. 2 Mar. 1739.

SAMUEL CROCKETT, son of JOSEPH and JANE, his wife born Mar. 1740 - (?) (Twins)

In 1738 JOSEPH and SAMUEL CROCKETT were granted jointly a tract of land in Baltimore Co. called Arabian Petra. This is now in Harford Co.

A WILLIAM SMITH died in Baltimore Co. in 1746. His executors were JOHANNAH SMITH of Baltimore Co. Md. and THOS. SMITH of Lancaster Co. Pa. and their bondsmen were JOSEPH and SAMUEL CROCKETT of Baltimore Co. Md.

Probably JOHANNA, was the sister of these two CROCKETTS and its certainly possible that all were children of JOHN CROCKETT of the 1732 estate in Baltimore Co.

There remains no doubt but that this SAMUEL and JOSEPH of Baltimore Co. were those later of Augusta Co. Va. because their wives named in their respective wills were ESTHER, wife of SAMUEL, and JEAN, wife of JOSEPH, the same wives as those named in thes Parish records.

This is not their story but to keep the records straight we will include abstracts of their wills in the Virginia data.

We know that they, like all of the very early settlers of the Shenandoah Valley entered through its mouth in Lancaster Co. Pa. We understand the necessity of this but why all seemed to reside in Pa. for a season, although they never bought land, may be because of some stipulation in colonization.

Among the children of JOSEPH was the daughter MARY born in Maryland 2 Mar. 1739 and a son, HUGH CROCKETT, first named in the will of his father.

In 1773, MARY was the wife of JAMES MONTGOMERY and the widow of JOHN ROBINSON. In court records she was said to have been the sister of HUGH and SAMUEL CROCKETT who lived at New Derry, Augusta Co. Va.

In testimony, HUGH CROCKETT said that he came to the Roanoak in 1749 and the ROBINSONS were already there. He affirmed that the CROCKETTS and ROBINSONS had been neighbors in Lancaster Co. Pa.

WILLIAM DAVIS testified that MARY CROCKETT and JOHN ROBINSON were married about 1755 which would have been when she was 16. She m. (3) JACOB KENT.

SAMUEL CROCKETT took up land on Reed Cr. of Augusta Co. He died before May 22, 1750.

Kegleys Va. Frontier is authority for the statement that his appraisement showed that he came into the country with a four horse wagon, with chains and with a good supply of household and kitchen furniture. (p. 128)

The rest of the Maryland documents pertain to the family of RICHARD CROCKETT of Somerset and Worcester Cos., who according to Mr. RAY, was grandfather of ROBERT of the Calfpastures.

A RICHARD CROCKETT came to Maryland in 1664 with HENRY HILL, PAUL MARSH demanded land for transporting himself, HILL and CROCKETT into the colony. (Md. Land Grants Vol. 8 p. 202)

The will of NICHOLAS RICE dated 5 Jan. 1677 and probated in Somerset Co. Md. made RICHARD CROCKETT and JOHN EVANS residuary heirs of his estate after a few small bequests were honored.

On 4 Nov. 1679, EVANS and CROCKETT of Somerset Co. planters, divided the land of the RICE estate by cross-deeds.. These two tracts of land were called "Rice Land" and "Noble Quarters."

The will of RICHARD CROCKETT SR. of Somerset Co. is dated 28 Jan. 1726 and proved 2 June 1727.

He had wife ALICE and sons: JOHN, ROBERT and RICHARD. He mentions that he has six children living with him. Witnesses were his three sons and JOHN EVANS, JR. We believe from subsequent records that this is RICHARD of the RICE bequest but it is 67 years since the first RICHARD CROCKETT came to Md. in 1664, so we believe that RICHARD of 1727 will is RICHARD II) of Md. There is no proof that he is son of RICHARD I, but that is logical. References and signatures to EVANS indicate that RICHARD who died 1727, was the devisee of the RICE will.

Church and Court Records of Somerset and Worcester Cos. have been searched for data pertaining to this family of CROCKETTS but to no avail.

After the death of his father, ROBERT CROCKETT, in 1729, made a conveyance to his brother JOHN CROCKETT and on 15 Aug. 1730 JOHN EVANS SR. to ROBERT CROCKETT both of Somerset Co. Md., a parcel of land on Shiles Creek part of a tract called "Noble Quarters" also "Little Monmouth" beginning at the mouth of a small gutt issuing out of Shiles Creek up the north side of a gutt called Evans gutt to another gutt called CROCKETT'S gutt, 200 acres for 5 shillings.

Witnesses include HENRY DESHIELDS. One of the witnesses to the deeds RICHARD CROCKETT and JOHN EVANS 1679 was JAMES DESHIELDS.

While all the sons of RICHARD CROCKETT II) and JOHN EVANS were witnesses to his will, the son, ROBERT, acted as executor and the division of the estate seems to have been accomplished by a series of similar deeds one from the other, ROBERT making a conveyance also to RICHARD III) his brother, and being named grantee by RICHARD and JOHN EVANS JR. who must have married a sister.

In the Register of Stepney Parish there are late (1795-1805) references to a SHILES CROCKETT and in this same book it states that ALICE CROCKETT and SAMUEL JACKSON were married 24 April 1754 and that JOSIAH son of JOHN and MARY CROCKETT was born 11 April 1749.

This was probably JOHN, son of RICHARD II) although JOSIAH is not named as one of his children in his estate settlement of 27 June 1750.

His wife was MARY and his children were NEHEMIAH, age 17; ALICE; ANN; LEVIN; ELIZABETH; BRIDGETT and JOHN CROCKETT.

His estate was inventoried 5 Sept. 1749, the inventory being made by LEVIN and FRANCIS DASHIELLS.

ROBERT CROCKETT and BENJAMINE VENERABLE are said to be the nearest of kin. (Liber 40 folio 416 Somerset Co.) Since JOHN'S first named son, NEHEMIAH, is seventeen years of age, it puts this JOHN in the generation with the sons of RICHARD II) and if his brother, ROBERT CROCKETT was still of Somerset Co. Md. in 1749 this fact disporves the claim of Mr. WORTH RAY that ROBERT CROCKETT of the Calf-pasture in Augusta Co.1740 was the same.

The will of RICHARD CROCKETT JR., son of RICHARD II) of Somerset was probated in Worcester Co. Md. 7 Mar. 1765 and recorded in Book 33 p. 119 of Worcester Co.

The devisees were his wife, ELIZABETH, to whom he left "Crockett's Delight," his son, WINDER CROCKETT, to whom he gave "Walters Lott" and "Thomas Lott" and his other sons WILLIAM, RICHARD and JOHN who inherited "Piney Marsh." The witnesses were: LEVIN HARVEY, ELIZABETH ESHAM and MOSES START.

WILLIAM CROCKETT, son of RICHARD CROCKETT III), also lived in Worcester Co. and died there in 1772.

His wife was MARGARET and he gave her 50 acres called "Knight."

He mentions his mother, ELIZABETH CROCKETT, and makes her executor, and his brothers RICHARD and JOHN CROCKETT.

Wits: JOHN WOODGATE, JOHN WALLER and GEO. WILLIAMS.

RICHARD EVANS, of Prince Geo. Co. Md. made a deed to WILLIAM SCOTT dated 1726-1730. He had the proper name and this was the proper era for him to have been sharing a legacee from RICHARD CROCKETT II) but this is not the case.

We have concluded in the EVANS chapter that MARK EVANS pioneer in Augusta Co. Va. and fore-parent of the EVANS of the entire chapter was the MARK EVANS formerly of Somerset Co., descendant of JOHN EVANS who shared the estate of NICHOLAS RICE with RICHARD CROCKETT I).

When SAMUEL and JOSEPH CROCKETT, who lived in Baltimore Co. Md. in 1746 and later in Lancaster Co. Pa., finally undertook the move to the Shenandoah Valley of Va., they followed the old wagon road through Harper's Ferry and on past what is now Berryville, Va. where no doubt, DAVID CROCKETT, grandfather of DAVY, was then living. We have thus placed him because we know he was already in Frederick Co. and that he later owned land which JONAS HEDGE then owned, property on both sides of the Wagon Road, and that his son ROBERT was born at Berryville in 1755.

SAMUEL and JOSEPH moved to Va. in 1749 and when they arrived in Augusta Co. they found they had already been preceeded by another CROCKETT for ROBERT of the Calfpasture, ancestor of the EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETTS of Texas, had been there since 1740.

The brothers have been much written about especially by WORTH RAY. Both RAY and FRENCH and ARMSTRONG aver that these two brothers were related to ROBERT of the Calfpasture and state definitely that they were all descendants of ANTONINE DE CROCKETAGNE, a French Huguenot born in Southern France 10 July 1643. There is no proof of a relationship between them and ROBERT CROCKETT of Calfpastures in the Augusta records. ARMSTRONG and FRENCH claim this same ancestry for DAVY in their CROCKETT story and a much removed Texas descendant of ROBERT, JAMES A. CROCKETT, great grandson of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT of the Washaw in S.C. and Decatur, Ala., attests that his grandfather, JOHN RICHARDSON CROCKETT told him the story of ANTOINE DE CROCKETAGNE and his flight from France and settlement in Ireland, as early as 1892, he having heard this as family tradition before any of the CROCKETT genealogies were published. If all of this was substanciated by documents we would indeed have proof of the kinship of all the CROCKETTS of early Augusta Co. including DAVY'S grandfather, DAVID CROCKETT of adjacent Frederick Co.

The genealogy of SAMUEL and JOSEPH CROCKETT of Augusta Co. and their descendants had been discussed and published by several but especially by the late WORTH RAY. The family of ROBERT of the Calfpastures has been documented and published by ROBERT H. MONTGOMERY.

In this story, for fear the works of the others may not be available, the wills and families of these Augusta Co. CROCKETTS, will be briefly given and then the line of ROBERT of the Calfpasture will be followed through his oldest son, JOHN, to ELIJAH CROCKETT father of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT, the progenitor of the Texas branch of the CROCKETT family.

SAMUEL CROCKETT had been in Augusta Co. Va. for less than a year when he died in May 1750. His will is dated 11 Dec. 1749 and Probated 22 May 1750.

He made his wife, ESTHER, and JAMES MONTGOMERY his executors. He named his son JOHN, as one of five sons, and his daughters AGNES, JANE and CATHERINE stating that some of his children were under age and making his brother, JOSEPH, their guardian.

The witnesses to his will were JOSEPH CROCKETT, JOHN NOBLE, JOHN DOWNING and his estate was appraised by JAMES CALLHOUN, JOHN NOBLE and WM. SAYERS. (Vol.III pp. 16 and 21 Augusta Co. Records)

After his death his brother, JOSEPH, entered with the widow, ESTHER, into some land grants which had, no doubt, been planned by SAMUEL before his death.

Later ESTHER CROCKETT married WILLIAM SAYERS and their property was cut off in Botetourt Co. when it was made from Augusta in 1769.

In 1770 in the latter Co., WILLIAM SAYERS divided the land of SAMUEL CROCKETT among his five sons and hereby we have the names of the other four, along with the eldest JOHN, as ANDREW, JOSEPH, SAMUEL and WALTER CROCKETT.

After her marriage to SAYERS, ESTHER had by him ROBERT SAYERS b. 1754, ALEXANDER SAYERS b. 1756 and JOHN THOMPSON SAYERS b. 19 July 1758. We know from the Parish Records in Baltimore Co. Va. that the dau. JEAN (or JANE) was born 21 Feb. 1741 and that the son, SAMUEL JR., was just older, born 11 Feb. 1739.

ESTHER, wife of SAMUEL CROCKETT and later of WILLIAM SAYERS was said by WORTH RAY to have been the daughter of the Rev. JOHN THOMPSON of Glasgow, Scotland and his first wife ——— OSBORNE. This is substantiated by the fact that she gave her youngest son her father's full name. ESTHER was the THOMPSON'S oldest child, born in Scotland while he was attending St. Andrew's Univ. before he entered Va. at Yorktown in 1714. ESTHER probably came to this colony as an infant.

As his family grew, THOMPSON took them with him and did missionary work in various parts of Pa., Md. and Va.

From 1716 to 1729 he lived in Lewis, Sussex Co. Del. where his sister, ESTHER WARRINGTON, was buried 6 April 1768.

In 1729 ESTHER THOMPSON would have been 15 to 17 years of age, if she was truly born in Scotland.

One wonders if she met SAMUEL CROCKETT while living in Delaware. The early records of that state are scattered in N.Y. and then Pa.; after 1681, some are to be found in Dover. All except the New York Records, which are available only to Attorneys, have been examined without any success on the CROCKETT lines. We do

not know the order of ESTHER'S eight children by CROCKETT but it is evident that SAMUEL JR. born in 1739 was not the oldest.

As new counties were made from one another the later records pertaining to the family of SAMUEL and ESTHER CROCKETT were filed in Botetourt, Montogomery, Wythe and Prince Ed. Cos. Va.

Other early immigrants also seeking freedom, including JOST HITE and PETER LAWRENCE, left the holdings they had taken up in New York and moved south to Pa., Del. and N.J. before finally settling in the Valley of Va.

The will of JOSEPH CROCKETT of Augusta Co. Va. was dated 12 Jan. 1766 and proved 17 Mar. 1767. He left to his son, HUGH CROCKETT, land on Roanoke River and he names his sons WALTER, JOSEPH JR., SAMUEL and ROBERT, making WALTER and JOSEPH JR. his executors.

To his wife, JEAN, he left 1/3 of his land on the south side of the Roanoke and he named his daughters MARTHA, ELIZABETH, AGNES and MARY.

MARY and SAMUEL are given as twins born 1740 while the Register of St. Georges Church in Baltimore Co. gives MARY'S birth date as 2 Mar. 1739 and that of SAMUEL as Mar. 1740. However, in that era, children were usually about two years apart and numbering of years was multiple as 1739/40, so they were probably twins, born 2 Mar. 1739/40.

According to "Notable Southern Families" Vol. V, JOSEPH CROCKETT of Augusta Co. was JOSEPH LOUIS CROCKETT b. 1697; d. 1767 m. JEANNE DE VIGNE, dau. of a French Huguenot b. 1704 d. 1792 buried in Old CROCKETT Cemetery in Montgomery Co. Va.

A History of the State of Delaware states that in 1631 a certain DE VRIES, for the Dutch West Indian Co., established a camp on Lewis (or LEWES) Beach of that state and two boat loads of Swedish Settlers settled near Wilmington in 1638.

In 1664 the British took possession of Delaware Colony as part of N.Y. and in 1666 a large influx of English people from Va., Md., N.J., N.Y. and Europe came to Delaware to live.

Many Irish Presbyterians came after 1698.

During the seventeenth century, first Holland and then England were beseiged by Protestants fleeing from persecution in Europe, among them many from France, so one wonders at the names JEAN DE VIGNE and DE VRIES and the coincident of Irish Protestant converging on Del. after 1698 or during the same period that the Rev. JOHN THOMPSON conducted his mission in Lewes, N.J.

We have already suggested that SAMUEL CROCKETT may have known ESTHER THOMPSON his future wife in Delaware or New Jersey and it seems possible that JOSEPH may have also met his wife, JEAN, in this area where the inhabitance from these various sources, including Irish Protestants, converged.

CROCKETT - Part B

ROBERT CROCKETT of the Calfpasture

ROBERT CROCKETT of this sketch is the first proven ancestor in the line of the EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT family in America and if his testimony that he was an immigrant is true we need look no further. The fact that we have found no connecting link in America between him and DAVID CROCKETT of Carter's Valley, who was grandfather of DAVY, is also verification of the statement of the Alamo hero that his father was born at sea which could mean that DAVID was also an immigrant.

We noted that in the Irish index there was a RICHARD and also ROBERT CROCKETT who left wills in the area near Londonderry. ROBERT'S will was probated 15 Oct. 1764 perhaps too late for him to have been progenitor of the CROCKETT'S of America the oldest of whom seems to have been JOSEPH b. 1697.

Actually the most substantial evidence that the early CROCKETTS of Pa., Md. and Va. may have been closely related rests in the similarity of the names of their sons as shown below:*

ROB'T, Va. d. 1746	SAM'L, Va. d. 1750	WALTER, Sr. Pa. d. 1759	JOSEPH, Va. d. 1767	JOHN, Pa. d. 1768	DAVID, Va. d. 1778 Tenn.
JOHN	JOHN	AND'W.	HUGH	THOS.	WILLIAM
ARCH.	AND'W.	ROB'T.	WALTER	ROB'T.	JOHN
SAM'L.	JOSEPH	JOHN	JOSEPH	JOHN	ROB'T.
ROB'T. JR.	SAM'L.	WALTER	SAM'L	JAMES	DAVID
JAS.	WALTER		ROB'T		JOSEPH
ALEX.					JAMES
AND'W.					

Notice that the name JOHN and ROBERT are used in these six contemporary families five times and that SAMUEL, JAMES, JOSEPH, WALTER and ANDREW are each used in three out of the six families. Also note that there isn't a RICHARD CROCKETT in the entire lot although Mr. RAY claimed that ROBERT of Somerset Co., whose father and grandfather were both RICHARDS, was the progenitor of the Augusta Co. CROCKETTS.

We have documented testimony that ROBERT of the Calfpastures: DAVID, grandfather of DAVY and JOHN of Pa. were immigrants from Ireland and the tradition that SAM'L CROCKETT met the THOMPSON family aboard ship from Europe. ESTHER THOMPSON, later wife of SAM'L, bore a son in 1758 so she must have been born not earlier than 1710. SAMUEL CROCKETT, apparently the younger brother of JOSEPH of Augusta Co. Va., who is

*JAMES CROCKETT SR. of Cumberland Co., Pa., of the 1790 will, had sons JOHN, JAMES, ANDREW and GEORGE, at least three of whom were adult in 1767. He would then have been, a bit old to have been the son of JOHN who was father of young children in 1768, unless JOHN married twice.

said by French to have been born 1697, must have been born 1700-1705. If SAMUEL met and admired his future wife, ESTHER THOMPSON, enroute from Europe, it must have been at a later date than THOMPSON'S first passage to Va. in 1714. It is hardly likely that he, even at age 14, would have fallen in love with a four year old child.

However, if SAMUEL was an immigrant at any age, it follows that his brother, JOSEPH, would also have been born in the old world. This leaves only WALTER SR. of Pa. with no European connection.

There are some very minor geographical facts which are suggestive only of proximity of some of these early CROCKETTS.

In 1766 in Pa., ANDREW CROCKETT was granted 330 acres of land at the foot of the Tussey Mts. and in 1767 in Frederick, most northern Co. of Va., DAVID CROCKETT sold 178½ acres at the head of Tuscaroran River. In fact, he sold 460 acres of land all on March 3, 1767 and all on this same waterway.

On 7 Nov. 1754, JONAS HEDGES was granted 261 acres of land in Frederick Co. on the south side of the North Mountain bounded by a survey made by Mr. JOHN MAUZEY. Subsequently, he was granted two more tracts bounded by the same survey and so we suppose, to have been adjoining one another. We know that before 1768 DAVID CROCKETT of Frederick was in possession of the acreage that lay on both sides of the wagon road, perhaps through his wife, who may have been dtr. or widow of HEDGE.

A ROBERT DAVIS of Augusta Co. was executor of ROBERT CROCKETT'S estate in 1747 and in 1755 ROBERT DAVIS, THOS. FULTON and JOHN GAY were sureties for JOHN RAMSAY'S bond as guardian of the children of ROBERT CROCKETT, dec'd.

Before this in 1742, WM. KING, is said to have served in Capt. JOHN WILSON'S Co. of Col. Militia with his neighbors ROBERT CROCKETT, ALEX. CROCKETT I) and ROBERT DAVIS. Then in 1746, when a road was built from the top of North Mountain to WM. KINGS land, ROBERT DAVIS was one of the overseers. North Mt. is the key.

Since both DAVID CROCKETT and ROBERT DAVIS, neighbor of both ROBERT CROCKETT and WILLIAM KING, lived near North Mountain, it follows that DAVID CROCKETT of Frederick and ROBERT of Augusta must have lived near one another if DAVID was in Frederick before ROBERT died in 1747. We know he was there in April 1748.

We do not know the relationship of ROBERT and ALEXANDER CROCKETT, neighbors, of Capt. WILSON'S Co. but since ROBERT had a son, ALEXANDER, there is a possibility that they were brothers and that ALEXANDER moved or died before ROBERT died in 1747.

The compiler is not familiar with the detailed geography of these counties and in many cases old names of land marks are not to be found on today's maps, but we offer this information for what it is worth.

The name of ROBERT CROCKETT is shown just once as a witness, in the records of Essex Co. Va.

ROBERT CROCKETT witnesses deed made by NATHANIEL BURWELL of Gloucester Co., Executor of LEWIS BURWELL dec'd. who was the executor of JOHN FRY of King and Queen Co., dec'd. who had sold 400 acres to JOHN AMBROSE, (JOHN FRY and LEWIS BURWELL both were deceased before the conveyance was completed) Said land lying in Essex Co. joining land of JONATHAN KID on one side and the Grand Patent of 5,000 acres which did belong to Mr. FRY.

Wits: WM. STOKES, ROBERT CROCKETT.

The Eighteenth Century, especially 1700-1770, saw a heavy migration of Irish to the colonies in North America, many of whom found their way into the Shenandoah Valley after it was opened for colonization about 1732-35. Actually, those who settled there were Scotch-Irish and among them were the CROCKETTS.

Court Order Bk. 2, p. 156. Orange Co. Va.

Date, at a court held on Thursday, the 22nd of May, 1740.

ROBERT CROCKETT came into court and made oath that he imported himself, MARGARET, JOHN, ARSHALL? JAMES, SAMUEL and ROBERT CROCKETT from Ireland to Philadelphia from thences into this colony at his own charges and that this is the first time of his proving his and their rights in order to obtain land. Which is ordered to be certified.

NOTE: JOHN HAYS and ROBERT KING on th same day made similar oaths.

Court order, Bk. 4, p. 24. Date, Thursday, Nov. 24, 1743.

ROBERT CROCKETT Gent. having taken the oath presented by Act of Parliament, instead of the oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy and abjudication oath and having subscribed the Test was sworn into his Military commission of Lieutenant of Horse, Co. No. 7.

Orange Co. Deed Bk. 9, p. 7. Date Nov. 23, 1743.

ROBERT CROCKETT and wife, MARGARET of Augusta Co. sell to WILLIAM McFETERS of the Co. aforesaid, all that tract of land containing 322 acres lying in the Co. of Augusta in Beverly Manor, beginning at JOHN TRUMBLE'S corner three white oaks and runneth thence south 56, west 232 poles to two white oaks and one hickory, corner to WILLIAM VANCE and runneth thence north 30, east 188 poles to the white oak and corner of the said TRUMBLES, thence with the said TRUMBLES line south 77, east 345 poles to the beginning.

The will of ROBERT CROCKETT of the Calfpastures was probated 19 Feb. 1746. His widow, MARGARET CROCKETT and ROBERT DAVIS were named executors with JAMES McCORCLE and ROBERT BRATTON their security.

According to this will of ROBERT, he and his wife, MARGARET, had the following children:

1. JOHN CROCKETT b. July 1730 m. MARGARET and later lived in Waxhaw of S.C.
2. ARCHIBALD CROCKETT, chose JAMES McCORCLE and ROBERT BRATTON as his guardians in Nov. 1751 was probably 14 years of age when his father died in1746 so born in 1732. Children, it seems must have reached that age before they could choose for themselves.
3. JEAN (or JANE) CROCKETT, the third named child and only daughter of ROBERT CROCKETT, probably born 1735. Did she marry WM. THOMPSON to whom JAMES and ROBERT CROCKETT, JR. deeded 370 acres in the Calfpastures of Augusta Co. on 6 Aug. 1766; (Augusta Co. Records Vol. III p. 455)

The next year on 19 Aug. 1767 WM. THOMPSON and his wife, JEAN, sold to JAMES CROCKETT 295 acres, part of 370 acres first surveyed for ROBERT CROCKETT dec'd. land in the Calfpastures above JAMESON'S land to pines on Mill Cr. along DAVIS land and and adj. sd. THOMPSON'S corner. Augusta Records Vol. III p. 458)

Among other similar family names, we find here that ROBERT of the Calfpastures as well as DAVID of Carter's Valley and SAMUEL of Augusta, all have daus. named JEAN.

4. SAMUEL CROCKETT b. about 1737. He with his brothers JAMES, ALEXANDER and ANDREW CROCKETT were wards in March 1755 of JOHN GAY and in May of the same year, their step-father, JOHN RAMSAY was appointed their guardian. (Augusta Co. Records Vo. III) pp. 38 and 39)
5. ROBERT CROCKETT JR. b. 1739; d. 3 Dec. 1801; m. JENNETT b. 1743; d. 4 Nov. 1801.
6. JAMES CROCKETT b. 1741; bapt. 12 July 1741 by the Rev. JOHN CRAIG, Presbyterian Minister in Augusta Co. 17 May 1758 JAMES CROCKETT aged 17 chose THOS.THOMPSON his guardian. Vol I p. 80)
7. ALEXANDER CROCKETT was bapt. 1 June 1745 and was probably born that year. His will was written at Guildford Court House, N.C. in which battle he evidently lost his life. The will was probated in Rockbridge Co. Va. and mentions a wife and children: ROBERT, JOHN, MARGARET, ELIZABETH, MARY and MARTHA.

On 19 May 1753, ROBERT DAVIS, one of the executors of ROBERT CROCKETT dec'd., reports to the court that he is about to leave this colony and begs release. JOHN RAMSAY, who m. CROCKETTS, relick summoned. (Vol. I Augusta Co. Records p. 59)

On 24 April 1756, in Anson Co. N.C., ROBERT DAVIS deeded to ALEXANDER CROCKETT, orphan of ROBERT CROCKETT dec'd. for the natural love and affection he had for him, 202 acres on Waxhaw Creek.

We are not sure of the relationship of ROBERT DAVIS to CROCKETT but this wording usually indicates one.

When ALEX. sold the land on the Waxhaw in 1774, he was still of Augusta Co. Va.

On 5 July 1774 he was granted 97 acres in Augusta Co. on Mill Creek, a branch of the Calfpasture River. (Grant Bk. 42 p. 688)

When Rockbridge Co. was made from Augusta and Botetourt Co. in 1778, evidently ALEXANDER CROCKETT was cut off in that county.

8. ANDREW CROCKETT was born after his father's death in Feb. 1746/7 and was presented for bapt. 16 Sept. 1747 by MARGARET CROCKETT, widow.

In August 1758, JOHN McFEETUS, guardian of ANDREW and ALEXANDER CROCKETT' complained that their mother, MARGARET, who m. JOHN RAMSAY was mishandling the estate.

On 18 May 1758 WILLIAM McFEETERS was bound as guardian of ANDREW CROCKETT while JOHN McFEETERS was bound as guardian of ALEXANDER, orphan of ROBERT CROCKETT. (pp. 244 and 250 Vol. III Augusta Co. Records)

In the Augusta Co. Fee Bk. of 1769 both ANDREW CROCKETT and his step-father, JOHN RAMSEY, are shown to be landowners in the pasture.

This is probably the tract of land patented by MARGARET CROCKETT 5 Sept. 1749 in her own name and the name of her young son, ANDREW, when he was no more than three years old. Because ANDREW was born after the death of his father, ROBERT CROCKETT, his mother was taking steps to provide him with an inheritance.

Perhaps even before the tax-list of 1769, both ANDREW CROCKETT and his step-father had removed from Augusta Co. Va. to Mecklenburg Co., N.C.

The New Providence Pres. Church is located in the latter Co. about twelve miles south of Charlotte. When it was organized in 1765, ARCHIBALD CROCKETT, son of ROBERT, was one of its first elders and in 1770 when Clear Creek Church and Providence combined, JOHN RAMSAY was an elder in the latter congregation.

ANDREW CROCKETT and his wife, MARGARET CROCKETT, of Mecklenburg Co., N.C. and JOHN RAMSAY sold their land on the Cowpasture in Augusta Co. to JAMES CROCKETT. This was the land that had been patented to MARGARET and ANDREW in 1749 and was no doubt also the land of CROCKETT and RAMSAY in the pasture which appears in the Augusta Fee Bk. of 1769.

JOHN CROCKETT was the first named and evidently the oldest of the children of ROBERT CROCKETT of the Calfpasture and his wife, MARGARET.

He was named first among, ROBERT'S children in the importation oath as well as the will and is the only one of the seven sons of this couple for which no guardian was provided.

He was born in 1730 and was only 16 at the time of his father's death but since there is no mention of his mother's marriage to JOHN RAMSAY until 1751, he was of age and on his own before there was need of a guardian, other than his mother, his father's widow.

We believe that this apparent lapse of five years between MARGARET'S marriages is also the reason why JOHN'S only sister, JEAN, does not acquire a guardian. JEAN, the third child, was probably born about 1734, was seventeen when her mother remarried and may have been married herself.

On 20 March 1753, JOHN CROCKETT, son and heir of ROBERT CROCKETT dec'd conveyed to JAMES MOORE, 350 acres on Lunies Mill Creek. This deed is witnessed by ROBERT DAVIS, his father's executor, MILDRED DAVIS and ARCHILBALD CROCKETT, his brother, who would have just reached his majority.

We are grateful that he is identified as "son of ROBERT" in this deed because SAMUEL CROCKETT of Augusta also had a son, JOHN, about the same age. (Augusta Co. Records Vol. III p. 310)

Because of this duplication of names and ages, we are not certain as to which of these of the same name and age served in the Augusta Co. Militia in 1756 and 1758.

In 1756, JOHN CROCKETT was Sergt. in Capt. JOHN MONTGOMERY'S Co. of volunteers in the Shawnee Expedition. Since this service was proved in Montgomery Co. Va. April 1780 we believe that this was JOHN, son of SAMUEL. JOHN, of ROBERT, was in 1780, a resident of South Carolina. (p. 47 "Va. Col. Militia" - Crozier)

In Sept. 1758, JOHN CROCKETT served in the Augusta Co. Militia. (Ibid p. 63)

We do not know whether, JOHN, of ROBERT, had gone to the Waxhaw, first N.C. and later designated as S.C., as early as 1758, but he was there three years later. (Yes, John and Arch'd Crockett purchased N.C. land 13 Feb 1755)

On 10 Aug. 1761, JOHN CROCKETT and MARGARET and ARCHIBALD CROCKETT and MARY, all of Anson Co., N.C., to JAMES BEARD of Augusta Co. Va. for £120, a tract of 246 acres in the Cowpasture adj. the corner of JAS. MEASE.

Wits: SAM'L CROCKETT. (D. Bk. 11 p. 5 Augusta Co. Va.)

There is also another deed, dated 6 Aug. 1766 in which JAMES CROCKETT and wife, MARTHA, of Augusta Co. Va. and ROBERT CROCKETT and wife, JENNET of Mecklenberg Co. N.C. conveyed to WILLIAM THOMPSON 370 acres on the Great River of the Calfpasture adj. Mill Cr. THOS. GILLIAM and JNO. HARRY'S land.

We have just seen that ANDREW CROCKETT, son of ROBERT, was of Mecklenberg Co., N.C. when he and JOHN RAMSAY sold their land in the Cowpasture shortly after 1769.

These deeds prove that by that time, four of the sons of ROBERT and MARGARET CROCKETT of the Calfpasture were in the Waxhaw Community or very near by.

On 6 Jan. 1770, JOHN CROCKETT and his wife, MARGARET, conveyed to WM. MOORE all of Mecklenberg Co., for £20, a tract of 162 a. on the south side of Waxhaw Creek adj. WM. NUTT. (D. Bk. 14 p. 89 Mecklenberg Co.)

This last deed shows that, of that date, Mecklenberg Co. was still claiming the lands on the Waxhaw which later fell in Camden Dist. Lancaster Co. S. C. The uncertainty of the location of the Carolina boundry at this point is confusing and make genealogical research very uncertain and difficult.

These misplaced deeds, remind us that in 1771 and perhaps as early as 1768, DAVID CROCKETT, grandfather of DAVY of the Alamo, purchased land in this vicinity in Tyron Co. on the south side of the Catawba River. Mecklenberg Co. was made from Anson in 1762 and Tyron from Mecklenberg in 1768.

So far we have seen that JOHN CROCKETT later of the Waxhaw has been classified first as of Anson Co., then Mecklenberg and has sold land in the Waxhaw where his residence had been all along and where he spent the rest of his life.

The Catawba River runs north and south and passes very near this area. In fact, no doubt, Waxhaw Creek empties into it and it is possible that DAVID CROCKETT lived within only about thirty miles of these descendants of ROBERT of the Calfpasture.

JOHN CROCKETT, the oldest of ROBERT'S sons, rendered service during the Rev. War in 1780, 1781 and 1782 by furnishing supplies for the army.

One of these documents identified him as of Camden District. It is signed by ROBERT CROCKETT probably his brother, who was buried in the Old Waxhaw Pres. Church, (Folder 1625 accounts Q. 265 Rev. War Audited accounts of S.C.)

JOHN CROCKETT, son of ROBERT, was also buried in the cemetery of the old Waxhaw Pres. Church in Lancaster Co. S.C., which Co. was made in 1868 from Camden Dist. His tombstone bears an inscription which states that he died 16 Dec. 1800, aged 70 years and 5 months, which means that he was born 16 July 1730.

VIOLA FLOYD, in describing this marker in her "Lancaster Tours," says that on the backside of the stone under the etching of a ship is a couplet which reads, "Born upon the sea, near Pennsylvania shore, Lived in America 'till almost fourscore."

This date of JOHN'S birth in 1730, misses by ten years the date of the importation oath of his father, ROBERT, on 22 May 1740. The latter alledged that he had imported himself into the colony, at his own charge, and that he had never before claimed land for this importation. Actually there is no contradiction here. It is probable that land was not offered for bringing new colonists into Pa., but it had been an incentive for the colonization of Va. since 1619 when she became a crown colony.

As yet, we have found no record in Pa. of ownership of land, prior to 1740, by ROBERT CROCKETT later of the Calfpasture, though he may have lived there a full ten years and earned a livelihood in shipping or another means that did not require land.

We believe that the statement etched on JOHN CROCKETT'S tombstone is fact and we doubt that, if duplicity was used by ROBERT to obtain additional land, that the story of that immigration would have been carried into the next generation.

Therefore, we cannot agree with WORTH RAY that ROBERT of Augusta Co. Va. was Scion of the RICHARD CROCKETT line of Somerset Co. Md. and that he simply moved from the eastern shore of Md. to Western Va. in 1740 when JOHN was ten years old. Other than the fact that RICHARD CROCKETT II) of Md. had a son, ROBERT, we have found nothing in our search of Md., Pa. or Va. to substantiate this theory.

However, the incident of the birth of JOHN CROCKETT, son of ROBERT, off Pa. shore and the tradition in DAVY'S family that his father, JOHN CROCKETT, was born crossing the Atlantic or off shore their destination, which was Pa., is confusing, but we know that these two JOHN CROCKETTS were not the same. JOHN, of the Waxhaw, was never a resident of Green or Hawkins Cos. Tenn. where DAVY CROCKETT was born 17 Aug. 1786.

The known genealogy of DAVY in America begins with a DAVID CROCKETT b. about 1710-1720 located first in Frederick Co. Va. 1748-1768. From there he went to Tyron, later Lincoln Co. N.C. where he lived from 1768 to about 1775. In 1776 we find him in Carter's Valley, then considered in Wash. Co. Va., but later a part of Green and then Hawkins Co. Tenn. There, in 1777 or 1778, DAVID CROCKETT, grandfather of DAVY, and his wife were killed by indians.

It was his son, JOHN, who was born aboard ship about 1747 who married REBECCA HAWKINS and who named his fifth son, perhaps sixth or later child, DAVID CROCKETT, for his father. This was DAVY CROCKETT born 1786; died in the Alamo 1836.

The final proof connecting DAVID of Frederick Co. Va. and DAVID Of the Indian massacre is contained in the Rev. War record of his son, ROBERT CROCKETT, who was born in Frederick Co. Va., near Berryville, in 1755, was named co-admt. of his father's estate in 1778, enlisted in Green Co. N.C. in 1781, sold his father's home place in Carter's Valley Hawkins Co. Tenn. in 1790 and shortly thereafter returned to Frederick Co. Va. to make it his permanent home.

In the section immediately preceeding this, we reviewed the data relating to each member of the family of ROBERT CROCKETT of the Calfpasture of Augusta Co. Va. Here we will review the incomplete data concerning the family of his neighbor, DAVID CROCKETT of Frederick Co., perhaps his younger brother.

Children of DAVID CROCKETT and his wife ELIZABETH:

1. WM. CROCKETT b. about 1745, said by DAVY in his autobiography, to have been his father's eldest bro.
2. JOHN CROCKETT, father of DAVY, b. about 1747; m. about 1770 REBECCA HAWKINS b. in Md. of which marriage was born DAVY 17 Aug. 1786 sixth or later child.
   JOHN CROCKETT d. 1834. If he was born at sea, as DAVY related, DAVID CROCKETT I) was a recent immigrant when he was added to the tithe list in Frederick Co. Va. in 1748.
3. A dau., perhaps b. 1749 and perhaps RUTH, later wife of ——— MORRIS.
4. Another dau. b. about 1751 perhaps LIDIA CROSS.
5. A third dau. b. about 1753 perhaps MARY TYE.
6. ROBERT CROCKETT b. 1755 near Berryville Va.; served in Rev. War from Green Co. Tenn.; d. Frederick Co. Va.
7. DAVID CROCKETT, JR. b. abt. 1758; m. ELIZABETH, party to a suit in Washington Co. Va. in 1782; (Wash. Co. Va. was court in which the estate of DAVID SR. was filed) DAVID JR. was probably the same as DAVID with wife ELIZ. who sold land in Mecklenburg Co. in 1792 and moved to Ga.
8. JOSEPH CROCKETT b. about 1761, named by DAVY as a younger brother of his father; wounded by Indians 1778.
9. JAS. CROCKETT b. about 1763; named by DAVY as his uncle; captured by indians and held 18 years.
10. JEAN CROCKETT, b. about 1765; came into court in 1779 and chose JAMES GLEN her guardian; perhaps m. GEO. HISON.
11. Perhaps the wife of JAMES GLEN.

During the turbulent years of the wanderings of DAVID CROCKETT SR. and his son, JOHN, foreparents of DAVY CROCKETT, JOHN CROCKETT, son of ROBT. of the Calfpasture, was living on the Waxhaw in Lancaster Co. S.C. This Co. was a border Co. and the Waxhaw Valley was considered at various times to have been first in Anson and then in Mecklenburg Co. N.C. before the boundry was finally settled.

We know that he was there by 1761 and that he died there in 1800. Even though he and the father of DAVY had identical names and both were born at sea, he could not have been the father of the Alamo hero who was born on Limestone Cr. in Hawkins Co. Tenn.

JOHN CROCKETT, of the Waxhaw, was buried in the Presbyterian Church yard of that locality, as was also his brother ROBERT JR. and the latters wife JENNET. We know that their brothers ARCHIBALD and ANDREW also lived in that vicinity.

We presume that MARGARET, the first wife of ANDREW, was dec'd shortly after their removal to Mecklenburg Co. and that ANDREW then married MARY.

ANDREW CROCKETT and his wife, MARY conveyed a tract of land to ARCHIBALD CROCKETT on 2 Nov. 1772. This land was in Mecklenburg Co. in New Province on Five Mile Creek. It was granted to ANDREW 25 April 1767. ARCHIBALD, no doubt bro. of ANDREW paid £100 for said land.

ANDREW and MARY also conveyed land in Mecklenburg Co. to HUGH BARNETT on 12 June 1772 and to JOHN STURGEON a tract of 225 acres adj. BARNETT on 13 Dec. 1773.

The New Providence Pres. Church was organized in 1765 and ARCHIBALD CROCKETT was one of its first elders. In 1770 JOHN RAMSAY held that position. Since the Providence church is 12 miles south of present day Charlotte, N.C. and the Waxhaw is no more than 40 miles away in the same direction we can safely say that the four CROCKETT brothers, sons of ROBERT of the Calfpasture, lived within 25 or thirty miles of one another.

The will of JOHN CROCKETT of the Waxhaw, (1730-1800) was destroyed in the war between the states, as so many in the south were.

We are indebted to NANCY CROCKETT who lives at Lancaster Co. S.C. for much of the data on the family of JOHN and his wife, MARGARET.

Miss CROCKETT is a descendant of this couple through their son, ANDREW CROCKETT.

It was she who copied the tombstone inscriptions in the Waxhaw Pres. Church yard and wrote the history of this same church in its centennial year. She has done extensive and valuable research on CROCKETTS of her area, in both of the Carolinas.

The children of JOHN CROCKETT of the Waxhaw and his wife, MARGARET were:

1. ROBERT CROCKETT, b. 12 Aug. 1755; d. 1 March 1820 m. JANET McCLANAHAN b. 9 Sept. 1749; d. 15 Dec. 1813 ROBERT is mentioned as son of JOHN in a 1784 deed. ROBERT and JANET had the following children; ELI, JOHN, MARGARET, ROBERT McCLANAHAN, ELIJAH FENNIS and JAMES PATTON CROCKETT.
2. ELIJAH CROCKETT b. 6 Oct. 1757; d. 3 Mar. 1798; m. 26 Dec. 1782 MARY DAVIE b. 15 Dec. 1759; d. 19 Nov. 1815. This line is proved and all known descendants given in the next section.
3. JOHN CROCKETT JR. born 1764; d. 1776.
4. ANDREW CROCKETT b. 1769; d. 2 Nov. 1853, aged 84; m. AGNES DUNLAP b. 1779; d. 1846 age 67. ANDREW inherited his father's Cane Cr. land. This is the line of NANCY CROCKETT.
5. WILLIAM CROCKETT m. AGNES WALKUP and moved to Georgia.
6. ARCHIBALD CROCKETT.

These are the sons of JOHN and MARGARET. No doubt they also had daus. whose identity has not been established.

As far as the compiler knows, there has been no definite proof offered as to the identity of MARGARET, wife of JOHN of the Waxhaw.

WORTH RAY advances the idea that she was MARGARET McCORCLE and the best evidence, perhaps is on his side. One of the first legal acts performed by JOHN after he reached his majority was to act, with JAMES McCORCLE as witness to a deed in Augusta Co. Va.

In 1746 when JOHN'S father ROBERT CROCKETT'S will was probated JAMES McCORCLE and ROBERT BRATTON acted as securities for the executors, MARGARET CROCKETT and ROBERT DAVIS.

Mr. MONTGOMERY, in his article in the Va. Mag. presents several instances where JOHN CROCKETT, acted in some capacity in McCORCLE documents, after his removal to the Waxhaw.

However, the strongest proof that MARGARET was a McCORCLE is found in the old book of records kept by ROBERT KAR CROCKETT, grandson of JOHN and MARGARET. In it he recorded the fact that on 7 Oct. 1787 a dau. was born to his parents ELIJAH CROCKETT and his wife, MARY DAVIE, whom they named MARGARET McCROCKEL CROCKETT.

There is small doubt this is meant to be McCORCLE and the writer was in doubt as to its proper spelling or was so accustomed to writing "CROCKETT" that he injected the "r" into McCORKEL from habit of following the "C" in Crockett with "r".

Of course there were two MARGARETS in the pedigree of ELIJAH CROCKETT. MARGARET, his mother, wife of JOHN CROCKETT was probably MARGARET McCORCLE. MARGARET, his grandmother the wife of ROBERT of the Calfpasture was probably related in some way to ROBERT DAVIS who was co-executor with her to her husband's estate until he removed to Carolina in 1753, where he conveyed land to her son ALEXANDER "with natural love and affection."

It appears that he likely was MARGARET'S father, step-father or brother.

Some believe, because of this deed to ALEXANDER, that she was an ALEXANDER in which case perhaps DAVIS would have been her step-father. But the ALEXANDER theory need not hinge on that incident. Records show that ROBERT, her husband, served in the early Augusta Co. Militia with an ALEXANDER CROCKETT who was probably his brother, for whom his next to youngest son was named.

MARGARET McCORCLE CROCKETT, dau. of ELIJAH and MARY may have been named for either or both of her grandmothers but we believe that the McCORCLE was for MARGARET, wife of JOHN CROCKETT of the Waxhaw.

ELIJAH CROCKETT, Revolutionary Soldier

Mr. MOTON H. CROCKETT, SR., of Austin, Texas, had in his possession an old and curious book. It is covered with buck-skin and seems to have been primarily a business ledger. Our interest lies in the fact that in it are inscribed the family records of two generations of a specific CROCKETT family, most of whose descendants are, today, Texans.

There is no question as to the ownership of this old and yellowed volume for on the fly-leaf is inscribed: "ROBERT K. CROCKETT'S book - March the 8, 1818." And it takes no handwriting expert to determine that the first of the family records entered therein, was written by this one and the same ROBERT K. CROCKETT

A study of this particular family record proves that it pertains to the family of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT'S father and mother, ELIJAH and MARY D. CROCKETT.

It is of sufficient significance to be included in its exact form, below:

"ELIJAH CROCKETT was born October the 6, 1757
MARY D. CROCKETT was born December the 15, 1759.
The ware married December the 26, 1782
was married years -16-
ELIJAH CROCKETT died March the 3, 1798
Aged 41
MARY D. CROCKETT died November the 19, 1815
Aged 55
MARY CROCKETT was born February the 24 (or 28) 1784
JOHN CROCKETT was born February 28, 1785
ARCHIBALD D. CROCKETT was born May the 22, 1786
He died November 25, 1815 aged 29
MARGARET McCROCKEL was born October the 2, 1787
WILLIAM CROCKETT was born Mach Sunday 22, 1789
Died the September 11, 1792
Aged -- 3 years
ANN CROCKETT was born January the 11, 1791
ROBERT KAR CROCKETT was born the 27 June, 1792
SARAH CROCKETT was born Aprile the 3, 1794
BETSY CROCKETT was born August the 11, 1795
ELIJAH CROCKETT was born January 23, 1797"

On the margin of this page, the same hand that entered this record wrote, "ARCHIBALD DAVIE died March 25, 1800 aged 74.)

ELIJAH CROCKETT, according to this record, was born October 6th, 1757. He was the son of JOHN CROCKETT and his wife MARGARET of the Waxhaw settlement which was sometimes considered to have been in North Carolina and sometimes in its southern counterpart, until the boundary was finally fixed determining that it should be in South Carolina.

In the old Waxhaw Church yard in Lancaster County, South Carolina, ELIJAH CROCKETT and wife, MARY, are buried next to his father JOHN and his mother MARGARET CROCKETT. Their Tombstones carry the same information as to dates that is given in ROBERT KAR'S record book. Miss NANCY CROCKETT, a kinswoman who has copied the tombstone records of the Waxhaw cemetary, is authority for the location of these stones.

We are not dependant, however, on the location of these graves for proof of the parentage of ELIJAH CROCKETT.

This is proved in a deed of gift, dated April 20, 1784 and signed by JOHN CROCKETT, which reads:

"Deed of Gift - JOHN CROCKETT of the Waxhaw and county of Craven State of South Carolina do give, grant and confirm unto my two sons ROBERT and ELIJAH CROCKET my old plantation I now live on - containing 264 acres - the east end I give to my son ELIJAH - containing 132 acres - on west side of Waxhaw Creek." (Book 12 p. 419, Meck. Co. N.C.)

On August 8, 1789 ELIJAH CROCKETT and MARY his wife conveyed a parcel of land containing 133 acres - "being a tract of land conveyed to the said ELIJAH CROCKETT from JOHN CROCKETT bearing date 20th day of April 1784."

This last deed was signed by ELIJAH and MARY CROCKETT and witnessed by JOHN CROCKETT and ARCHA DAVIE. (Book 13, page 705 Mecklenberg Co. North Carolina.)

We see here evidence of one of the switches made in the boundries of this disputed territory. In the first deed the land was considered in Craven Co., North Carolina and five years later it was in Mecklenberg Co. in the same state but with no logical explanation.

It is evident from these deeds that ELIJAH was the son of JOHN and MARGARET CROCKETT of the Waxhaw.

It will be recalled that on the margin of the family record inscribed in the old buck-skin book by ROBERT KAR CROCKETT, he wrote "ARCHIBALD DAVIE died March 25, 1800." We have also noted that the deed of August 8,

1789 in which ELIJAH and MARY CROCKETT conveyed a parcel of land, is witnessed by both JOHN CROCKETT and ARCHA DAVIE. (Book 13 page 705 Mecklenberg Co., North Carolina)

JOHN CROCKETT was the father of ELIJAH and he followed the custom of the day by naming his eldest son "JOHN, for his father, while the second son was named "ARCHIBALD D. CROCKETT." Therefore we guessed before we had definite proof that MARY D. CROCKETT the wife of ELIJAH was the former MARY DAVIE, daughter of ARCHIBALD who died in 1800 at the age of 74.

Further research has proved this to be a fact and added much interesting information concerning the DAVIE family.

To begin with, the birth date, December 15, 1759, of MARY D. CROCKETT recorded in the ROBERT KAR CROCKETT book agrees with the date of the birth of MARY DAVIE, daughter of ARCHIBALD and MARY RICHARDSON DAVIE, entered in the Presbyterian church records in the town of Whitehaven County Cumberland, England ("WILLIAM R. DAVIE" p. 7)

It is a matter of history that the DAVIE Family followed MARY'S brother, the Rev. WILLIAM RICHARDSON to the Waxhaw country of North and South Carolina and that shortly after their arrival the mother died leaving three young children to the care of her husband, ARCHIBALD DAVIE, and her childless brother, the Rev. WILLIAM RICHARDSON. She was buried in the Waxhaw church yard and her epitath reads as follows:

"Here lies the body of MARY DAVIE wife of ARCHIBALD DAVIE who departed this life on the 20th day of September A.D. 1767 aged 44, leaving her sons WILLIAM and JOSEPH and a daughter MARY."

"Frail motral come, appraoch to me, and learn what you must shortly be."

On the reverse side of her tomb there appears the coat of arms of the DAVIE family. ("WILLIAM R. DAVIE-" ROBINSON)

Next to his wife in this cemetery is the tomb of ARCHIBALD DAVIE whose inscription reads:

"Here lies the body of ARCHIBALD DAVIE he was born in Great Britain in the year 1724 came to America in the year 1764, closed a long and virturous life on the 4th (?) day of March 1800 leaving three children: WILLIAM, MARY and JOSEPH."

These graves are now in a private enclosure, the DAVIE Memorial Plot, in the old Waxhaw Church yard at Lancaster, South Carolina.

The daughter, MARY, referred to on the tomb of both husband and wife was MARY DAVIE who became the wife of their neighbor and fellow Presbyterian, ELIJAH CROCKETT. We have already seen that this later couple are also buried in the same church yard but in the CROCKETT plot next to the parents of ELIJAH, JOHN and MARGARET CROCKETT.

We have no further knowledge of JOSEPH DAVIE but according to his father's inscription, he must have been living in 1800 at the time of his father's death.

In the DAVIE enclosure, near the tombs of his mother and father lies the body of their illustrious eldest son, WILLIAM RICHARDSON DAVIE named for his uncle, his mother's brother, the Reverend WILLIAM RICHARDSON, first pastor of the Waxhaw church.

The DAVIES and RICHARDSONS were stout-hearted Presbyterian non-conformists both in Great Britain and after they came to America. MARY RICHARDSON, later the wife of ARCHIBALD DAVIE wrote on the fly-leaf of a Bible purchased before her marriage.

> "MARY RICHARDSON bought this bible. God grant her gras to understand it and peruse it for the Glory of God and good of her soul. O Lord of Heaven and Earth, this is the night, I give myself over to thee and unreservedly. I am no longer my own but the Lords. I with JOSEPH say for myself tho I cannot say for the rest of my house, but Lord they are still in Thy hands. Make them Thine, I pray, for Christ' Jesus sake."
>
> (WILLIAM R. DAVIE") page 6) Langbogflash December 1751..

In 1957 BLACKWELL P. ROBINSON published the first full length biography of WILLIAM R. DAVIE which he called by the name of its hero.

In it we see this brother of MARY D. CROCKETT move through the trying days of North Carolina history when she was transformed from a British Colony to a State in the infant Union. Just out of Princeton College as the Revolution broke, young DAVIE plunged into the warfare of the Piedmont with such success that he ranked with the other partisan leaders, PICKENS, SUMTOR and MARION.

The fact that he operated in North Carolina instead of his home base in her sister state to the South, was due to the fact that the Waxhaw was claimed at that time by both the Carolinas and also because young DAVIE had begun to read law in Salisbury in the upper state, before he volunteered for service.

Eventually he was to be commissary General for NATHANIAL GREEN and in his later civilian life, Governor of the State of North Carolina, founder of its University, and special envoy to France before he retired from public life in 1805 to his home "Tivoli" in Chester District, South Carolina. Even then his public interests were still keen and he founded the South Carolina Agricultural society and served as its first President, before his death in 1820.

The fatherless children of MARY DAVIE CROCKETT were most fortunate to have had this illustrious uncle

who, according to family tradition, took an interest in them, and was instrumental in their rearing and education after the death of their father, ELIJAH CROCKETT, in 1798.

It is said that ROBERT KAR CROCKETT, who was named for a cousin of his mother's who fought in the Revolution under her brother WILLIAM R. DAVIE, went to live with his uncle after his father's death, when he was five years old.

Beside the family record inscribed by ROBERT KAR CROCKETT in his old ledger, we have little first-hand information concerning the descendants of ELIJAH and MARY DAVIE CROCKETT other than the line of ROBERT KAR himself, which will be recorded in subsequent data and the line of the eldest daughter MARY CROCKETT who was born February 24, (or 28) 1784. This latter information was submitted by Mrs. WORTH B. POWERS of Memphis, Tennessee, who is descended from this eldest daughter, MARY.

As proof of this relationship, Mrs. POWERS offers a copy of an old deed the first paragraph of which reads:

"State of South Carolina Lancaster District - Received from ROBERT McCORCLE husband of the now MARY McCORCLE, daughter of ELIJAH CROCKETT deceased, his receipt in full of their division of both real and personal estate of the said ELIJAH CROCKET and also the said ROBERT McCORCLE'S receipt for whatever may appear to be my daughter, MARY McCORKLE'S dividend of my estate at my death."

This receipt was made acknowledging a deed of gift of a negro slave to ROBERT McCORKLE. It is dated October 20, 1815 signed by MARY CROCKETT, and imprinted with a seal (no doubt the DAVIE coat of arms) and was witnessed by ROBERT and ANDREW CROCKETT.

Mrs. POWERS then submits additional information pertaining to ROBERT McCORKLE and many of the descendants of him and his wife, MARY CROCKETT:

ROBERT McCORKLE was the first child of ARCHIBALD McCORKLE and his wife JOANNA WHITE. He was born June 5, 1779 and on February 22, 1803 married MARY D. CROCKETT, daughter of ELIJAH CROCKETT and his wife MARY DAVIE. Their children were:

1. MARY McCORKLE born about 1804 married NORMAN McLEOD.
2. JOANNA McCORKLE born October 8, 1806; died October 24, 1872, married May 10, 1837 Dr. A. N. TABLER.
3. ARCHIBALD C. McCORKLE born September 6, 1808, died March 12, 1874, married January 10, 1839 MARY T. HART.
4. MARGARET McCORKLE born about 1810 married WILLIAM WALKER.
5. ELIZA McCORKLE born about 1812, died Jack's Creek, Tennessee, married JAMES RICHIE.
6. EPHRIAM McLEAN McCORKLE born about 1814 died unmarried at Jack's Creek, Tennessee about 1848.
7. JOSEPH McCORKLE.
8. SARAH McCORKLE.
9. JANE McCORKLE born about 1819 died about 1858 married H. T. DAVIS.
10. WILLIAM D. McCORKLE born March 13, 1820, died 1854, married January 11, 1848 SARAH McELRATH.

Children and grandchildren of JOANNA McCORKLE and Dr. ALFRED NEWTON TABLER: (No. 2 above)

1. ROBERT MICHAEL TABLER born December 18, 1838, died September 18, 1852.
2. EPHRIAM NEWTON TABLER born June 6, 1840, died June 1911 married July 27, 1874 ELIZA PALMER HODGES, born June 13, 1854, died May 3, 1884. Had:
   (1) JOANNA KENDALL TABLER born June 23, 1879 died May 6, 1940, married April 21, 1901 N. B. HARDEMAN, born May 8, 1874.
3. MARY WHITE TABLER born September 17, 1842, died December 1910, married 1859 JOHN A. McCULLERY, born 1839, died March 3, 1916. No Issue.
4. SARAH ISABELLA JANE TABLER born March 31, 1844, died December 1910, married Dr. T. H. McGEE born June 17, 1840, died 1915. Issue:
   (1) HUBERT T. McGEE born June 7, 1864, died June 1946, married MARY BARLOW and had one son, RALPH McGEE.
   (2) WILLIAM TABLER McGEE born January 26, 1869, died 1945, married twice and has children living in Texas.
   (3) ROBERT NEWTON McGEE born March 5, 1869 died about 1932 married ZAIDA WALKER. No Issue.
   (4) JOSIE McGEE born September 2, 1872 married ------ WALTON, no issue.
   (5) ALFRED McGEE died in infancy.
   (6) BESSIE McGEE born December 4, 1878, married and died long ago.
   (7) DAVID McGEE born December 7, 1881 died 1941.
   (8) & (9) WAFFORD & NORMAN McGEE (twins) born July 29, 1885. NORMAN died in infancy.
5. ELIZABETH LOUISE TAYLOR TABLER born June 23, 1847 died about 1922, married A. G. McDOUGAL and had one son, FRED, who died childless.

For the last two generations in this line we have records only of the children and grandchildren of JOANNA KENDALL TABLER and N. B. HARDEMAN. They are:

1. DORSEY B. HARDEMAN born December 10, 1902, married October 12, 1940 GENEVA MOORE and has two sons:
   (1) MARK HARDEMAN
   (2) BRYAN HARDEMAN.
   DORSEY B. HARDEMAN is state senator from San Angelo, Texas.
2. MARY NELLE HARDEMAN born May 23, 1904 married September 28, 1927, WORTH B. POWERS and had:
   (1) NICHOLAS WORTH POWERS born December 17, 1932.
   (2) JOANNA HARDEMAN POWERS born July 24, 1930 married June 4, 1955 FRANK B. BRADSHAW, JR. and have two children: (A) FRANK B. BRADSHAW III) born September 3, 1956 and (B) MARY HARDEMAN BRADSHAW born July 11, 1959.
3. CARRIE NEAL HARDEMAN born September 10, 1908, married August 23, 1925, C. M. FOY and had:
   (1) JOE HARDEMAN FOY born August 16, 1926 married June 1949 MARTHA OVERSTREET born August 1926 and has: (A) JOE HARDEMAN FOY, JR. born December 2, 1950.

To strengthen Mrs. POWERS' claim, although the additional information is not necessary for her line, there is this additional proof.

The worthy habit of keeping records appears to have been passed from father to son, so, in a sturdy note book in which he transcribed his civil war diaries, EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, son of ROBERT KAR, wrote:

"My father, ROBERT CARR CROCKETT was a native of South Carolina and was a soldier in the war of 1812. He had one brother (JOHN CROCKETT) whose family settled soon after our civil war at Chappell Hill, Texas and four sisters three of whom married three brothers by the name of WALLIS. Two of them, JAMES and ELIJAH WALLIS settled in Mississippi the other, JOSEPH WALLIS settled at Chappell-Hill, Texas: His fourth sister married a preacher in Kentucky named McCORKLE."

This information agrees with that submitted by Mrs. POWERS and pairs MARY CROCKETT with the young Kentucky minister as it also furnishes his first name.

However, to date, we have no documental proof as to which of the other sisters married the various WALLIS brothers.

WORTH S. RAY in his "Mecklenberg signers" gives considerable information about the WALLIS family and does state which CROCKETT sister married which WALLIS brother, but he does not offer proof of any of these relationships and in at least one instance his version differs from the statement written by EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT concerning his Aunts and Uncles. RAY also adds information of some members of the family which CROCKETT left out.

ROBERT KAR CROCKETT recorded the births of ten children born to ELIJAH and MARY D. CROCKETT and the deaths of only two, ARCHIBALD and WILLIAM, which would leave eight to have grown to adulthood and marriage. EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT in speaking of his father's brothers and sister states his father had one brother and four sisters which would make a total of six instead of the eight of the record made by his father.

WORTH S. RAY, in his account of the WALLIS and CROCKETT families on Pages 530 and 531 of "Mecklenberg Signers" accounts for all of the known eight surviving children of ELIJAH and MARY D. CROCKETT except the daughter, SARAH. SARAH was born April 3, 1794 which would make her just younger than ROBERT KAR who recorded the births and deaths of his brothers and sisters in his account book.

For this reason, and because we do not find her grave with her father's and mother's or among the CROCKETTS in the Waxhaw Cemetery, we believe she also lived to be grown and perhaps to marry.

JOHN CROCKETT the second child and first son of ELIJAH and MARY D. CROCKETT was born February 28, 1785 and, according to Mr. RAY, he married his first cousin MARY H. DAVIE, daughter of the illustrious WILLIAM RICHARDSON DAVIE. EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT stated that JOHN'S descendants moved to Chappell Hill, Texas shortly after the Civil war and Mr. RAY said that he served in the Texas legislature with a grandson of JOHN, WILLIAM DAVIE CROCKETT from Washington County, Texas, which should include old Chappell-Hill.

There is also additional information, perhaps concerning this family on page 411 of ROBINSON'S "WILLIAM R. DAVIE." He states in note No. 3 of chapter one that the Bible of MARY RICHARDSON DAVIE (Mother of General WILLIAM R. and MARY D., wife of ELIJAH CROCKETT) was recently presented to the LOUIS ROUND WILSON Library, University of North Carolina by the children of WILLIAM R. DAVIE CROCKETT of Austin, Texas.

Mr. RAY states that the three WALLIS brothers who married the three daughters of ELIJAH CROCKETT were sons of the Rev. JAMES WALLIS and his wife MARY (POLLY) ALEXANDER, daughter of JOHN McKNITT ALEXANDER, early pioneer of the Waxhaw vicinity.

Mr. RAY lists their sons but he does not mention the ELIJAH WALLIS named by EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT as the husband of one of his aunts. He does, however, list a son, EZEKIEL WALLIS, named for the

father of the Rev. JAMES, whom he states died in infancy.

Mr. RAY'S version of the CROCKETT-WALLIS marriages is as follows:

MARGARET McCORKLE CROCKETT, born October 2, 1787, daughter of ELIJAH and MARY D. CROCKETT married JOHN McKNITT WALLIS, eldest son of the Rev. JAMES. He states that they had two sons JAMES and EZEKIEL WALLIS and that JOHN McKNITT died in Pickens County, Alabama.

ANN CROCKETT born January 11, 1791, daughter of ELIJAH and MARY D. CROCKETT married JAMES WALLIS, JR. and moved first to Alabama and then to Washington county, Texas where he died in December 1865. They had eight children: MARIAN, JAMES, ELIJAH, WILLIAM, JOHN, MARY, JULIA and SARAH WALLIS.

ELIZABETH (BETSY) CROCKETT born August 11, 1795, daughter of ELIJAH and MARY D. CROCKETT, married JOSEPH WALLIS. Mr. RAY said that this couple settled at Chappell-Hill in Washington County, Texas in 1848 and that their oldest son, JOHN CALHOUN WALLIS, brought the slaves overland from Morgan County, Alabama.

If JOSEPH and ELIZABETH moved to Texas in 1848, they were the first of the many descendants of ELIJAH CROCKETT to arrive in the Lone Star State.

Mr. RAY submits more complete information on this family of JOSEPH than on the other WALLIS-CROCKETT dants. His records state that they had the following children:

EMILY WALLIS married JOSEPH TOLAND of Morgan County, Alabama.

ELMIRA CAROLINA WALLIS married Dr. JOHN W. LOCKHART of Washington County, Texas.

JOHN CALHOUN WALLIS married ANNE E. GOODSON.

JOSEPH EDMUND WALLIS married KATE LANDES, daughter of Col. D. LANDES of Austin County, Texas.

MARY ELIZABETH WALLIS was the youngest child of JOSEPH and ELIZABETH CROCKETT WALLIS, no information is given of her marriage.

Mr. RAY is also authority for the statement that ELIJAH CROCKETT, JR., born January 23, 1797, the youngest child of ELIJAH and MARY D. CROCKETT, married MARY TROUPE and died in Morgan County, Alabama in 1823.

ELIJAH CROCKETT I, son of JOHN and MARGARET was a soldier of the Revolution, as proved by the following records in the archives of South Carolina at Columbia:

"State of South Carolina to ELIJAH CROCKETT, May 8, 1780 - to 20 days waggon and team under Capt. GEORGE DUNLAP - 80 pounds. July 1, 1780 - to one hundred days horsemans duty under Genl. SUMPTER, GEORGE DUNLAP, Capt. - 100 pounds. Dec. 27 - to 15 days wagon and team under General SUMPTER, GEORGE Mec., Capt. - 60 pounds. Ferry 15, 1781 - to 21 days horsemans duty under Genl. SUMPTER, GEORGE DUNLAP, Capt. - 21 pounds. June 28, 1781 - to 30 days horsemans duty under Genl. MARRIAN, JAMES KENNEDAY Liut. - 30 pounds.

Total 291 pounds

Camden District——————

Personally appeared ELIJAH CROCKETT before me and made oath that the above account is just and true and that he never received value for any part of the same. Sworn to this 29th day of Janry 1784 before me.

ANDW. FOSTER J.P.

The above service certified by me.

GEO. DUNLAP, Capt."

We have only to turn to the pages of history for the explanation of why ELIJAH CROCKETT'S service shows such an irregular and varied pattern.

He was part of a force of irregulars or partisans, whose mission and sacrifice is perhaps best described in the definition of their leaders to be found in various sources. ROBINSON in "WILLIAM R. DAVIE" says:

"The popular conception of a partisan leader is one of the Guerrilla type, who, without a continental or state commission draws around him a group of hardy volunteers who come as the occasion demands, serve without pay, stake their life's blood and retire to their homes when the danger is past." Page 37.

Of this type was WILLIAM R. DAVIE the future brother-in-law of ELIJAH CROCKETT and of this type also were SUMPTER and MARION, the Generals under whom he served. ELIJAH CROCKETT was one of the "Hardy Volunteers."

ROBERT KAR CROCKETT - Veteran of the War of 1812

Much has already been said concerning ROBERT KAR CROCKETT because it was the family records which he inscribed in his old account book which established the fact that ELIJAH CROCKETT and his wife, MARY DAVIE, were his parents.

In the same book but in a different handwriting, are posted the records of the family of the subject of this section and his wife, ANGERONA RICHARDSON. We have already stated that a comparison of the handwriting in which this data is recorded and the journal kept by the son of this couple, EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT,

indicates that it was he who inscribed the records of his father's family, even as his father had recorded that of his grandfather, ELIJAH.

The exact date of the migration of ROBERT KAR from South Carolina is not known but family tradition says he moved to Decatur, Morgan County, Alabama, in 1820 and there on December 19, 1822, he married ANGERONA RICHARDSON, the daughter of EDWARD RICHARDSON and his wife MARY LOCK. Not a great deal is known of the forebears of ANGERONA except that her maternal grandfather was WILLIAM LOCK of North Carolina. She had several sisters, of whom, NANCY married SAM PERKINS and settled at Triune, Tennessee, and MARY married JOHN REED Of Huntsville, Alabama.

The information given concerning ROBERT KAR CROCKETT and his family in the old buckskin book which belonged to him is as follows:

ROBERT KAR CROCKETT and ANGERONA RICHARDSON were married December 19, 1822.

ROBERT KAR CROCKETT was born June the 27th, 1792.

ANGERONA CROCKETT was born Oct. the 6, 1800.

1. JOHN ROBERT CROCKETT was born Nov. the 21, 1823.
2. MARY JANE CROCKETT was born May the 1, 1825.
3. ROBERT CROCKETT, JUN. was born May the 28, 1827.
4. Infant son born in July 21, 1829 in New Orleans.
5. ELLEN CROCKETT was born September the 26, 1830.
6. EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT was born April 4, 1834.
7. WASHINGTON CROCKETT was born Oct. the 14, 1836.
8. ANN ELIZA CROCKETT was born April the 4, 1838.

Deaths

ROBERT JUNIOR died July 2, 1827.

Son born in Orleans died August 26, 1829.

WASHINGTON CROCKETT died Nov. 8, 1836.

ANN ELIZA CROCKETT died May the 22, 1838.

MARY JANE CROCKETT died Sept. the 23, 1838.

Another son, ROBERT RICHARDSON CROCKETT, for some reason left out of this record, must have been born after ANN ELIZA, the youngest daughter.

According to information furnished by the descendants of JOHN R. CROCKETT, his father, ROBERT KAR CROCKETT moved to New Orleans about 1827 and lived there for six years before moving back to Alabama. This explains the notation above that the son born in 1829 was born in that city as no doubt others near his age were also.

"When the railroad from the Mississippi River at Memphis to the Tennessee River at Decatur, Alabama, was built, the planters of Morgan County, Alabama, not only bought stock but donated the labor of their slaves to the construction of the road. Among these people were ROBERT K. CROCKETT and Squire LANE. It proved not to be a financial success for the planters concerned. One of the reasons for the migration of the LANES and the CROCKETTS to Texas was to regain their depleted finances. This railroad venture (the second built in the United States, 1832) was, however, of untold benefit to the South, and is still in existence and following the original route.

"ROBERT K. CROCKETT died in 1852 before he could put his Texas plans into execution, but his widow and her family followed the original plans and in 1853 settled in what was then known as the Oso Community in Fayette County, near the present town of Flatonia. Only the oldest son, JOHN R. CROCKETT, his wife, and three children didn't join them until 1854. He had moved from Decatur in 1852 to Jefferson, the only Texas port on the Red River.

"ELLEN CROCKETT had married CHARLES LANE of Decatur before leaving Alabama. The other two children didn't marry until some years after the family moved to Texas. EDWARD R. married AGNES MERCER of Wharton County and ROBERT R. married BETTIE ACREE of the Oso Settlement."

"ANGERONA RICHARDSON CROCKETT, the widow of ROBERT KAR lived with her daughter ELLEN LANE in the Oso settlement, Fayette, County, until her son, EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, moved to Manor, Travis County, Texas after serving in the war between the states. She made her home with this son for many years but died at the home of her daughter in Flatonia on May 30, 1883 at the age of eighty-two years and nine months.

"Before his marriage and before his removal to Alabama from South Carolina," ROBERT KAR CROCKETT served in the War of 1812 at Hilton Head on the Coast of South Carolina, for which service his widow, ANGERONA RICHARDSON CROCKETT, received a pension. He never claimed the land that was assigned him for his services. This we know, for many years later "This CROCKETT family received a communication from some lawyer apprizing them of the fact and offering to secure the claim for a contingent fee. No notice was ever taken of the offer."*

However, as stated above, his widow ANGERONA did receive a pension, the application for which gives interesting and valuable information concerning her husband's appearance, places of residence and actual military service and we quote:

"War of 1812 - Claim of widow for service pension under provision of March 9, 1878."

Fayette County, Texas, July 5, 1878.

ANGERONA CROCKETT, aged 78, a resident of Travis County, Texas, widow of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT who served in War of 1812. Enlisted at Camden, South Carolina, stationed at what was then called Eadalls Pt. Charleston, South Carolina.

Description of husband: Height 5 Ft. 11½ in. Hair - Black, Eyes - Hazel, age about 20. Complexion, fair, birthplace, near Camden, South Carolina.

She states she married ROBERT KAR CROCKETT on Dec. 19th, 1822, by one DANCY, Justice of Peace, and that before marriage her name was ANGERONA RICHARDSON, and that neither had been previously married and that her husband died at Morgan County Alabama on the 22nd day of November, 1852.

And she further states that his place of residence had been Camden, South Carolina and Morgan County, Alabama and her's Morgan County, Alabama and Fayette County, Texas since the death of her husband.

And she further declares that ROBERT K. CROCKETT obtained a warrent for 80 acres of land as a bounty between the year 35 and 45.*

WITNESSES:
B. F. BURKE
E. R. CROCKETT

The official records of ROBERT K. CROCKETT'S service are filed with the General services administration and are copies below:

State of Alabama, County of Morgan:

On this the 26th day of December, A. D. 1850 personally appeared before me, LEVI SAYARS, a Justice of the Peace in and for the Co. and the State above written: "ROBERT K. CROCKETT, aged about fifty-eight years, a resident of Morgan County, State of Alabama, who being duly sworn according to law declares that he is the identical ROBERT K. CROCKETT who was a private in the company commanded by Capt. JOHN MONTGOMERY in the Regt. of South Carolina Militia commanded by Col. McQUILLER in the War with Great Britain, declared by the United States on the 18th June A.D. 1812. That he was drafted in Lancaster District, South Carolina, in the summer of the year 1814 for the term of 6 months and continued in actual service in said war for the term of 6 months and was honorable discharged at Charleston in the month of January A.D. 1815 as will appear by the muster rolls of said company.

He never received a certificate of discharge.

He makes this declaration for the purpose of obtaining the bounty land to which he may be entitled under the act granting bounty land to certain officers and soldiers who have been engaged in the Military service of the United States passed September 28th, 1850.*

He further states that he has never received bounty land for his military services."

(Signed) ROBERT K. CROCKETT

Sworn to and subscribed before me this the day and year above written and I hereby certify that I believe the said ROBERT K. CROCKETT to be the identical man who served as above stated and that he is of the age above stated."

LEVI SAYARS
Justice of Peace

Of the four surviving children of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT and his wife ANGERONA, JOHN ROBERT (or RICHARDSON) was the oldest. The following sketch of his life was submitted by his grandson, JAMES A. CROCKETT of Austin and his granddaughter, Miss FANNIE CROCKETT of Dallas, who taught for many years in the Austin, Texas, school system.

"JOHN RICHARDSON CROCKETT, born in Morgan County, Alabama on November twenty-first, 1823, moved with his parents to New Orleans when he was three years old. Six years later the family returned to their former home in Alabama where he continued in school until he was eighteen years old. He then read law under Judge PARSONS of Huntsville, Alabama, before moving to Memphis, Tennessee, where he practiced for three years.

"He moved to Texas a year before his mother and sister and brothers came, but he settled first at Jefferson for two years, after which he came to Fayette County and opened a mercantile business at Oso which he ran for six years."

Another writer states that when JOHN R. first came to Texas, he, with his grandfather RICHARDSON, settled at Jefferson on the Red River where they practiced surveying. At the same time, JOHN R. was studying law, latin, etc., by lamplight from his grandfather. After making several moves, this family group settled at Galveston. At this time, JOHN R. was married to ELLEN VAUGH CROCKETT and (according to J. G. CROCKETT) two of the children of this marriage died of yellow fever in Galveston and one died later and was buried in Flatonia. This, apparently, would give seven children to this marriage, as the six known to FANNIE CROCKETT at this time are otherwise accounted for. JOHN RICHARDSON CROCKETT served in the 20th Texas Infantry, as a part of the Confederate forces stationed at Galveston. According to J. G. C. a Union (Yankee) boat attempted to land, but he knows no details of the engagement. Evidently JOHN RICHARDSON CROCKETT, met and married ELIZA LANE in

*These several conflicting statements concerning the Bounty land to which CROCKETT was entitled, have not been resolved. Perhaps his widow was confused as to dates, or perhaps he did not validate his warrent of 1835 to 1845 and did not live to receive the land for which he applied for in Dec. 1850.

Flatonia. There were three children born to this marriage and two of them died at an early age. JOHN R. edited the newspaper "The Flatonia Argus," for about six years before he sold it to CHARLES BLANTON."

His grandson; JAMES A. CROCKETT of Austin, who was seventeen when his grandfather, who was living in his father's home, died, says, "JOHN R. CROCKETT remained mentally active to the ripe old age of 95. He could recite 'Thanatopsis' as long as he lived."

After ELIZA LANE CROCKETT died, JOHN R. later married KATE BURNS and they continued to live in Flatonia for a time.

Later, JOHN R. and KATE moved to Gonzalez to live with JAMES GILLESPIE CROCKETT and family. It was here that both JOHN R. and KATE died, and both were buried in Flatonia.

"At one time, his sons, SAMUEL PERKINS CROCKETT and JOHN VAUGH CROCKETT, were in Florida. Some negroes stole their horses. They found the horses in a pasture that belonged to the negroes. They summoned a deputy sheriff. SAMUEL PERKINS CROCKETT went in the front door of the negroes' home and the sheriff went in the back door. One of the negroes shot and killed SAMUEL PERKINS CROCKETT. The negroes were placed in jail. A mob gathered to take the negroes out and lynch them. An officer of the law was killed by some member of the mob. Since JOHN VAUGH CROCKETT was known to be a member of the mob - he departed in haste. Apparently he went from Florida to South America and never returned. JOHN VAUGH was a miner in South America. Fortunes went against him and at the age of 80 he returned into the hills to prospect. His wife, who was over 60 rode a mule over 600 miles up into the mountains to see him."

The following data is mostly from the JOHN R. CROCKETT family bible and was furnished by his grandson, JAMES A. CROCKETT of Austin, Texas. Mr. CROCKETT himself copied this from a bible in which he thinks it may have been inscribed from the original since the one from which he copied it was in remarkably good condition.

"JOHN R. (ROBERT in the ROBERT KAR CROCKETT book - RICHARDSON to his descendants) CROCKETT born Nov. 21, 1823 in Morgan County, Ala.; died Jan. 18, 1919 at the home of his son in Gonzales, Texas but was buried at Flatonia, married (1) Nov. 14, 1847 in Alabama ELLEN RICHARDSON VAUGH, born Oct. 9, 1825, died August 28, 1867 of yellow fever, at Galveston, Texas; married (2) October 13, 1868 at Flatonia, Texas ELIZA LANE, died Sept. 9, 1890; married (3) Feb. 21, 1891 KATE BURNS died about 1917, no issue from the third marriage.

Children of first marriage:

1. WILLIS GARTH CROCKETT born July 29, 1848; died March 16, 1891 at Manor, Texas; married Jan. 29, 1873 at Manor, ROENA VICK HILL, died Dec. 10, 1909 at Manor.
2. SAMUEL PERKINS CROCKETT born July 4, 1850 in Ala.; Died Nov. 11, 1872 at Gainsville, Fla.
3. MARIE ANGIE CROCKETT born Feb. 14, 1852, died September 22, 1855.
4. ANNIE ELIZA CROCKETT born Sept. 6, 1853; died in Calif.; married Nov. 11, 1873 at Manor, Texas JOHN S. WILLIAMS.
5. MARY ELLEN CROCKETT born March 5, 1957; died Oct. 11, 1864.
6. JOHN VAUGH CROCKETT, born Dec. 10, 1859; went to South America: married ALICE; lived to be over eighty.
7. GEORGIE VAUGH CROCKETT, born April 10, 1862; married June 1885 at Loyal Valley, Mason County, Texas, THOMAS HYATT. They were both killed in automobile accident on August 5, 1925, at Deming New Mexico and two of their grandchildren, GEORGIA, 10 and CATHERINE, 8, daughters of LONZO HYATT, were also in the accident.

Children of JOHN R. CROCKETT and ELIZA LANE.

8. JAMES GILLESPIE CROCKETT born May, 24, 1872, died August 16, 1948, married (1) Dec. 23, 1894 in Flatonia, LUNA PALMER, b. Mar. 3, 1869, died Nov. 28, 1895. No issue: married (2) April 5, 1898 in Gonzales EDNA BASS: died May 13, 1940 at Galveston, Texas.
9. HENNIE ADELAIDE CROCKETT born Feb. 14, 1874; died Oct. 21, 1878.
10. JESSIE LANE CROCKETT born October 25, 1875; died Jan. 21, 1879.

JAMES GILLESPIE CROCKETT, only surviving child of the marriage of JOHN R. CROCKETT to ELIZA LANE, lived in Flatonia until after the death of his first wife, and shortly thereafter moved to Gonzales by horseback where he lived and was in the cotton buying business until his death in 1948.

When he married LUNA PALMER on December, 1894, his father presented them with a family bible on the fly leaf of which is inscribed:

"Presented to JAMES G. and LUNA CROCKETT as a wedding gift by their father, J. R. CROCKETT with the hope that its pages will be studied and the observance of its precepts bring joy, harmony and happiness to their household while they live, and an abundant entrance into the home of the God when they die.
Flatonia, December 23, 1894."

In it is also inscribed the information already given of his marriages and dates of births and deaths of his two wives.

It also records the births of two sons of the second marriage to which other information has been added.

Children of JAMES GILLESPIE CROCKETT and EDNA BASS:

1. PALMER LANE CROCKETT born July 6, 1900; married March 1950 BLANCHE BROWN BARNETT. PALMER LANE CROCKETT and his wife have no children. He is at this time cashier of the Citizens National Bank at Gonzales.
2. JAMES ALONZO CROCKETT born August 11, 1902; married March 22, 1952 RUTH WEIMER and has one child, FRANCES LENORE CROCKETT born Nov. 28, 1955. JAMES ALONZO is an accountant for the Texas State Highway Dept., at Austin, Texas.

There is also information in this bible presented to JAMES GILLESPIE CROCKETT by his father JOHN R. CROCKETT, which obviously refers to the antecedents of his wife:

GIDEON BASS married his cousin EMILY BASS, Feb. 24, 1820, A. T. BASS born June 6, 1826.

EDNA BASS, second wife of JAMES GILLESPIE CROCKETT, and mother of his two sons, was the daughter of ALONZO T. BASS, at one time sheriff of Gonzales County, Texas. The records above taken from the CROCKETT bible indicate that he was the son of GIDEON BASS and his wife EMILY BASS.

JAMES ALONZO CROCKETT, who has compiled and submitted much of the information on the family of his grandfather, JOHN R., and his father, JAMES GILLESPIE CROCKETT, was named for ALONZO T. BASS, his maternal grandfather.

He served in the armed forces of the United States during World War II and a copy of his discharge papers is included below:

"This is to certify that JAMES A. CROCKETT 18 197 674 Corporal 2532nd AAF Base Unit Army of the United States is hereby honorably discharged from the military service of the United States of America.

"This certificate is awarded as a testimonial of honest and faithful service to his country. "Given at separation center, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, 28, August 1944. "Enlisted 13 October. 1942 at San Antonio, Texas. Completed 1 year 10 months 16 days of service. Prior service -- none

The above detail states that I was in the Army Air Corps stationed at Randolph Field, Texas for nearly two years. I left at the Government's convenience to enter essential industry -- meaning Highway Dept. Work."

ELLEN CROCKETT, the second surviving child and the only surviving daughter, of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT and his wife ANGERONA RICHARDSON, married in Morgan County, Alabama, CHARLES J. LANE, whose occupation is given in the 1870 census of Fayette County, Texas as a preacher.

This census taken on November 23, 1870 and recorded on page 117, numbers the household as 793 and gives the following information:

CHARLES J. LANE - Age 48, born in Alabama
ELLEN LANE - Age 42, born in Alabama
HENRY LANE - Age 20, born in Alabama
JONATHAN LANE - Age 17, born in Alabama
CHARLES LANE - Age 15, born in Alabama
JOSEPH LANE - Age 13, born in Alabama
SALLIE LANE - Age 10, born in Texas
MARIE LANE - Age 7, born in Texas
THOMAS W. LANE - Age 5, born in Texas
ELLEN F. LANE - Age 2, born in Texas

According to this record the LANES came to Texas about 1857 instead of 1853.

On November 2, 1870 on page 90 of the same census roll another LANE family was recorded. The head of this household was JONATHAN LANE, age 78 born in North Carolina, MARIE, his wife, age 68, was born in the same state. Living with them were two daugthers, FANNIE, age 40, born in Alabama, and HENERETTA, age 20, born also in Alabama.

It appears that this was likely the father, mother and two sisters of CHARLES LANE, the husband of ELLEN CROCKETT.

The second surviving son of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT and his wife ANGERONA RICHARDSON, was EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, to whom the following pages are devoted. Therefore, only the dates of the births of his family as given in his family bible will be recorded in this place:

Births

EDWARD R. CROCKETT, SR. was born April 4th, 1834;
AGNES MERCER, June 15th, 1840;
E. R. CROCKETT, JR. May 14th, 1859;
MARY LIZZIE CROCKETT, Feb. 4th, 1861
ROBERT MERCER CROCKETT, Sept. 29th, 1862
QUINN MENIFEE CROCKETT, May 9th, 1866;

NANCY PERKINS CROCKETT, Nov. 3rd, 1868
SUSIE IRENE AGNES CROCKETT, Mar. 15th, 1871;
HARRY LEE CROCKETT, Oct. 14th, 1872;
Infant son, July 30th, 1875
WILLIE EULINE CROCKETT, June 3rd, 1877
MOTON HAYWOOD CROCKETT, Dec. 10th, 1879
ROY HASSELL CROCKETT, Aug. 27th, 1882
ANNIE DELLA CROCKETT, July 17th, 1884;
CECIL LESLIE CROCKETT, May 3rd, 1886.

See following for descendants and further information of the family above.

The youngest son and child, the second ROBERT, of ROBERT KAR and ANGERONA CROCKETT is said by family historians to have been ROBERT RICHARDSON CROCKETT. We have no records of him or his descendants but judging from the birth dates of the other children of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT, he must have been born about 1840 and he is said to have married BETTIE ACREE of the Oso community in Fayette County, Texas.

EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT

EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, son of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT and his wife ANGERONA RICHARDSON, was born in Decatur, Alabama, April 4, 1834 and died in Austin, Texas on February 5, 1917.

As a boy, he went to Nashville, Tennessee to make his home with his mother's sister, NANCY, and her husband, SAM PERKINS, while he took advantage of the excellent educational advantages of that city. "The journal of the campaigns of 1864" which he kept while on the field of battle attests to his 'better than usual' education for one of his generation.

He came to Texas as a young man and for a while taught school. He married AGNES MERCER, daughter of LEVI MERCER and SARAH MENEFEE who in turn was the daughter of WILLIAM MENEFEE, signer of the Independence of Texas in 1836 and member of the commission which selected Austin as the site for the Capitol of the Republic of Texas in the spring of 1839.

The young couple were given two slaves, SYLVIA and JOE, as a wedding gift, by the bride's parents.

Mr. MOTON H. CROCKETT, son of E. R. CROCKETT, says, "My father was a member of the Methodist Church and a devoute Christian. He and my wonderful mother had thirteen children."

Shortly after his father arrived in Texas, on his trusty pony, from Alabama he got his first job on a farm on the north bank of the Colorado near Austin which was just a village at that time, the land where the University of Texas now stands being available for about two dollars an acre. He was to spend all of his years in Texas in the vicinity of Austin and most of them in Travis County.

EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT was the fifth CROCKETT in as many generations to answer the call to arms of his native land in her time of need.

With his progenitors: Lt. ROBERT of August County, Virginia Militia: JOHN, of the French and Indian War; ELIJAH, soldier of the Revolution; and ROBERT KAR of the War of 1812, he too donned a uniform and became a fighting CROCKETT, in the Confederate Army.

MOTON CROCKETT, SR. says "My father returned home after the war to find his slaves freed, his cattle stolen or drifted away and desolation on every hand.

It must have been about this time that he moved to the farm at Manor "and built the first gin in the community, probably the first in Travis County, and ran this gin for some 14 years. He accumulated a good many cattle and moved them to McCulloch County where he bought land at 25 cents an acre. He moved into the country west of Georgetown where he farmed, after a trip to McCulloch County where his son, EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, JR., lived and looked after his cattle.

"Later EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT moved to Austin to educate his children. Here he ran a grocery store on East Sixth street for a while, then bought the furniture and fixtures of the old Carrolton Hotel, which was so noted for its being a fine hotel at one time, a place where all of the notables stayed when they came to town. He operated this hotel for a good many years, then moved back into the country west of Georgetown."

The following record of the descendants of EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT and his wife AGNESS MERCER were taken from their family bible, from his own records of the marriages of his children and births of grandchildren kept in the ledger where he recorded the diaries, and from further records kept by their daughter the late Mrs. W. H. DONATHAN of Austin, Texas.

EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, SR., born April 4, 1834, son of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT and ANGERONA RICHARDSON, died February 5, 1917.

AGNES MERCER, daughter of LEVI MERCER and SARAH MENEFEE, born June 15, 1840, married E. R. CROCKETT, March 26, 1858, died March 19, 1920. Issue:

1. EDWARD RICHARDSON, JR., born May 14, 1859, married Mrs. JESSIE MERCER, August 26, 1883, died

June 24, 1949. Children:
(1) CALLIE GERTRUDE CROCKETT, born July 19, 1884, died February 3, 1903.
(2) MARY ETHEL CROCKETT, born September 24, 1886.
(3) SUSIE EVA, born March 7, 1888, died in infancy.
(4) EDWARD YERBY CROCKETT, born Decmeber 20, 1896, died July 17, 1927.

2. MARY LIZZIE CROCKETT, born February 4, 1861, died March 17, 1945, married December 16, 1880, Rev. T. F. DIMMETT, died June 18, 1933. No Issue:
3. ROBERT MERCER CROCKETT, born September 29, 1862, died May 18, 1950, married Mrs. MARY HODGES SUTHERLAND WELLS, January 14, 1895, and reared her three daughters, MARY, MATTIE and HESTER WELLS. Children:
(1) Infant son, born September 23, 1900, died October 2, 1900.
4. QUIN MENEFEE CROCKETT, born May 10, 1866, died January 18, 1946, married September 2, 1901 LIZZIE FOWDEN. Children:
(1) LESLIE FOWDEN CROCKETT, born September 1, 1902.
5. NANCY PERKINS CROCKETT, born November 3, 1868, married HENRY E. TOWNES, January 14, 1892. Children:
(1) SUSIE AGNES TOWNES, born July 18, 1896.
(2) MARY ETHEL TOWNES, born April 22, 1902.
6. SUSIE IRENE AGNES CROCKETT, born March 15, 1871, died January 21, 1958, married June 12, 1889, W. H. DONATHAN. Children:
(1) NANTIE LEE DONATHAN, born May 20, 1890.
(2) MAY AGNES DONATHAN, born June 30, 1892.
(3) ROBBIE ELIZABETH DONATHAN, born March 17, 1894, died October 28, 1955, married R. C. SKINNER.
(4) QUIN EDWARD DONATHAN, born April 23, 1896, died April 29, 1922.
(5) WILEY HASSELL DONATHAN, born Decmeber 6, 1897, died February 21, 1947.
7. HARRY LEE CROCKETT, born October 12, 1872, died December 31, 1947, married November 23, 1896, CORABEL ANDERSON. Children:
(1) ELIZABETH CROCKETT, born March 11, 1901.
(2) MILDRED CROCKETT, born May 6, 1906.
(3) HARRY LEE CROCKETT, JR., born December 2, 1908.
8. Infant son born July 30, 1895, died in infancy.
9. WILIE EULINE CROCKETT; born June 3, 1877, died August 4, 1912, married April 23, 1895. CHARLES A. DAVIS. Children:
(1) LILA DAVIS. born January 10, 1896, died August 12, 1919, married PHILIP CATER.
(2) FRANK WASHINGTON DAVIS, born August 25, 1899, died February 5, 1922.
(3) LOUISE DAVIS, born December 22, 1906.
10. MOTON HAYWOOD CROCKETT, born December 10, 1879, d. 29 Mar. 1961, married Mrs. MAE McINTIRE, May 21, 1921. She was the former MAE TEMPLETON BURNS, born December 13, 1882, daughter of CASSIUS MARCUS CLAY BURNS, born January 16, 1849 and his wife EMMA MORIAH TEMPLETON, born January 31, 1852. Issue:
(1) MOTON HAYWOOD CROCKETT, JR. born January 5, 1923, married March 17, 1944 MARTHA HELEN SANDERS, born October 7, 1924, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. JOSEPH M. SANDERS.
11. Dr. ROY HASSELL CROCKETT, born August 27, 1882, married August, 1917, VERNON RICHARDSON. Children:
(1) SARAH MARGARET CROCKETT, born January 3, 1920.
(2) REBECA ANN CROCKETT, born August 16, 1922.
12. ANNIE DELLA CROCKETT, born July 17, 1884, died in infancy.
13. CECIL LESLIE CROCKETT, born May 3, 1886, married June 11, 1914, HELEN GARDNER BROWN. Children:
(1) CECIL LESLIE CROCKETT, JR., born March 8, 1915.
(2) HAROLD BROWN CROCKETT, born July 20, 1916.
(3) EDWARD MERCER CROCKETT, born July 24, 1921.

Part of the great-grandchildren of EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, SR. and his wife, AGNES MERCER, were recorded by the late Mrs. DONATHAN. They are listed below:

1. MARY ETHEL CROCKETT, daughter of EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, JR. and his wife, JESSIE, married CLARENCE BELL and were the parents of:
(1) CLARICE BELL married LOUIS GLEASON.

2. SUSIE AGNES TOWNES, daughter of NANCY PERKINS CROCKETT and HENRY E. TOWNES, married September 6, 1921, R. S. WINDROW.
3. MARY ETHEL TOWNES, sister of SUSIE, married September 20, 1929, T. P. MORRISON and had:
   (1) MARY SUE MORRISON, born April 29, 1930.
   (2) T. P. MORRISON, JR., born February 18, 1932.
   (3) DANA MORRISON, born February 7, 1933.
   (4) QUIN TOWNES MORRISON, born June 2, 1935.
4. NANTIE LEE DONATHAN, daughter of SUSIE CROCKETT and her husband W. H. DONATHAN, married August 29, 1920, ROY ARTHUR FAUBION. Children:
   (1) MARJORIE CROCKETT FAUBION, born July 31, 1921.
   (2) JOHN WILEY FAUBION, born July 28, 1925.
   (3) MARY HELEN FAUBION, born April 13, 1927.
   (4) NANCY JEAN FAUBION, born June 23, 1928.
   (5) VERNON FRANCES FAUBION, born May 24, 1930.
5. MARY AGNES DONATHAN, sister of NANTIE LEE, married January 29, 1916, J. R. COPUS. Children:
   (1) ELIZABETH MOTON COPUS, born April 8, 1919.
6. ROBBIE ELIZABETH DONATHAN, sister of NANTIE LEE, married ROY C. SKINNER. Children:
   (1) MARY SUE SKINNER, born November 16, 1925.
   (2) ROY CLYDE SKINNER, JR., born October 21, 1934.
7. ELIZABETH CROCKETT, daughter of HARRY LEE CROCKETT and CORABEL ANDERSON, married July 15, 1920, WILLIAM D. SUTHERLAND, JR.
   (1) ELIZABETH SUTHERLAND, born October 7, 1922, died about 1929.
8. MILDRED CROCKETT, daughter of HARRY LEE and CORABEL ANDERSON CROCKETT married EDWARD BUSTIN and had: (1) EDWARD BUSTIN, JR. (2) NEWEL BUSTIN, (3) MILDRED BUSTIN, (4) KENNETH BUSTIN.
9. LILA DAVIS, daughter of WILIE EULINE CROCKETT and her husband, CHARLES A. DAVIS, married PHILIP CATON. Children:
   (1) PHILIP CATON, JR., born July 14, 1917.
   (2) LILA KATHERINE CATON, born March 12, 1919.
10. MOTON HAYWOOD CROCKETT, JR., and his wife MARTHA have:
   (1) MOTON H. CROCKETT, III, born December 19, 1944.
   (2) HELEN ELAINE CROCKETT, b. December 7, 1946.

Great-Great-Grandchildren of EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT, SR. and his wife, AGNES MERCER:

1. ELIZABETH MOTON COPUS, grand-daughter of SUSIE CROCKETT DONATHAN married WALTER D. EVANS, JR. and his two children:
   (1) SUSAN EVANS and (2) MARY ELAINE EVANS.
2. MARJORIE CROCKETT FAUBION, grand-daughter of SUSIE CROCKETT DONATHAN, married September 20, 1946, DALE E. BARKER and has:
   (1) JOHN A. BARKER, born January 27, 1950.
3. NANCY JEAN FAUBION, sister of MARJORIE, married August 18, 1950, HENRY L. BYARS and has:
   (1) STEPHEN CRAIG BYARS, born March 13, 1953, (2) CONNIE LOU BYARS, born February 11, 1955.
4. MARY HELEN FAUBION, sister of MARJORIE, married December 10, 1955, Dr. BRUCE W. CHRISTIANSON.
5. VERNON FRANCES FAUBION, sister of MARJORIE, married January 3, 1955, LELAND P. CHRISTIAN, and has (1) PAULA LEIGH CHRISTIAN, born July 4, 1957.

The purpose of this search and study has been to prove the relationship of DAVY CROCKETT of the Alamo, to the descendants of EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT of Texas. We have traced the line of both back to the immigrant without finding that common ancestor which was sought.

However, many things contribute to a conviction that DAVID CROCKETT, of Carter's Valley, immigrant ancestor of DAVY; and ROBERT CROCKETT of the Calfpasture, might easily have been brothers.

If they were brothers, sons of a Scotch-Irish CROCKETT, that riddle will never be solved, but there are six generations between ROBERT CROCKETT, of the Calfpasture, progenitor of the EDWARD R. CROCKETT line and the sons of the latter of whom Mr. MOTON H. CROCKETT, late of Austin, asserted that his father told him he was a third cousin of the illustrious DAVY CROCKETT.

JOHN CROCKETT, son of DAVID, of Carter's Valley and JOHN CROCKETT, son of ROBERT CROCKETT of the Calf-pasture, would have been first cousins.

By a now seldom used system of reckoning relationships, their sons DAVY CROCKETT' of the Alamo, grandson of DAVID of Carter's Valley and son of his son, JOHN, would have been a first cousin, once removed, of ELIJAH

CROCKETT, son of JOHN CROCKETT of the Waxhaw and grandson of ROBERT, of the Calfpasture.

Said DAVY CROCKETT would have then, by the same reckoning, been a second cousin of ROBERT KAR CROCKETT, son of ELIJAH; the second cousin, once removed of EDWARD R. CROCKETT, son of ROBERT KAR and a third cousin of the late Mr. MOTON H. CROCKETT of Austin, Texas and his brothers, sons of EDWARD RICHARDSON CROCKETT and his wife AGNES MERCER, dau. of LEVI MERCER and his wife, SARAH MENEFEE, granddau. of WILLIAM MENEFEE, signer of Texas Independence and his wife, AGNES SUTHERLAND.

The verification of the possibility of the claim of EDWARD R. CROCKETT that his sons were third cousins (by an obsolete reckoning) of DAVY CROCKETT· the assertion of JAMES A. CROCKETT that his grandfather told him as early as 1891 of their descent from ANTOINE de CROCKETAGNE, French Huguenot who·is also considered by several CROCKETT biographers to have been the foreparent of DAVY CROCKETT, the similarity of the names of their sons, the tradition that both families had sons born at sea, the fact that the immigrant ancestor of each lines entered through the port of Philadelphia and the further fact that DAVID CROCKETT I) followed ROBERT of the Calfpasture, to Va. and lived near him and later emerged in N.C. in a vicinity to which ROBERT'S sons had removed from his neighborhood in Va.; add bit by bit to the claim that the two Irish immigrants and pioneers of Western Va. were certainly related and probably brothers.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

When one has spent more than a decade collecting data to fill more than three hundred large sized pages, she has usually contacted many people and given and received much information.

This is true, too, of the compiler of "We Cousins" Vol. II for, although she has spent many years in research, has written hundreds of letters and made two six-week field trips to the Eastern States, doing research in seven states and the national capitol, besides a dozen or more county seats, she has also received much valuable assistance from others.

First of all, I am indebted to my family – to my husband, Charles Edward Hudson II, for his understanding, encouragement and assistance without which this book could not have been published; to my son, Charles Edward, Jr., for relieving me of many responsibilities during these months of publication; and to my sister, Mable Sutherland, for hours spent in the library checking and rechecking last minute data.

Perhaps my next most fervent thanks should go to Mr. Don Mercer of Houston, who, after having extracted 100 years of Norfolk Co. Va. court records, very generously made a copy available to me in addition to extensive extracts from several North Carolina counties.

Without these records, the Ward Chapter would have been less conclusive.

Others who have provided vital or extensive information and to whom thanks are due:

Katherine Owen of Winchester, Ky. for her help on Kentucky Mortons.

Dr. Modena Peterson for furnishing the connecting link between the North Carolina and Texas Hodges and Ward Lines;

Mr. Jim Bob Tinsley of Florida, for the South Carolina Tinsley deeds;

Mrs. Gertrude Soderburg of Washington D. C. for extensive assistance on Earnest-Stephens and suggestions on Evans;

Miss Nancy Crockett of Lancaster S. C. for doing the difficult research on the disputed Waxhaw Region which is essential to the Crockett Chapter.

Mary Ward of San Antonio, Texas is due thanks for her encouragement and her cheerful companionship and assistance on the last long field trip.

There are many others who have also been helpful, most of whom have been recognized in the context of the book.

For the compiler "We Cousins" Vol. II has been a challenge, a giant fascinating puzzle, an education in Geography and History, a glimpse into the lives of those of yester-years and a labor of love for my kith and kin.

– Florence Sutherland Hudson

CORRECTIONS AND OMISSIONS

CHAPTER I

Page 18 Franklin, not Frnaklin - next to last line of next to last paragraph.
Page 19 Tuscumbia, not Tuscumbiz, first line 3rd paragraph.
Page 19 Period between Susannah and Elizabeth, first line 4th paragraph from bottom.
Page 20 III Thos. Sutherlin, not Sutherland.
Page 20 Adam Sutherlin was named - repetition.
Page 21 Wiley Blount Morton, not William Blount, No. 5.
Page 21 George Sutherland, not Southerland, first line under G. Sutherland.
Page 22 Sixth, not sixty - middle of page above Sixth Generation.
Page 27 January 14, 1855, not 1844, first No. 2.
Page 29 Ann Bryan, not Anny Bryan Lane, under IV.
Page 40 Thomas Roger De Gregori, not, Thomas Robert de Gregori, No. (3) also De Gregori throughout.
Page 41 Vickrey,-not Vickery No. II.
Page 42 19 Jan. 1901, not 1 Jan. 1901 No. V.
Page 44 Dewana Price, not Prices, under VI.
Page 44 Billie Barbara S. b. 22 Sept. 1933 not 1931, third No. 2.
Page 45 Barbara Louise Black, m. 1958, not 1957,
Shari Louise Smyth b. 1 June 1959 not 1958 under 3rd No. 2.

CHAPTER II

Page 56 Cherrys, not possessive - third line of 7th paragraph.
Page 56 or not on, 4th line of 8 paragraph.
Page 58 Co. not Oc., 5th line of 5th paragraph.
Page 59 omit, only, before son, 4th paragraph from bottom first line.
Page 56 Richard, not Ricahrd, last line seventh paragraph.
Page 59 Historical Mag, fourth line from bottom.
Pgae 62 1693/4 not 1963/4, second line of ninth paragraph.
Page 64 for, not from, second line of No. 11.
Page 65 1696, not 1969, first line of ninth paragraph.
Page 65 Nusen, not Nosev, third line from bottom.
Page 67 And, not a - 3rd paragraph from bottom.
Page 67 Stokeley, not Sotkeley, 4th line from bottom of paragraph five.
Page 69 Kesiah, not Keshia, last word, 1st line paragraph five.
Page 69 1764, not 1765, third paragraph from bottom.
Page 71 Kesiah, not Kisiah, 1st paragraph above Etheredge.
Page 73 "Another son" not "his third son", third line of 7th paragraph.
Page 76 Soderburg, not Soduberg, first line of paragraph five.
Page 81 Kenchen, not Kencher, 2nd and 5th lines.
Page 82 "Cousin," not "son," third line from bottom.
Page 82 Richard not Ricahrd, first word of line 11.
Schedule, not Scehdule, first line, fifth paragraph from bottom.
Page 84 1793, not 1893, in No. 1 Mary Hodges.
Page 84 was, not, as in No. 2, Robert Hodges.
Page 84 finally, not, fianally, third line from bottom.
Page 85 62, not 52, second line of 6th paragraph.
Page 90 eternal, not, eteranl, second line from bottom.
Page 91 omitted "dau. of Thos. Menefee," following Susan Lewis Menefee, second line under Eighth Generation.
Page 91 Mar. 9, 1859, not 1850 No. 7, M.H.S.
Page 93 Omit one Bell in name of Ivy Bell Peck, end of forth complete line from bottom.

CHAPTER III

Page 103 omit, of, before Mary, line 6.
Page 105 Lowreys, not possessive, first line of 8th paragraph from bottom.
Page 109 Owen, not Owne.

Page 117 taylor, not, Taylor - occupation not name.
Page 117 Richard not Ricahrd Swain, 8th line from bottom.
Page 120 Eastwood, not Fast Wood, middle of page.
Page 124 Jonathan, not John Martin, first word of 5th paragraph from top.
Page 126 Richard, not Ricahrd, 2nd line of 5th paragraph.
Page 127 omit "first" after Ward's, third line of 5th paragraph.
Page 130 Poole, not Pools, last line of fifth paragraph.
Page 130 Richard, not Ricahrd, first line 6th paragraph.
Page 131 not impossible, instead of not possible, first line of 2nd paragraph under B.
Page 134 Sewell, not Sewall, next to last line paragraph 3.
Page 135 Bouling not Boulin, first line of No. 5.
Page 139 Dorethea, not Doreathy, first line of 4th paragrahp.
Page 141 Signed John (E) Ward, not John (W) Ward, last line of 6th paragraph from top.
Page 149 Boush, not Baush, 4th line.
Page 154 Woodhouse not Wordhouse, 4th line.
Page 155 Echols, not Echolas, end of 4th line from bottom.
Page 156 Sprawling "E", not sprawling "W," first line under Ward-Smith-Loyd.
Page 157 Osborn, not Osbron, middle of page.
Page 161 dates, not dated of birth, third line of 2nd paragraph.

CHAPTER IV

Page 171 Adenstone, not Adentstone, 5th line.
Page 197 Pearl, not Pear, 6th line from bottom.
Page 199 Frances, not Rances Denton in (3).

CHAPTER VII

Page 235 involving, not involvin, 8th paragraph.

CHAPTER VIII

Page 261 Archelaus, not Archlaeus, under No. 1.

INDEX

This index is made in two parts. Part I consists of names of Heads of Families, while Part II, which follows, lists Names of Brides.

A family name is given in the index only once for each page although it may appear any number of times on that page. Therefore, the searcher must needs scan the entire page for complete coverage.

PART I
Heads of Families

A

Abralls (Abrill), p. 129, 130, 131, 138.
Ackerman, p. 190
Ackiss, p. 149
Acre, Joan, p. 206
Adams, p. 46, 140, 148
Adenstone (Adduston, Adleston), p. 164, 165, 170, 171, 172, 175, 176, 178, 181
Akin, p. 239
Aldridge, p. 54, 110, 265
Alexander, p. 262, 312
Alford, p. 155
Allen, p. 150, 151, 154, 233, 260, 265, 269, 270
Alsobrook, p. 103
Alsupp, p. 282
Anderson, p. 28, 30, 33, 41, 75, 90, 105, 184, 188, 190, 197, 214, 223, 224, 241, 242, 244, 246, 247, 248, 253, 262, 271, 286.
Andrews, p. 160, 161, 172, 209, 210
Andros, p. 146
Anguish, p. 154
Anthony, p. 286
Apping, p. 277
Archer, p. 240
Arline, p. 121
Armstrong, p. 293, 300, 302
Arnim, p. 31, 47, 187
Arnold, p. 135
Arrington, p. 26
Asbeck, p. 208, 213
Asbury, p. 187, 229
Ashall, p. 129, 153
Ashford, p. 193,
Ashley, p. 71
Ashton, p. 200, 202
Ashworth, p. 82
Askew, p. 45, 132
Atkinson, p. 181
Austin, p. 45
Avery, p. 160

B

Babcock, p. 209
Babson, p. 167
Backley, p. 165
Bacon, p. 200
Bagnell, p. 150
Bailey, p. 92, 96, 111, 117
Baker, p. 29, 87, 147, 151
Baldwin, p. 96
Ball, p. 34, 92, 96, 144, 145, 275
Ballard, p. 275, 288
Ballentine, 54, 65, 255
Ballington, p. 288
Bambury, p. 117
Bankhead, p. 27
Banks, p. 129, 135
Bardine, p. 104
Barfield, p. 108
Barker, p. 320
Barkley, p. 100
Barnard, p. 199, 200, 201, 202 203, 204, 205
Barnatt, p. 200, 205
Barnes, p. 24, 223, 265, 273
Barnett, p. 20, 32, 33, 197
Barnsground, p. 143
Barradall, p. 201
Barrellaux, p. 39
Barrett, p. 25
Barrington, p. 148
Barrow, p. 103, 126, 176
Baruch, p. 82
Basford, p. 28, 36
Bass, p. 239, 240, 317
Bateman, p. 128
Baten, p. 192
Batts, p. 129, 150, 154
Baugh, p. 20, 238, 239, 240, 243
Baxter, p. 223, 224, 225
Bayley, p. 138
Bayless, p. 161
Beal, p. 197
Beall, p. 37
Bean, p. 217, 219, 268
Beard, p. 306
Bearden, p. 198
Beaupre, p. 97
Beck, p. 108, 143, 144, 145, 146
Bell, p. 46, 72, 90, 92, 96, 276, 281, 319
Benedict, p. 286
Bener, p. 298
Bennack, p. 93
Benner, p. 297
Bennett, p. 119, 121, 135, 136, 137, 149, 152, 156, 157, 308
Bentley, p. 108
Benton, p. 193
Bergeron, p. 110, 111
Bernard, p. 170, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206
Berriman, p. 152
Berry, p. 144, 217, 283
Betts, p. 32, 49, 50, 217
Bevan, p. 150, 151, 236
Bevalhurst, p. 157
Beverly, p. 283
Bevill, p. 241
Beyett, p. 94
Bikker, p. 190
Bird, p. 184
Birdsong, p. 208
Bishop, p. 225
Black, p. 45, 188
Blackburn, p. 210
Blackman, p. 157
Blake, p. 147, 175, 176, 177
Blakely, p. 220
Blankenship, p. 246
Blanton, p. 316
Blaylock, p. 97
Blount, p. 111, 220
Blunt, p. 204, 266
Bly, p. 115, 120, 121
Bodenam, p. 123, 130
Boleto, p. 146, 147
Bolling, p. 238
Bonderaus, p. 93
Bonham, p. 292
Bonner, p. 123, 167
Bonney, p. 123, 130, 152, 154, 155
Booker, p. 105, 235, 236, 287
Boorman, p. 141
Booth, p. 165, 294
Borden, p. 223, 231
Borodell, p. 174
Borst, p. 45
Boswell, p. 141
Boush, p. 149
Boutwell, p. 76
Bourne, p. 263
Bouviel, p. 256
Bowers, p. 159
Bowes, p. 131, 141
Bowie, p. 292
Bowin, p. 63
Bowles, p. 159, 161,162, 163
Bowling, p. 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 152, 158
Bowman, p. 141, 233, 239
Boyd, p. 41
Bracken, p. 155
Bradley, p. 196
Bradford, p. 114, 149
Bradshaw, p. 298, 312
Brady, p. 213
Brakes, p. 125, 128, 142, 152
Branch, p. 74, 75
Brand, p. 207, 248
Brandenburgh, p. 261, 268, 269
Bragg, p. 266
Branson, p. 196
Branton, p. 126, 136
Brasher, p. 43, 196, 197
Bratton, p. 304, 305, 306
Bray, p. 114, 121, 124, 126
Breckenridge, p. 210
Bressie, p. 61
Brewer, p. 188, 189
Brian, p. 135, 139, 140
Brice, p. 285

Bridgeman, p. 110
Bridgemon, p. 108, 109, 142, 156
Bridges, p. 149
Bridger, p. 123, 128, 130
Brient, p. 140, 141, 281
Briggs, p. 241
Bright, p. 273
Brigman, p. 108, 142
Brim, p. 86
Brindley, p. 120
Brinson, p. 140, 154
Brittchett, p. 176
Brodrick, p. 298, 299
Brooks, p. 228, 290
Broughton, p. 155
Brown, p. 46, 64, 93, 155, 157, 158, 161, 162, 183, 192, 201, 245, 280
Browning, p. 270, 273, 274, 288
Brownlow, p. 297
Bruee, p. 12, 141, 162
Bruks, p. 153
Bryan, 138, 139, 141, 158
Bryant, p. 98, 149
Buealew, p. 196, 197,
Bucanon, p. 243, 249, 250
Buchanon, p. 223
Bucher, p. 298
Buckner, p. 201
Buhler, p. 28, 37
Bullock, p. 260
Bumgarten, p. 93
Bunting, p. 135
Bureher, p. 179,
Burford, p. 48
Burgess, p. 63, 64, 65
Burk, p. 93, 104
Burkley, p. 42
Burleson, p. 208, 217, 247, 248
Burnham, p. 63
Burnett, p. 246
Burns, p. 319
Burruss, p. 112, 114, 122, 123, 126, 129, 130, 131, 132, 149, 155, 282
Burrus, p. 269
Burton, p. 217, 218, 237, 239, 241, 242, 243, 244, 249, 250, 251
Burwell, p. 203, 304
Buseh, p. 142
Bush, p. 24, 217, 290
Bustian, p. 320
Butler, p. 106, 107, 108, 109, 114, 115, 116, 127, 128, 201, 283
Butt, p. 65, 102, 149
Butterfras, p. 213
Byers, p. 320
Byrd, p. 217, 245, 249

C

Caldwell, p. 196, 235
Cahill, p. 155
Calhoun, p. 95, 285, 302
Calkins, p. 95
Calloway, p. 47, 196, 250
Campbell, p. 160, 224, 229, 272, 274, 282
Canady, (Kenedy) p. 259
Cannon, p. 96, 253
Capps, p. 125, 126, 150, 153, 154, 155
Capus, p. 320
Carey, p. 235
Carisio, p. 212
Carleton, p. 114, 115, 116, 117, 118
Carpenter, p. 40
Carrington, p. 204
Carrol, p. 74, 190, 232
Carter, p. 101, 151, 225, 260, 276
Cartwright, p. 160
Cary, p. 85, 86, 87, 203
Case, p. 172
Cason, p. 235
Catel, p. 256
Catherill, p. 156
Caton, p. 320
Cauble, p. 44
Causey, p. 47
Cave, p. 195
Caviness, p. 197
Chaffee, p. 38
Chaffin, p. 285, 286, 287, 289
Chain, p. 42
Champion, p. 120, 121
Chapman, p. 153, 172, 177, 178, 192
Chayes, p. 255
Cheadel, p. 280, 281
Cheapare, p. 287
Chermeson, p. 166
Chessman, p. 171, 175
Chidell, p. 280
Childs, p. 14
Chiles, p. 261, 270
Chilleott, p. 142
Chisman, p. 171, 175
Chitwood, p. 44
Christian, p. 253, 320
Christianson, p. 320
Christy, p. 273
Church, p. 144, 145, 148, 149
Clark, p. 74, 86, 115, 150, 151, 172
Clay, p. 243, 274
Clayton, p. 175, 203, 204
Clement, p. 158
Clemmer, p. 30, 39
Clevenger, p. 41
Clifton, p. 176, 248
Clower, p. 34, 96
Cock, (Coeke) p., 146, 153
Coffield, p. 101
Cogbill, p. 238
Coghill, p. 238, 280, 284
Coke, p. 146
Cole, p. 223, 224, 275
Coleman, p. 203, 264, 280, 281
Colley, p. 155
Collins, p. 92, 97, 104, 115, 128, 148, 160, 190, 217
Colson, p. 210
Colter, p. 212, 294
Conkwright, p. 273
Connally, p. 95
Conway, p. 20, 25
Cook, p. 210, 280, 281, 284, 287
Cooper, p. 102, 111, 117, 126, 130, 131, 155, 196, 197
Copeland, p. 117–121
Copher, p. 152, 155
Coplen, p. 212
Corbitt, p. 114, 147, 149, 153, 154, 155
Corderoy, p. 200, 201
Cording, p. 120, 162
Cornish, p. 114, 131, 138, 153, 154
Corning, p. 154
Cottingham, p. 208
Cottle, p. 120
Cotton, p. 133, 146
Couin, p. 198
Coulter, p. 294
Covington, p. 238
Cowlishaw, p. 190, 211
Crabb, p. 216
Crafford, p. 149, 282
Craft, p. 31, 46, 187
Craig, p. 262, 265, 272, 289
Craighead, 24, 28
Crawford, p. 113, 170, 178, 180, 181, 183, 184, 185, 186, 213, 283
Creekmore, p. 227
Creffield, p. 203
Crews, p. 30, 38
Criswell, p. 220
Crocketagne, p. 293, 302, 321
Crockett, p. 26, 28, 30, 36, 43, 91, 225,226, 227, 291–321
Cross, p. 294, 307
Crossland, p. 114
Crow, p. 189
Crowell, p. 105
Crum, p. 189
Cubbage, p. 125, 126
Cubbidge, 126
Culpeper, p. 135
Culver, p. 189
Cummings, p. 160
Cunningham, p. 254, 287, 288
Curray, p. 246
Cusack, p. 86

D

Dabney, p. 238, 244
Daerr, p. 189
Dale, p. 157
Danee, p. 178, 238
Dandridge, p. 200
Daniel, p. 142, 280, 281, 283, 284, 290
Daniels, p. 103, 112, 146
Dashields, p. 225
Daudy, p. 283
Dauge, p. 152, 154
Daughtery, p. 283
Davenport, p. 148
Davidson, p. 280, 281, 283
Davie, p. 80, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313
Davis, p. 15, 27, 34, 36, 49, 54, 57, 60, 66, 74, 88, 90, 125, 131, 150, 151, 152, 155, 158, 193, 300, 304, 305, 306, 308, 319, 320
Davys (Davis), p. 125
Dawson, p. 156, 192
Day, p. 74, (or Dye) p. 263
Daynes, p. 162
Deaver, p. 23
DeAudley, p. 206
DeClare, p. 206
Deer, p. 95

DeGregori, p. 40
DeMar, p. 41
Dennett, p. 165
Dentp . 295
Denton, p. 246
Denny, p. 142
Depriest, p. 15, 16
De Serginon, p. 256
DeShields, 301
Dever, p. 27
DeVary, p. 257
DeVillbiss, p. 23
DeVries, p. 303
Dezendorf, p. 42
Dickie, p. 298
Dickens, p. 84
Dickins, p. 99, 102, 103
Dimmett, p. 319
Dimmit, p. 36
Dickson, p. 91
Dicson, p. 165, 171
Dix, p. 24
Dixon, p. 145, 165, 171, 287
Dodson, p. 240
Dolberry, p. 212
Dolesh, p. 189
Dollar, p. 145
Donalson, p. 31, 42, 184
Donahue, p. 198
Donathan, p. 36, 318, 319, 320
Dorsey, p. 300
Douglas, p. 102, 115, 116
Downs, p. 73
Downing, p. 193, 302
Dowty, p. 281
Draper, p. 205
Draughan, p. 120
Drury, p. 174, 175
Duff, p. 230
Dufras, p. 256
Duggar, p. 112
Duke, p. 195
Duncan, p. 267
Dunlap, p. 313
Dupont, p. 48
Dupre, p. 95

E

Eadins, p. 139
Eads, p. 35
Eans, p. 235
Eastin, p. 261, 269
Earnest, p. 209, 214, 217, 227, 228, 229, 230, 233
Eastman, p. 282
Echols, p. 155, 213
Edward I, p. 206
Edwards, p. 33, 101, 108, 109, 111, 142, 143, 145, 148, 149, 152, 156, 200
Egerton, p. 152
Egg, p. 30, 39
Eggleston, p. 236
Eischoly, p. 210
Eleanor, p. 206
Elgin, p. 273
Elife, p. 161, 163
Elkins, p. 273
Ellenburg, p. 34
Ellis, p. 60, 61, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 151, 158, 159, 161, 163
Elliott, p. 40
Ellison, p. 39
Elizabeth I, p. 167
Elizabeth, II, p. 200, 206
Embee, p. 229
Emerson, p. 281
Emmett, p. 233
Emperor, p. 159
Enfield, p. 34
England, p. 74
Epps, p. 238
Ernest, p. 209, 227
Ernst, p. 230
Ervin, p. 228
Esham, p. 301
Espey, p. 42
Etheredge, p. 70, 71, 72, 73, 80, 144, 160, 182, 195, 196
Eulter, p. 115, 162
Evans, p. 33, 34, 61, 166, 170, 179, 181, 183, 187, 188, 190, 191, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220–229, 232, 234, 236, 245, 246, 247, 248, 251, 300, 301, 320.
Everedge, p. 145
Ewing, p. 209
Ezzell, p. 49

F

Fairfield, p. 88
Faires, p. 91, 270
Fant, p. 27, 90, 92, 93, 97, 98
Farmer, p. 248
Farnsworth, p. 229
Farquhar, p. 48
Farrow, p. 145
Faubion, p. 320
Faut, p. 117
Favor, p. 217
Featherstonc, p. 242
Fenford, p. 72
Fenn, p. 73, 74
Fentress, p. 144, 147,
Ferebee, p. 61, 62, 72, 136, 137, 139, 158, 159
Ferguson, p. 32, 246, 262, 287
Ferrell, p. 25
Ferris, p. 252, 253
Fife, p. 148
Fike, p. 208
Fincastle, p. 74
Findley, p. 194
Fitzgerald, p. 238
Fitzgarrall, p. 143, 155
Fitzpatrick, p. 107
Fitzacary, p. 64
Flanagan, p. 143
Fleming, p. 203, 253
Fletcher, p. 208
Flippo, p. 211
Floyd, p. 306
Fly, p. 31, 46, 187
Ford, p. 97, 132, 179, 190, 236, 285, 286, 287
Forte, p. 101
Foster, p. 129, 131, 176, 285 287, 288, 289
Fosson, p. 133
Fountain, p. 126, 155
Fox, p. 167, 177
Foy, p. 312
Frank, p. 155
Franklin, p. 32, 50, 155, 266, 274
Franson, p. 232
Frazier, p. 229
Freeborn, p. 211
Freeman, p. 120
French, p. 293, 300, 302
Fry, p. 304
Fulgram, p. 151
Fulton, p. 304
Funk, p. 294

G

Galbraith, p. 295
Galloway, p. 287
Gantt, p. 43, 217
Garmon, p. 31, 43, 184
Gany, p. 133
Gardiner, p. 167, 168, 169
Garrard, p. 233
Garrett, p. 102, 106, 110, 116
Garrott, p. 117, 120, 121
Gaskin, p. 123, 130, 131
Gathright, p. 258
Gay, p. 212, 304, 305
Gayle, p. 11, 22, 27, 32, 47, 48, 49, 183, 192
Gayney, p. 133, 134
Gebbons, p. 181
Gentry, p. 29, 48
George, VI, p. 206
George, p. 281
Gholson, p. 262, 264, 282, 288
Gibbons, p. 238, 244
Gibson, p. 109
Giles, p. 151
Gillespie, p. 245
Gilliam, p. 306
Gills, p. 287
Gipson, p. 42
Giroux, p. 43
Gittery, p. 119, 134, 135, 136
Glasgow, p. 120
Gleason, p. 319
Glen, p. 294, 307
Glisson, p. 109, 112, 113
Godet, p. 256
Godfree, p. 144, 148, 149
Godfrey, p. 64, 126, 149, 160
Godley, p. 76
Goeth, p. 187
Golden, p. 174
Golding, p. 285
Good, p. 146, 147
Goode, p. 236, 253, 258, 287
Goodman, p. 39
Goodrich, p. 73, 74, 75, 151
Goodwin, p. 120, 123
Gookin, p. 124
Gooscott, p. 71
Gordon, p. 120, 121, 199, 223, 232
Gould, p. 189
Goulding, p. 213
Gourley, p. 229
Grace, p. 198, 199
Graham, p. 37, 119, 195
Grandbury, p. 136, 147, 158, 159, 163
Graves, p. 29, 144, 211
Gray, p. 93, 101, 127, 128

Grayham, p. 119
Green, p. 31, 32, 44, 48, 135, 150, 186, 230, 239, 310
Greene, p. 37
Greenwood, p. 149
Gregory, p. 14, 95, 116
Grey, p. 152
Grider, p. 231
Griffin, p. 173, 181, 285
Griffith, p. 49, 154, 223
Grimes, p. 97, 183, 189, 190, 209, 270
Grinto, p. 125, 154
Groyne, p. 203
Guerin, p. 257
Guy, p. 125, 128
Gwin, p. 18, 21, 146

H

Hadderton, p. 196
Hadley, p. 160
Hagin, p. 194
Hale, p. 81, 100
Hall, p. 94, 114, 117, 125, 126, 133, 149
Hallett, p. 193
Halliday, p. 145
Halstead, p. 71, 145
Hambleton, p. 269
Hamilton, p. 190, 245, 261, 269
Hammond, p. 208
Hampton, p. 145
Hanagin, p. 154
Hancock, p. 145
Hardeman, p. 311, 312
Hardin, p. 245
Hargrove, p. 76
Harlow, p. 42
Harmon, p. 174
Harper, p. 182, 196, 197, 235
Harrell, p. 29, 37, 109
Harris, p. 46, 74, 135, 136, 139, 140, 152, 157, 212, 275, 301
Harrison, p. 111, 147, 206, 267, 299
Hart, p. 178, 238, 261, 264, 266, 267, 273, 274, 279
Hartley, p. 40
Harvard, p. 132
Harvey, p. 301
Harwood, p. 175, 200
Hassell, p. 117
Hasztolnyik, p. 97
Hatfield, p. 40
Hattersley, p. 150, 154, 155
Hattin, p. 288
Hatton, p. 142
Haughey, p. 47
Hawes, p. 104
Hawkins, p. 106, 112, 126, 127, 128, 131, 132, 150, 159, 262, 287, 298
Haws, p. 281
Hawton, p. 133
Hayes, p. 125, 126, 127, 128, 131, 132, 150, 151
Haymic, p. 265, 271
Hays, p. 44, 304
Hazelrigg, p. 259
Heard, p. 21, 27, 252, 265, 271, 276, 277
Heath, p. 114
Hebdon, p. 149
Hedge, p. 133, 295, 304
Heffron, p. 38
Heilman, p. 44
Henderson, p. 224
Hendrix, p. 49
Henry III, p. 206
Henry VIII, p. 167
Herms, p. 45
Herndon, p. 104
Herring, p. 87
Hewaepuin, p. 256
Hicks, p. 212
Hickman, p. 264, 267, 286, 289
Higgins, p. 73
Higginson, p. 202, 206
Hilbun, p. 29
Hilburn, p. 34
Hill, p. 23, 28, 89, 104, 128, 145 146, 155, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 289, 300
Hillard, p. 153
Hison, p. 294, 307
Hite, p. 230, 231, 233, 303
Hobbs, p. 87
Hoeaday, p. 267
Hodge, p. 34, 57, 58, 158
Hodges, p. 15, 16, 21, 22, 23, 26, 27,51–97, 99, 100, 101, 120, 122, 136, 151, 159, 161, 187, 252, 253, 265, 271, 276, 278, 279, 289, 290
Hodgeson, p. 78
Hodson, p. 269
Hogan, p. 81, 83
Hoge, p. 197, 255
Hogg, p. 233
Holcomb, p. 196
Halcott, p. 239
Holden, p. 138, 139, 140
Holder, p. 262
Holiman, p. 210
Hollis, p. 137
Holland, p. 139, 140
Holloway, p. 288
Hollowell, p. 59
Holm, p. 213
Holmes, p. 122–134, 150, 159, 233
Holmgreen, p. 45
Holt, p. 197, 284
Holter, p. 47
Holzman, p. 88
Hopkins, p. 32
Horne, p. 80
Horton, p. 128, 133, 134
Houston, p. 38, 214, 217, 248
Howard, p. 81, 82, 94, 128, 135, 136, 152, 155, 236
Howell, p. 36, 102, 107, 114, 132
Hubble, p. 46
Hubbs, p. 250
Hudson, p. 31, 42, 184, 186
Huffstutler, p. 39
Hughes, p. 86
Huitt, p. 46
Hull, p. 95
Hunnieutt, p. 196
Hunt, p. 265
Hurt, p. 279, 284, 287, 288
Hutchinson, p. 194
Hyatt, p. 316
Hyter, p. 120

I

Isbell, p. 42
Ingram, p. 294
Ironmonger, p. 200, 203
Irvin, p. 269
Ispolk, p. 155
Ives, p. 163
Ivy, p. 96, 114, 143, 154

J

Jackson, p. 101, 140, 181, 183, 188, 189, 190, 195, 209, 244, 248, 262, 274, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 301
Jahn, p. 40
James, p. 65, 104
Jameson, p. 181
Jarratt, p. 84
Jarvis, p. 123, 126, 160
Jasper, p. 160
Jeffers, p. 149, 150
Jefferson, p. 217, 218, 237, 239, 243
Jenkins, p. 34, 96, 180, 229, 259
Jennings, p. 114, 200
Jeremy, p. 121, 125
Jett, p. 202
Johns, p. 262, 287, 299
Johnson, p. 29, 93, 130, 142, 145, 150, 154, 192, 204, 212, 244, 277
Jolive, p. 63
Jolly, p. 63
Jones, p. 56, 98, 112, 116, 137, 152, 154, 158, 159, 219, 225, 275, 287
Jordan, p. 39, 54, 60, 62, 74, 119, 152
Joyce, p. 142, 148
Joyes, p. 255

K

Karlsborough, p. 284
Kearne, p. 242
Keaton, p. 61, 62, 66
Keeling, p. 121, 124, 126, 130, 154, 156
Kegley, p. 223
Kelly, p. 47
Kemp, p. 114, 147, 149
Kenedy, p. 122
Kenley, p. 299
Kenneday, p. 313
Kennedy, p. 24, 213, 223
Kennon, p. 189, 238, 239, 240, 276, 277
Kent, p. 300
Kerney, p. 273
Kerr, p. 28
Ketchem, p. 43
Kevine, p. 223
Key, p. 189
Kiibler, p. 193
Kilpin, p. 281, 283
King, p. 31, 43, 44, 117, 146, 161, 186, 217, 222, 229, 245, 248, 304
Kinsey, p. 33
Kirbie, p. 105, 108

Kirkland, p. 94, 289
Kirle, p. 145
Kolb, p. 217
Kolley, p. 154
Knibe, p. 258
Knott, p. 140
Knox, p. 112, 113, 115
Knutson, p. 195
Krause, p. 32
Kuller, p. 43

L

Lacy, p. 95
Ladd, p. 130
LaGrande, p. 254, 262
Lalsprech, p. 229
Lambert, p. 123, 125, 127, 131, 149, 159
Lancaster, p. 184, 193
Land, p. 123
Landa, p. 23, 28
Lane, p. 24, 33, 84, 100, 101, 148, 266, 314, 317
Langford, p. 104, 208
Langley, p. 142, 147
Langworth, p. 122, 123
Lanier, p. 149
Lankes, p. 40
Lansdell, p. 267, 268
Lassiter, p. 117
Laughlin, p. 297
Laurence, p. 47
Lawrence, p. 48, 121, 128, 137, 145, 232, 233, 303
Lawson, p. 124, 146, 156, 275
Lawton, p. 100, 136
Leake, p. 71
Leather, p. 32
Lee, p. 74, 111, 116, 117,152, 198, 200, 206
Lemoinc, p. 188
Leonard, p. 285
Lesesne, p. 27
Lewelling, p. 55
Lewis, p. 45, 104, 105, 119, 135, 136, 137, 150, 152, 155, 196, 232, 233, 253
Ligon, p. 179, 237
Lilly, p. 28, 33
Linderlin, p. 39
Lindsay, p. 246, 283, 284
Ling, p. 49
Linton, p. 143, 154
Little, p. 151
Liverman, p. 198
Lloyd, p. 150
Loche, p. 44
Lockett, p. 262
Lockhart, p. 313
Long, p. 104, 159, 295, 298
Longinon, p. 43
Longoria, p. 34
Looney, p. 209, 221, 223, 227, 228, 229, 245
Lopez, p. 117
Lopham, p. 129, 131
Louis, p. 40
Love, p. 35, 260
Lovett, p. 123, 126, 129, 130, 131, 140, 143, 154, 155
Lowry, p. 103, 104, 105, 131, 280, 294
Loyd, p. 126, 127, 154, 156, 157, 158, 159
Ludlow, p. 203
Ludwell, p. 203
Lupo, p. 73, 75
Luty, p. 28

M

Macklin, p. 191
Maddora, p. 152
Madison, p. 262
Makennay, p. 280, 281
Makinney, p. 281
Malbone, p. 63, 64, 126, 153, 154
Mallory, p. 74
Malone, p. 271
Mamox, p. 138
Man, p. 239, 240
Manake, p. 146
Manning, p. 53, 55, 56, 62, 72, 77, 110, 218
Mansil, p. 211
Mantooth, p. 193
March, p. 269
Marion, p. 310, 313
Marks, p. 163
Marlow, p. 211
Marriner, p. 74
Marsden, p. 94
Marsh, p. 300
Marshall, p. 30
Marthiljohn, p. 49
Martin, p. 122–126, 130, 140, 154, 161, 162, 163, 183, 192, 195
Mason, p. 57, 133, 134
Mathews, p. 41, 95, 200, 201, 206
Mathias, p. 70, 71, 72, 143, 145
Matthew, p. 166
Mauldin, p. 29, 33
Mauzey, p. 295, 304
Maxwell, p. 249
May, p. 104, 280, 281
Mayo, p. 241
Mease, p. 306
Measle, p. 116
Medley, p. 30, 42, 184
Meek, p. 221
Melzrich, p. 265, 272
Mendenhall, p. 265, 272
Menefee, p. 19–23, 27, 28, 29, 32, 35, 36, 37, 44, 88, 89, 91, 276, 292, 318, 321
Mercer, p. 27, 28, 32, 36, 37, 143, 228, 292, 318, 321
Merchant, p. 148
Merck, p. 47
Merideth, p. 78
Meriweather, p. 27, 93
Merriman, p. 46
Merriweather, p. 276
Mesho, p. 77
Michaux, p. 254–258
Micheau, p. 187
Micheaux, p. 252, 253, 254, 260
Middlebrook, p. 24, 28
Miller, p. 49, 58, 65, 74, 148, 160, 179, 235, 281, 298
Millicent, p. 116
Milwee, p. 247
Ming, p. 115
Minor, p. 196, 267
Minter, p. 198
Mitchell, p. 92, 95, 148, 160, 179, 223, 262
Mixon, p. 294
Mizell, p. 116, 118
Moeller, p. 189
Montgomery, p. 173, 226, 246 248, 292, 293, 300, 302, 306, 315
Moorehead, p. 235
Moore, p. 75, 93, 108, 110, 111, 145, 154, 206, 210, 217, 223, 297, 299, 306
More, p. 58
Morgan, p. 88, 170, 177, 179, 180, 224, 254
Morris, p. 94, (see Moss) 294, 307
Morrison, p. 45, 218, 320
Morrow, p. 143, 188
Morry, (Murray) p. 249
Morse, (Moss, Morris) p. 150, 153, 154, 155
Moseley, p. 124, 140, 147
Mosley, p. 253
Moss, (Morse, Morris), p. 174, 175, 181
Morton, p. 20, 21, 22, 51, 55, 85, 88, 89, 91, 187, 252–276, 278, 279, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290
Mounger, p. 151
Mowry, p. 224
Moy, p. 101, 110, 112, 125, 126, 154, 155
Mullers, p. 210
Muney, p. 191
Munger, p. 151
Murden, p. 146, 147
Murford, p. 236
Murphry (Murray) p. 142, 145
Murphy, p. 234
Murrah, p. 142
Murray, p. 101, 108, 109, 111, 114, 142–149, 162, 213, 297

Mc—MACK

McCargo, p. 260, 268
McCleland, p. 107
(Mackeland), p. 107
McClelen, p. 294
(Macklalan), p. 118, 119
McClung, p. 39
McClure, p. 194
McColloch, p. 189, 276
McConnell, p. 224
McCorcle, p. 304, 305, 308, 311, 312
McCormick, p. 298, 299
McCoy (Macoy), p. 109, 145, 146, (Maccoy)p. 143
McCullery, p. 276
McDaniel, p. 18, 21
(Mackdaniel), p. 108, 109,
McDerma, p. 25
McDonald, p. 20, 271
McDonnell, p. 198
McDougal, p. 311
McDowell, p. 30, 32, 39
McFarlan, p. 75
McFarland, p. 224
McFarren, p. 223

McFatter, p. 183, 191,
McFeetus, p. 305
McFerrin, p. 219, 228
McFeters, p. 304
McGee, p. 311
McGomerie, p. 223
McGovney, p. 298, 299
McGowan, p. 298
McGrath, p. 277
McIntire, p. 36, 93, 319
McKamie, p. 105
McKay, p. 230
McKeefer, p. 45
McKendree, p. 266
(Mackinder) p. 178
McKinney, p. 94
(Makinney) p. 281
(Makennay) p. 280, 281
McKoy, p. 108
(Macoy) p. 108
McLendon (Macklendon), p. 110, 117
McLeod, p. 216, 311
McLauchlan, p. 193
McManus, p. 35
McMillian, p. 39
McMenemy, p. 97
McNalley, p. 28, 37
MacKnary, p. 160
McNeeley, p. 218
McNeill, p. 95, 223
McPhearson, p. 180, 189
McVidar, p. 115
McWilliams p. 196
McQuiller, p. 315

N

Napier, p. 28
Nash, p. 55, 72
Neall, p. 283
Neel, p. 195, 196
Neeley, p. 223
Nelms, p. 145
Nelson, p. 60, 179, 180, 219, 299
Nemon, p. 135
Neville, p. 206
Newland, p. 294
Newman, p. 43, 136, 145, 148, 150, 160
Newton, p. 87, 153
Nichols, p. 45, 143–149, 159, 162
Nicholson, p. 144, 145, 146, 149
Nixon, p. 97
Noble, p. 106–110, 302
Nolen, p. 209, 214, 218, 227, 231
Norcott, p. 72
Normanton, p. 122
Norment, p. 13
Norsworthy, p. 151
Northington, 276
Norton, p. 34
Nowakawski, p. 41
Nutt, p. 306

O

Oakham, p. 124
Oberzor, p. 150, 153, 154
O'Brien, p. 212
O'Connell, p. 31, 43, 184
Offill, p. 284
Ogden, p. 44
Ogburn, p. 73
O'Harrow, p. 46
Okeham, p. 158
Olephant, p. 124
Olivant, p. 127, 129
Orchard, p. 94
Orsack, p. 197
Osborn, p. 38, 157
Osburne, p. 73, 161
Osmond, p. 225
O'Sheal, p. 142
Ott, p. 232
Overstreet, p. 106, 107, 108, 110, 112
Owen, p. 52, 55, 159, 262, 264, 265, 270, 272, 275, 276, 289

P

Pace, p. 102
Page, p. 54, 201
Paige, p. 224
Palmer, p. 172, 176, 177, 235, 261, 266, 275
Pardoe, p. 150
Parfit, p. 166, 210
Paris, p. 224
Parker, p. 75, 86, 118, 120, 126, 147, 238, 288
Parkinson, p. 235
Parks, p. 274
Parrott, p. 82
Parris, p. 117, 133, 275
Parrish, p. 265, 273
Parson, p. 315
Parsons, p. 152
Patrick, p. 174, 175, 176
Patten, p. 265, 272
Patton, p. 27, 93, 149
Paul, (Pal) p. 245
Payne, p. 244, 253
Payton, p. 142
Peace, p. 184, 193, 194
Pearce, p. 140, 284
Pearson, p. 285
Peary, p. 39
Peck, p. 23, 27, 89, 92, 93, 96
Peddicord, (Petticord) p. 264
Pegler, p. 25
Pender, p. 101
Pendleton, p. 279, 282
Percy, p. 200
Perkins, p. 261, 269, 318
Perry, p. 87, 155, 157, 160
Peters, p. 128, 129, 135, 153
Peterson, p. 38
Pettus, p. 92
Petty, p. 261, 269
Pew, p. 148
Philpott, p. 155
Phillips, p. 101, 102, 116
Phipps, p. 96
Pickens, p. 310
Pierce, p. 196
Pighting, p. 153
Pilkerton, p. 75
Pinner, p. 135
Piper, p. 159
Pitt, p. 111, 151
Pittman, p. 101, 102, 212
Plover, p. 279
Plum, p. 28
Plumb, p. 33
Pogue, p. 43
Poole, p. 114, 125, 126, 150, 153
Pope, p. 51, 73, 82, 83, 105
Portecn, p. 58
Porteus, p. 200, 206
Porter, p. 114, 130, 148, 149, 153, 154
Portlock, p. 61, 66, 70, 71, 72, 73
Powell, p. 61, 123, 126, 135, 137, 147, 158, 159, 161, 162, 172, 174, 176, 177, 178, 180, 181, 283
Power, p. 59
Powers, p. 311, 312
Prescott, p. 108, 142, 149, 156
Presson, p. 174, 175
Preston, p. 108, 109, 142, 156
Price, p. 44, 64, 97, 108, 112, 141, 142, 160, 161, 195, 229, 267, 268
Pride, p. 20, 179, 208, 213, 214, 216, 217, 218, 234–251.
Pridgen, p. 193
Prindle, p. 235
Prine, p. 26
Pritchett, p. 200, 203
Proctor, p. 152
Pryor, p. 200, 206
Puckett, p. 237
Puig, p. 94
Purdy, p. 152
Puster, p. 29, 35
Pyland, p. 149
Pyles, p. 275

Q

Quantock, p. 152
Quin, p. 252, 253, 254, 258, 259

R

Ragland, p. 241
Ramsay, p. 273, 274, 276, 298, 304, 305, 306
Ramsey, p. 92, 97, 98
Randall, p. 250
Randolph, p. 64, 236, 238, 239, 242, 243, 257, 258
Ransom, p. 290
Rascoe, p. 47
Rash, p. 216
Ravens, p. 148
Ravings, p. 113, 143, 148
Rawlings, p. 113, 175
Ray, p. 45, 111, 112, 117, 292, 293, 294, 299, 300, 301, 302, 307, 312, 313
Rayley, p. 154, 155
Raynor, p. 151
Reaves, p. 193, 197
Redd, p. 33, 96
Reddeth, p. 151
Reed, p. 298
Reeves, p. 87
Reins, p. 128, 131, 136, 155
Render, p. 104
Renfro, p. 210
Renshaw, p. 219
Reynolds, p. 150, 173, 175
Rhea, p. 295
Rhodes, p. 102, 109, 117

Rice, p. 207, 218, 225, 287, 300, 301
Richards, p. 150
Richardson, p. 123, 151, 154, 299, 310, 314, 315
Richey, p. 48, 285
Richie, p. 311
Ricker, p. 97
Ridley, p. 74
Rigglesworth, p. 132
Rinker, p. 195
Ringgold, p. 50
Rittenhouse, p. 231
Rives, p. 93
Roberts, p. 95, 138, 158, 161, 235
Robertson, p. 218
Robbins, p. 42
Robins, p. 279
Robinson, p. 126, 223, 226, 227, 229, 235, 300, 310, 312, 313
Rochester, p. 170
Rochet, p. 253, 255, 256
Roe, p. 154
Roell, p. 41
Rogers, p. 26, 27, 30, 91, 132, 133 143, 145, 164–206, 208, 209, 210, 227, 251, 262, 273, 294
Rogge, p. 213
Rollerman, p. 94
Romberg, p. 40
Roosevelt, p. 292
Roundtree, p. 118, 120
Rounsaville, p. 33, 34
Rouse, p. 39, 59
Royals, p. 253
Rucker, p. 282, 284, 286
Rugeley, p. 33
Rupp, p. 296
Russell, p. 93, 123, 125, 128, 147 153, 160, 161, 163, 236, 239, 240
Rutledge, p. 219
Ryan, p. 97
Ryman, p. 192

S

Salter, p. 147, 266, 271
Sample, p. 21
Sanders, p. 266, 319
Saner, p. 146
Saveon, p. 146
Sayers, p. 144, 156, 223, 302, 315
Scallorn, p. 218
Scope, p. 206
Scott, p. 43, 74, 111, 161, 162, 199
Schmuck, p. 277
Seay, p. 289
Seger, p. 95
Seigler, p. 195
Serafino, p. 39
Serginon, p. 255
Sessons, p. 112
Seward, p. 74
Sewell, p. 132, 134
Severin, p. 252, 254, 256
Sevier, p. 219, 220, 221, 229, 245
Shairs, p. 201
Sharwood, p. 119
Shaw, p. 44
Shelby, p. 262
Sheldon, p. 174
Shellock, p. 150
Shelton, p. 19, 266
Shepard, p. 57, 142, 244
Sherewood, p. 119, 152
Sherman, p. 87, 165
Shiffer, p. 197
Ship, p. 282
Shirley, p. 45, 114, 143, 149, 152
Shoemate, p. 48
Shoffner, p. 213
Shofner, p. 211
Sholders, p. 135
Shook, p. 35
Shows, p. 49
Shumate, p. 193
Shustleff, p. 196
Sibsey, p. 127
Sidney, p. 123, 128
Sieger, p. 196
Siegraves, p. 161
Sikes, p. 78
Silvester, p. 111
Simmonds, p. 83, 116, 144, 147, 160, 204, 276
Simons, p. 32, 47, 48, 87, 115
Simpson, p. 139
Sivil, p. 152, 155
Skidmore, p. 210
Skinner, p. 102
Slade, p. 160
Slingsby, p. 284
Sloane, p. 264
Smith, p. 18, 21, 23, 25, 43, 64, 88, 92, 94, 106, 112, 113, 123, 129, 135, 136, 141, 142, 146, 148, 153, 155–163, 175, 181, 192, 197, 199, 200, 205, 206, 224, 225, 233, 236, 252, 253, 300
Smither, p. 128, 134, 135
Smithwick, p. 110, 112, 116, 117, 118
Smyth, p. 45, 126, 130
Snail, p. 128, 152
Sneed, p. 281
Snoddy, p. 220
Snowden, p. 114, 115, 116
Soderburg, p. 76, 108, 227
Sollace, p. 200
Solly, p. 114, 141, 148, 149, 152, 153, 154,
Soule, p. 229
South, p. 92, 97
Southerland, p. 11, 13, 14, 15, 17, 98, 162
Southwell, p. 168, 170
Sowell, p. 194
Sparrow, p. 141, 157
Spatt, p. 224
Speller, p.116–119
Spencer, p. 184, 213, 262
Spier, p. 75
Spivee, p. 147
Spivey, p. 121, 141, 142, 146, 162
Spring, p. 132, 162
Spruell, p. 154, 241
Stafford, p. 63, 206
Stallings, p. 152
Stanchfield, p. 276
Stancliff, p. 38, 85, 257, 263
Standfield, p. 104
Standifer, p. 116, 198, 218, 245
Standing, p. 115, 146, 147
Stanley, p. 144, 145
Start, p. 301
Stasney, p. 217
Steen, p. 189, 194
Stell, p. 48
Stephens, p. 227, 228, 230–233, 241
Stephenson, p. 105, 223, 224
Sterling, p. 129, 130, 131
Stevens, p. 41, 223, 228
Stevenson, p. 223, 224
Stewart, p. 47
Stiball, p. 114, 115
Stoddard, p. 85
Stokeley, p. 67
Stokes, p. 146, 147, 201, 202, 304
Stone, p. 138, 140, 143, 157
Storm, p. 275
Stovall, p. 242, 249
Strain, p. 246
Strickland, p. 81
Stubblefield, p. 235
Stubbs, p. 49, 193, 212
Stuben, p. 222
Sturgeon, p. 308
Sublett, p. 269
Sullivan, p. 262, 271
Sumpter, p. 310, 313
Sunden, p. 193
Sutherland, p. 11, 15, 16–25, 27, 29, 30–37, 39, 40–47, 49, 52, 53, 85, 88–92, 96, 99, 162, 170, 181, 182, 184, 185, 186, 187, 194, 209, 233, 246, 248, 251, 252, 253, 262, 270, 271, 276, 290, 292, 320
Sutherlin, p. 11, 12, 15, 18, 19, 20, 25, 26
Sutton, p. 298
Swain, p. 111, 115, 116, 117, 154, 159
Swayne, p. 112
Swearinger, p. 224
Sweeney, p. 77, 92
Swidedski, p. 189
Syllman, p. 132

T

Tabb, p. 105, 204
Tabler, p. 311
Tacquard, p. 194
Talbot, p. 84
Taliaferro, p. 281
Tanner, p. 244, 259, 260, 261, 264, 266, 267, 268, 273, 275, 287, 288.
Tarant, p. 281
Tarbet, p. 246
Tarleton, p. 145
Tarrant, p. 281
Tart, p. 141, 142, 147, 159, 163
Tarut, p. 92, 97
Taylor, p. 25, 38, 55, 56, 85, 87, 88, 133, 176, 219, 221, 224, 225, 245, 261, 279, 282, 286
Templeton, p. 199
Terry, p. 248
Thelaball, p. 133
Thevathan, p. 144, 149
Thomas, p. 84, 102, 178, 285, 290

Thompson, p. 84, 118, 157, 197, 209, 210, 246, 289, 298, 299, 302–306
Thornton, p. 262, 283, 284
Thorogood, p. 122, 123, 126, 136
Thor, p. 46, 151
Throckmorton, p. 233
Thurman, p. 196
Thurston, p. 60, 124, 125, 130, 139, 146, 147
Tice, p. 111
Tippins, p. 33
Tilsley, p. 279
Timberlake, p. 241
Tinslie, p. 279
Tinsley, p. 259, 260, 262, 267, 268, 278–290
Todd, p. 203, 204, 206
Toland, p. 313
Tompkins, p. 177, 178
Toness, p. 40
Tooms, p. 282
Toole, p. 245
Tooley, p. 45
Tourley, p. 135
Townes, p. 319, 320
Towns, p. 36, 41, 239, 240, 250
Trantors, p. 113, 148
Travis, p. 292
Trembath, p. 44
Trent, p. 297
Trigg, p. 135
Trindle, p. 298
Truffel, p. 256
Trumble, p. 304
Tscudy, p. 39
Tucker, p. 105, 142, 157, 161
Turner, p. 84, 86, 93, 135, 176, 177, 288
Turney, p. 42
Turpin, p. 244, 287
Twilly, p. 204
Twinee, p. 14
Tye, p. 294, 307
Tyler, p. 87
Tyndale, p. 73, 166

U

Ullrich, p. 277
Ultree, p. 65
Unger, p. 194
Upchurch, p. 50
Utley, p. 288

V

Van Heydt, p. 230
Van Liew, p. 198, 199
Van Marter, p. 50
Van Meter, p. 230
Vance, p. 304
Vaughn, p. 196, 197, 234, 241, 281, 287
Vawter, p. 284
Venable, p. 254, 255
Venoble, p. 255
Vernon, p. 282
Vest, p. 236
Vick, p. 191
Vickrey, p. 30, 41, 184
Vineyard, p. 212

W

Waddell, p. 287
Wade, p. 248, 260, 287
Wainscott, p. 189
Waite, p. 156, 162
Wakefield, p. 135, 139, 142, 146
Waldridge, p. 275
Walker, p. 60, 92, 96, 123, 205, 220, 240, 311
Wallace, p. 50, 72, 277
Waller, p. 194, 301
Wallis, p. 298, 312, 313
Walloth, p. 152
Walston, p. 153
Walton, p. 97, 311
Walthall, p. 235, 239, 240
Warburton, p. 115
Ward, p. 30, 51, 83, 84, 99–163, 183, 190, 191, 208, 210, 211, 213, 218, 231, 236, 279, (Worl–Ward) p. 150
Warden, p. 146, 147, 148
Ware, p. 14
Waring, p. 290
Warner, p. 200, 202, 203, 206
Warren, p. 65, 217, 228
Warrington, p. 72, 302
Washington, p. 42, 202, 206, 223, 228
Waterman, p. 156
Watkins, p. 76, 104, 127, 140, 143, 146, 149, 150, 204, 235, 240, 254, 260, 297
Watts, p. 104, 189, 295
Wayborne, p. 135
Wayman, p. 105
Webb, p. 73, 117, 262, 264, 265, 273, 287, 290, 299
Webber, p. 38, 286
Weber, p. 40
Weeden, p. 201
Wells, p. 26, 30, 39, 91, 228, 229, 239, 240, 265, 319
West, p. 32
Westerman, p. 191
Westmorland, p. 276
Wharton, p. 276
Whisenant, p. 213
Whitaker, p. 80, 81
White, p. 26, 28, 29, 30, 32, 37, 38, 39, 56, 57, 64, 65, 72, 91, 97, 112, 115, 116, 117, 119, 120, 154, 157, 179, 182, 185, 216, 217, 229, 285.
Whitefield, p. 113
Whitehead, p. 105, 148
Whitehurst, p. 61, 70, 71, 72 113, 143, 145, 148, 154
Whitesel, p. 213
Whitley, p. 151
Whitlock, p. 104
Whitson, p. 182
Whitten, p. 192
Whitworth, p. 13
Whyte, p. 53
Wickett, p. 114
Wicklund, p. 189
Wicliff, p. 148
Wiese, p. 50
Wiggons, p. 75
Wilcox, p. 28, 37
Wilder, p. 115, 140, 142
Wiley, p. 102, 112, 115, 117, 119, 159
Wilkerson, p. 86, 115, 182, 198
Wilkins, p. 64, 66, 115
Willboro, p. 144
Williams, p. 38, 41, 58, 75, 100, 145, 146, 151, 158, 159, 162, 163, 172, 216, 217, 219, 227, 229, 230, 232, 273, 275, 285, 295, 301, 316
Williamson, p. 20, 26, 115, 146, 147, 211
Willis, p. 56, 156
Willoughby, p. 56, 57, 123
Willson, p. 151
Wilson, p. 64, 101, 102, 103, 146, 151, 163, 304
Winchester, p. 169
Windham, p. 123, 129
Windrow, p. 320
Wingo, p. 288
Winn, p. 31, 47, 187
Wisehart, p. 211
Witt, p. 181, 183, 191, 208, 209
Woard, p. 151
Wood, p. 34, 42, 120, 211, 236, 239, 284
Woodgate, p. 301
Woodhouse, p. 125, 129, 150, 154
Woodroofe, p. 169, 170
Woodson, p. 252, 253, 254, 255, 258
Woodward, p. 87
Woolsey, p. 247, 249, 250
Wooten, p. 100
Worcester, p. 167
Word, p. 27, 90, 93
Wordley, p. 160
Workman, p. 114, 124–128, 131, 135, 139, 140, 150, 153
Worl (Ward), p. 150
Wormick, p. 84
Wortham, p. 152
Wragg, p. 272
Wrenn, p. 152
Wright, p. 39, 48, 72, 142, 159, 172, 173, 175, 289
Wrighting, p. 142
Wyatt, p. 47, 72, 198
Wycherley, p. 275
Wyly, p. 297
Wynn, p. 143, 151, 155
Wynnsford, p. 123

X

Y

Yantis, p. 93
Yeates, p. 93, 294
York, p. 92
Young, p. 160, 196, 260, 277
Yturria, p. 34

Z

Zackery, p. 280, 281
Zane, p. 233

INDEX

PART II

Names of Brides

A

Abbott, p. 212
Abernathy, p. 28
Ackiss, p. 114, 149
Acree, p. 314, 318
Adams, p. 140
Adenstone, p. 165, 170, 171, 173
Aldridge, p. 110
Aleman, p. 35
Alexander, p. 312
Allen, p. 33, 242–244, 249, 250
Anders, p. 49
Anderson, p. 29, 33, 36, 41, 42, 43, 98, 188, 235, 236, 241, 248, 253, 258, 260, 262, 319
Andrews, p. 97, 172
Angel, p. 269
Angell, p.97
Answell, p. 111
Applin, p. 199
Archabaud, p. 257
Arline, p. 121
Arnim, p. 47
Arnold, p. 189
Arrington, p. 26
Asbeck, p. 213, 214
Ashall, p. 125–128, 153
Ashley, p. 71, 273
Atkinson, p. 181, 183, 192, 209
Austin, p. 16, 116

B

Babcock, p. 181, 184, 193, 209
Baggett, p. 212
Baily, p. 16, 111
Baker, p. 87, 210
Ball, p. 96, 275
Ballard, p. 197
Ballentine, p. 54, 65
Balzar, p. 38
Bandy, p. 194
Bankhead, p. 27, 32, 48
Banks, p. 124
Barber, p. 96
Barlow, p. 311
Barnard, p. 200, 201, 203, 204,
Barnett, p. 33
Barnsground, p. 148
Barrow, p. 126
Bartley, p. 277
Bass, p. 316, 317
Bateman, p. 127
Baxter, p. 224
Beard, p. 276
Bearden, p. 188
Beasley, p. 40
Beauciel, p. 256
Beaupre, p. 97
Beck, p. 146
Bell, p. 27, 92, 93, 96, 319
Bennett, p. 136, 137, 211
Bennison, p. 197
Bernard, p. 164, 176, 177, 178, 199, 202, 204, 205, 206
Berry, p. 46
Betts, p. 49
Beville, p. 241, 243
Beyette, p. 94, 207, 215, 216
Bigler, p. 37
Bikker, p. 190
Bilbo, p. 45
Billups, p. 37
Black, p. 45, 189
Blackburn, p. 210
Blake, p. 31, 187
Blankenship, p. 266
Bloomington, p. 184, 193
Blount, p. 111, 156
Blunt, p. 195
Bodenam, p. 130
Bollette, p. 33
Bondeaux, p. 93
Bonney, p. 155
Bonnot, p. 42
Bouling, p. 137
Bounds, p. 35
Boush, p. 58
Bowes, - Lyons, p. 206
Bowles, p. 162
Bowling, p. 119, 135, 137, 140
Bowman, p. 96, 126, 233
Boyd, p. 195
Bradley, p. 212, 248
Bragdon, p. 48
Brakes, p. 127, 128
Branch, p. 49, 74
Brand, p. 207, 214, 247, 249,
Brasher, p. 43, 196
Brauer, p. 95
Bray, p. 124
Brewer, p. 189
Bridger, p. 127
Briggs, p. 233, 241
Brizendine, p. 183, 190, 208, 211
Brooks, p. 33, 229
Brown, p. 36, 162, 184, 192, 233, 319
Bruce, p. 12
Bryan, p. 158, 195
Bryant, p. 98
Burgess, p. 63, 64
Burnham, p. 63
Burns, p. 316, 319
Burnsides, p. 45
Burruss, p. 112, 123, 125, 126, 129, 130, 149
Burton, p. 238, 242, 243, 244, 249, 266
Burwell, p. 202, 234, 242,, 243, 244, 246, 248
Bush, p. 35, 216, 233
Butler, p. 127, 128, 212, 283
Butterfras, p. 213
Buttry, p. 95
Byrne, p. 191

C

Calhoun, p. 95
Campbell, p. 36
Cannon, p. 97
Capus, p. 320
Carleton, p. 118, 212
Carr, p. 166
Carrell, p. 32
Carter, p. 206
Cary, p. 87, 88
Casey, p. 97
Catherill, p. 156,
Caulison, p. 208
Chambers, p. 262
Chambler, p. 50
Chamblis, p. 198
Champernowne, p. 124
Champion, p. 121
Chapman, p.
Charlot, p. 257
Cheney, p. 39
Chew, p. 299
Childs, p. 14
Chisman, p. 176
Christiansen, p. 196
Christy, p. 262, 273, 290
Church, p. 144, 148, 149
Clark, p. 39, 115
Clay, p. 30, 262
Clement, p. 87, 158, 276
Clemens, p. 44
Clemmer, p. 39
Clopton, p. 180
Cocke, p. 252, 253
Coghill, p. 284
Cole, p. 275
Colley, p. 48
Collins, p. 97
Compton, p. 87
Condon, p. 211
Connally, p. 95
Converse, p. 92
Conway, p. 20, 25
Cook, p. 277
Cooper, p. 197, 266, 274, 275
Corderoy, p. 200, 201, 203, 206
Cornish, p. 153, 154
Covington, p. 236
Cowlishaw, p. 183, 190, 211
Cox, p. 48
Craig, p. 32, 265
Craighead, p. 28, 33, 308
Crawford, p. 31, 43, 181, 186
Creech, p. 34
Crenshaw, p. 32, 48
Crews, p. 38
Crockett, p. 31, 36, 43, 45, 186, 294, 297–307, 312, 313–320
Cruze, p. 30
Crumlin, p. 194
Cunningham, p. 44
Cusack, p. 85
Cussack, p. 84, 86, 87

D

Dale, p. 44
Dance, p. 178, 238
Dane, p. 45
Daniels, p. 102, 103, 112
Dart, p. 24, 28
Daughtery, p. 93
Dau phin, p. 43
Davenport, p. 31, 45, 46, 49, 187
Davie, p. 291, 308, 310–313
Davis, p. 15, 48, 49, 74, 88, 93, 125, 126, 131, 198, 232, 320
Deaver, p. 23
DeMar, p. 41
Denham, p. 34
Depriest, p. 11, 15, 16, 18
de Saix, p. 293
DeSerginon, p. 257
DeVary, p. 257
DeVigne, p. 303
de Weyden, p. 167
Dickie, p. 180, 181, 198, 199,
Dickins, p. 99, 102–105,
Dickson, p. 20, 24, 29, 35
Diggs, p. 33
Dill, p. 27, 47
Dittfurth, p. 193
Dix, p. 24, 29, 35
Dixon, p. 20, 197
Doakes, p. 233
Dolesh, p. 189
Dolson, p. 217
Donalson, p. 42
Donathan, p. 320
Douglas, p. 102, 269
Dowden, p. 211
Dunn, p. 192

E

Eads, p. 35
Eagles, p. 43
Earnest, p. 207, 209, 214, 215, 218–224, 227–229
Eastwood, p. 120
Ecton, p. 274
Edwards, p. 24
Egg, p. 39
Eggling, p. 33
Elam, p. 26
Ellenburg, p. 34
Ellis, p. 135, 137, 139
Embee, p. 229
Emerson, p. 212
Ernest, p. 209, 227
Espey, p. 42
Estes, p. 45, 88
Estill, p. 192
Etheredge, p. 70, 71, 72, 195, 196
Eulter, p. 115
Evans, p. 26, 30, 31, 91, 118, 164, 179, 181, 183, 190–193, 208–227
Ewing, p. 209
Ezzell, p. 32, 49

F

Fain, p. 228
Faires, p. 17
Fant, p. 92, 97
Farley, p. 31, 186
Faubion, p. 320
Faukner, p. 192
Favor, p. 217
Featherston, p. 242, 243
Fendall, p. 13, 14
Ferebee, p. 51, 61, 62
Ferrell, p. 25
Ferris, p. 252, 253
Findley, p. 194
Firebaugh, p. 47
Fischer, p. 230
Fisher, p. 34, 197
Flenkin, p. 194
Fletcher, p. 190, 208, 210, 214
Fly, p. 47
Ford, p. 97, 189
Foster, p. 288
Fowden, p. 36, 319
Fowler, p. 242, 244
Fox, p. 32, 49, 50
Franklin, p. 210, 243, 266, 274
Freeborn, p. 211
French, p. 214

G

Gage, p. 216
Gaines, p. 212
Gallant, p. 192
Ganey, p. 133
Garrard, p. 233
Garrett, p. 102, 117
Gay, p. 42, 292
Gayle, p. 32, 47–49, 95, 192, 193
Gayney, p. 134
Gclein, p. 31, 45, 187
George, p. 275
Gibson, p. 247, 248
Gittery, p. 135
Godet, p. 255, 256
Godfree, p. 144, 145
Godfrey, p. 64
Goeth, p. 31, 45
Godin, p. 255, 256
Golden, p. 174
Good, p. 43
Goodard, p. 87
Goodman, p. 97
Goodson, p. 313
Gookin, p. 124
Golding, p. 285
Gorham, p. 27
Gorman, p. 93
Graham, p. 28, 36
Gratz, p. 273
Gray, p. 93
Green p. 151
Greenwelge, p. 194
Griffin, p. 199, 208
Griffith, p. 184, 193
Grimes, p. 183, 188, 189, 190, 209
Gunnie, p. 97
Guthrie, p. 190, 208, 210, 213, 214
Gwin, p. 18

H

Haebie, p. 47
Haimson, p. 194
Hale, p. 45
Halliday, p. 145
Halstead, p. 70, 71
Haltham, p. 197
Hamilton, p. 195
Hampton, p. 145
Hardcastle, p. 183
Hardeman, p. 312
Hardy, p. 164, 179, 181, 225
Harlan, p. 182, 194
Harms, p. 213
Haroldson, p. 217
Harper, p. 38, 196, 197, 297
Harrell, p. 38
Harris, p. 139
Harrison, p. 41, 74, 229
Hart, p. 201, 279, 311
Hartley, p. 40
Harvey, p. 192
Hassell, p. 117
Hayes, p. 99, 128, 131, 132, 150, 153
Haynes, p. 212
Hays, p. 223, 224
Hawkins, p. 126, 127, 129, 131, 159 293, 307
Hazel, p. 275
Hazelwood, p. 206
Heard, p. 276, 277
Hedge, p. 295
Hefner, p. 195, 196
Heisler, p. 96
Henderson, p. 224
Hensley, p. 47
Henson, p. 41, 198
Henry, p. 20
Hernandez, p. 212
Hicks, p. 188
Hickson, p. 300
Higginson, p. 202–206
High, p. 242
Hill, p. 194, 237, 242, 243, 250, 316
Hite, p. 233
Hobbs, p. 87
Hodge, p. 57, 58
Hodges, p. 11, 22, 27, 37, 39, 40, 43, 45, 52, 60–97, 159, 253, 276.
Hodgeson, p. 51, 78, 81
Hodnett, p. 25
Holcott, p. 239
Holder, p. 218
Holliday, p. 275
Hollowell, p. 59
Holm, p. 213
Holmes, p. 99, 124–131, 153, 262
Horne, p. 80
Horton, p. 128
Houston, p. 248
Houton, p. 198
Howard, p. 131, 143
Howell, p. 102
Hudson, p. 42, 46
Huffman, p. 181
Hughes, p. 30, 258
Hull, p. 95
Hurt, p. 279
Hutchins, p. 217
Hutchinson, p. 194
Hutson, p. 217

I

Ivy, p. 96, 143, 154

J

Jackson, p. 49, 140, 188, 189, 190, 192, 208, 209, 227, 278, 280, 283, 284, 285
James, p. 233
Jarvis, p. 126
Jefferson, p. 191
Jenet, p. 197
Jenkins, p. 180, 208
Jett, p. 202
Johnson, p. 30, 32, 46, 48, 87, 208, 209, 212, 298
Jones, p. 26, 195, 211, 276
Jordan, p. 39, 47, 51, 60, 62

K

Kalayjan, p. 34, 96
Keahey, p. 194
Kearne, p. 242
Keeling, p. 124, 154
Keener, p. 25
Kellett, p. 23, 28
Kelly, p. 32
Kennedy, p. 20, 24, 33, 189
Kennon, p. 189, 277
Kent, p. 94
Ketchum, p. 94
Kessinger, p. 194
Key, p. 191
Killebrew, p. 82
Killmer, p. 26
Kimbell, p. 179
King, p. 229
Kinnebrough, p. 191
Kirby, p. 195
Kirkpatric, p. 46
Klent, p. 87
Knox, p. 93
Kolbe, p. 87
Koonce, p. 198
Koop, p. 48
Krause, p. 28, 37, 43
Krebser, p. 230
Kubernic, p. 40

L

Lancaster, p. 193
Landes, p. 313
Lane, p. 20, 24, 29, 33, 315, 316
Lanier, p. 115
Lamb, p. 51, 61, 67
Lawler, p. 87
Lawrence, p. 128, 231, 232275
Leather, p. 32, 48
Lee, p. 106, 107, 111, 189
LeGrande, p. 262
Lesage, p. 30, 38
Lewis, p. 31, 45, 105, 113, 187, 231
Lilly, p. 33
Linsey, p. 111
Lipscomb, p. 193
Livorice, p. 211
Locke, p. 248
Lockett, p. 262
Lockwood, p. 277
Loesch, p. 193
Logan, p. 276
Long, p. 104, 111,
Longoria, p. 34
Looney, p. 27, 32, 227, 229, 230
Lopham, p. 131
Lott, p. 90, 93, 196, 276
Lovett, p. 41, 130
Low, p. 196
Lowry, p. 104, 105
Loyless, p. 27, 90
Lubbers, p. 192
Lucas, p. 32, 49
Ludlow, p. 203
Lupo, p. 73, 75

M

Mach, p. 192
Macoy, p. 145, 146, 156
Mallory, p. 14
Malsch, p. 48
Mamox, p. 138
Manning, p. 51, 53, 55, 56, 57, 62, 66, 72
Marks, p. 163
Marshall, p. 26
Marthlijohn, p. 49
Martin, p. 124, 130, 132, 154, 156, 158, 189
Mason, p. 57, 123, 133, 134, 199
Mathcws, p. 42
Mathias, p. 70, 71, 72
Maxey, p. 31, 49, 186
Mayo, p. 96
Meadows, p. 275
Mealer, p. 211
Meisterhans, p. 230
Melzler, p. 96
Menefec, p. 11, 16, 20, 22, 26–30, 36, 37, 49, 51, 52, 84, 89, 90, 91, 93, 94, 97, 99, 179, 276, 292, 318, 321
Mercer, p. 23, 27, 32, 36, 49, 50, 291, 314, 317–321
Merchant, p. 191
Meredith, p. 275
Meriweather, p. 93
Mesler, p. 78
Meyer, p. 38
Michaelborough, p. 18, 20
Michaux, p. 254, 256
Micheaux, p. 252, 253, 254, 258
Middlebrook, p. 24, 29, 33,
Miles, p. 62
Miller, p. 38, 49, 192
Millwee, p. 246, 248
Mims, p. 16
Miner, p. 195, 196
Ming, p. 115
Mitchell, p. 210
Monkhouse, p. 191
Montgomery, p. 300
Montier, p. 183, 192
Moon, p. 45
Moore, p. 87, 206, 276, 297, 312
Moos, p. 43
Moratall, p. 60
More, p. 58
Morgan, p. 31, 47, 164, 178, 179, 180, 187, 273
Morrison, p. 45
Morse, p. 155
Morton, p. 21, 22, 23, 26, 31, 46, 51, 53, 55, 84, 85, 88, 90–94, 99, 187, 252–276, 278, 285, 289
Moseley, p. 124, 156
Moy, p. 125, 126, 154
Murray, p. 99, 108, 143, 144–146, 156
Muse, p. 258
Myers, p. 194

Mc

McAlister, p. 28
McCargo, p. 260, 266, 275
McClanahan, p. 308
McCombs, p. 96
McCorcle, p. 308, 311
McCrow, p. 88
McCutcheon, p. 210
McDaniel, p. 18
McDermott, p. 95
McDonald, p. 29, 248
McDonnell, p. 198
McDowell, p. 216, 217
McGee, p. 311
McGowan, p. 181, 183, 184, 191, 193, 209
McGrath, p. 276
McFatter, p. 191
McIntire, p. 319
McKenny, p. 199
McKinn, p. 96
McKinney, p. 92, 94, 95
McMichael, p. 26
McMenemy, p. 97
McNeil, p. 96
McNeill, p. 92, 95
McNutt, p. 26, 91
McPherson, p. 180

N

Nash, p. 55, 73
Neel, p. 195, 196
Nelson, p. 184, 194
Nehring, p. 87
Newberry, p. 29, 35
Newman, p. 140
Nichols, p. 33, 193
Nimmons, p. 298
Nolen, p. 42
Nolin, p. 261, 268
Norman, p. 20, 25
Norment, p. 11, 16
North, p. 228
Northington, p. 32, 276
Nutting, p. 174

O

Oakham, p. 124
O'Brien, p. 212
Ohlenburch, p. 195
Oliphant, p. 228
Olson, p. 198
O'Neal, p. 38
Osborne, p. 302
Overbey, p. 26
Overstreet, p. 312
Owen, p. 49, 55, 265, 272, 275, 312

P

Pace, p. 25

Pal, p. 224
Palmer, p. 211, 274, 275, 318
Parker, p. 38, 75, 114, 125, 126, 238
Passmore, p. 93
Patrick, p. 25, 175
Patterson, p. 30, 39
Patton, p. 93, 220
Payne, p. 197
Pearce, p. 140, 143
Peck, p. 27, 93, 96
Pendleton, p. 279, 280
Penn, p. 23, 28, 37
Perkins, p. 269
Perrin, p. 35
Perry, p. 35
Peterson, p. 38, 84
Petticord, p. 262, 273, 290
Pettus, p. 90, 92, 95, 276
Petty, p. 269
Phileaux, p. 34
Phillips, p. 33, 189, 217
Pink, p. 45
Pillon, p. 256
Pittman, p. 275
Plumb, p. 33
Pogue, p. 43
Polansky, p. 28
Polly, p. 33
Poole, p. 114, 125, 128
Poor, p. 125
Porter, p. 114, 115, 125, 148, 154
Portlock, p. 51, 61, 66, 69–73, 83
Powher, p. 125
Powell, p. 158, 162, 164, 180, 199
Power, p. 125, 211
Powers, p. 312
Pratt, p. 167
Price, p. 196
Pride, p. 20, 183, 190, 207, 208, 210, 214–218, 224, 234, 235, 239, 245–249
Provine, p. 32, 48
Pruitt, p. 220
Pryor, p. 32, 48, 200
Puckett, p. 95, 237, 238
Puig, p. 94
Purvis, p. 93, 97
Puster, p. 35

Q

Quin, p. 252, 253, 254, 258–263, 268, 274, 275, 288.

R

Ramsay, p. 97, 98, 274
Randall, p. 28, 36
Randolph, p. 64
Ransom, p. 278, 286
Ravening, p. 148
Ravens, p. 148, 149
Ravings, p. 113, 148, 149
Rawlings, p. 113, 149
Raynor, p. 151
Reade, p. 200
Reed, p. 191
Reeves, p. 189, 228, 239
Reins, p. 131, 155
Rhodes, p. 19, 20, 37
Rice, p. 16
Richards, p. 216
Richardson, p. 36, 55, 154, 291, 299, 310, 313–319
Richter, p. 187
Rickter, p. 31, 46, 50
Ridley, p. 74
Rider, p. 46
Ringgold, p. 50
Rinker, p. 196
Rittenhouse, p. 231
Rives, p. 93
Roberts, p. 92
Robertson, p. 20, 30, 40, 189
Robins, p. 196
Robison, p. 96
Robinson, p. 72, 86, 87, 184, 193, 300
Rochet, p. 187, 252–256
Rockey, p. 217
Rodriguez, p. 94
Rogers, p, 26, 27, 30, 32, 40, 43, 45, 49, 91, 132, 208, 210, 227, 262, 273, 290
Rois, p. 192
Rondeau, p. 256
Rose, p. 55
Rosseau, p. 37
Rounsaville, p. 34
Rucker, p. 278, 284, 285
Rude, p. 96
Rupp, p. 195
Russell, p. 159, 161
Ryan, p. 97

S

Salling, p. 194
Sanders, p. 11, 15, 284,, 319
Sanford, p. 201
Satterwhite, p. 174, 176
Saville, p. 141
Sayers, p. 144
Schafer, p. 94
Schmitt, p. 40
Scope, p. 206
Scott, p. 31, 44, 162, 186, 187
Scruggs, p. 216, 217
Sealy, p. 26, 28, 91
Seigler, p. 195
Serafino, p. 39
Severin, p. 254–256
Sewell, p. 132, 134
Shackelford, p. 233
Sharwarden, p. 133
Shelton, p. 11, 19, 21, 28, 32, 91, 252, 262, 270, 271, 289
Sheppard, p. 196
Sherewood, p. 133, 152
Sherrod, p. 194
Shirley, p. 31, 45, 187
Shoffner, p. 213
Shook, p. 35
Shows, p. 49
Simms, p. 233
Simmonds, p. 64, 160, 276,
Simonds, p. 47, 48
Simpson, p. 140
Sivil, p. 152, 155
Smith, p. 23, 28, 36, 40, 43, 64, 94, 97, 99, 123, 141, 149, 156, 158–162, 190, 195, 198, 200, 206, 238, 248, 253, 258
Snail, p. 128
Snyder, p. 92, 97
Solly, p. 114, 144, 149
South, p. 97
Southall, p. 86
Southwell, p. 95
Sousley, p. 275
Sowell, p. 132
Speller, p. 117, 119
Spencer, p. 195, 218, 262
Spivee (Spivey,) p. 147
Stafford, p. 162
Stahe, p. 31, 45, 187
Stamm, p. 230
Stanchfield, p. 276
Standifer, p. 198
Steen, p. 189
Stephens, p.
Stepherson, p. 227–233
Sterling, p. 131
Stevens, p. 215, 222, 228
Stevenson, p. 274
Stiball, p. 114, 115, 116
Stewart, p. 36, 47, 211
Stockley, p. 51, 61, 67
Stockwell, p. 87
Stokes, p. 201
Stone, p. 139
Stout, p. 37
Stovall, p. 31, 43, 186
Strain, p. 179
Sutherland (Sutherlin-Southerland) p. 13, 18, 20 21, 24, 29, 30–36, 38, 40–49, 53, 93, 96, 184–188, 253, 262, 266, 270, 271, 276, 278, 279, 289, 292, 319, 321.
Suttle, p. 202
Swain, p. 111–113
Swank, p. 35
Swayze, p. 198
Sweet, p. 39
Symonds, p. 258

T

Tabler, p. 311, 312
Tabor, p. 41
Tambasco, p. 40
Tanner, p. 261, 266, 267, 268, 273, 274
Tarleton, p. 253
Tarut, p. 97
Taylor, p. 56, 87, 88, 188, 279, 282
Templeton, p. 199
Terry, p. 84
Thames, p. 37
Thedford, p. 39
Thrift, p. 30, 39
Thompson, p. 23, 27, 98, 178, 179, 207, 209, 211, 227, 246, 262, 270, 302, 303
Tidcman, p. 40
Tinney, p. 212
Tinsley, p. 20, 252, 260, 262, 263, 267–270, 276, 278, 281, 282, 285–290
Todd, p. 206
Tony, p. 16
Toole, p. 245, 246
Tosh, p. 223
Townes, p. 320
Towns, p. 235
Traylor, p. 183, 192

Trimble, p. 44
Troupe, p. 313
Truemond, p. 253
Trufet, p. 256
Tucker, p. 196
Turner, p. 84, 86
Turney, p. 31, 42, 93, 184
Tyler, p. 280

U

Upchurch, p. 50
Utz, p. 26

V

Valentine, p. 174
Vance, p. 233
Van Liew, p. 199
Van Marter, p. 50
Vaughn, p. 33, 197, 315
Vaughter, p. 282
Venable, p. 262
Vest, p. 15
Vickers, p. 30
Vickrey, p. 41
Vitor, p. 183, 191
Von Dohlen, p. 93

W

Wade, p. 260, 268
Wagoner, p. 269, 289
Waggoner, p. 262, 269
Wakefield, p. 48
Wainscott, p. 189
Waite, p. 162
Walker, p. 96, 97, 311
Walkey, p. 308
Wallace, p. 50
Wallis, p. 313
Walston, p. 153
Walters, p. 191
Ward, p. 51, 53, 83, 84, 88, 99–107, 110, 115–123, 130, 132, 138, 140, 142, 152, 154, 155, 166, 184, 210, 224, 227, 276, (Woard, p. 131) (Worl p. 150)
Warden, p. 146, 147, 148
Ware, p. 14
Warner, p. 200, 205, 206
Warren, p. 216, 217, 228, 229, 233
Warrington, p. 72
Waters, p. 213
Watkins, p. 140, 143, 149, 150, 253, 260, 262
Watts, p. 95
Watson, p. 224
Webb, p. 96
Weidmann, p. 230
Welch, p. 277
Wells, p. 30, 36, 39, 48, 229, 319
West, p. 32, 50
Wharton, p. 276
Wheelington, p. 217
Wheelock, p. 229
Whitaker, p. 80, 81
White, p. 26, 27, 29, 30, 37–39, 57, 72, 112, 116–120, 164, 166, 179, 181, 182, 188, 190, 195, 210, 227, 311
Whitlow, p. 87
Whittington, p. 47
Whitton, p. 192
Whitson, p. 179, 194, 198, 199
Whyte, p. 53
Wicklund, p. 189
Wilder, p. 140, 143
Wiley, p. 99, 102, 107
Willkins, p. 66
Wilkerson, p. 276, 297, 299
Williams, p. 41, 58, 145, 158, 230, 266, 274
Williamson, p. 26, 147, 217
Wilson, p. 95, 183, 191, 193, 275
Winans, p. 211
Winn. p. 47
Witcher, p. 47
Wither, p. 193
Witt, p. 191
Womack, p. 81, 82
Wood, p. 31, 184
Woodhouse, p. 154
Woodson, p. 252–254, 258
Woodward, p. 87
Wordley, p. 27
Workman, p. 99, 124, 125, 150
Wren, p. 29
Wright, p. 39, 233
Wroe, p. 245
Wyly, p. 297
Wythe, p. 204

X

Y

Yancy, p. 184, 193
Yantis, p. 93
Yeats, p. 30, 217
Young, p. 37, 192, 277, 290
Yudesis, p. 34

I. Most of the available, published material pertaining to Bernards of Virginia, point to a couple, William Bernard and his wife, Mary Fleming.

They are said to have been the parents of three sons who fought in the Rev. War, and were therefore married not later than 1745-50 or perhaps a little earlier which would mean they were born 1720-1725, at the latest.

Although several fragments of information concerning them have been offered, none definately identifies them, and this lack of complete data suggests destroyed records, probably those of Gloucester Co. There is also a very good possibility that they were grandchildren of William Bernard II and William Fleming who were neighbors in that county in 1675 and in 1698. (See p. 203) This would mean that this William was great-grandson of William I and his wife, Lucy Higginson.

Since Elizabeth Bernard married John Aduston Rogers about 1765, among other possibilities, are those that she was either a younger sister of William, who married Mary Fleming, or their daughter.

Mary Fleming was the daughter of John Fleming and his wife Mary Bolling said to have been a descendant of Pocahontas and John Rolfe, Mary's brother Charles Fleming, in his will dated 8 Oct. 1783, left property in Kentucky to his sister, Mary Bernard and her children, including specific property to her sons John and Richard.

The three sons of William and Mary Bernard who served in the Rev. War were Lt. William Bernard, Jr., who died in the service 27 April 1776; Robert Bernard, a Private under General Morgan, and a third son, unnamed in this article who served as a corporal and received 200 acres for his services. (Records of Military Service (of Virginians) p. 405).

Among the land records at Richmond is one attested by Mayo Carrington, Capt. of Lt. William Bernard, Jr., which states that the heir to the latter was John Bernard, Jr.

We recall that the heirs of John Bernard, of Buckingham Co. Va., son of Robert Bernard who died in Gloucester Co. in 1742, had relatives in Ky. and that they sought through a Mr. Carrington and Edward Tabb, of Gloucester Co. Va., information as to whether William Bernard was made guardian of his brother, John Bernard, in the estate settlement or will of their father, Robert, dated 1742. (Bernard file in Library of Va. Historical Society, p. 204 of We Cousins).

This indicates that William was older and the dates, places and names all suggest that William Bernard, who married Mary Fleming, may have been brother of John and son of Robert, whose wife was Elizabeth and that Elizabeth, the wife of John Aduston Rogers in 1765 could have been one of the younger unnamed children of Robert's 1742 will.

II. According to Mr. T. P. Hughes, Jr., 4140 Chanwil, Ave., Memphis, Tenn. - a Miss Pride married Thomas Watkins of Cumberland Co. Va. where his will, probated 1760, is recorded. Later Powertan Co. was made from Cumberland, and their descendants reside there. (See Pride p. 235).